



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

UC-NRLF



\$B 201 586

LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA  
DAVIS









THE  
QUARTERLY REVIEW.

---

VOL. 131.

PUBLISHED IN

*JULY & OCTOBER, 1871.*

---

*L O N D O N :*

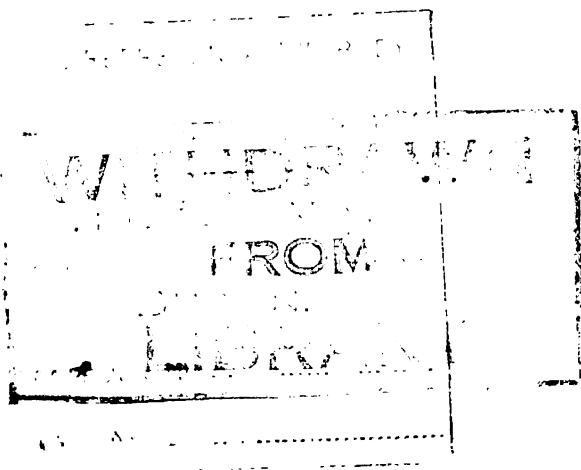
---

JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET.

1871.

LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA  
DAVIS

Digitized by Google



---

LONDON :  
Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES and SONS, Duke Street, Stamford Street,  
and Charing Cross.

---

# CONTENTS

OF

No. 261.

ART.	Page
I.—1. Shakespeare: The First Folio Edition of 1623. Reproduced under the immediate supervision of Howard Staunton, by Photo-lithography. Folio.	
2. Shakespere: a Critical Biography. By Samuel Neil. 12mo. London, 1861 - - - - -	1
II.—The Descent of Man, and Selection in Relation to Sex. By Charles Darwin, M.A., F.R.S., &c. 2 vols. London, 1871 - - - - -	47
III.—1. Das Reichsgesetzblatt. Wien.	
2. Oesterreich und die Bürgschaften seines Bestandes. Von Dr. Adolph Fischhof. Wien, 1870.	
3. Federation oder Realunion. Von Dr. W. Lustkaudl. Wien, 1868.	
4. Des Oesterreichers Grundrechte und Verfassung. Wien, 1870.	
5. Oesterreich seit dem Falle Belcredi's. 'Unsere Zeit.' Vol. V. Nos. 2, 4, 9, 12, 15 - - - - -	90
IV.—1. The whole Works of the Right Rev. Jeremy Taylor, D.D., Lord Bishop of Down, Connor, and Dromore: with a Life of the Author, and a critical examination of his Writings. By the Right Rev. Reginald Heber, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Calcutta. Revised and corrected by the Rev. Charles Page Eden, M.A., and the Rev. Alexander Taylor, M.A. In 10 volumes. London, 1856.	
2. Bishop Jeremy Taylor, his Predecessors, Contemporaries, and Successors. A Biography. By the Rev. Robert Aris Willmott, Incumbent of Bear Wood, Berks. Second Edition. London, 1848 - - - - -	118

ART.	Page
V.—1. Die Lehre der Tonempfindungen als physiologische Grundlage für die Theorie der Musik. Von H. Helmholtz, Professor der Physiologie an der Universität zu Heidelberg. Brunswick, 1865.	
2. Histoire générale de la Musique. Tomes I. II. Par F. J. Fétis. Paris, 1869.	
3. Philosophie de la Musique. Par Charles Beauquier. Paris, 1866.	
4. History of Modern Music. By John Hullah. London, 1862.	
5. A Course of Lectures on the Transition Period of Musical History. By John Hullah. 1865	- 145
VI.—1. Village-Communities in the East and West. Six Lectures, delivered at Oxford, by Henry Sumner Maine, Corpus Professor of Jurisprudence in the University, &c. London, 1871.	
2. On the Agricultural Community of the Middle Ages, and Inclosures of the Sixteenth Century in England. Translated from the German of E. Nasse, by Colonel H. A. Ouvry. Published under the sanction of the Cobden Club. London, 1871.	
3. Les Ouvriers Européens. Etudes sur les Travaux, la Vie Domestique et la Condition Morale des Populations Ouvrières de l'Europe, &c. Par M. F. Le Play. Paris, 1855	- 176
VII.—1. Mémoires d'Alexandre Dumas. Tomes 16.	
2. Mémoires d'Alexandre Dumas. Deuxième Series. Tomes 8	- 189
VIII.—1. A Refutation of the Wage-Fund Theory of Modern Political Economy as enunciated by Mr. Mill, M.P., and Mr. Fawcett, M.P. By Francis D. Longe, Barrister-at-Law. London, 1866.	
2. On Labour: Its Wrongful Claims and Rightful Dues; Its Actual Present and Possible Future. By William Thomas Thornton, Author of 'A Plea for Peasant Proprietors,' &c. Second Edition. London, 1870.	
3. Pauperism: Its Causes and Remedies. By Henry Fawcett, M.A., M.P., Fellow of Trinity Hall, and Professor of Political Economy in the University of Cambridge. London, 1871.	
4. Systems of Land Tenure in Various Countries. A Series of Essays published under the Sanction of the Cobden Club. London, 1870.	
5. Land Systems and Industrial Economy of Ireland, England, and Continental Countries. By T. E. Cliffe Leslie, LL.B., of Lincoln's Inn, Barrister-at-	

ART.

Page

Law, Examiner in Political Economy in the University of London, and Professor of Jurisprudence and Political Economy in the Queen's University in Ireland, and Queen's College, Belfast. London, 1870.

6. Programme of the Land Tenure Reform Association. With an Explanatory Statement by John Stuart Mill. London, 1871.

7. Trades' Unions Abroad, and Hints for Home Legislation, Reprinted from a Report on the Amsterdam Exhibition of Domestic Economy for the Working Classes. By the Hon. T. J. Hovell Thurlow. Second Edition. London, 1871 - - - - - 229

IX.—1. The Elementary Education Act, 1870.

2. Minute of the Right Honourable the Lords of the Committee of Privy Council on Education, establishing a new Code of Regulations, 1871.

3. The School Board Chronicle, No. I.-XX. February to July, 1871.

4. The Sixtieth Report of the National Society, 1871 - 263



# CONTENTS

OF

No. 262.

ART.	Page
I.—1. Experimental Investigation of the Spirit Manifestations, demonstrating the Existence of Spirits and their Communion with Mortals. By Robert Hare, M.D., Professor of Chemistry in the University of Pennsylvania. New York, 1858.	
2. Quarterly Journal of Science. London, July, 1871.	
3. The Spiritualist. London, July 15, 1871.	
4. Table-Turning. A Lecture by the Rev. R. W. Dibdin, M.A. London, 1853.	
5. Robert Houdin, Ambassador, Author, and Conjuror. Written by himself - - - - -	301
II.—Lord Byron. Von Karl Elze. Berlin, 1870 - -	354
III.—1. Report of the Commissioners of Inland Revenue on the Duties under their Management, for the Years 1856 to 1869 inclusive, with some retrospective History and complete Tables of Accounts of the Duties from their first Imposition. Vols. I. and II. Presented to both Houses of Parliament by command of Her Majesty. 1870.	
2. The Liquor Trades. A Report to M. T. Bass, Esq., on the Capital Invested and the number of Persons employed therein. By Professor Leone Levi, F.S.A., F.S.S. London, 1871.	
3. Intoxicating Liquors (Licensing) Bill. 1871 - -	392
IV.—Opere Inedite di Francesco Guicciardini Illustrate da Giuseppe Canestrini, e Publicate per cura dei Conti Piero e Luigi Guicciardini. Volume Primo, Ricordi Politici e Civili.—Volume Decimo, Ricordi di Famiglia, Ricordi Autobiografici. Firenze, 1857-1867 - - - - -	416

Art.	Page
V.—Hansard's Parliamentary Debates. 1871 - -	440
VI.—1. Report on Turnpike Trusts. 1871.	
2. Return of Railway Amalgamations. 1868.	
3. Annual Railway Statistics. Public General Acts relating to Railways. Tramways Act. 1870.	
4. Gas and Waterworks Clauses Acts. 1847.	
5. Reports on Telegraphs. 1871.	
6. Local Government Bill. 1871 - - -	466
VII.—The Dialogues of Plato translated into English, with Analysis and Introductions. By B. Jowett, M.A., Master of Balliol College, Regius Professor of Greek in the University of Oxford. 4 vols. Oxford, 1871	492
VIII.—1. Battle of Dorking. London, 1871.	
2. Parliamentary Debates on the Army Bill. 1871 -	522
IX.—1. Paris sous la Commune. E. Moriac. Paris, 1871.	
2. Le Gouvernement du 4 Septembre et la Commune de Paris. E. Andreoli. Paris, 1871.	
3. Les 73 Journées de la Commune. Catulle Mendès. Paris, 1871.	
4. L'Internationale. O. Testut. Paris, 1871.	
5. Le Livre noir de la Commune de Paris. Brussels, 1871.	
6. The Civil War in France. Address of the General Council of the International Working Men's Association. London, 1871.	
7. Programme of the Land Tenure Reform Association: with an explanatory Statement. By John Stuart Mill. London, 1871 - - - -	549

# THE QUARTERLY REVIEW.

---

- ART. I.—1. *Shakespeare: The First Folio Edition of 1623. Reproduced under the immediate supervision of Howard Staunton, by Photo-lithography.* Folio.  
2. *Shakespeare: a Critical Biography.* By Samuel Neil. 12mo. London, 1861.

THE two works at the head of this article are samples of what has been done for Shakspearian literature within the last few years. It is a matter of congratulation to all students of the great dramatist that the appliances of modern science should have given us an exact facsimile of the first collected edition of the poet's works, and thus have enabled all readers to judge for themselves of the state and arrangement of the text as it first left the hands of the poet's literary executors. Mr. Neil's little book has done good service in presenting the facts of the poet's biography, and the most material documents relating to it, in their strict chronological order. The value of the slenderest notices derived from original papers in illustrating not only the life of the poet, of his family, and his neighbours in Warwickshire, but the spirit and manners of the period, can never be fully appreciated until the whole mass of evidence has been thoroughly sifted. Availing ourselves therefore of what has been brought to light by the indefatigable diligence of the poet's admirers within the last few years, and of such papers as still remain unpublished in the Record Office, we propose to lay before our readers a sketch of Shakspeare's life and times, carefully eliminating from the former those supposed facts and theories which have gathered round it on the faith of documents now generally regarded with discredit.

Of Shakspeare's great contemporaries, by descent as well as by feeling, Spenser was intimately connected with the aristocracy of England. His life was spent at a distance from the metropolis. During his long residence in Ireland he treasured up the impressions he had received in his youth of the glories of Elizabeth, and the grandeur of Protestantism,—its heroic sufferings,

Vol. 131.—No. 261. B

sufferings, its eventual triumph over all forms of falsehood and deceit, moral, religious, social, scientific, and political. These impressions were never disturbed by too close an approximation to realities. Happily, it was never the poet's lot to witness the party and personal squabbles in which his knights indulged too freely in the court of his Gloriana, or to see prelates and Puritans divided, and both equally forgetful of mutual charity, in bitter controversies about square caps and white surplices. Hooker, on the other hand, owed his descent to the burgher class. The chief part of his life was spent in the quiet seclusion of the university. If Spenser was mainly indebted to his imagination for his knowledge of the external world, Hooker judged it by his books. His mind was as deeply tinctured with fathers and schoolmen—with an ideal Christianity enshrined in the past—as Spenser's imagination lingered over mediæval romances and Arthurian legends. Over both the past had a stronger hold than the present; the *τὸ καλὸν* of the one and the *τὸ δίκαιον* of the other are equally heroic—both equally transcend the capabilities and the limits of poor, failing, commonplace humanity.

It was otherwise with Shakspeare. Like Spenser, he was allied by his mother's side to gentle blood; \* like Hooker, he was linked to the burgher classes by the stronger parent. Brought up in the country till the age of manhood, thrown early upon his own resources, obliged to no college-fellowship like Hooker, to no diplomatic appointment like Spenser, he was tossed on the seething waves of the metropolis, or rather cast himself upon them, with the same boldness, perhaps the same apparent recklessness, as he had entered on a marriage at eighteen, when he was no better than a poor apprentice or foreman to a failing glover in a poor country town. Of his life-struggles—and they must have been many—he has left no sign. Of his patience, his endurance, his solitary determination, whilst unassisted and unadvised he carved out his way from the safe obscurity of Stratford to the highest pinnacle of fame, he has told us nothing. This early familiarity with the hard realities of life left no trace on his mind, as these things leave scars and traces on inferior intellects, beyond perhaps that sympathy with humanity, that profound appreciation of it in all its forms, which is one of his greatest characteristics as a poet.

How far the circumstances of his life and times may have determined or assisted the development of his genius it is not easy to ascertain. Of no other English poet can it be said with

---

\* 'She was one of the heirs of Robert Arden of Wellingeote.'—*Grant of Arms*.  
greater

greater justice: 'Poeta nascitur non fit.' Many, indeed, of Shakspeare's enthusiastic admirers will not allow that he owed anything to art or to learning. They claim for Nature and for natural inspiration alone those great masterpieces of invention in which others have professed to find traces of the most profound philosophy, the most acute physiological knowledge, the clearest distinctions of races, the fullest appreciation of all forms of poetry, the exactest study of man and of nature.

That Shakspeare owed most to Nature, that his obligations to learning or accidental circumstances were but slight, we may fully concede, without at the same time entirely overlooking the obvious advantages afforded by the times for dramatic composition, and the traces of classical education to be found throughout the poet's works. The same keen and unerring instinct which from a single glance could body forth and project in a visible form the whole life and character of a man, however remote from ordinary observation, would by a similar power extract from books—poor and meagre in themselves—the quintessence of a life rich and varied, instinct with thoughts and feelings, such as inferior intelligences would fail to gather from the most perfect productions of the greatest genius. The dreary chronicle, the blundering biography, the vapidest translations of Cæsar or of Sallust, were instruments sufficient to set at work that innate power of the poet which, like Nature itself, develops the most perfect and glorious results from the most contemptible and unworthy materials. That is what we mean by genius. With ordinary men the instruments by which they work must bear some proportion in dignity and value to the end to be produced; but genius is divine and miraculous in this, that it is not tied to the order, methods, and instruments by which common men are bound. Admitting, then, that no amount of training or study can account for Shakspeare's plays, admitting also that the poet was little indebted to school learning for his wonderful productions, that would not necessarily invalidate the importance of his education, or the beneficial influences of his peculiar times. Brought up at the grammar-school of Stratford, he would acquire as much knowledge of Latin and French as fell to the lot of most of his contemporaries. Before the great public schools had attracted much attention—before, indeed, they were accessible to the large majority of the English country gentlemen, owing to bad roads and inefficient means of travelling—the grammar schools of our country towns furnished the only means for the training and education of the gentry and richer citizens throughout the largest extent of England. Were the results poor and unsatisfactory? Can any period be pointed out in our history which provided on the whole

abler schoolmasters or scholars more deeply interested in learning? It is impossible to open any popular book of those times without being struck with its rich abundance of classical allusion. If this be attributed to pedantry, that pedantry was universal. But we have a more unsuspecting testimony; not only did the dramatists of the age freely borrow from classical antiquity their plots, their quotations, their witticisms—and that for dramas intended for a popular audience—without scruple, without dread of being misunderstood—but in the humours of Eastcheap, in the busiest haunts of life, ‘the honey of Hybla,’ ‘pitiful Titan,’ ‘Phœbus the wandering knight,’ ‘Diana’s foresters,’ ‘homo is a *common* name for all men,’ are freely bandied from mouth to mouth, with not so much as a thought on the part of the author that his allusions will not be fully understood by his audience.

If Shakspeare, then, had, as Jonson observes, ‘little Latin and less Greek,’ the admission at least implies that he had some knowledge of both—enough of Latin to read ordinary Latin books and translations, and more than enough of genius to extract from what he did read the pith and substance. It was an age throughout of Latin cultivation. Greek, with few exceptions, was unattainable, except to men of fortune, or rare scholars at the universities. In fact, Shakspeare was the poet of an age that loved learning for its own sake—an age that had come into a new inheritance of breathless wonder and interest—

‘Like some watcher of the skies

When a new planet swims into his ken;’

and he would not have been the man of his time, nor the poet that he was, had he been wholly indifferent to learning or wholly unacquainted with it.

Nor were the times less favourable to him as a dramatic poet. The Reformation had done much to develop individual character. The feeling of a common Christendom, the sense of submission to the Church as a great society, the duty of not diverging widely from the authorized limits of religious opinion and belief, had all passed away. Each man felt bound to carve out a faith for himself, and to discard as worthless—at least, as suspicious—whatever was recommended or received on authority or tradition. Bacon has said that time, like a river, brings down on its surface the straw and the stubble, but the solid and the gold have long since sunk to the bottom. What seems like a paradox to the philosopher, was accepted by the reformers as an undoubted and undeniable truth. Authority was the test of falsehood, not of truth. Uniformity of belief was not to be found in nations or in single men. No two agreed. Diversity of faith led to diversity of

of character; and if there be one phenomenon more striking than another in the reign of Elizabeth, it is the strange humours, the extravagancies, the conceits, the motley exhibition of dress, manners, sentiments, and opinions, admitting no central authority, bound by no restraint beyond the caprice of the individual. There was, besides, no standard of taste, no school of criticism, no public opinion, literary or otherwise, to which men could defer, or, probably, if there had been, would have cared to defer. There were no settled forms of English—no deference to classical models, which all consented to accept. No long-established rules imposed a wholesome restraint on the teeming invention and luxuriant wit of the Elizabethan writers.

But while the Reformation had been thus powerful in developing individual character in its widest extent; whilst men revelled in their new-found liberty, and cared not to determine when it degenerated into licentiousness; whilst Nature avenged herself on the dry, logical studies of a preceding age by a reaction which sometimes trespassed into animalism, the material forms of the old world and the old religion still held their ground. In the parish church the service was in English, not in Latin; but the ceremonies, the dresses, the fasts, and the festivals, though curtailed, remained essentially the same. Sermons were scarcely more frequent than they had been in Popish times; men and women went to confession—paid their Easter offerings—looked up to the parish priest as their spiritual guide. Most of these priests had been in their livings when Edward VI. was crowned—had complied with Queen Mary—had re-complied with Elizabeth—accommodated their new to their ancient faith—doubtless retained many of their old Romish practices and predilections—and were winked at by their bishops, especially in distant provinces. How could it be otherwise, unless the rulers of the Church were prepared to see nine-tenths of the parishes of England deprived of all spiritual instructors, and churches and congregations falling into irremediable decay? Though Puritanism was creeping on with rapid and stealthy pace towards the close of the century, it numbered as yet a contemptible and unnational minority. It had not yet contrived to inspire men with one intense and narrow sentimentalism; to force upon their unwilling acceptance its straitened notions of a straitened creed. It had not yet taught them to look with sour suspicion on all forms of amusement as ungodly; or to suspect Popery in mince-pies and cheerful village festivals. So ancient customs remained as they had remained ages before. Christmas, with its pageants and processions, its mummers and its good fare; Twelfth-night, Midsummer's Eve, St. Mark's, St. Valentine's, and All Saints

days,

days, were duly observed. No inductive philosophy had yet appeared to disturb the popular belief in fairies or in witchcraft, in ghosts or in spectres; no ruthless geographer had stripped 'the still-vexed Bermoothes' of its Ariel and its Caliban, or buried the wand which raised such potent marvels.

By the ingle-nook, especially in country towns like Stratford—half a century behind the metropolis, and exempt from those changes to which a great metropolis is subject—men still talked of elves and goblins, and still devoutly believed in them. They repeated from father to son the local traditions of their own and the neighbouring counties. They knew the battle-fields of Tewkesbury; they had heard tell of the encounter when the Severn hid its head in fear of the blood-stained combatants. Kenilworth and Coventry, Gloucester and Northampton, were studded with historical associations. And many an anecdote, many a feat, a trait of manner, of person, and character, of English worthies would thus be handed down which would be sought in vain in the chronicles of Hall or of Hollinshed. For, unlike the wars of modern times, the civil wars of England were fought by the tenants and labourers of the lord, who returned at the close of the struggle to the plough and the spade, to live and die, in most instances, at no great distance from the scene of their military exploits. So sons and grandsons learned to repeat the stories of meek Henry VI., of the fierce and forbidding Richard III., of the hateful De la Pole and the gracious Edward.

The exact year in which Shakspeare abandoned Stratford for the metropolis cannot now be ascertained, nor yet the motive or the manner of his departure. It has been assumed that he quitted his native town shortly after his marriage with Ann Hathaway. The birth of a daughter, Susannah, in May, 1583, followed by twins, Hamnet and Judith, in 1585, has been adopted as a sufficient reason why he should leave a place and occupation in which his father had not apparently prospered, and enter upon a profession more congenial to the bent of his genius. A story, handed down by the parish clerk of Stratford in 1693, who was then upwards of eighty years old, contains the only trustworthy record of this period of the poet's life. According to this statement, Shakspeare was apprenticed to a butcher, left his master, went to London, 'and there was received into the playhouse as a servitor, and by this means had an opportunity to be what he afterwards proved.' That the substance of the story is correct, though it may have suffered from the manner of the telling, can hardly be doubted, considering the authority from which it emanates. A parish clerk in a country town, generally the

depository

depository of the local traditions of the place, and living so near the poet's own times, was hardly likely to have invented such a tale, though he may have disfigured it. That Shakspeare's father, combining a variety of kindred occupations—no very unusual practice in a country town—at once glover, maltster, farmer, appraiser, frequently engaged in litigation, and therefore not unfrequently in debt, should not have considered the occupation of a butcher in a country town as a derogatory employment for one of a family of ten children, may be naturally assumed. Nor by the word 'butcher' is it necessary to understand exactly what that word implies now. Popular tradition associated the poet with his father's occupations; and if Shakspeare had never left Stratford he would, like others of his contemporaries, have grown old in his native town no more than glover, butcher, or maltster, as his father had been.

As for his running away to London and leaving his wife and family dependent on the casual charity of others, that story can only be accepted with many modifications. The distance of Stratford from the metropolis, the difficulties of travelling in those days, the improbability that his father would or could have advanced him the necessary means for so doing, and burthened himself with his son's family, must be taken into account. It is much more probable that if Shakspeare did not join one of the many companies of actors who periodically appeared in Stratford or its vicinity, he was brought to London by the Catesbys or the Cloptons, or some one of the powerful families in the county, who had as sufficient reasons for hating the Lucys as Shakspeare himself.

And here, before we pass on to trace the future career of the poet, it will be as well to allude to the anecdote first published by Rowe and repeated by most of the poet's biographers. 'He had, by a misfortune' (says Rowe) 'common enough to young fellows, fallen into ill company; and amongst them some that made a frequent practice of deer-stealing, engaged him more than once in robbing a park that belonged to Sir Thomas Lucy, of Charlecote, near Stratford. For this he was prosecuted by that gentleman, as he thought, somewhat too severely, and in order to revenge that ill-usage he made a ballad upon him.'\* And though this, probably the first essay of his poetry, be lost, yet it is said to have been so very bitter that it redoubled the prosecution against him to that degree that he was obliged to leave his business and family in Warwickshire for some time

---

\* Compare the expression: 'An I have not ballads made on you all, and sung to filthy tunes.'

and shelter himself in London.' Omitting the modern decorations of the story, we may admit the facts of the deer-stealing in the poet's case, as in that of many others of his contemporaries. It may be hard to point to any direct evidence in the poet's works in confirmation of this act of youthful delinquency; but we think that the impression left on the minds of most of his readers will warrant the belief that the poet had been a lad of spirit, of no 'vinegar aspect;' popular—boy, youth, and man—among his contemporaries, and taking life easy in all its stages, laughing heartily at a jest, and perfectly willing to bear his part in one. So complete and perfect are the harmony and unity of his dramatic characters that we cannot safely derive from them any hypothesis as to the poet's dislikes and predilections; yet the humours of Eastcheap, the mad pranks of Prince Hal and his associates, the reckless adventures of hair-brained, hot-blooded youth, are painted by the poet with such a zest as can scarcely be held otherwise than an indication of his own temperament. But deer-stealing, though a perilous offence, was too popular and too common in all ranks to entail disgrace or compel an offender to flee from his native town. That Shakspeare entertained a personal dislike for the Lucys, we can well believe; and the more so, as of all his signal and numerous opportunities to take poetical vengeance on his unfriends, that of the Lucys is the only prominent instance.\* But the feud between the Lucys and the natives of Stratford was of earlier date than this affair of the deer-stealing, and crops out on various occasions. The Lucys were arrogant and imperious Puritans; the good town of Stratford, with the Cloptons and the Catesbys, were zealous adherents of the ancient faith. In the reign of Henry VIII., William Lucy, the father of Shakspeare's Sir Thomas, the friend of Bishop Latimer, had more than once endeavoured to bring down the king's displeasure on the citizens of Stratford for religious differences; and more than once a riot had ensued, in which the Grevilles and the Combes, in conjunction with the Lucys, would have ridden roughshod over the burgesses, of whom Shakspeare's father was afterwards high bailiff, if they had not been supported by the Cloptons

---

\* That the Lucys were fond of litigation is implied by the opening lines of 'The Merry Wives of Windsor,' and justified by history. In the conversation between Shallow, Slender, and Evans, Slender says, 'They may give the dozen white luses in their coat' To which Shallow replies, 'It is an *old* coat.' Evidently referring to the family pride of the Lucys, as well as their antiquity. Evans: 'The dozen white louses do become an *old* coat well; it agrees well, passant.' (That being their heraldic characteristic; 12 luses, passant.) 'It is a familiar beast to man, and signifies—love.' Excessively comical in the mouth of a Welshman!

and the Catesbys.\* The Lucys were powerful at the Court of the Tudors, for they had blood-royal in their veins; and as many of their opponents were Roman Catholics, or had relapsed from Protestantism to the old faith, one of their most effective instruments for satisfying personal pique, under the garb of patriotism, was to put in force the penal laws and the power of the Crown against their rivals. In a commission issued in 1592 for persecuting and presenting recusants, directed to the Lucys and the Grevilles, and obtained apparently by their means, it is curious to observe that they presented as a recusant Mrs. Clopton, 'widow of Wm. Clopton, esq. ;' but in their second return they proceed to rectify their convenient mistake by the naïve admission: Mrs. Clopton, presented as a recusant, was 'mistaken, and goeth now to church!' In the same presentment, next to Henley-in-Arden, occurs the parish of Sombourne, with this notice: 'Mrs. Mary Arden, widow, presented for a wilful recusant before our last certificate, continues still obstinate in her recusancy,' and is accordingly indicted. By the same commissioners, John Shakspeare, the poet's father, is returned as a recusant; but this note is subjoined in his case and in that of eight others: 'It is said that the last nine come not to church for fear of process for debt.†

Now, though it is true that already, some six years before the date of this commission, Shakspeare's father had fallen into difficulties and was deprived of his alderman's gown, it is hardly probable, had he been notoriously affected towards the Protestant religion, that his name would have been inserted in the return of the commissioners; for the object of the commission was not so much to learn who absented themselves from the parish church, as to discover Jesuits, seminary priests, and papal emissaries, now, more than ever, busily engaged in sowing disaffection among the people of Warwickshire, and those who harboured them. The government of the day—as is clear from the cases cited by the commissioners—required attendance at church once a month; that done, it did not trouble itself with inflicting further penalties, or requiring more distinct proofs of the recusant's loyalty. John Shakspeare was a recusant in this sense, and the note was appended to explain the reason why he had not complied with the requirements of the government. If then he were a recusant in the ordinary use of the term, this might account for the pecuniary difficulties into which he fell some years before, when the government of Elizabeth exacted the fines for recusancy with unsparing severity.

---

\* Unpublished papers in the Record Office.

† MSS. in the Record Office.

That the townspeople of Stratford cordially hated the Lucys, and were particularly anxious to avoid incurring their displeasure, is apparent from the records of the town, printed by Mr. Halliwell. He selects numerous items of sack and sugar for the lips of Sir Thomas and his chief friends, Sir Fulke and Sir Edward Greville. In one entry, dated 1598, the chamberlain very bluntly records: 'Paid to Sir Fowle (*sic*) Greville, for nothing, 40s.!' And again in 1601, in an action for trespass brought by Sir Edward Greville against the burgesses of Stratford, the name of John Shakspeare appears as a witness on behalf of the defendants.

We are, therefore, inclined to believe that Shakspeare's departure from his native town was a more deliberate act than Rowe's anecdote of the deer-stalking and the vengeance of the Lucys would lead us to expect. It is impossible that the poet, living so near to Coventry, should not often have witnessed the crude dramatic representations of the times, and equally impossible that the dramatic genius within him, that was never crude, never less than powerful, should not have been mightily stirred by what he saw. 'Mute, inglorious Miltons' may have died unseen; but that was because their Miltonic genius was neither all-powerful nor lasting. It was the slave, not the master, of circumstances. But overpowering genius, like mastering passion, admits of no repulse, and suffers no cold obstruction. Besides it must be remembered that in Shakspeare's time—before Puritanism had done its work—the profession of an actor as well as of a dramatist led to fame and opulence. The stage had not yet been regarded as the illusion of antichrist. It still shared with the pulpit the task of instructing the people. It still bore upon its features the marks of its ecclesiastical origin. It still reckoned among its authors and patrons bishops like Bale and Still.

On Shakspeare's arrival in London all accounts concur in asserting that the poet embraced the profession of an actor; and the old clerk's account—that 'he was received into the play-house as a servitor'—is not without probability. Such a practice was not unusual. Mr. Halliwell has referred to an instance in Henslow's diary in which it is stated that 'he hired a covenant servant, William Kendall, for two years, after the statute of Winchester, with two single pence, and to give him for his said service every week of his playing in London 10s. and in the country 5s.'

Of the theatres then in vogue the most eminent was the Globe, on the Bankside; and with this or the Black Friars, belonging to the same company, Shakspeare was connected, and in one or

other

other of these all his plays were subsequently performed. In 1603 the company consisted of Laurence Fletcher, William Shakspeare, Richard Burbage, Augustine Phillipes, John Heminge, and Henry Condell, Shakspeare's literary executors, and several others; the most eminent performers of their age. The theatre, an hexagonal wooden building, was partly thatched and partly exposed to the weather, and the performances generally, if not always, took place in the afternoon, then the idlest time of the day. Rooms or boxes were provided for the wealthier classes, the admission to which varied from a shilling to half a crown; whilst the frequenters of the pit either stood or sate on the ground. The wits and critics of the times were admitted on the stage; and so far was this practice from detracting, as might be imagined, from the interest and illusion of the play, this identification of the audience with the actors, at a time when the scenery was of the simplest kind, and the costume of the actors differed not from that of ordinary life, must on most occasions have given to the scene a lifelike reality to which we are strangers. Such briefly were the theatres in which Shakspeare—

‘Made those flights upon the banks of Thames  
That so did take Eliza and our James.’

Such, also, in the dearth of clubs and coffee-houses, of novels, newspapers, and other means of information, were the studies as well as the entertainment of the age, where men picked up, in the main, whatever they knew of foreign countries and distant times, of classical lore and English history. And here, by the great good fortune of that age, were brought together the court and its statesmen, from Nonsuch House or Westminster—the Sydneys, the Raleighs, the Essexes, the Cecils, and the Bacons; the soldier of fortune, like Falstaff, the grave citizen, the humourist and man of pleasure, the weather-beaten adventurer of the water-side just landed from Guinea or Bermuda;—all to see set before them every shade of human character—their own among the number—every exhibition of human passion, affection, and caprice; from the most daring and subtle intellect to the poorest driveller; genius at one time taking mystic flights, at another flickering on the verge of imbecility and madness.

At the time when Shakspeare set foot in the metropolis the stage was passing through a new epoch. The Moralities which might in his childhood have satisfied a less critical audience at Coventry or Stratford, and the dumb shows and pageants provided for the Virgin Queen at Kenilworth or Windsor had lost their

their attractions.\* The diffusion of classical learning, numerous translations of the dramatic poets of Greece and Rome, intellects sharpened by the great theological controversies in which they had been lately engaged, the stronger sense of national and individual freedom, had prepared men for a keener relish of the higher productions of art in all its branches. The result is seen in every direction. It would have violated all experience had it not been seen in that form of literature which represented more fully than any other the condition of the national mind, and more than any other appealed to the sympathies and experience of all classes in the nation. A people brave, resolute, and energetic, who had passed, by extraordinary exertion, through so fearful an ordeal, scarcely of less duration than 150 years, and then emerged safely on the firm ground, as they looked back on the stormy ocean from which they had so recently escaped, would expect in their poets and teachers an earnestness and reality of treatment, a vividness of perception, a power of reproduction, wholly different from the mere didactic attitude and philosophic musing into which poets are permitted to fall in more tranquil times. They would forgive any errors rather than those of tameness and insensibility. Regularity of form and harmony of design would be less attractive to them than freedom of movement. Liberty they demanded, even if, as in our early dramatists, it degenerated at times into extravagance and licentiousness. Thus, within a very brief space, English literature, as represented by the drama, experienced a sudden and entire transformation, such as no other period affords the like. Nor are the dramas of Shakspeare further removed from those of his immediate predecessors than theirs are from the Moralities and Mysteries which they had superseded in their turn.

Of the competitors for public favour when Shakspeare appeared at the Black Friars, in his new capacity as servitor, the most eminent were Lilly, Peele, Greene, and Marlowe. All of these men had been educated at one or other of the two universities; and all took to writing for the stage, with no higher object than

---

\* Thus, in Greene's 'Never too Late,' the strolling actor says to Roberto: 'Why, I am as famous for *Delphrygus* and *The King of the Fairies* as ever was any of my time. *The Twelve Labours of Hercules* have I terribly thundered on the stage, and played three scenes of the Devil in *The High Way to Heaven*.' 'Have ye so?' said Roberto; 'then I pray you pardon me.' 'Nay, more,' quoth the player, 'I can serve to make a pretty speech, for I was a country author passing (good) at a Moral; for it was I that penned the Moral of *Man's Wit*, *The Dialogue of Dives*, and for seven years' space was absolute interpreter of the puppets. But now my almanack is out of date.

The people make no estimation  
Of Morals teaching education.'

that of relieving that poverty into which they continually relapsed from their folly and intemperance, or perhaps, as in Lilly's case, to obtain court-favour. They must be entirely acquitted of any purpose to grasp those deeper questions which confused and perplexed the age; still less of endeavouring to discover the true solution of them. To attempt to enter upon that vast theatre of human experience now displayed before them, to comprehend the various purposes and phases of human life, and its relations, in its novel position, to the past, the present, or the future—this was a task for which they had neither the requisite faculties nor the necessary sympathy. If they could represent the passing and grotesque humours of their age, if they could point some moral lesson against its more obvious transgressions, they aimed no higher. And often, like men of meagre genius and less subtle perception, they mistook the mere transitory phenomena for the cause; their feebleness of imagination was taken captive by the disastrous effects of vice and passion, whilst the subtler and more spiritual incentives they never fathomed. So, living in times which were favourable to poetry—and to dramatic poetry especially—when men were still inspired by the excitement of past and of passing events—when individual characterism had not yet crystallized into one dull uniformity by fixed systems of education or engrossing commercial monopoly—when the old had not so far been parted from the new as to lose its vitality and fade into the unrealism of archæology—these dramatists, with all their ability and advantages, produced nothing which could serve beyond the amusement of the hour; not a passage, not a line, not a single happy expression, could take root in the memory of their contemporaries, and secure eternity for itself among the unwritten traditions of the people. Whilst unnumbered hosts of Shakspeare's phrases, often the most plain and artless, the least obviously remarkable for any peculiarity of sound or antithesis, or for those factitious qualities which catch the undisciplined fancy, have grown into household words, only less numerous than those of the Bible, it is impossible to trace any similar fortune in Shakspeare's contemporaries, or his immediate predecessors. And as it is inconceivable that any possible revolution of public taste should ever give life or animation to their writings, it is equally impossible to conceive that any revelations of science, before which the proudest of our present achievements must fade like the baseless fabric of a vision, should consign Shakspeare to oblivion, or render him less worthy of the profoundest study, less fresh, less striking, less instructive, less philosophical, in the truest of all senses, than he is now, than he was before gravitation or the laws of Kepler were discovered, when Copernicus

was

was esteemed no better than a dreamer—a new but ignoble Phæethon driving the earth about the sun.\*

Yet these men's labours were not without their use. Steeped in classical literature, deriving their rules from classical models, guiding their judgment exclusively, though with small discrimination, by classical authority, they inexorably determined the form and style of dramatic art. They developed the poetical capabilities of the English language. They refined it to those higher purposes of poetical literature for which, even at their time, and still more emphatically before their time, it was considered wholly unsuitable. The world was still divided between the learned and the laymen. Latin associated with the religious sympathies and scholastic supremacy of the middle ages had not yet resigned its special dignity as the only organ of inspiration. It had entered on a new and more splendid career by the revival of letters and the labours of the revivalists. The English tongue, rough, confused, unmetrical—the tongue of business and of the vulgar—was, in the lips of the educated, a condescension to vulgar ignorance and infirmity;—a pharisaic uncleanness, which the scholar and the gentleman must contract in his associations with the unlearned, in his pity for their blindness, but of which he washed himself up to the very elbows in his communion with his fellows.† It may be easy to smile at these things now; but, to those who think deeply on the subject, it must seem wonderful how a language constantly associated with ignoble uses, intensely businesslike and prosaic, despised by men of taste and learning, could pass, and that so rapidly, into the radiant sphere of poetry. What is the task of a great artist, embodying his conceptions with a piece of black charcoal and a stick, compared with that of the poet who has to clothe his most subtle thoughts, his nicest, his most incisive and accurate perceptions, in words never trained by usage to such purposes, never adequate to his needs, falsified in their true significance by carelessness and stupidity, always spilling over or falling short in the due adjustment of their popular acceptance to their etymological exactness?

These men, then, did that for Shakspeare which it is very possible the poet, great as he was, could not have done so well for himself. They had familiarised men's minds with the laws of the drama, in the concrete; they had accustomed the ears of

\* 'Those new carmen which drive the earth about.'—*Bacon*.

† Mr. Collier has printed a letter in which the authorities of the University of Cambridge request they may be excused from complying with the royal request to act a play in English. They are contented to represent a Latin play, but an English one they consider derogatory, and the students are highly offended at the notion.

men to a stately blank verse, essentially and exclusively English in its character—indelibly associated with all our noblest poetry—and yet evidently suggested by an intense study of its classical forerunner.\* Language, in their hands, was intensified and elevated, however deficient it might be in suppleness and versatility—qualities at that time less required. For stateliness and dignity, combined with strength and fervour, passages may be extracted from our elder dramatists which are not surpassed by any of their successors, Shakspeare and Milton excepted ;—and how much the latter was indebted for many of his excellences to a careful study of these early writers, no one can doubt who has taken the trouble to study the subject. If these excellences are marred by startling incongruities ; if in their best passages they run into extravagance, or,

‘all unawares,  
Fluttering their pennons vain, plumb down they drop  
Ten thousand fathoms deep’—

that was incidental to their task. It was no more than, in their case, might have been anticipated. As they could not all at once pull up their audience to their own altitude, they descended to their audience. The mere Latinists, as they were called, proud of their scholarship and defiant of all departure from classical types, died in their theory, and left no mark behind them ;—but these men, mixing with the world, too often steeped in its excesses, and sounding the lowest depths of its misery, had more sympathy with their fellow-men and their ways. Their own experience, as they found, was of more worth to them as dramatists than their learning, if they wished for popularity. So with their classical tastes and predilections they mixed up, often incongruously enough, the homely and coarse scenes of their own daily experience, in the homeliest and least idealised forms.

From 1585, when Shakspeare is supposed to have taken up his residence in London, to 1598, we have very few data to determine the poet's circumstances, conduct, or specific employments. That he was assiduous as an actor and a successful dra-

---

\* This is evidently on what poor Greene prided himself—and justly so—in his dying hours. Thus in the well-known passage referring to Shakspeare: ‘There is an upstart crow beautified with our feathers, that with his tiger's heart wrapt in a player's hide, supposes he is as well able to *bombast out a blank verse as the best of you.*’ Beautified with our feathers means, as he expresses it, to write blank verse, and imitate the rules of dramatic composition, to which Greene and his friends had contributed so much popularity. That a country lad like Shakspeare, not of the craft, without fame, friends, or a University education, ‘should bombast out a blank verse’ as well as the most experienced writers of the age, was a fact sufficient to alarm the jealousy of Greene and of his contemporaries.

matist from the very first is clear from the concurrent testimony of the times ; scanty as it is. Already in 1598, a writer named Francis Meres, 'Master of Arts of both Universities,' in a 'Discourse of English Poets,'\* mentions Shakspeare in the following terms : 'Shakspeare, among the English, is *the most excellent* in both kinds (tragedy and comedy) for the stage. For comedy, witness his "Gentlemen of Verona," his "Errors," his "Love's Labour's Lost," his "Love's Labour's Won," his "Midsummer's Night's Dream," and his "Merchant of Venice." For tragedy, his "Richard II.," "Richard III.," "Henry IV.," "King John," "Titus Andronicus," and his "Romeo and Juliet."

From the language of Meres it would be naturally inferred that he did not propose to give a complete list of Shakspeare's writings in 1598, but of those only which bore out his assertion that he was 'the most excellent' in tragedy as well as in comedy. Thus, within twelve or thirteen years after Shakspeare's arrival in London, Meres could point to twelve plays of Shakspeare so generally well known and universally applauded that, in spite of the popularity of Greene, Peele, and Marlowe, or even Ben Jonson,† Meres made no scruple to claim for Shakspeare the palm as a dramatist above all his contemporaries. Even admitting that Meres' list is complete, this would give a year for a play ; and for such plays as 'Richard II.,' 'King John,' 'Henry IV.,' the 'Midsummer's Night's Dream,' and 'Romeo and Juliet.'

But this is not all ; for, in 1593, Shakspeare had given to the world his two poems of 'Venus and Adonis,' and 'Lucrece.' To the same period must be ascribed the three parts of 'Henry VI.,'‡ and at least so many of the Sonnets—if they were written, as some critics imagine, at different intervals—as to justify Meres's encomium of them, which we make no scruple of repeating here, were it only to disuse some of our readers of the notion that Shakspeare's contemporaries were insensible to his greatness. 'As the soul of Euphorbus' (says Meres) 'was thought to live in Pythagoras, so the sweet, witty soul of Ovid lives in

---

\* 'Palladis Tamia,' printed at London in 1598. The testimony of Meres is the more valuable because from his reference to Shakspeare's 'Sugred Sonnets among his private friends,' which were not printed until long after, Meres must have been either one of those 'private friends' or well acquainted with them.

† Jonson's best comedy, 'Every Man in His Humour,' appeared, two years before Meres' book, in 1596, the year in which Shakspeare lost his only son.

‡ On the authority of Greene, in his 'Groatsworth of Wit,' published in 1592, in which the line—

'O tiger's heart wrapped in a woman's hide !' (3 *Hen.* VI. i. 4)

is travestied into—'tiger's heart wrapped in a player's hide.' It is also supposed that the first part of 'Henry VI.' is alluded to by Nash in his 'Piers Penniless,' written the same year.

mellifluous and honey-tongued Shakspeare. Witness his "Venus and Adonis," his "Lucrece," his Sugred Sonnets among his private friends.'

The rapidity with which Shakspeare poured forth his wonderful conceptions, the meteor-like flight with which he emerged from the throng of his contemporaries, the endless profusion of his genius, the most consummate judgment and knowledge of his art and its requirements, combined with a luxuriant energy and a teeming imagination that seemed utterly inexhaustible, might well have provoked the wonder and envy of his less favoured rivals. Their most careless and irregular productions, thrown off under the pressure of necessity or on the impulse of passion, could not keep pace with the creations of Shakspeare, in whom the deliberate energy, the studiousness, the conscious reticence of the artist are as conspicuous as the fertility of his imagination and the impetuosity of his genius. 'In beauty,' says Lord Bacon, 'that of favor is more than that of color: and that of decent (becoming) and gracious motion, more than that of favor.' In the plays of the poet's contemporaries, it is the beauty of colour, of graceful and harmonious language; their stateliness never moves; the action never advances, or by fits and by intervals, like human mechanism. In Shakspeare, on the other hand, the action, like Nature, is ever advancing, never still; rapid, but imperceptible; 'like the summer grass—unseen, but crescent in its faculty.' Even in the feeblest of his plays—if such a term can be applied to them—this quality is remarkable. He gets over the ground with astonishing rapidity—an excellence lost to us, who read Shakspeare in the closet and never see him on the stage. He never loiters or lingers in some cool nook, or wastes his time over subordinate details, or turns out of the current to strand in muddy or shallow water, enamoured of his own wit or his own sublimity. But as he rushes straight on in a fuller, more rapid, and ever increasing volume, sparkling and dashing like a river, all sorts of colours, of sights and sounds, grave and gay, pathetic and joyous, glittering and transparent, dance along the surface; now gleaming fathoms deep to the bottom, now startling and now amusing, now freezing us with emotions of uncontrollable delight, now calling up tears from some sealed and unbroken deep within us.

That the judgment of his contemporaries, though often faulty, was not always at fault is clear from the notices illustrative of Shakspeare in the scattered literature of his times. It is certain that the greatness of his genius as a dramatist was recognised from the first. Greene would scarcely have warned his associates

of their approaching eclipse by this 'new Johannes Factotum,' alluding to the universality of the poet's genius, had Shakspeare's audience shown themselves indifferent to these his earliest productions, or slow in recognising their sterling merits. Nor would Meres have ventured to speak of Shakspeare in such high terms of admiration had not popular estimation guided and sanctioned his judgment. We have, besides, the admission of Chettle, a contemporary playwright, the friend of Greene, and editor of his 'Groatsworth of Wit.' In defending himself from his supposed share in Greene's malevolent insinuations, which had given just offence to Shakspeare, Marlowe, and others, Chettle says: \* 'With neither of them that take offence was I acquainted; and with one of them (Marlowe) I care not if I never be. The other (Shakspeare) whom at that time I did not so much spare as since I wish I had;—that I did not I am as sorry as if the original fault had been my fault, because myself have seen his demeanour no less civil, than he *excellent* in the quality he professes. Besides, divers of worship have reported his uprightness of dealing, which argues his honesty, and his facetious grace in writing that approves his art.' †

These testimonies alike to his genius and the spotless integrity of the poet's conduct, so different from that of most contemporary dramatists, are unimpeachable. The poet's worldly prosperity kept pace with his reputation. The occupation of an actor alone was a profitable one in those days, and with ordinary prudence was sure to lead, not only to competence, but to wealth. ‡ But with his occupation as an actor Shakspeare combined that of a successful and prolific dramatist; and the two together soon raised him from the condition of a needy adventurer in 1585 to that of a well-to-do possessor of lands and

---

\* 'Kind Hearts' Dream,' published in 1592.

† Euphuism all over.

‡ Thus, in Greene's 'Never Too Late,' in the interview between the player and Roberto (i.e. Greene), on the latter asking how the player proposed to mend Roberto's fortune—'Why, easily,' quoth he, 'and greatly to your benefit; for men of my profession get by scholars their whole living.' 'What is your profession?' said Roberto. 'Truly, sir,' said he, 'I am a player.' 'A player!' quoth Roberto, 'I took you rather for a gentleman of great living; for if by outward habit men should be answered (judged), I tell you, you would be taken for a *substantial man*.' 'So am I, where I dwell,' quoth the player, 'reported; able at my proper cost to build a windmill.' He then proceeds to say that at his outset in life he was fain to carry his 'playing fardel,' that is, his bundle of stage properties, 'a foot back; but now his show of 'playing apparel' would sell for more than 200*l*. In the end he offers to engage Greene to write plays for him: 'for which you shall be well paid, if you will take the pains.' We know from the sequel that though Greene was extravagant, and never to be trusted if paid beforehand, 'seldom he wanted, his labours were so well esteemed.' See the quotation in Dyce's preface to 'Works of Greene,' p. 20, ed. 1861.

houses.

houses.\* In 1597 he purchased *The Great House* at Stratford-upon-Avon, described as 'one messuage, two barns, two gardens, and two orchards, with appurtenances.' The same year his father, formerly in declining circumstances, applied for a grant of arms, and passed from the condition of a yeoman to that of a gentleman; and the same year he filed a bill in Chancery against the son of the mortgagee who unjustly detained Ashbies, the hereditary property of the poet's mother.† Next year the poet is assessed for a tenement in the parish of St. Helen's, Bishopsgate, valued at 5*l.*, and is asked by his friend Richard Quiney for the loan of 30*l.*

From this year, until 1602, when the fertility of his invention poured forth some of the grandest of his productions, and popular judgment placed him far above all his contemporaries, his progress to wealth and fame was equally rapid. In 1602 he purchased 107 acres of arable land in Stratford for the sum of 320*l.*, somewhat more than 1000*l.* in modern computation; five months after, in the same year, one Walter Getley surrendered a house to the poet in Dead Lane, Stratford; at Michaelmas term, William Shakspeare, gentleman, as he is now generally styled, bought from Hercules Underhill, for 60*l.*, a property consisting of a messuage with two orchards, two gardens, two barns, and their appurtenances. In May, 1603, when James I. came to the crown, a privy seal was granted by the king to his servants 'Laurence Fletcher, William Shakspeare, Richard Burbage, Augustine Philipps, John Hemmings, Henry Con-dell,' and the rest of their associates, 'to use and exercise the art and faculty of playing comedies, tragedies, histories, inter-ludes, morals, pastorals, stage plays, and such other, like as they have already studied, or hereafter shall use or study,' in their usual house, the Globe, or elsewhere within the king's dominions. And James, who was by no means the fool that posterity represents him to have been, showed his discrimination by

---

\* No account is to be made of the document which professes to describe Shakspeare as holding a share in the theatre as early as 1596. With that falls to the ground the whole modern hypothesis that as sharer or manager his time was employed in patching up the productions of other dramatists, older or contemporary, and fitting them for the stage. What with sonnets, poems, plays of his own, once a year, and acting in his own plays and those of his contemporaries, what room, occasion, need, or opportunity could Shakspeare have had for such an employment?

† In the grant he is called 'John Shakspeare, now of Stratford-upon-Avon, in the co. of Warwick, gent., whose parent, great-grandfather and late antecessor, for his faithful and approved service to the late most prudent prince Henry VII., of famous memory, was advanced and rewarded with lands and tenements given to him in those parts of Warwickshire, where they have continued by some descents in good reputation.'

frequently commanding Shakspeare's plays to be acted at court.\* In 1605 the poet added to his property at Stratford by purchasing the unexpired lease of the tithes of Stratford and the adjoining hamlets for the sum of 440*l.* sterling; in modern computation 1400*l.*

It is not known at what period he retired from the stage and settled finally in Stratford. By the spring of 1613 he had lost his father, his mother, and his only son. Two daughters remained: Susanna, married, in 1607, to Dr. Hall, a physician at Stratford; and Judith, married to a vintner named Quiney, of the same place, in 1616. During the last three years of his life notices of his purchases and employments become more rare. In 1613 the Globe Theatre was burnt, and it is gratuitously assumed that many of the poet's manuscripts perished in the flames. Had it been so, we should hardly have failed of finding some notice of such a disastrous loss in the preface and dedication to the first collected edition of his works. Nor, considering the poet's immature death, his various employments, and the number of his plays which have come down to us, is it probable that any considerable portion of his writings has perished.

The manner of his death is uncertain. His will, still preserved in the Prerogative Office, is dated March 25, 1616. The poet's handwriting, never very good, if we may judge from the few signatures that have been preserved, and fifty years more antiquated than that of Sir Thomas Lucy, is feeble, shaky, and imperfect; very little like what might have been expected from one whose practice in writing must have been considerable, and who had in his time filled many reams of manuscript. His death did not occur until the 23rd April following. It would seem, therefore, that his death was far from sudden; and this alone would suffice to invalidate the tradition, circulated forty-five years after, that the poet died of a fever contracted at a merry meeting with Drayton and Ben Jonson. His bust in Stratford Church, his portrait by Droeshout prefixed to the first folio edition of his works, and the whole tenor of his life, contradict altogether the supposition that the poet was intemperate. If the

---

\* In the account of 'The Revels at Court,' notices are found of the following: 'Othello,' 'Merry Wives of Windsor,' 'Measure for Measure,' 'Comedy of Errors,' in 1604; 'Love's Labour's Lost,' 'Henry V.,' 'Merchant of Venice,' twice in 1605; at Whitehall, 'King Lear,' which had already in 1608 passed through three editions; in 1611, 'The Tempest' and 'The Winter's Night's Tale.' In 1613, on the marriage of James's daughter Elizabeth with the prince-palatine, the representation of Shakspeare's plays furnished a great part of the entertainment; among them are 'The Tempest,' 'The Twins' Tragedy' (supposed to be the 'Comedy of Errors'), 'Much Ado about Nothing,' 'The Winter's Tale,' 'Sir John Falstaff,' 'Othello,' and 'Julius Cæsar.'

opinion of competent judges may be taken, the bust was executed from a cast taken after death. It was certainly coloured after life, and until it was painted over by Malone—a greater crime to Shakspeare's memory than Mr. Gaskill's destruction of the famous mulberry tree—it represented the poet exactly as he appeared to his contemporaries. The eyes were a bright hazel, the hair and beard auburn; the doublet was scarlet, covered with a loose black sleeveless gown. As in Droeshout's portrait, the forehead is remarkably high and broad; in fact, the immense volume of the forehead is its most striking feature. The predominant characteristic of the whole is that of a composed, self-possessed, resolute, and vigorous Englishman, of a higher intellectual stamp than usual, but not so far removed from the general national type as we should have been inclined to expect from his writings.

‘Of the several works of Shakspeare—plays and poems—there were prior to 1616 in circulation, in all, no fewer than between sixty and sixty-five editions. Some of these reached as many as six editions within a period of not more than twenty-one years. This argues of itself an extensive popularity, especially when we reflect on the small number of the reading public of his day. If we take the lowest estimate of the editions (sixty), and suppose each issue to have consisted of the lowest possible paying number (300 say), we should have in circulation no fewer than 18,000 copies of the productions of the great dramatist in print during his lifetime.’\* This ingenious computation applies only to the plays and poems printed before the *first* collected edition of Shakspeare's works in 1623. That folio contains thirty-six plays; one-half of these, so far as is known, never got beyond the footlights; and, therefore, we may presume, were printed by the editors of that volume from the author's manuscript. Among that number are to be found ‘Macbeth,’ ‘Timon of Athens,’ ‘Cymbeline,’ ‘The Tempest,’ all the Roman plays, ‘Twelfth Night,’ and ‘The Winter's Tale.’†

No

\* ‘Shakspeare, a Critical Biography,’ by Samuel Neil, p. 59.

† The following is a list of the 4to. and their various editions, before the folio of 1623. The letter *M* is prefixed to those mentioned by Meres.

*M* 1594. *Titus Andronicus*, entered at Stationers' Hall Feb. 6, 1594, first edition not known to exist; 2nd ed. 1600; 3rd ed. 1611.

1595. *Henry VI.*, Part III., 1595.

*M* 1597. *Romeo and Juliet*, 1597, 1599, 1609 *bis*?

*M* „ *Richard II.*, 1597, 1598, 1608 *bis*, 1615.

*M* „ *Richard III.*, 1597, 1598, 1602, 1605, 1612, 1621? 1622.

*M* 1598. *Love's Labor's Lost*, 1598.

*M* „ *Henry IV.*, Part I., 1598, 1599, 1604, 1608, 1613, 1622.

*Henry IV.*, Part II., 1600.

No collected edition of Shakspeare's dramatic works appeared until 1623, seven years after the poet's death. The volume was ushered into the world by two of his former dramatic associates, John Heminge and Henrie Condell, to whom in conjunction with Burbage, the famous actor, Shakspeare had left in his will '26s. and 8d. a piece to buy them ringes.\* But Burbage died on March 16, 1619;† and if, as is not improbable, he had been originally associated with Heminge and Condell in preparing Shakspeare's dramatic works for the press, his death before the appearance of the volume prevented his name from being joined with theirs in their glorious task. Not one word appears in Shakspeare's will as to the disposal of his papers and manuscripts, or of his shares in the theatres, if

1600. *Henry V.*, 1600, 1602, 1608.

M „ *Merchant of Venice*, 1600 *bis*.

M „ *Midsummer Night's Dream*, 1600 *bis*.

M? „ *Much Ado about Nothing*, 1600.

1602. *Merry Wives of Windsor*, 1602, 1619.

1603. *Hamlet*, 1603, 1604, 1605, 1611.

1605. *Lear*, 1608 *bis*.

1609. *Pericles*, 1609, 1611, 1619.

„ *Troilus and Cressida*, 1609 *bis*.

1622. *Othello*, 1622.

*Contention of York and Lancaster.*

Old plays: *Richard III.*, 1594; *Taming of a Shrew*, 1594, 1607.

\* 'And to my fellows, John Hemynges, Richard Burbage, and Henry Cundell, xxvj.s. viij.d. a piece, to buy them ringes.'

† Burbage, or Burbadge, according to Malone, was one of the principal sharers of the Globe and Blackfriars theatres. In a letter written in 1613 (Harl. MSS. 7002), the actors at the Globe are called *Burbadge's Company*. In Jonson's 'Masque of Christmas,' 1616, the year that is of Shakspeare's death, Venus, in the character of a deaf tire-woman, is made to say of Cupid: 'I could have had money enough for him, an I would have been tempted and have let him out by the week to the king's players. Master Burbage has been about and about with me, and so has old Master Hemings too; they have need of him.'—*Shaksp.* iii. 230, ed. 1803.

Heminge and Condell are said to have been printers as well as actors, but Malone thinks that there is no authority for this statement. Probably it arose from their connection with Shakspeare's printed works. At all events, had they been printers by occupation, it is reasonable to surmise that their names would have been found on the title pages of some of the earlier copies of Shakspeare's plays. All the payments made by the Treasurer of the Chamber in 1613, and subsequently, for plays performed at Court, are 'to John Heminge and the rest of his fellows' (Malone, *ib.* 234). In his will Heminge directs that if a sufficient sum cannot be raised from his ordinary chattels towards the payment of his debts, a moiety of the profits which he has 'by lease in the several playhouses of the Globe and Black-friars' shall be set aside for that purpose. In another legacy he says: 'I give and bequeath unto every my fellows and sharers, his Majesty's servants, which shall be living at the time of my decease, the sum of 10s. a piece, to make them rings for remembrance of me.' Heminge died in 1630.

Henry Condell, whose name appears in the privy seal of James I., 1603, in conjunction with those of Shakspeare, Burbage, and Heminge, died in 1627. Malone thinks that both Burbage and Heminge were natives of Shottery, near Stratford (*ib.* 233).

at

at the time of his death he possessed any. If Ward's statement be true that Shakspeare during the closing years of his life furnished annually two plays for the stage,\* if it be true that the poet's income was considerable, that he made no purchases of any moment after 1605, that he was besides in the very zenith of his fame and the most popular author of his times, it will be difficult to account for two things: how was it, if he sold the copyright of his plays to his fellows of the Globe and Blackfriars, that he was no richer in 1616 than in 1605? Or if he was richer, how did he dispose of his wealth? From the tithes which he had purchased at Stratford he derived an income of 120*l.* a year; not less than 400*l.* a year, according to our present computation. He was not careless or extravagant in his habits, had one daughter only, after 1607, and his wife dependent on his exertions. Did he then retain the copyright of his plays, in his own hands, during this later period of his life, intending to publish them himself, like his contemporary Ben Jonson? Or was he as indifferent to money as he is said to have been to literary fame? The former of these hypotheses is set at rest by the various documents produced by Mr. Halliwell and others, all of which go to show that the possession of the most transcendent genius is not incompatible with the virtues of economy, regularity, and despatch. His supposed indifference to literary fame finds no countenance in his writings, still less in the evidence of his contemporaries.† Thus we find Chettle apologizing to Shakspeare as one of those who had taken offence at the disparaging remarks of Greene in his 'Groatsworth of Wit,' to the publication of which Chettle had been instrumental. Again, Heywood in his 'Apology for Actors,' published in 1612, alluding to the trick of a publisher named Jaggard, who had brought out a copy of 'Venus and Adonis,' with two love epistles between Paris and Helen, under the general title, 'by Wm. Shakespere,' says, in reclaiming his property: 'I must necessarily resent a manifest injury done me in that work by [its] taking the

\* That Ward's statement was not very far wrong will appear from the following considerations:—Shakspeare wrote in all 37 plays, including 'Pericles.' Meres mentions 12 plays as existing in 1598. If to these be added 'Pericles' and the three parts of 'Henry VI.,' that would give 16; or 19 to be written in the seventeen years and few months following. From 1597 to 1605, or 1606, seven plays only, including the first sketch of 'Hamlet,' appear to have been published, five in 1600, one in 1602, and 'Hamlet' in 1603. Between 'Hamlet' and 'Lear' five years elapsed (1602-1607) without any entry of Shakspeare's writings at Stationers' Hall. Had he ceased writing all that time, or ceased to attract publishers?

† That Shakspeare permitted inaccurate copies of his plays to be circulated in print is one thing, to assume that he must have done so from indifference to literary distinction is another. Moreover, in his case, as in that of many others, literary fame was money, to which he was certainly not indifferent.

two epistles of Paris to Helen and of Helen to Paris, and printing them in the name of another (Shakespeare); which may put the world in opinion I might steal them from him; and he to do himself right hath since published them in his own name. But as I must acknowledge my lines not worthy his patronage under whom he hath published them, *so the author I know [was] much offended with Mr. Jaggard, that altogether unknown to him presumed to make so bold with his name.*' Such words are not compatible with Shakspeare's presumed indifference to the fate of his writings.

With these remarks we return to the consideration of the first folio and Shakspeare's connection with it.

It is a very handsome volume, on which no expense has been spared in respect either of paper or type. It consists of 962 pages in double columns, not including the dedication, preface, or introductory verses. Taking 60 as the average number of lines in a column, the lines in all would amount to 116,402. All circumstances considered, it was one of the most sumptuous and expensive works which up to that time had appeared from the English press in the English language. For size, costliness, and beauty, there had been few works like it; certainly no works of fiction. So far therefore as concerned expenses of this kind, Heminge and Condell had not shown themselves unmindful of what was due to Shakspeare's memory.\*

Nor in other respects had they shown themselves careless or inconsiderate in the execution of their task. 'It is not pretended even by those who have been most severe in condemning their labours that they omitted from their collection any genuine drama of Shakspeare, with the exception of 'Pericles.' Modern research from that time to this, sharpened with all the anxiety of achieving distinction which could not fail the man that discovered a single new play or even a few lines from the poet's pen, has added nothing to the list of the dramas as they have come down to us since the first edition by Heminge and Condell. Very few dramatic authors have been so fortunate in this respect; very few writings have been so much indebted to posthumous care. Supposing it were true that these editors admitted into their collection plays of doubtful authenticity, does any one imagine they would have done better if, like some of Shakspeare's more recent critics, they had rejected 'Titus Andronicus,' the three parts of 'Henry VI.,' or 'Henry VIII.'?† Or if, laying down a theory of

\* The sale of Foxe's 'Martyrs' was secured by government. Hollinshed's 'Chronicles' and the works of Sir Thomas More occupy the next place in size. Then came the bulky translations and histories of Grimstone, North, and others, generally published by Islip or Bill, the royal printers.

† 'Pericles' does not appear in the first folio.

their own as to what was or was not worthy of their great contemporary, they had exercised a principle of selection according to their own principles of criticism, would they have deserved so well of posterity as they have done? We are under infinite obligations to them for what they did; that obligation being no less than this—that whatever emanated from the poet's hand 'they would not willingly let die.' The work was a large one, and unusually costly. The poet's family could not undertake the task, and it is probable never would have done.\*

The editors' labours could scarcely have been other than disinterested. 'We have but collected them [the plays],' they say in their dedication of the work to the Earls of Pembroke and Montgomery, 'and done an office to the dead, to procure his orphans guardians; *without ambition either of self-profit or fame*: only to keep the memory of so worthy a friend and fellow alive, as was our Shakspeare.' Nor is there any reason for suspecting the sincerity of their statement. What pecuniary advantage was to be expected from so costly an enterprise? The impression of the book could not have been large, and when the expenses of publishers and printers had been paid, very little profit would remain for the editors; if, indeed, editors in those cases received any remuneration.

What motives then could they have for undertaking so responsible a task beyond that of friendship for the dead? As we have said, Shakspeare left no directions in his will touching the disposal of his writings. Were they then acting in their corporate capacity as managers of the Globe Theatre, or merely as personal friends of the deceased, guided solely by the dictates of personal affection? Why publish in their corporate capacity that which could bring them little or no corporate profit? Why divulge to rival theatres dramas of which the exclusive copyright and privilege of acting were so valuable? Their language is scarcely susceptible of any other than one plain and obvious interpretation. They say in their Dedication: 'Since your Lordships have been pleased to think these trifles something

---

\* The only person competent to the task was Dr. Hall, the physician, married to the poet's eldest and favourite child, Susannah. But he seems to have been wholly indifferent to the fame of his great father-in-law. Yet Dr. Hall was not an unlettered man.

Shakspeare's widow died in 1623, the year when the first folio appeared; Dr. Hall in 1635; his wife, Susannah, in 1649; their daughter Elizabeth, remembered with a legacy of 100*l.* in her grandfather's will, and afterwards Lady Barnard, in 1670. Judith, his other daughter (who signs but does not write her name), died in 1662; her husband some time later. Yet not one of them thought of recording a single fact or anecdote of their relative's life, or of preserving a scrap of his writing. Was it indifference or ingratitude? Or had Puritanism taught them to be ashamed of the name of Shakspeare?

heretofore,

heretofore, and have prosecuted both *them* and *their author*, living, with so much favour; we hope that they, outliving him, and he not having the fate, *common with some*, to be *executor to his own writings*, you will use the like indulgence toward them, you have done unto their parent.' And in their notice to the reader:—

'It had been a thing, we confess, worthy to have been wished, that the author himself had lived *to have set forth and overseen his own writings*. But since it hath been ordained otherwise, and he *by death* departed from that right, we pray you do not envy his friends the office of their care and pain to have collected and published them: and so to have published them, as where before you were abused with divers stolen and surreptitious copies, maimed and deformed by the frauds and stealths of injurious impostors that exposed (sold) them; even those are now offered to your view cured, and perfect of their limbs, and all the rest,\* absolute in their numbers,† as he conceived them: who, as he was a happy imitator of nature, was a most gentle expresser of it. His mind and hand went together; and what he thought he uttered with that easiness, *that we have scarce received from him a blot in his papers.*' ‡

Now these expressions certainly imply that Shakspeare had the right, common with others, of being the 'executor to his own writings.' They imply also that he had not parted with that right until he was surprised by an untimely death. Ben Jonson, like Shakspeare, wrote for the stage; like Shakspeare, he received money from the theatre for his dramatic writings; but this did not deprive Jonson of the copyright of his works, or prevent him from publishing his plays with dedications to various friends. It is then equally consonant with analogy, as with the expressions of Heminge and Condell, to infer that Shakspeare possessed the same right, and was as much at liberty to use it as Jonson; and careful consideration of the extracts already quoted will lead us to conclude that Shakspeare did intend not only to claim but to exercise that right. It were 'to have been wished that the author himself *had lived* to have set forth and overseen his own writings.' Would this expression have been employed had Shakspeare been so wholly indifferent to the fate of his works as is sometimes assumed? Would his friends have merely expressed a wish that he should have *lived* to superintend the publication of his own

---

\* That is, those which had never appeared in print before.

† I.e. complete and perfect. We might have suspected this Latinism had they not been actors accustomed to such phraseology.

‡ It is to this expression that Ben Jonson refers: 'I remember the players have often mentioned it as an honour to Shakspeare, that in his writing, whatsoever he penned, he never blotted out a line. My answer hath been,' &c. From the censure conveyed in Jonson's remark, it is obvious that he was not the author of this address, as some have surmised.

works, when upon the ordinary hypothesis such a wish would have been equally fruitless had his life been longer or shorter? Then again their expression, 'we *have* scarce received from him a blot in his papers,' seems to be incompatible with the notion that Heminge and Condell were speaking in the names of the Company, or were referring to their engagement with Shakspeare many years since when he commenced dramatist, and not to more recent and personal events.

This plain and obvious interpretation of their words is the most probable and the most consistent. Their meaning surely is, that Shakspeare had intended to collect and publish his own works, and to rescue them not only from oblivion but from the inaccuracies and deformities of careless and surreptitious copyists; that he had by him at the time of his death manuscripts of those plays which had never been printed, and some of the printed quartos; that he was employed in altering and enlarging or recasting the latter when death surprised him at his unfinished task; and on his death-bed, by his own directions, his papers were transferred to Heminge and Condell, to prepare for the press. That their statement is true in the main is undeniable; for from nobody except from Shakspeare could these editors have obtained the manuscripts of twenty original plays, of which no other copies are supposed to exist except in their edition, and those augmentations of the quarto copies which are found for the first time in their folio. Their credibility has been disputed, because whilst they inveigh against spurious copies of Shakspeare's plays, it has been asserted that their text is in many instances derived from the quartos. The statement incautiously made by Malone has been repeated from critic to critic. But all they really say is, that whereas people had been 'abused with *divers* stolen and surreptitious copies'—an assertion for which there was abundant evidence, without supposing that they intended to condemn *all* the printed copies. Considering the total wreck and devastation of many early dramatic works, their statement might be literally true, and yet not be aimed at *any* one of the quartos which have come down to us.\*

If the explanation of Heminge and Condell's words, as here suggested, be the true one, sufficient reason will appear why the text of the quartos should sometimes be reproduced exactly in the folio and sometimes be widely departed from. That great inaccuracies should be found in the type—that words and lines should have been transposed and make nonsense of that which

---

\* Thus, of the 'Hamlet' of 1603, only two incomplete copies are supposed to exist; of the edition of 1604 only three; of the 'Lear' of 1605 one only; of 'The Taming of the Shrew,' one only.

was sense before—will not show that the editors' account of their labours is untrue or fraudulent, but that either they did not superintend the press or were unskilful in the mysteries of typal corrections. Probably both: they were plain men who had their own occupations to attend to, and when they had consigned their precious deposit to the printer's hands, they might naturally think that their task was ended, and they had fulfilled their debt of 'gratitude both to the living and the dead.'\* Such, we fear not, will be the verdict of those who judge their labours impartially.

This folio was ushered into the world, according to the prevailing fashion, by commendatory verses from the pens of Ben Jonson † and others. It is divided into three parts, with distinct pagination. The first contains the twelve Comedies, beginning with 'The Tempest' and ending with 'The Winter's Tale'; the second the *Histories* (as they are here called), commencing with 'King John' and ending with 'Henry VIII.'; the third the twelve Tragedies, beginning with 'Troilus and Cressida,' which is not paged, as if its insertion were an afterthought, and ending with 'Cymbeline.' What authority the editors had for this arrangement, or by what principles they were guided in their selection,

\* If Shakspeare's handwriting was at all like his signature, it was by no means easy to decipher. If we may speak dogmatically upon such slender proofs as we now possess, he learnt to write after the old German text-hand then in use at the grammar school of Stratford. It was in this respect fifty years behindhand, as any one may see by comparing Shakspeare's signature with that of Sir Thomas Lucy, Lord Bacon, or John Lilly. The wonder is how with such a hand he could have written so much.

† The fact is important; for it at once disposes of an hypothesis started of late, that Jonson, and not Shakspeare, was the author of 'Henry VIII.' Is it at all likely that Jonson would have allowed one of his own plays to be inserted in this volume as Shakspeare's without any remonstrance? Or supposing that it was composed in a sort of literary partnership by the two dramatists, would Jonson have failed to notice a fact so agreeable to his vanity? Leonard Digges, a poet who composed two copies of verses, one prefixed to the first and the other to the second folio, explicitly refutes the notion that Shakspeare either joined in such strange partnerships, or borrowed scenes from his predecessors or contemporaries:—

'look thorough  
This whole book, thou shalt find he doth not borrow  
One phrase from Greeks, nor Latins imitate,  
Nor once from vulgar languages translate:  
Nor plagiary-like from others glean;  
Nor begs he from each witty friend ancess  
To piece his acts with.'

The same writer insists on the great superiority of Shakspeare in popular attraction to Jonson:

'Let but Falstaff come,  
Hal, Poins, the rest, you scarce shall have a room  
All is so pestered (crowded). Let but Beatrice  
And Benedick be seen;—lo, in a trice  
The cockpit, galleries, boxes, all are full.'

it

it is not now possible to discover. It is clear that the order of the plays was not determined by the dates of publication. Had Messrs. Heminge and Condell thought of ascertaining the strict chronological order of the plays, they would have furnished us with a clue to the solution of many difficulties, and contributed a most important chapter to the literary history of the poet. For this we have unhappily no sufficient evidence. No two critics can agree precisely on this perplexing question. The arrangement which commends itself to the historical research or critical taste of one inquirer is unceremoniously set aside by his successors as preposterous or untenable. It might have been supposed that as Shakspeare wrote for a livelihood, as soon as one drama was composed he would dispose of the copyright to some theatrical company, and the publication of the play or its entry at Stationers' Hall would have assisted the inquirer in determining the date of its composition, especially as the poet's productions were eagerly sought after. But even this evidence is not wholly reliable. Meres mentions the Sonnets in 1598, though they did not appear in print until 1609. Of 'The Two Gentlemen of Verona,' also alluded to by Meres, no copy is known to exist prior to that of the folio in 1623. The earliest editions of 'The Midsummer Night's Dream' and 'The Merchant of Venice' are of 1600.\* But although the editors of the folio did not trouble themselves with adopting any strict chronological arrangement, it may be asserted as a *general* truth that the Comedies belong to the earlier period of Shakspeare's life, the Histories to his maturer years, and the Tragedies, especially the Roman plays, to the succeeding epoch. In other words, whilst 'Hamlet' (as we now have it), 'Lear,' 'Macbeth,' 'Othello,' 'Timon of Athens,' and the Roman plays, belong to the reign of James I., the Histories and most of the Comedies, with the exception of 'The Tempest,' were composed in the reign of Elizabeth.† Born and disciplined in the vigorous, passionate, but practical age of the Tudors, the genius of the poet took a wider range and sublimer flight when the accession of the Stuarts brought the nation into more familiar contact with the great problems of nature and the inscrutable destiny of man. Until the close of the sixteenth century he had failed to put forth all his strength; it was perhaps scarcely known to himself. Flashing with wit and liveliness, inventive, prolific, and versatile, the quaint, the dry, the humorous, the exceptional, were irresistibly attractive to a temperament as yet

\* As they are entered the same year at Stationers' Hall it is unlikely that they should have been printed before.

† 'Titus Andronicus' is Roman only in name, the treatment and colouring are Italian.

unsteeped in affliction, that 'doffed the world aside and let it pass.' For the world had upon the whole used the poet kindly—laughed at the sallies of his wit, lent itself with childlike docility to the practical jokes and endless humour of Falstaff, or shed happy and complacent tears over the sorrows of Romeo and his Juliet. Rarely, with the exception of 'Richard II.,' had the genius of Shakspeare travelled into the regions of the sublime and mysterious. In no instance, until the appearance of 'Hamlet' in 1603, had he attempted to show how closely this world of sight merges on the confines of the spiritual, or how there is more than the measured philosophy of mere motives to determine the fate and actions of mankind. Gradually the veil was uplifted; the narrow sphere of the visible—sufficing at one time for all the poet's sympathies; at one time an inexhaustible fund for his keen perception of human passions and eccentricities—was gradually enlarged; and nature presented itself to his eyes in the fulness of its strength and the extremity of its weakness. Sadder and more solemn grows the poet's vision; the humorous and the comical seldom find a place in his maturer productions; but instead of them the omnipresence, the omnipotence (as it were) of evil. Latent infirmity within, dogged, encouraged, and lured to its destruction by invisible wickedness without; momentary weakness trammelling up in its never-ending train gigantic consequences; Heaven holding out no relief, no sign, to oppressed innocence; virtue dragged from its height; valour in Macbeth stooping to crime; honour and fidelity in Othello ignoble victims to bat-like suspicion; generosity betrayed in Timon to selfishness; grand resolutions the fool of accident in Hamlet:—these are the themes of his maturer powers. If the poet still deals with the exceptional and uncommon—and that in the mind of Shakspeare is of the essence of tragedy—it is no longer the exceptional or eccentric in humours, manners, diction, taste, but of intellect, imagination, and passion. The subtlest forms of insanity striking its thin and poisonous fibres into the strongest reason, sapping by unseen and unconscious degrees the noblest intellectual faculties, warping the purest affections to its own masterless bias; the broad clear daylight of the mind, now overcast, now yielding to darkness, until it succumbs to total eclipse; the light alternating with the shade; the thin edge separating sanity from insanity; the various shapes and tricks of moodiness, from the dreaminess of unnatural calm, to the frantic rage of Lear and his heart-broken sorrow: these are the scenes on which Shakspeare dwells in the latter epoch of his life, and has described with inimitable power, insight, and fidelity.

Morning and night meet, as in Nature, in the poet's writings  
—the

—the comic and the tragic. In the full flush and luxuriance of his powers he rises upon us bright, lively, and jocund as the dawn; we know not where he will lead us in the abundance of his poetical caprice, what stores of mirth and wanton wiles, what brilliant and ever-changing hues will sparkle, dazzle, and allure us in his ambrosial course. But that bright morning—unlike the morning of many of the poet's contemporaries—goes down in a solemn and glorious sunset, canopied with clouds of gold and purple.

For the plots of his comedies Shakspeare was chiefly indebted to French and Italian novelists; for his histories to Hall and Hollinshed; and for his classical plays to the 'Lives of Plutarch,' translated by North, and to such versions of the classical authors as had appeared in the earlier part of the sixteenth century. Old English authors, plays, chronicles, and ballads furnished him with the groundwork of his tragedies; and this readiness of the poet to lean on the invention of others, however feeble and meagre, rather than rely on his own superior resources for the framework of his plays, has often been quoted as an instance of his carelessness, or at best of his unwillingness to venture upon untrodden ground. He preferred to use the wonderful superstructure of his genius on incidents already familiar to his audience, trusting to his power of investing them with a new character, a more profound or more lively significance, than, like many of his contemporaries, owe his popularity to the horror, the extravagance, the involution, or the novelty of his story. But may not the true solution of this hankering after old and established facts and traditions be found in Shakspeare's intense realism? He had a profound reverence—not Aristotle more so—for everything that carried with it the stamp of popular recognition. His strongest convictions, the highest dictates of his taste and feelings, are not always proof against this 'settled purpose of his soul.' He clung to it with an intense earnestness, as if to abandon it was to commit himself to a sea of doubt and perplexity—a wandering maze without a footing. To Bacon it was enough that any theory, any opinion, any fact should be generally accepted to be unceremoniously rejected. 'A mixture of a lie doth ever add pleasure'; and if truth itself were to become popular, it must be plentifully alloyed with falsehood.\* The perfect self-confidence of Bacon, who at sixteen passed judgment on Aristotle, as barren and unfruitful, might set him above the necessity of any such fixed points. But

\* Or, as Bacon pithily expresses it: '*Auctoritas pro veritate, non veritas pro auctoritate sit*' (p. 105).

then

then Bacon's vision was limited ; his mind and attention, earth-fixed and bound up in the investigation of material laws, were in no danger of wandering and being lost in the regions of infinite space, as the eye glanced 'from Heaven to earth, from earth to Heaven.' His ethical creed might have been comprised in the words, 'Man delights not me, nor woman either.' But Shakspeare, with stronger, wider, kindlier sympathies, as untrammelled by systems as Bacon, working out for himself, in solitude and unassisted, as true a method of inquiry, as profound an observer as Bacon, as convinced as he of a divine order underlying and overlapping the seeming confusions of this world, dreaded quite as much as Bacon could do the danger of mistaking for realities the dreams of his own phantasy. So, wiser than Lord Bacon, and more truly philosophical, instead of despising popular belief, instead of ignoring it, as if it had no foundation except in falsehood, Shakspeare accepted it, probed the foundation on which it rested, brought into clearer light the half or whole truths enveloped in it, and gave form and coherent meaning to the confused and incoherent creeds of mankind.

Perhaps also to one who carved out for himself a wholly untrodden path like Shakspeare, who had little of the countenance of the learned or the confidence of rules and systems to support him, a fixed faith somewhere was the more indispensable. He was living in a sceptical age, when the freshness of faith and that confidence in the rising glories of Protestantism, which had inspired the poetry of Spenser, were fast dying out. Many had relapsed into Romanism, many had fallen into atheism ; the narrow creed of Puritanism could not accommodate itself to the larger sympathies and growing intelligence of the age. It viewed with the utmost consternation and alarm divines like Hooker securely trespassing beyond the pale of its doctrinal conventionalism, and philosophers like Bacon poring over 'the book of God's works,' as a derogation to the 'book of God's word.' Sympathizing with Romanism and Protestantism so far as they were human, Shakspeare could not be wholly satisfied with either. There was something deeper than either, perhaps common to both. And whilst the creeds of neither are distinctly enunciated in his writings, whilst neither can claim him as an especial advocate, both recognize in him a sincere and profound religious element, distinct, positive, permeant through his writings ; not thrust forward to catch applause or gild a popular sentiment, but a pure, dry vestal light, equally free from fanaticism on one side and from infidelity on the other.

Unfixed, unsettled in their faith, the men of the poet's days looked uneasily at the progress of inductive philosophy ; at its bold innovations,

novations, its new tests, its contempt for antiquity, its hatred of Aristotle. How could the faith hold its ground against the invasion of science? How could men immersed in the contemplation of second causes recognize their sole dependence upon Him who is the first cause? Philosophy might assure them that the province of revelation and the province of science were distinct—that philosophy was as remote from divinity as the terrestrial is from the celestial globe. But the divine felt, and felt truly, that it was not a question of distinct and incommensurate jurisdiction; not whether the field of science might be occupied with earnest and hardy inquirers, and the field of divinity be cultivated in the authorized mode; but how far was it likely or possible, that men who had been rigidly trained to one method of investigation, who deferred to one tribunal, from which they admitted no appeal in matters of science and material utility, could or would divest themselves of these ingrained habits, when not science but faith was concerned.\* So then, as now, the question was, How shall religion stand before the new philosophy? How shall reason be reconciled with revelation? For this neither divine nor philosopher could discover the true solution. What help may be found for it in Shakspeare, we will not undertake to say. But if the clearest and the largest transcript of human experience can contribute to that solution, that help is to be found in the dramatist. The data with which he has supplied us are as sound, as certain, as unerring a basis for axioms and deductions, as those of the inductive philosophy; like them, are founded not on notions, but observation, and have been gathered from as wide a circle of experience. We argue, and we justly argue, upon the characters in a play of Shakspeare, or any sentiment propounded by them, or their exhibition of passions and feelings, not as the poet's creations, but as historic realities. In reading or studying his dramas, we feel that we are surrounded not by phantoms, but by flesh and blood closely akin to ourselves; and no hard deduction of logic, no persuasion of any kind, can make us feel or think otherwise. They may be Romans, or Celts, or Italians, or Jews, living in the dark backward and abyss of time which we cannot realize, compacted of influences long since extinguished; yet whatever they are they are men, to us more real than those who pass before our eyes, or even tell us their own histories. For if our most intimate friends, throwing away all self-restraint and self-respect, were willing to turn themselves inside out for our inspection, neither would they be able to do it nor we to read

---

\* Bacon anticipated the evil; see pref. to 'Organon' p. xevi.; anticipated, but no otherwise provided against it, except by pointing out the danger.

or understand the confused characters we should find there without some interpreter. We should be just as much unable to distinguish the writing, as the inartistic mind does a natural landscape, or an unscientific one a complex piece of machinery. Shakspeare supplies the scene, supplies the machinery, and gives with them the interpretation; not from his own conceit or any preconceived theory, not because he has any certain scientific bias or philosophic views of art, which he is desirous to work out and set before us in their concrete forms, but because he 'held the mirror up to nature.' That '*nuditas animi*' which Bacon considered indispensable for the acquisition of truth, with which the severest study must begin and end, Shakspeare possessed more than most men. Unlike the dramatists from the University, who came to their task with imperfect notions of the rules of classical antiquity; unlike Ben Jonson, who thought that a dramatist must be dieted by system, and feed and fast by regimen, to attain perfection, it was the reproach of Shakspeare that he owed nothing to art and all to nature. The reproach was unfounded; but if it be meant that he brought to his task no dry theories, no poetical dogmas, no personal prejudices to interfere with his strict and rigid observance of nature, the remark is just. No poet is more impersonal; no poet mixes up with his most admired and successful creations less of his personal predilections. It is impossible to select any one character from the whole range of his *dramatis personæ* of which it can be said, this was a favourite with the poet. In the full torrent of his wit or the excitement of his eloquence, in the successful exhibition of retributive villany or the defence of injured innocence, he stops at the due moment, never overstepping the modesty of nature. The scene closes, the character is dropped, the moment the action requires it; and however just or true or exquisite the conception, it falls back into the void of the past from which it had been summoned, often to the greatest regret of the reader and spectator, but with no apparent regret on the part of the poet. Artists and painters in general have their likes and their dislikes, as strong but not always the same as the admirers of their works; they can rarely work successfully without such prejudices. It is natural for the artist to fall in love with his own creations, and natural that what he loves and all admire, he should repeat in various shapes again and again. But in Shakspeare this never happens. His is the truthfulness and dispassionateness of a mirror. And if the unfeeling, the erring, and the vicious are not unmitigated monsters in his pages, it is because they are human; not because his sympathies would have concealed their deformities. It is because even the toad, ugly and venomous, wears yet a precious jewel in its

its head. The utmost vice in this life is not beyond redemption; the utmost virtue not without its flaws.

But it may be thought that these remarks are inapplicable to those creations of the poet which lie beyond the pale of human experience; such as the witches, fairies, and ghosts introduced into some of his plays. Yet it is worth observing how scrupulous even in these cases the poet is of adhering to popular tradition. Only, as popular credulity is always falling before that *idolon* (against which Bacon protests), of determining the unseen by the seen, the spiritual by the material, Shakspeare is on his guard against this error. He raises the vulgar witches, with their popular familiars, the cat, the toad, the storm, and the sieve, into spirits of evil, surrounded by spiritual terrors and endowed with spiritual agencies. The fairies have persons, occupations, passions that are not human, nor are they susceptible of human attachments. The same may be said of Ariel and Caliban; the one above, as the other is below humanity. The habits of each are solitary, not social, and both are alike unsusceptible of friendship or gratitude. The ghost of Hamlet's father is another instance of the poet's wonderful mastery in uniting the vulgar and sublime. How was the poet to combine in the same personality the earthly father calling for revenge with the disembodied spirit—the substantial with the unsubstantial—the 'sans eyes, sans teeth, sans every thing,' with voice, motion, armour? But the popular notion of purgatorial fire, and the half earthly, half unearthly creed of the Middle Ages, on which he readily laid hold, were a great assistance. Here too the genius of Shakspeare delights in triumphing over the union of impossibilities. The ubiquity of the ghost is so harmonized with his local personality, that the reader detects no incongruity in the composition. Besides, when he is first discovered, as the sentinels tramp up and down the parapet of the castle, with the sea roaring fathoms down at the foot, who can tell whether the Ghost comes striding along close by in the impalpable air, or on the firm ground? That Shakspeare should have acted this part we can well believe, for none but he could have conceived how a spirit would or should talk. The characters least within the bounds of human probability are Falstaff and Richard III.: the former as the ideal humourist, the type and catholic original of those eccentricities, which Shakspeare's contemporaries tried to draw, but could not; the other as the type of what sixty years of intestine fever and bloodshed must produce—the poisonous fungus generated out of political, social, moral anarchy, all combined. Both are what Bacon would have called the *monads* of nature.

Shakspeare, then, had no idealisms which he wished to present in visible forms beyond those which would be found in the exact representation of nature. If critics have since professed to discover in his works the profoundest revelations of art and science, that is because those arts and sciences are found in the facts presented us by the poet, and not because they were consciously present to his mind.

It is this continued freshness and nudity of mind, ever open to the impressions of experience, that prevents him from falling into that mannerism or unity of style and treatment, into which, with his single exception, all other poets and artists have fallen. His mind is never stationary; he never contemplates his subject from one point of view exclusively; he is not a narrator, a spectator *ab extra*, or an epic poet, but he is intensely dramatic; that is, his own personality is sunk entirely in that of his creations. In this respect he is superior to any poet that ever lived, not merely in the complete embodiment of the characters he introduces, but in their number and variety. Every known region of the globe is laid under contribution; Greeks, Romans, Italians, French, Englishmen, Asiatics, Egyptians; ancient, modern, mediæval times. Every rank, every profession, every age and condition of life passed before his eyes;—once seen never to be forgotten; once stored up in his memory, as in a treasure-house, to be summoned forth, not as pale colourless spectres—

‘What story coldly tells, what poets feign  
At second hand and picture without brain,  
Senseless and soulless shows’—

but with their full complement of humanity, action, thought, feelings, words, infinite shades of expressions and emotions. More true also to nature than other dramatists, Shakspeare's characters are never the mouthpiece of uniform sentiments, passions, or temptations; they are not the living embodiments of abstract qualities which never vary and never grow. The masterless passion is shadowed off by endless varieties and transitional modes of feeling. It is deposed from its seat by inferior motives, and restored when the due time comes. The brave are not always brave; the cruel not always unmerciful. Though the unity of the character is never lost sight of, it is not a stagnant uniformity, but grows and develops with the action, and is acted on by the circumstances of the play or the influences of others. As in the infinite variety of nature, form, colour, smell, contour, grow harmoniously and simultaneously, and all from the original organism of the plant—are not, as in human mechanism, the result of successive efforts—so it is in Shakspeare.

speare. The unity of the character is never lost in its diversity; the widest apparent divergence from its primitive conception and outset may be traced back, step by step, with the accuracy of a natural and necessary law. Action, speech, expression, the colour and metre of the diction, grow out of the original unity of the character, and yet mould themselves with plastic ease to every diversity of its sentiments and feelings.

It is this ever-varying posture of mind, this flexibility in the style, structure, and colour of his language, adapting itself to every movement of the thought, that makes it so difficult to determine on any common measure of the poet's mind, or, beyond the general power they exhibit, to determine what is genuine in his plays and what is not so. Conclusions derived from some supposed type of style and metre must not be trusted. How can they be, unless we shall have ascertained beforehand in any given case that they are incompatible with the poet's purpose or conception? Homer felt no difficulty in putting heroic words and heroic hexameters in the mouth of Thersites; a catalogue of the ships falls into the same rhythm with the anger of Achilles. The common soldier, or the barbarous Thracian, utters his thoughts in as choice Greek, as musical and as sonorous as *Œdipus* or *Agamemnon*. But with Shakspeare the style and metre are moulded by the thought, and not the thought by the metre. Common every-day thoughts fall into prose; *Dogberry* and *Sir Toby Belch* rise not into the solemnity of verse. *Falstaff* and the humours of *Eastcheap* are the prose and the comedy of *Henry IV.* and the palace.

That such a writer as this could not fail of being popular with his countrymen we may well believe, and the evidence that he was so is full and unquestionable. It is clear from the repeated references made to him in the writings of contemporary poets. It is clear from the influence he exercised upon the stage; for however inferior subsequent dramatists might be to the great original, it requires very little reading to discover how much in style, composition, regularity of structure, delineation of character, they were indebted to his example. It is clear from the number of his dramas, from the repeated editions of them during his lifetime, from the competition of the booksellers to secure the right of publishing them, from the admiration, not to say the envy, of those to whom theatrical audiences were far less indulgent. Nor was this popularity purchased by vicious condescension to the popular tastes:—

‘With such a show  
As fool and fight is.’

The

The occasional coarseness of Shakspeare is the coarseness of strong Englishmen, who 'laughed and grew fat' over jokes which might shock the delicacy and moral digestion of more refined ages, or more sensitive and sentimental races, but did them no more harm mentally than their tough beef dressed with saffron and ambergris, or their hundred-herring pies, or tainted red-deer pasties, interfered with their bodily health. Think of an age that mixed sugar with its wines, and frothed its sack with lime; Homeric in its achievements and in its appetites, in its tastes and its enterprises! But Shakspeare is refinement itself as compared with some of his contemporary and with most succeeding dramatists. He does not rely for interesting his hearers on the display of moral or mental horrors, or questionable *liaisons*, in which so much of the ancient Italian fiction abounded. If we except 'Pericles' and 'Titus Andronicus,' there is throughout his plays an absence of the monstrous and the horrible; and the poems of the poet are wholly employed in delineating action and character, either within the ordinary reach of probability, or sanctioned by historical evidence.

But his popularity is also evidenced by his extraordinary profusion. For six-and-thirty years successively he kept possession of the stage, and riveted his claims to popularity by producing seven-and-thirty dramas within that period: not of mere farce or incident—not hasty, incorrect, and tumultuous—but as much superior to the dramas of others in their ease and elaboration as for still higher qualities of genius. Not one of these plays was reproduced in another form: scarcely a word or sentence in any of the thirty-seven can be traced to other sources. This is as wonderful as anything else in Shakspeare. Other poets 'toil after him in vain.' Tears and laughter, the inseparable attendants of surpassing genius, are equally and at all times, and in all degrees, at Shakspeare's command. The wit of Dogberry and the sailors in 'The Tempest,' the wit of kings in 'Henry IV.' and 'Love's Labour's Lost,' the wit of Falstaff and of Hamlet; native wit, philosophic wit, the wit of the fat and of the lean man; wit in the half-glimmerings of dawning reason, and of reason trenching upon madness; the wit of temperaments like Mercutio's, of toppers like Sir Toby Belch, of mischief like Maria and Cleopatra, of confident villany like Richard III.—all these, and many more, flow from him with inexhaustible fertility. Nor is the pathetic and the tragic exhibited under less multiplicity of forms. Nor is it less sudden and meteoric than the wit. The reader is taken by surprise. It flashes on him with the suddenness and vividness of an electric flash. He is  
prostrated

prostrated and melted by it, before he is aware. Whether the reader be prepared for what is coming, whether the poet in the consciousness of his might forewarns him that he may be forearmed, or whether he darts on him by surprise, the result is the same, it is inevitable. In Falstaff's ridiculous exploits, though the whole scene is inexpressibly comic, the burst, 'By the Lord, I knew ye, as well as he that made ye,' &c., is as sudden and surprising as if it had flashed upon us out of the darkness—out of the most serious scene; as in 'Lear,' whilst every fibre of the heart is quivering with irrepressible emotion, one expression in his dying speech, 'Pray you, undo this button,' standing conspicuous in its commonplaceness against the rest, sweeps away the little self-restraint that remains to us with the suddenness and overwhelming force of a torrent.

Yet as if the ordinary construction of the drama did not furnish employment sufficient for his unbounded energies;—as if he could not crowd his conception and his characters within the allotted range, Shakspeare is fond at times of multiplying difficulties. For it is to this tendency that must be attributed the double action in some of his plays. The principal action has its shadow in some contemporaneous and subordinate one. In 'Hamlet,' avenging his father, is another Hamlet; in 'Lear,' exposed to filial ingratitude, is a Glo'ster equally ill-treated and betrayed by his bastard son—the moral and the natural bastardy. Lesser examples may be seen in 'Taming the Shrew,' and in Falstaff personating Henry IV., a comic presentment of the serious interview between that king and his son;—as if the poet mocked his own tragedy by comedy, or lowered it by an obtrusive parallelism of inferior scale and interest. What writer besides Shakspeare would have ventured on so hazardous an experiment? Yet always certain of his victory, always sure of producing whatever effect he desires to produce, he is indifferent to any waste or profusion of his powers. How, indeed, could there be waste where the wealth was inexhaustible?

And as the theme of the poet extends to the furthest verge of human experience, and sounds all the surging depths of human consciousness, Shakspeare is equally master of the many moods and voices in which that consciousness expresses itself. He is dramatic as in 'Henry IV.,' or epic as in 'Richard II.,' or lyric as in 'Romeo and Juliet,' melodramatic in 'Titus Andronicus,' farcical in the 'Comedy of Errors,' subjective and philosophic in 'Hamlet,' a master of scholastic logic in Pandolph, of rhetoric in Mark Antony, pastoral in Perdita, elegiac in 'Cymbeline.' His songs are unapproachable; there is nothing like them, or near them in the whole range of English literature, abundant

as that literature is in this species of composition. And the beauty of these songs consists not merely in the sentiment or the exquisite adaptation of the expression, or their display of broad and obvious feelings, as opposed to those subtleties and metaphysical conceits of a later age, or in their musical structure—all of which they have in perfection—but also in their appropriateness to place and occasion. As contrasted also with later lyrics, the impersonality of Shakspeare is as strictly preserved in his songs as in other parts of his dramatic writings.

It seems then absurd to suppose that such a poet wrote in vain for the nation—that he was not appreciated in his own day. Such insensibility would have been a national disgrace and misfortune—a proof that Shakspeare was not an Englishman, or had materially failed in understanding his countrymen; the only race he did not understand. But, putting aside the praises of Ben Jonson and others, how stand the facts? The folio of 1623 was followed by the folio of 1632, and with it the sonnet in Shakspeare's praise by Milton. The poem entitled 'Allegro' represents Shakspeare as the favourite, not merely of the Puritan poet, but as the general favourite of the stage. It is Milton that accuses Charles I. of making Shakspeare the companion of his solitary hours. One hears again of the memorable Hales of Eton, of the accomplished Lord Falkland, of the favourite Cavalier poet Sir John Suckling, discussing at their social meetings the merits of Shakspeare as compared with the Greek dramatists. Of Selden, Chief Justice Vaughan, and Lord Falkland, this anecdote is preserved, 'that Shakspeare had not only found out a new character in his Caliban, but had also devised and adapted a new manner of language for that character.'\*

For though Shakspeare is familiar with all forms of human experience—ranges at will through all the provinces of history—reinvests with life the most confused, apathetic, shrivelled traditions, and compels Time 'to disgorge his ravine;' be it Lear or Macbeth, Cæsar or Cymbeline, he is never antiquarian. The presentment of his characters is essentially English; their stage is the 16th century. This is the meaning of his anachro-

---

\* As Shakspeare was mentioned and studied by almost every poet and man of genius in succession from his own days until the Puritans for a time put a stop to dramatic representations, and refused to license dramatic writings, it is hard to say upon what grounds this supposed neglect of Shakspeare is founded. Jonson, Drayton, Suckling, Herrick, Milton, Dryden, Fuller, the wittiest of historians, and a host of others, are unimpeachable evidence of the uninterrupted popularity of Shakspeare: of no other poet can as much be said. Even Bacon, though he hated poets, and thought poetry was no better than *vinum dæmonum*, without mentioning Shakspeare by name, seems to allude to him in his 'Adv. of Learning,' p. 83; whilst his essay on 'Deformity' is little else than an analysis of Shakspeare's 'Richard III.'

nisms, the puzzle and the triumph of small critics. The whole range of past experience had been gathered up, not as broken remnants, to be pieced together by the laborious ingenuity of a learned mechanism—not to be flaunted in the eyes of readers and spectators as an ornament to be proud of—but fused and melted by the intense imaginations and lofty aspirations of the poet's times into the reach and limits of the present. The past appeared to the apprehension of that age as much related to itself, as much a part of the common humanity of Englishmen in the reign of Elizabeth, as the Armada itself, and the perilous rivalry of the two female sovereigns. To Ascham, Cicero and Demosthenes were not merely statesmen of all times, but of his own times especially—as much as Burghley and Walsingham, or even more so. The whole age was dramatic to the core. In set speeches, in conversation, in grave state papers, the mythical and the legendary were mixed up with the historical and the present, as if all were alike real, and all intimately blended with one another. The vivid imaginations of men supplied the connecting links and brought the picture home to the mind, instead of setting it off at greater distance, as is the tendency of modern criticism to do. The common ground of all was the supposed humanity of all; varying, indeed, according to time, climate, circumstances, but in all essentials one and the same with themselves and those around them. And this habit of self-identification with past events and principles, with ancient races and parties, with the same zeal and vehemence as they infuse into current politics, has ever been, as it was then, characteristic of Englishmen. If Shakspeare availed himself of this feeling, he did much to foster it. He is comparatively careless of the tiring-room of antiquity,—indifferent, like his age, to the niceties of archæological costume. Humanity is to him, wherever found, of all time, and equally at home to him in all its fashions; and though he never deals with abstractions, like Spenser, seldom idealizes like him, his realism rests on a broader basis than local manners, personal eccentricities, or historical minuteness. Whilst his Greeks, his Romans, his Italians, his ancient Britons, are true to their race, their country, and their times, and could never be transposed, as in other dramatists, without utter confusion to the whole meaning and conception of the poet, they are intelligible to us, because the poet makes us feel that, however remote they may be, they are of our own flesh and blood; of like passions, temptations, strength, and weakness. It may be said of his genius what Hamlet says of the ubiquity of his father's ghost, *hic et ubique*; the *ubique* is never disjoined from the *hic*; however wide the rays of his poetical fiction travel,

travel, they all converge in one point. Shakspeare is above all other men the Englishman of the 16th century.

Moreover, dramatic poetry, especially dramatic poetry of the Shakspearian drama, is the poetry of Englishmen: first, because it is the poetry of action and passion, woven out of the wear and tear of this busy world, rather than the poetry of reflection; and, secondly, because it is peculiar to Englishmen not merely to tolerate all sides and all parties, but to let all sides and parties speak for themselves; and to like to hear them. It is part of the national love for fair play, part of its intense curiosity and thirst for seeing things and men from all points of view and in all aspects, of preferring to look at things as they are, even in their nakedness and weakness, to any theories, or notions, or systems about them. Not only is the drama most pregnant with this variety, but no drama is ever successful that neglects it. The fair play in Shakspeare is scarcely less remarkable than the infinite range of his characters. There is no absolute villainy—no absolute heroism. He takes no sides; he never raises up successful evil merely for the pleasure of knocking it down, and gaining cheap applause by commonplace declamations against it. He pronounces no judgment; in most instances he commits his characters wholly to the judgment of the spectator. This judicial impartiality is another characteristic of the nation, that hates dogmatism in all shapes, in juries or in judges, in the pulpit or the senate.

In this respect Shakspeare, like Bacon, was guiding the top-most bent of the nation, and in one other especially:—

‘There is no art,’ says Sir Philip Sidney,\* ‘delivered unto mankind, that hath not the works of nature for his (its) principal object, without which they could not consist, and on which they so depend, as they become actors and players, as it were, of what nature will have set forth. . . . Only the poet disdaining to be tied to any subjection, lifted up with the vigour of his own invention, doth grow in effect into *another nature*; in making things either better than nature bringeth forth or quite anew; forms such as never were in nature, as the Heroes, Demigods, Cyclops, Chimæras, Furies, and such like; so as he goeth *hand in hand with nature*, not inclosed within the narrow warrant of her gifts, but freely ranging within the zodiac of his own wit. Nature never set forth the work in so rich tapestry as divers poets have done; neither with so pleasant rivers, fruitful trees, sweet smelling flowers, and whatsoever else may make the too much loved earth more lovely. Her world is brazen, the poet’s only silver and golden.’

Then he proceeds to say, in language no less solemn, true, and

\* ‘Defence of Poesy.’ Sidney died in 1586.

beautiful,

beautiful, that, as the skill of every artificer is manifested in his *idea*,\* 'or præconceit of the work and not in the work itself,' so the greatest of all idealists is the poet and the poet only. Now as this grand claim, by no mean poet, for the heroical and transcendental in poetry, constitutes the ablest defence of such writers as Spenser, and the best apology for the popular approbation of the stilted drama of Marlowe and Kyd, it is also the best exponent of the feelings of men like Sidney; men of all others who loved, and fought, and died for Gloriana, and carried the nobility, generosity, chivalry of the old Romance into the commonest events of hodiernal life. But when Sidney fell at Zutphen, the last if not the brightest star in this galaxy of men fell with him—the old age of Elizabeth was pestered with the intrigues and selfish plots of noblemen and gentlemen; the round table of Arthur was no more; 'the goodliest fellowship of famous knights' was all unsoldered. There was no one to exhibit in his own person the examples of that type so dear to Sidney and his contemporaries. Besides, the nation was settling down to the 17th century, and to those sterner questions which nothing but the grimmest realism could hope to understand and determine. The high but artificial standing of the earlier age could not hold out against the shock: would not, even if it had not degenerated with the Stuarts. Thus Shakspeare in his unheroism and in his realism was exhibiting to his contemporaries the growing tendency of his own age. The inflexible, almost cruel, impartiality with which he holds up to them the good and the evil, the weakness and the strength, of all men and all classes alike, the sure vengeance which overtakes misdirected but good intentions, equally as it overtakes crime, the Nemesis of extravagant affections, emotions, actions, passions, thoughts, expressions;—the assertion of a law and order in all things, as inexorable as the Fate of the Greek dramatist—which none can break and escape punishment—the world as God made it and not as men's passions, partiality, righteousness or unrighteousness would have it—the sun and the rain for the unjust as well as the just—innocence foiled as well as guilt at the moment of its triumph—mirth turned into sorrow—laughter in the midst of tears—light chequered with darkness everywhere—wisdom defeated by folly—manhood corrupted by youthful dissipation—the comic hand in hand with the tragic;—the drunken porter and the murdered king—the convulsive fool

\* So that charming pastoral—

'Come, live with me and be my love,'

with its transcendental images of 'coral clasp and amber studs,' describes what no one has ever realised in nature, but it has its existence as certain in the amorous imagination of the poet as the object to which it was addressed.

and the heart-broken father—earth gibbering whilst heaven is rent with ‘sulphurous and thought-executing fires’—fools and wits, innocent and guilty, high and low, kings and pickpockets, the proud and the mean, the noble and ignoble—this is the warp and woof—the tangled web of good and evil composing what men call the world, and set forth by Shakspeare to his contemporaries. With so broad and varied a theme as this—so terrible, pathetic, ridiculous, vulgar, and sublime, the heroic of Sidney is incompatible. Rather it shrinks into nothing on the comparison; and the life of the imaginary is less full of wonders than of the ordinary hero of every day.

One more characteristic has to be noticed which stamps Shakspeare especially as an Englishman, and an Englishman of the reign of Elizabeth: and this is the prominence given by him to his female characters, their variety, and the important part assigned to them in his dramas. It has been said that, if Shakspeare paints no heroes, the women are heroines. If in Spenser the knights fail to accomplish those enterprises which are accomplished for them by the other sex; if Una and Britomart and Belphebe are the guides and the advisers of their different champions; if male courage is unsexed except it be regulated by purest devotion to women; in Shakspeare, Imogen, Hermione, and Desdemona stand forth in shining contrast to their faithless, wavering, and suspicious consorts. But in Spenser woman is little else than ideal; she is too good for human nature’s daily food and daily infirmities. Shakspeare’s women are strictly real; their very infirmities, like the tears of Achilles, are not a foil, but an ornament to their perfections; their failings spring from the root of their virtues. The criticism which condemns Desdemona and Juliet is as monstrous as it is mistaken. The women in Shakspeare suffer as they suffer in the world and in real life, because, in following the true instincts of true nature, they fall sacrifices to the experience, the selfishness, the caprices of the stronger sex. If parents are careless and imperious like Brabantio, or impure and worldly like old Capulet and Polonius, Shakspeare saw too well that such muddy cisterns, hide their corruptions as they will, cannot prevent the subtle contagion of their own ill-doings from staining the pure fountains of their household. Youth pierces through their flimsy disguisings with a sharp and divine instinct wholly hidden from *their* purblind vision. With the exception of Lady Macbeth, there is no female character in Shakspeare which comes near the atrocities of Iago or Richard III. The fierce natural affection of the injured Constance excuses her occasional excesses; the weakness of Ann, like the palpitating bird, is not proof against the basilisk-like

power

power and fascination of Richard III. ; Miranda falls in love at first sight with a being she has dressed up in her own perfections ; even Lady Macbeth has steeled her nature above that of her sex in admiration and devotion to her husband. Look out upon the world, and the same is going on every day : woman complying with the law of her creation, and man transgressing his.

And as Shakspeare differs from previous dramatists in his conception and representation of the real, not the colourless ideal, of woman, he equally differs from Ben Jonson, from Beaumont and Fletcher, with their mere animal instincts and their coarser delineation of the purpose and destiny of woman. Nor is it merely in the purity, refinement, and feminine grace of his female characters that the great dramatist so far surpasses his contemporaries ; for 'The Virgin Martyr' of Massinger, and 'The Faithful Shepherdess' of Fletcher, though rare and unusual, have something of the same excellence ; but the woman's nature and instincts are never lost sight of by the poet. If faith, love, constancy, purity, are beautiful even in the abstract, they are more beautiful still in the concrete ; and the hardness of the abstract is rounded off when they are presented to us not as fixed and isolated qualities or all-absorbing influences, but in the tenderness, weakness, and alternations of flesh and blood. The heroism of strength may delight the hero-worshipper ; but the heroism of weakness is far more human and attractive. The faint resolve, springing forth as a tiny blade from unpromising ground—now seemingly contending unequally against the blast—now gaining unseen strength and vigour from the contest ;—the moral purpose exposed to the storm of passion and the inveiglement of temptation ; like a frail craft at sea—now hidden by the waves—now apparently foundering hopelessly—then rising to the storm—creating in the spectator the contending tumults of pity, hope, and fear—appealing to the strongest and inexhaustible sympathies in the hearts of men—these are the triumphs of the dramatic poet. And it is in this exhibition of mortal strength and weakness, whether in man or woman, that Shakspeare excels, even in his less complex characters ; whilst in the impersonation of a character of more complex elements, such as Cleopatra, any comparison of the great master with any writer of fiction, in ancient or in modern times, would be altogether absurd. What must that imagination have been that could conceive, or that power which could so perfectly delineate, three such types of woman-kind as Juliet, Desdemona, and Cleopatra ? Whose but his, who, without losing his own personality, seeing with other men's eyes, and feeling with other men's feelings, understood the uni-

versal

versal heart of man, and has become the tongue and voice of universal humanity?

But we must forbear. If there be one omission in the great dramatist, if we have one cause of complaint against him, it is his almost rigid, his Baconian, resolution not to look beyond the region of human experience: for to this remark we cannot consider his fairies, witches, and ghosts, his Ariel or his Caliban, as forming any exception. In his days, at all events, popular faith in these ultra-human creations accepted them as beings of this world. But, when we compare Shakspeare with Spenser; when we consider how brief is the interval separating him from Luther, how deeply and how recently the religious heart of England had been stirred; how all her noblest sons had associated trust in God with loyalty to their nation and their sovereign; we wonder why the poet should never have exhibited the influences of religious faith and resignation, or so cursorily or so coldly as scarcely to deserve the name. Men and women are made to drain the cup of misery to the dregs; but as from the depths into which they have fallen by their own weakness or the wickedness of others, the poet never raises them, in violation of the inexorable laws of nature, so neither does he 'put a new song' into their mouths, or any expression of confidence in God's righteous dealing. With as precise and hard a hand as Lord Bacon did he sunder the celestial from the terrestrial globe, the things of earth from those of heaven; resolutely and sternly refusing to look beyond the limits of this world, to borrow comfort in suffering and injustice from the life to come. Such expressions of faith might be out of place in 'Macbeth,' or 'Cordelia,' or 'Lear;' but we should have expected them in Richard II. and his queen, in Desdemona, and still more in Hamlet, who had been a student at Wittenberg. Yet Hamlet, who had pondered more than most men on the great questions of life and the destiny of man, when unexpectedly overtaken by death, has nothing more to say than those ominous words: 'The rest is silence!' Even the vindication of God's order and judgment, of which he is made the instrument, leaves him as darkling as it finds him. Must we then think that the godly spirit and faith of Luther had departed? that Protestantism had failed as well as Romanism? or that Shakspeare, in thus ignoring the great central truth, like Bacon, was, like Bacon, unconsciously exhibiting the Calvinistic tendency, the downward and disorganizing progress of his age, by substituting man for God as the great centre of this universe, as the sole and engrossing subject of human interest?

ART. II.—*The Descent of Man, and Selection in Relation to Sex.*

By Charles Darwin, M.A., F.R.S., &c. 2 vols. London, 1871.

**I**N Mr. Darwin's last work we possess at length a complete and thorough exposition of his matured views. He gives us the results of the patient labour of many years' unremitting investigation and of the application of a powerful and acute intellect, combined with an extraordinarily active imagination, to an unequalled collection of most varied, interesting and important biological data. In his earlier writings a certain reticence veiled, though it did not hide, his ultimate conclusions as to the origin of our own species; but now all possibility of misunderstanding or of a repetition of former disclaimers on the part of any disciple is at an end, and the entire and naked truth as to the logical consequences of Darwinism is displayed with a frankness which we had a right to expect from the distinguished author. What was but obscurely hinted in the '*Origin of Species*' is here fully and fairly stated in all its bearings and without disguise. Mr. Darwin has, in fact, 'crowned the edifice,' and the long looked for and anxiously awaited detailed statement of his views as to the human race is now unreservedly put before us.

We rise from the careful perusal of this book with mingled feelings of admiration and disappointment. The author's style is clear and attractive—clearer than in his earlier works—and his desire to avoid every kind of conscious misrepresentation is as conspicuous as ever. The number of interesting facts brought forward is as surprising as is the ingenuity often displayed in his manipulation of them. Under these circumstances it is a most painful task to have to point out grave defects and serious shortcomings. Mr. Darwin, however, seems in his recent work even more than in his earlier productions to challenge criticism, and to have thrown out ideas and suggestions with a distinct view to their subsequent modification by others. It is but an act of fairness to call attention to this:—

'False facts,' says Mr. Darwin, 'are highly injurious to the progress of science, for they often long endure; but false views, if supported by some evidence, do little harm, as every one takes a salutary pleasure in proving their falseness; and when this is done, one path towards error is closed and the road to truth is often at the same time opened.'  
—*Descent of Man*, vol. ii. p. 385.

Although we are unable to agree entirely with Mr. Darwin in this remark, it none the less contains an undoubted truth. We

cannot

cannot agree, because we feel that a false theory which keenly solicits the imagination, put forward by a writer widely and deservedly esteemed, and which reposes on a multitude of facts difficult to verify, skilfully interwoven, and exceedingly hard to unravel, is likely to be very prejudicial to science. Nevertheless, science cannot make progress without the action of two distinct classes of thinkers: the first consisting of men of creative genius, who strike out brilliant hypotheses, and who may be spoken of as 'theorizers' in the good sense of the word; the second, of men possessed of the critical faculty, and who test, mould into shape, perfect or destroy, the hypotheses thrown out by the former class.

Obviously important as it is that there should be such theorizers, it is also most important that criticism should clearly point out when a theory is really proved, when it is but probable, and when it is a mere arbitrary hypothesis. This is all the more necessary if, as may often and very easily happen, from being repeatedly spoken of, and being connected with celebrated and influential names, it is likely to be taken for very much more than it is really worth.

The necessity of caution in respect to this is clearly shown by Mr. Darwin's present work, in which 'sexual selection,' from being again and again referred to as if it had been proved to be a *vera causa*, may readily be accepted as such by the uninstructed or careless reader. For many persons, at first violently opposed through ignorance or prejudice to Mr. Darwin's views, are now, with scarcely less ignorance and prejudice, as strongly inclined in their favour.

Mr. Darwin's recent work, supplementing and completing, as it does, his earlier publications, offers a good opportunity for reviewing his whole position. We shall thus be better able to estimate the value of his convictions regarding the special subject of his present inquiry. We shall first call attention to his earlier statements, in order that we may see whether he has modified his views, and, if so, how far and with what results. If he has, even by his own showing and admission, been overhasty and seriously mistaken previously, we must be the more careful how we commit ourselves to his guidance now. We shall endeavour to show that Mr. Darwin's convictions have undergone grave modifications, and that the opinions adopted by him now are quite distinct from, and even subversive of, the views he originally put forth. The assignment of the law of 'natural selection' to a subordinate position is virtually an abandonment of the Darwinian theory; for the one distinguishing feature of that theory was the all-sufficiency of 'natural selection.' Not  
the

the less, however, ought we to feel grateful to Mr. Darwin for bringing forward that theory, and for forcing on men's minds, by his learning, acuteness, zeal, perseverance, firmness, and candour, a recognition of the probability, if not more, of evolution and of the certainty of the action of 'natural selection.' For though the 'survival of the fittest' is a truth which readily presents itself to any one who considers the subject, and though its converse, the destruction of the least fit, was recognised thousands of years ago, yet to Mr. Darwin, and (through Mr. Wallace's reticence) to Mr. Darwin alone, is due the credit of having first brought it prominently forward and demonstrated its truth in a volume which will doubtless form a landmark in the domain of zoological science.

We find even in the third edition of his '*Origin of Species*' the following passages:—'Natural selection can act only by taking advantage of slight successive variations; she can never take a leap, but must advance by short and slow steps' (p. 214). Again he says:—'If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed, which could not possibly have been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down. But I can find out no such case' (p. 208). He adds:—

'Every detail of structure in every living creature (making some little allowance for the direct action of physical conditions) may be viewed, either as having been of special use to some ancestral form, or as being now of special use to the descendants of this form—either directly, or indirectly through the complex laws of growth;' and 'if it could be proved that any part of the structure of any one species had been formed for the exclusive good of another species, it would annihilate my theory, for such could not have been produced through natural selection' (p. 220).

It is almost impossible for Mr. Darwin to have used words by which more thoroughly to stake the whole of his theory on the non-existence or non-action of causes of any moment other than natural selection. For why should such a phenomenon 'annihilate his theory'? Because the very essence of his theory, as originally stated, is to recognise only the conservation of minute variations directly beneficial to the creature presenting them, by enabling it to obtain food, escape enemies, and propagate its kind. But once more he says:—

'We have seen that species at any one period are not indefinitely variable, and are not linked together by a multitude of intermediate gradations, partly because the process of natural selection will always be very slow, and will act, at any one time, only on a very few forms; and partly because the very process of natural selection almost

implies the continual supplanting and extinction of preceding and intermediate gradations.'—P. 223.

Such are Mr. Darwin's earlier statements. At present we read as follows:—

'I now admit, after reading the essay by Nägeli on plants, and the remarks by various authors with respect to animals, more especially those recently made by Professor Broca, that in the earlier editions of my "*Origin of Species*" I probably attributed too much to the action of natural selection or the survival of the fittest.' . . . 'I had not formerly sufficiently considered the existence of many structures which appear to be, as far as we can judge, neither beneficial nor injurious; and this I believe to be one of the greatest oversights as yet detected in my work.'—('Descent of Man,' vol. i. p. 152.)

A still more remarkable admission is that in which he says, after referring to the action of both natural and sexual selection:—

'An unexplained residuum of change, perhaps a large one, must be left to the assumed action of those *unknown agencies*, which occasionally induce strongly marked and abrupt deviations of structure in our domestic productions.'—vol. i. p. 154.

But perhaps the most glaring contradiction is presented by the following passage:—

'No doubt man, as well as every other animal, presents structures, which as far as we can judge with our little knowledge, are not now of any service to him, nor have been so during any former period of his existence, either in relation to his general conditions of life, or of one sex to the other. Such structures cannot be accounted for by any form of selection, or by the inherited effects of the use and disuse of parts. We know, however, that many strange and strongly marked peculiarities of structure occasionally appear in our domesticated productions; and if the unknown causes which produce them were to act more uniformly, they would probably become common to all the individuals of the species.'—vol. ii. p. 387.

Mr. Darwin, indeed, seems now to admit the existence of internal, innate powers, for he goes on to say:—

'We may hope hereafter to understand something about the causes of such occasional modifications, especially through the study of monstrosities.' . . . 'In the greater number of cases we can only say that the cause of each slight variation and of each monstrosity lies much more in the *nature or constitution of the organism*\* than in the nature of the surrounding conditions; though new and changed conditions certainly play an important part in exciting organic changes of all kinds.'

---

\* The italics in the quotations from Mr. Darwin's book in this article are, in almost all cases, our's, and not the author's.

Also, in a note (vol. i. p. 223), he speaks of 'incidental results of certain unknown differences in the constitution of the reproductive system.'

Thus, then, it is admitted by our author that we may have 'abrupt, strongly marked' changes, 'neither beneficial nor injurious' to the creatures possessing them, produced 'by unknown agencies' lying deep in 'the nature or constitution of the organism,' and which, if acting uniformly, would 'probably' modify similarly 'all the individuals of a species.' If this is not an abandonment of 'natural selection,' it would be difficult to select terms more calculated to express it. But Mr. Darwin's admissions of error do not stop here. In the fifth edition of his 'Origin of Species' (p. 104) he says, 'Until reading an able and valuable article in the "North British Review" (1867), I did not appreciate how rarely single variations, whether slight or strongly marked, could be perpetuated.' Again: he was formerly 'inclined to lay much stress on the principle of protection, as accounting for the less bright colours of female birds' ('Descent of Man,' vol. ii. p. 198); but now he speaks as if the correctness of his old conception of such colours being due to protection was unlikely. 'Is it probable,' he asks, 'that the head of the female chaffinch, the crimson on the breast of the female bullfinch, —the green of the female chaffinch,—the crest of the female golden-crested wren, have all been rendered less bright by the slow process of selection for the sake of protection? *I cannot think so*' (vol. ii. p. 176.)

Once more Mr. Darwin shows us (vol. i. p. 125) how he has been over-hasty in attributing the development of certain structures to reversion. He remarks, 'In my "Variations of Animals under Domestication" (vol. ii. p. 57) I attributed the not very rare cases of supernumerary mammae in women to reversion.' 'But Professor Preyer states that *mammæ erraticæ* have been known to occur in other situations, even on the back; so that the force of my argument is greatly weakened or perhaps quite destroyed.'

Finally, we have a postscript at the beginning of the second volume of the 'Descent of Man' which contains an avowal more remarkable than even the passages already cited. He therein declares:—

'I have fallen into a serious and unfortunate error, in relation to the sexual differences of animals, in attempting to explain what seemed to me a singular coincidence in the late period of life at which the necessary variations have arisen in many cases, and the late period at which sexual selection acts. The explanation given is wholly

erroneous, as I have discovered by working out an illustration in figures.'

While willingly paying a just tribute of esteem to the candour which dictated these several admissions, it would be idle to dissemble, and disingenuous not to declare, the amount of distrust with which such repeated over-hasty conclusions and erroneous calculations inspire us. When their Author comes before us anew, as he now does, with opinions and conclusions still more startling, and calculated in a yet greater degree to disturb convictions reposing upon the general consent of the majority of cultivated minds, we may well pause before we trust ourselves unreservedly to a guidance which thus again and again declares its own reiterated fallibility. Mr. Darwin's conclusions may be correct, but we feel we have now indeed a right to demand that they shall be proved before we assent to them; and that since what Mr. Darwin before declared '*must be*,' he now admits not only to be unnecessary but untrue, we may justly regard with extreme distrust the numerous statements and calculations which, in the '*Descent of Man*,' are avowedly recommended by a mere '*may be*.' This is the more necessary, as the Author, starting at first with an avowed hypothesis, constantly asserts it as an undoubted fact, and claims for it, somewhat in the spirit of a theologian, that it should be received as an article of faith. Thus the formidable objection to Mr. Darwin's theory, that the great break in the organic chain between man and his nearest allies, which cannot be bridged over by any extinct or living species, is answered simply by an appeal '*to a belief in the general principle of evolution*' (vol. i. p. 200), or by a confident statement that '*we have every reason to believe that breaks in the series are simply the result of many forms having become extinct*' (vol. i. p. 187). So, in like manner, we are assured that '*the early progenitors of man were, no doubt, once covered with hair, both sexes having beards; their ears were pointed and capable of movement; and their bodies were provided with a tail, having the proper muscles*' (vol. i. p. 206). And, finally, we are told, with a dogmatism little worthy of a philosopher, that, '*unless we wilfully close our eyes*,' we must recognise our parentage (vol. i. p. 213).

These are hard words; and, even at the risk of being accused of wilful blindness, we shall now proceed, with an unbiassed and unprejudiced mind, to examine carefully the arguments upon which Mr. Darwin's theory rests. Must we acknowledge that '*man with all his noble qualities, with sympathy which feels for the most debased, with benevolence which extends not only to*  
other

other men but to the humblest living creature, with his god-like intellect which has penetrated into the movements and constitution of the solar system,' must we acknowledge that man 'with all these exalted powers' is descended from an Ascidian? Is this a scientific truth resting on scientific evidence, or is it to be classed with the speculations of a bygone age?

With regard to the Origin of Man, Mr. Darwin considers that both 'natural selection' and 'sexual selection' have acted. We need not on the present occasion discuss the action of natural selection; but it will be necessary to consider that of 'sexual selection' at some length. It plays a very important part in the 'descent of man,' according to Mr. Darwin's views. He maintains that we owe to it our power of song and our hairlessness of body, and that also to it is due the formation and conservation of the various races and varieties of the human species. In this matter then we fear we shall have to make some demand upon our readers' patience. 'Sexual selection' is the corner-stone of Mr. Darwin's theory. It occupies three-fourths of his two volumes; and unless he has clearly established this point, the whole fabric falls to the ground. It is impossible, therefore, to review the book without entering fully into the subject, even at the risk of touching upon some points which, for obvious reasons, we should have preferred to pass over in silence.

Under the head of 'sexual selection' Mr. Darwin includes two very distinct processes. One of these consists in the action of superior strength or activity, by which one male succeeds in obtaining possession of mates and in keeping away rivals. This is, undoubtedly, a *vera causa*; but may be more conveniently reckoned as one kind of 'natural selection' than as a branch of 'sexual selection.' The second process consists in alleged preference or choice, exercised freely by the female in favour of particular males on account of some attractiveness or beauty of form, colour, odour, or voice, which such males may possess. It is this second kind of 'sexual selection' (and which alone deserves the name) that is important for the establishment of Mr. Darwin's views, but its valid action has to be proved.

Now, to prove the existence of such a power of choice Mr. Darwin brings forward a multitude of details respecting the sexual phenomena of animals of various classes; but it is the class of birds which is mainly relied on to afford evidence in support of the exercise of this power of choice by female animals. We contend, however, that not only is the evidence defective even here, but that much of his own evidence is in direct opposition to his views. While the unquestionable fact, that male sexual characters (horns, mane,

wattles,

wattles, &c., &c.) have been developed in many cases where sexual selection has certainly not acted, renders it probable, *a priori*, that the unknown cause which has operated in these numerous cases has operated in those instances also which seem to favour the hypothesis supported by Mr. Darwin. Still he contends that the greater part of the beauty and melody of the organic world is due exclusively to this selective process, by which, through countless generations, the tail of the peacock, the throat of the humming-bird, the song of the nightingale, and the chirp of the grasshopper have been developed by females, age after age, selecting for their mates males possessing in a more and more perfect degree characters which must thus have been continually and constantly preferred.

Yet, after all, Mr. Darwin concedes *in principle* the very point in dispute, and yields all for which his opponents need argue, when he allows that beautiful and harmonious variations may occur *spontaneously* and *at once*, as in the dark or spangled bars on the feathers of Hamburg fowls ('Descent of Man,' vol. i. p. 281). For what difference is there, other than mere difference of degree, between the spontaneous appearance of a few beautiful new feathers with harmonious markings and the spontaneous appearance of a whole beautiful clothing like that of the Tragopans?

Again, on Mr. Darwin's own showing, it is manifest that male sexual characters, such as he would fain attribute to sexual selection, may arise without any such action whatever. Thus he tells us, 'There are breeds of the sheep and goat, in which the horns of the male differ greatly in shape from those of the female;' and 'with tortoise-shell cats, the females alone, as a general rule, are thus coloured, the males being rusty-red' (vol. i. p. 283). Now, if these cats were only known in a wild state, Mr. Darwin would certainly bring them forward amongst his other instances of alleged sexual selection, though we now know the phenomenon is not due to any such cause. A more striking instance, however, is the following:—'With the pigeon, the sexes of the parent species do not differ in any external character; nevertheless, in certain domesticated breeds the male is differently coloured from the female. The wattle in the English carrier-pigeon and the crop in the pouter are more highly developed in the male than in the female;' and 'this has arisen, not from; but rather *in opposition to*, the wishes of the breeder;' which amounts to a positive demonstration that sexual characters may arise spontaneously, and, be it noted, in the class of birds.

The uncertainty which besets these speculations of Mr. Darwin is evident at every turn. What at first could be thought a better

better instance of sexual selection than the light of the glowworm, exhibited to attract her mate? Yet the discovery of luminous larvæ, which of course have no sexual action, leads Mr. Darwin to observe: 'It is very doubtful whether the primary use of the light is to guide the male to the female' (vol. i. p. 345). Again, as to certain British field-bugs, he says: 'If in any species the males had differed from the females in an analogous manner, we might have been justified in attributing such conspicuous colours to sexual selection with transference to both sexes' (vol. i. p. 350). As to the stridulating noises of insects (which is assumed to be the result of sexual selection), Mr. Darwin remarks of certain Neuroptera:—'It is rather surprising that both sexes should have the power of stridulating, as the male is winged and the female wingless' (vol. i. p. 366); and he is again surprised to find that this power is not a sexual character in many Coleoptera (vol. i. p. 382).

Moths and butterflies, however, are the insects which Mr. Darwin treats of at the greatest length in support of sexual selection. Yet even here he supplies us with positive evidence that in certain cases beauty does not charm the female. He tells us:—

'Some facts, however, are opposed to the belief that female butterflies prefer the more beautiful males; thus, as I have been assured by several observers, fresh females may frequently be seen paired with battered, faded, or dingy males.'—vol. i. p. 400.

As to the Bombycidæ he adds:—

'The females lie in an almost torpid state, and appear not to evince the least choice in regard to their partners. This is the case with the common silk-moth (*B. mori*). Dr. Wallace, who has had such immense experience in breeding *Bombyx cynthia*, is convinced that the females evince no choice or preference. He has kept above 300 of these moths living together, and has often found the most vigorous females mated with stunted males.'

Nevertheless, we do not find, for all this, any defect of colour or markings, for, as Mr. Alfred Wallace observes (*Nature*, March 15th, 1871, p. 182), 'the Bombyces are amongst the most elegantly coloured of all moths.'

Mr. Darwin gives a number of instances of sexual characters, such as horns, spines, &c., in beetles and other insects; but there is no fragment of evidence that such structures are in any way due to feminine caprice. Other structures are described and figured which doubtless do aid the sexual act, as the claws of certain Crustacea; but these are often of such size and strength (e. g. in *Callianassa* and *Orchestia*) as to render any power of choice

choice on the part of the female in the highest degree incredible.

Similarly with the higher classes, *i.e.* Fishes, Reptiles, and Beasts, we have descriptions and representations of a number of sexual peculiarities, but no evidence whatever that such characters are due to female selection. Often we have statements which conflict strongly with a belief in any such action. Thus, *e.g.*, Mr. Darwin quotes Mr. R. Buist, Superintendent of Fisheries, as saying that male salmon

'Are constantly fighting and tearing each other on the spawning-beds, and many so injure each other as to cause the death of numbers, many being seen swimming near the banks of the river in a state of exhaustion, and apparently in a dying state.' . . . 'The keeper of Stormontfield found in the northern Tyne about 300 dead salmon, all of which with one exception were males; and he was convinced that they had lost their lives by fighting.'—vol. ii. p. 3.

The female's choice must here be much limited, and the only kind of sexual selection which can operate is that first kind, determined by combat, which, we before observed, must rather be ranked as a kind of 'natural selection.' Even with regard to this, however, we may well hesitate, when Mr. Darwin tells us, as he does, that seeing the habitual contests of the males, 'it is surprising that they have not generally become, through the effects of sexual selection, larger and stronger than the females;' and this the more as 'the males suffer from their small size,' being 'liable to be devoured by the females of their own species' (vol. ii. p. 7). The cases cited by our Author with regard to fishes, do not even tend to prove the existence of sexual selection, and the same may be said as to the numerous details given by him about Reptiles and Amphibians. Nay, rather the facts are hostile to his views. Thus, he says himself, 'It is surprising that frogs and toads should not have acquired more strongly-marked sexual differences; for though cold-blooded, their passions are strong' (vol. ii. p. 26). But he cites a fact, than which it would be difficult to find one less favourable to his cause. He adds: 'Dr. Günther informs me that he has several times found an unfortunate female toad dead and smothered from having been so closely embraced by three or four males.' If female selection was difficult in the case of the female salmon, it must be admitted to have been singularly infelicitous to the female toad.

We will now notice some facts brought forward by Mr. Darwin with regard to beasts. And first, as to the existence of choice on the part of the females, it may be noted that 'Mr. Bienkiron, the greatest breeder of race-horses in the world, says that

that stallions are so frequently capricious in their choice, rejecting one mare and without any apparent cause taking to another, that various artifices have to be habitually used.' 'He has never known a mare to reject a horse;' though this has occurred in Mr. Wright's stable.

Some of the most marked sexual characters found amongst mammals, are those which exist in apes. These are abundantly noticed by Mr. Darwin, but his treatment of them seems to show his inability to bring them within the scope of his theory.

It is well known that certain apes are distinguished by the lively colours or peculiarities as to hair possessed by the males, while it is also notorious that their vastly superior strength of body and length of fang, would render resistance on the part of the female difficult and perilous, even were we to adopt the utterly gratuitous supposition, that at seasons of sexual excitement the female shows any disposition to coyness. Mr. Darwin has no facts to bring forward to prove the exercise of any choice on the part of female apes, but gives in support of his views the following remarkable passage:—

'Must we attribute to mere purposeless variability in the male all these appendages of hair and skin? It cannot be denied that this is possible; for, with many domesticated quadrupeds, certain characters, apparently not derived through reversion from any wild parent-form, have appeared in, and are confined to, the males, or are more largely developed in them than in the females,—for instance, the hump in the male zebu-cattle of India, the tail in fat-tailed rams, the arched outline of the forehead in the males of several breeds of sheep, the mane in the ram of an African breed, and, lastly, the mane, long hairs on the hinder legs, and the dewlap in the male alone of the Berbura goat.'—vol. ii. p. 284.

If these are due, as is probable, to simple variability, then, he adds,—

'It would appear reasonable to extend the same view to the many analogous characters occurring in animals under a state of nature. Nevertheless I cannot persuade myself that this view is applicable in many cases, as in that of the extraordinary development of hair on the throat and fore-legs of the male *Ammotragus*, or of the immense beard of the *Pithecia* (monkey).'*—vol. ii. p. 285.*

But one naturally asks, Why not? Mr. Darwin gives no reason (if such it may be called) beyond that implied in the gratuitous use of the epithet 'purposeless' in the passage cited, and to which we shall return.

In the Rhesus monkey the female appears to be more vividly coloured than the male; therefore Mr. Darwin infers (grounding

his inference on alleged phenomena in birds) that sexual selection is *reversed*, and that in this case the male selects. This hypothetical reversion of a hypothetical process to meet an exceptional case will appear to many rash indeed, when they reflect that as to teeth, whiskers, general size, and superciliary ridges this monkey 'follows the common rule of the male excelling the female' (vol. ii. p. 294).

To turn now to the class on which Mr. Darwin especially relies, we shall find that even Birds supply us with numerous instances which conflict with his hypothesis. Thus, speaking of the battling of male waders, our author tells us:—'Two were seen to be thus engaged for half an hour, until one got hold of the head of the other, which would have been killed had not the observer interfered; the female all the time looking on as a quiet spectator' (vol. ii. p. 41). As these battles must take place generally in the absence of spectators, their doubtless frequently fatal termination must limit greatly the power of selection Mr. Darwin attributes to the females. The same limit is certainly imposed in the majority of Gallinaceous birds, the cocks of which fight violently; and there can be little doubt but that, as an almost invariable rule, the victorious birds mate with the comparatively passive hens.

Again, how can we explain, on Mr. Darwin's hypothesis, the existence of distinguishing male sexual marks, where it is the male and not the female bird which selects? Yet the wild turkey-cock, a distinguished bird enough, is said by Mr. Darwin (vol. ii. p. 207) to be courted by the females; and he quotes (vol. ii. p. 120) Sir R. Heron as saying, 'that with peafowl, the first advances are always made by the female.' And of the capercailzie he says, 'the females flit round the male while he is parading, and solicit his attention.'

But though, of course, the sexual instinct always seeks its gratification, does the female *ever* select a particular plumage? The strongest instance given by Mr. Darwin is as follows:—

'Sir R. Heron during many years kept an account of the habits of the peafowl, which he bred in large numbers. He states that the hens have frequently great preference for a particular peacock. They were all so fond of an old pied cock, that one year, when he was confined though still in view, they were constantly assembled close to the trellice-walls of his prison, and would not suffer a japanned peacock to touch them. On his being let out in the autumn, the oldest of the hens instantly courted him, and was successful in her courtship. The next year he was shut up in a stable, and then the hens all courted his rival. This rival was a japanned or black-winged peacock, which to our eyes is a more beautiful bird than the common kind.'—vol. ii. p. 119.

Now no one disputes as to birds showing preferences one for another, but it is quite a gratuitous suggestion that the pied plumage of the venerable paterfamilias was *the* charm which attracted the opposite sex; and even if such were the case, it would seem (from Mr. Darwin's concluding remark) to prove either that the peahen's taste is so different from ours, that the peacock's plumage could never have been developed by it, or (if the taste of these peahens was different from that of most peahens) that such is the instability of a vicious feminine caprice, that no constancy of coloration could be produced by its selective action.

Mr. Darwin bases his theory of sexual selection greatly on the fact that the male birds display the beauty of their plumage with elaborate parade and many curious and uncouth gestures. But this display is not exclusively used in attracting and stimulating the hens. Thus he admits that 'the males will sometimes display their ornaments when *not* in the presence of the females, as occasionally occurs with the grouse at their balz-places, and as may be noticed with the peacock; this latter bird, however, evidently wishes for a spectator of *some kind*, and will show off his finery, as I have often seen, before poultry or even pigs' (vol. ii. p. 86). Again, as to the brilliant *Rupicola crocea*, Sir R. Schomburgk says: 'A male was capering to the apparent delight of several others' (vol. ii. p. 87).

From the fact of 'display' Mr. Darwin concludes that 'it is obviously probable that the females appreciate the beauty of their suitors' (vol. ii. p. 111). Our Author, however, only ventures to call it 'probable,' and he significantly adds: 'It is, however, difficult to obtain direct evidence of their capacity to appreciate beauty.' And again he says of the hen bird: 'It is not probable that she consciously deliberates; but she is most excited or attracted by the most beautiful, or melodious, or gallant males' (vol. ii. p. 123). No doubt the plumage, song, &c., all play their parts in aiding the various processes of life; but to stimulate the sexual instinct, even supposing this to be the object, is one thing—to supply the occasion for the exercise of a power of choice is quite another. Certainly we cannot admit what Mr. Darwin affirms (vol. ii. p. 124), that an 'even occasional preference by the female of the more attractive males would almost certainly lead to their modification.'

A singular instance is given by Mr. Darwin (vol. ii. p. 111) in support of his view, on the authority of Mr. J. Weir. It is that of a bullfinch which constantly attacked a reed-bunting, newly put into the aviary; and this attack is attributed to a sort of jealousy on the part of the blackheaded bullfinch of the black head

head of the bunting. But the bullfinch could hardly be aware of the colour of the top of its own head!

Mr. Wallace accounts for the brilliant colours of caterpillars and many birds in another way. The caterpillars which are distasteful must have gained if 'some outward sign indicated to their would-be destroyer that its prey was a disgusting morsel.' As to birds, he believes that brilliance of plumage is developed where not hurtful, and that the generally more sober plumage of the hens has been produced by natural selection, killing off the more brilliant ones exposed during incubation to trying conditions.

Now as Mr. Wallace disposes of Mr. Darwin's views by his objections, so Mr. Darwin's remarks tend to refute Mr. Wallace's positions, and the result seems to point to the existence of some unknown innate and internal law which determines at the same time both coloration and its transmission to either or to both sexes. At the same time these authors, indeed, show the *harmony* of natural laws and processes one with another, and their mutual interaction and aid.

It cannot be pretended that there is any evidence for sexual selection except in the class of Birds. Certain of the phenomena which Mr. Darwin generally attributes to such selection must be due, in some other classes, to other causes, and there is no *proof* that sexual selection acts, *even* amongst birds.

But in other classes, as we have seen, sexual characters are as marked as they are in the feathered group. Mr. Darwin, indeed, argues that birds select, and assumes that their sexual characters have been produced by such sexual selection, and that, therefore, the sexual characters of beasts have been similarly evolved. But we may turn the argument round and say that sexual characters not less strongly marked exist in many beasts, reptiles, and insects, which characters cannot be due to sexual selection; that it is, therefore, probable the sexual characters of birds are not due to sexual selection either, but that some unknown internal cause has equally operated in each case. The matter, indeed, stands thus: Of animals possessing sexual characters there are some in which sexual selection cannot have acted; others in which it may possibly have acted; others again in which, according to Mr. Darwin, it has certainly acted. It is a somewhat singular conclusion to deduce from this that sexual selection is the one universal cause of sexual characters, when similar effects to those which it is supposed to cause take place in its absence.

But, indeed, what are the data on which Mr. Darwin relies as regards birds? As before said, they are 'display' by the males,

males, the 'greater brilliancy and ornamentation of these,' and the 'occasional preference' by females in confinement for particular males. Is there here any sufficient foundation for such a superstructure? In the first place, in insects, *e.g.* butterflies, we have often many brilliant males crowding in pursuit of a single female. Yet, as Mr. Wallace justly observes, 'Surely the male who finally obtains the female will be either the most vigorous, or the strongest-winged, or the most patient—the one who tires out or beats off the rest.' Similarly in birds strength and perseverance will, no doubt, generally reward the suitor possessing those qualities. Doubtless, also, this will generally be the most beautiful or most melodious; but this will simply be because extra beauty of plumage, or of song, will accompany supereminent vigour of constitution and fulness of vitality. What has been before said as to the fierce combats of cock-birds must be borne in mind.

But that internal spontaneous powers *are* sufficient to produce all the most varied or bizarre sexual characters which any birds exhibit, is actually demonstrated by the class of insects, especially caterpillars which from their sexless undeveloped state can have nothing to do with the kind of selection Mr. Darwin advocates. Yet amongst caterpillars we not only find some ornamented with spots, bands, stripes, and curious patterns, 'perfectly definite in character and of the most brilliantly contrasted hues. We have also many ornamental appendages; beautiful fleshy tubercles or tentacles, hard spines, beautifully coloured hairs arranged in tufts, brushes, starry clusters, or long pencils, and horns on the head and tail, either single or double, pointed or clubbed.' Mr. Wallace adds, 'Now if all these beautiful and varied ornaments can be produced and rendered constant in each species by some unknown cause quite independent of sexual selection, why cannot the same cause produce the colours and many of the ornaments of perfect insects;—we may also add, the colours and ornaments of all other animals, including birds?

There is, however, another reason which induces Mr. Darwin to accept sexual selection; and it is probably this which, in his mind, mainly gives importance to the facts mentioned as to the plumage and motions of birds. He says of 'display,' 'It is incredible that all this display should be purposeless' (vol. ii. p. 399); and again (vol. ii. p. 93), he declares that any one who denies that the female *Argus* pheasant can appreciate the refined beauty of the plumage of her mate, 'will be compelled to admit that the extraordinary attitudes assumed by the male during the act of courtship, by which the wonderful beauty of his plumage

is fully displayed, are purposeless; and this is a conclusion which I for one will never admit.' It seems then that it is this imaginary necessity of attributing purposelessness to acts, which determines Mr. Darwin to attribute that peculiar and special purpose to birds' actions which he does attribute to them. But surely this difficulty is a mere chimæra. Let it be granted that the female does not select; yet the display of the male may be useful in supplying the necessary degree of stimulation to her nervous system, and to that of the male. Pleasurable sensation, perhaps very keen in intensity, may thence result to both. There would be no difficulty in suggesting yet other purposes if we were to ascend into higher speculative regions. Mr. Darwin has given us in one place a very remarkable passage; he says:—

'With respect to female birds feeling a preference for particular males, we must bear in mind that we can judge of choice being exerted, only by placing ourselves in imagination in the same position. If an inhabitant of another planet were to behold a number of young rustics at a fair, courting and quarrelling over a pretty girl, like birds at one of their places of assemblage, he would be able to infer that she had the power of choice only by observing the eagerness of the wooers to please her, and to display their finery.'—vol. ii. p. 122.

Now here it must be observed that, as is often the case, Mr. Darwin assumes the very point in dispute, unless he means by 'power of choice' mere freedom of physical power. If he means an internal, mental faculty of choice, then the observer could attribute such power to the girl only if he had reason to attribute to the rustics an intellectual and moral nature similar in kind to that which he possessed himself. Such a similarity of nature Mr. Darwin, of course, does attribute to rational beings and to brutes; but those who do not agree with him in this would require other tests than the presence of ornaments, and the performance of antics and gestures unaccompanied by any evidence of the faculty of articulate speech.

Such, then, is the nature of the evidence on which sexual selection is supposed to rest. To us the action of sexual selection scarcely seems more than a possibility, the evidence rarely raising it to probability. It cannot be a 'sufficient cause' to account for the phenomena which it is intended to explain, nor can it even claim to be taken as a *vera causa* at all. Yet Mr. Darwin again and again speaks as if its reality and cogency were indisputable.

As to the alleged action of natural selection on our own species we may mention two points.

First, as to the absence of hair. This is a character which Mr. Darwin admits cannot be accounted for by 'natural selection,'

tion,' because manifestly not beneficial; it is therefore attributed to 'sexual selection,' incipient man being supposed to have chosen mates with less and less hairy bodies; and the possibility of such action is thought by Mr. Darwin to be supported by the fact that certain monkeys have parts of the body naked. Yet it is a fact that the higher apes have not this nakedness, or have it in a much smaller degree.

Secondly, as to the races of mankind, Mr. Darwin's theory, indeed, requires the alternation of constancy and caprice to account for the selection and the conservation of marked varieties. In order that each race may possess and preserve its own ideal standard of beauty we require the truth of the hypothesis that 'certain tastes may in the course of time become inherited;' and yet Mr. Darwin candidly admits (vol. ii. p. 353): 'I know of no evidence in favour of this belief.' On the other hand, he says (p. 370), 'As soon as tribes exposed to different conditions came to vary, 'each isolated tribe would form for itself a slightly different standard of beauty,' which 'would gradually and inevitably be increased to a greater and greater degree.' But why have not the numerous tribes of North American Indians diverged from each other more conspicuously, inhabiting, as they do, such different climates, and surrounded by such diverse conditions?

Again, far from each race being bound in the trammels of its own features, all cultivated Europeans, whether Celts, Teutons, or Slaves, agree in admiring the Hellenic ideal as the highest type of human beauty.

We may now pass on to the peculiarities of man's bodily frame, and the value and signification of the resemblances presented by it to the various structures which are found to exist in lower members of the animal kingdom.

Mr. Darwin treats us to a very interesting account, not only of man's anatomy, but also of the habits, diseases, and parasites (internal and external) of man, together with the process of his development. He points out (vol. i. p. 11) not only the close similarity even of cerebral structure between man and apes, but also how the same animals are 'liable to many of the same non-contagious diseases as we are; thus Rengger, who carefully observed for a long time the *Cebus Azaræ* in its native land, found it liable to catarrh, with the usual symptoms, and which when often recurrent, led to consumption. These monkeys suffered also from apoplexy, inflammation of the bowels, and cataract in the eye. The younger ones, when shedding their milk-teeth, often died from fever. Medicines produced the same effect on them as on us. Many kinds

kinds of monkeys have a strong taste for tea, coffee, and spirituous liquors; they will also, as I have myself seen, smoke tobacco with pleasure.' He also tells us of baboons which, after taking too much beer, 'on the following morning were very cross and dismal, held their aching heads with both hands, and wore a most pitiable expression: when beer or wine was offered them, they turned away with disgust, but relished the juice of lemons.' He notices, besides, the process of development in man with the transitory resemblances it exhibits to the immature conditions of other animals, and he mentions certain muscular abnormalities.

Mr. Darwin also brings forward an observation of Mr. Woolner, the sculptor, as to a small projection of the helix or outermost fold of the human ear, which projection 'we may safely conclude' to be 'a vestige of formerly pointed ears—which occasionally reappears in man' (vol. i. p. 23). Very many other interesting facts are noted which it would be superfluous here to recapitulate. It is, however, in connexion with man's bodily structure and its resemblances that we have observed slight errors on the part of Mr. Darwin, which it may be as well to point out; though it should be borne in mind that he does not profess to be in any sense an anatomist. Thus, at vol. i. p. 28, he mistakes the supra-condyloid foramen of the humerus for the inter-condyloid perforation. Did the former condition frequently occur in man—as, through this mistake, he asserts—it would be remarkable indeed, as it is only found in the lower monkeys and not in the higher. A more singular mistake is that of the malar bone for the premaxilla (vol. i. p. 124).

To return to the bodily and other characters enumerated at such length by Mr. Darwin. They may, and doubtless they will, produce a considerable effect on readers who are not anatomists, but in fact the whole and sole result is to show that man *is* an animal. That he is such is denied by no one, but has been taught and accepted since the time of Aristotle. We remember on one occasion meeting at a dinner-table a clever medical man of materialistic views. He strongly impressed the minds of some laymen present by an elaborate statement of the mental phenomena following upon different injuries, or diseased conditions of different parts of the brain, until one of the number remarked as a climax, 'Yes; and when the brain is entirely removed the mental phenomena cease altogether'—the previous observations having only brought out vividly what no one denied, viz., that during this life a certain integrity of bodily structure is requisite for the due exercise of the mental powers. Thus Mr. Darwin's remarks are merely an elaborate statement of what

what all admit, namely, that man is an animal. They further imply, however, that he is no more than an animal, and that the mode of origin of his visible being must be the mode of his origin as a whole—a conclusion of which we should not question the legitimacy if we could accept Mr. Darwin's views of man's mental powers.

All that can be said to be established by our author is, that if the various kinds of lower animals have been evolved one from the other by a process of natural generation or evolution, then it becomes highly probable *a priori* that man's body has been similarly evolved; but this, in such a case, becomes equally probable from the admitted fact that he is an animal at all.

The evidence for such a process of evolution of man's body amounts, however, only to an *a priori* probability, and might be reconciled with another mode of origin if there were sufficient reason (of another kind) to justify a belief in such other mode of origin. Mr. Darwin says:—'It is only our natural prejudice, and that arrogance which made our forefathers declare that they were descended from demi-gods, which leads us to demur to this conclusion' (vol. i. p. 32). But this is not the case; for many demur to his conclusion because they believe that to accept his view would be to contradict other truths which to them are far more evident.

He also makes the startling assertion that to take any other view than his as to man's origin, 'is to admit that our own structure and that of all the animals around us, is a mere snare laid to entrap our judgment' (vol. i. p. 32). Mr. Darwin is, we are quite sure, far enough from pretending that he has exhausted the possibilities of the case, and yet could anything but a conviction that the whole field had been explored exhaustively, justify such an assertion? If, without such a conviction, it were permissible so to dogmatize, every theorizer who had attained to a plausible explanation of a set of phenomena might equally make use of the assertion, and say, until a better explanation was found, that to doubt him would be to attribute duplicity to the Almighty.

In tracing man's origin Mr. Darwin is again betrayed into slight inaccuracies. Thus, in combating the position, advanced in this 'Review,'\* that the hands of apes had been preformed (with a view to man) in a condition of perfection beyond their needs, he says:—

'On the contrary, I see no reason to doubt that a more perfectly constructed hand would have been an advantage to them, provided, and it is important to note this, that their hands had not thus been

---

\* See 'Quarterly Review,' April, 1869, p. 392.

rendered less well adapted for climbing trees. We may suspect that a perfect hand would have been disadvantageous for climbing ; as the most arboreal monkeys in the world, namely *Ateles* in America and *Hylobates* in Asia, either have their thumbs much reduced in size and even rudimentary, or their fingers partially coherent, so that their hands are converted into grasping-hooks.'—vol. i. p. 140.

In a note, Mr. Darwin refers to the *Syndactyle Gibbon* as having two of the digits coherent. But these digits are not, as he supposes, digits of the hand but toes. Moreover, though doubtless the Gibbons and spider-monkeys are admirably organized for their needs, yet it is plain that a well-developed thumb is no impediment to climbing, for the strictly arboreal *Lemurs* are exceedingly well furnished in this respect. Again he says (vol. i. p. 143) of the Gibbons, that they, 'without having been taught, can walk or run upright with tolerable quickness, though they move awkwardly, and much less securely than man.' This is a little misleading, inasmuch as it is not stated that this upright progression is effected by placing the enormously long arms behind the head or holding them out backwards as a balance in progression.

We have already seen that Mr. Darwin tries to account for man's hairlessness by the help of 'sexual selection.' He also, however, speculates as to the possibility of his having lost it through heat of climate, saying :—'Elephants and rhinoceroses are almost hairless ; and as certain extinct species which formerly lived under an arctic climate were covered with long wool or hair, it would almost appear as if the existing species of both genera had lost their hairy covering from exposure to heat' (vol. i. p. 148).

This affords us a good example of hasty and inconclusive speculation. Surely it would be as rational to suppose that the arctic species had *gained* their coats as that the tropical species had lost theirs. But over-hasty conclusions are, we regret to say, the rule in Mr. Darwin's speculations as to man's genealogy. He carries that genealogy back to some ancient form of animal life somewhat like an existing larval *Ascidian* ; and he does this on the strength of the observations of Kowalevsky and Kupffer. He assumes at once that the similarities of structure which those observers detected are due to descent instead of to independent similarity of evolution, though the latter mode of origin is at least possible,\* and can hardly be considered improbable when we reflect on the close similarity independently induced in the eyes of fishes and cephalopods.

---

\* See Professor Rolleston's 'Address at the Liverpool Meeting of the British Association, 1870.'

Quite recently, however, observations have been published by Dr. Donitz,\* which render it necessary, at the least, to pause and reconsider the question before admitting the Ascidian ancestry of the Vertebrate sub-kingdom.

We now come to the consideration of a subject of great importance—namely, that of man's mental powers. Are they, as Mr. Darwin again and again affirms that they are,† different only in degree and not in kind from the mental powers of brutes? As is so often the case in discussions, the error to be combated is an implied negation. Mr. Darwin implies and seems to assume that when two things have certain characters in common there can be no fundamental difference between them.

To avoid ambiguity and obscurity, it may be well here to state plainly certain very elementary matters. The ordinary antecedents and concomitants of distinctly felt sensations may exist, with all their physical consequences, in the total absence of intellectual cognizance, as is shown by the well-known fact, that when through fracture of the spine the lower limbs of a man are utterly deprived of the power of feeling, the foot may nevertheless withdraw itself from tickling just as if a sensation was consciously felt. Amongst lower animals, a decapitated frog will join its hind feet together to push away an irritating object just as an uninjured animal will do. Here we have coadjusted actions resulting from stimuli which normally produce sensation, but occurring under conditions in which cerebral action does not take place. Did it take place we should have sensations, but by no means necessarily intellectual action.

'Sensation' is not 'thought,' and no amount of the former would constitute the most rudimentary condition of the latter, though sensations supply the conditions for the existence of 'thought' or 'knowledge.'

Altogether, we may clearly distinguish at least six kinds of action to which the nervous system ministers:—

I. That in which impressions received result in appropriate movements without the intervention of sensation or thought, as in the cases of injury above given. (This is the reflex action of the nervous system.)

II. That in which stimuli from without result in sensations through the agency of which their due effects are wrought out. (Sensation.)

\* See 'Journal für Anatomie und Physiologie,' edited by Reichert and Dubois. Berlin.

† 'There is no fundamental difference between man and the higher mammals in their mental faculties.'—*Descent of Man*, vol. i. p. 35.

III. That in which impressions received result in sensations which give rise to the observation of sensible objects.—Sensible perception.

IV. That in which sensations and perceptions continue to coalesce, agglutinate, and combine in more or less complex aggregations, according to the laws of the association of sensible perceptions.—Association.

The above four groups contain only indeliberate operations, consisting, as they do at the best, but of mere *presentative* sensible ideas in no way implying any reflective or *representative* faculty. Such actions minister to and form *Instinct*. Besides these, we may distinguish two other kinds of mental action, namely:—

V. That in which sensations and sensible perceptions are reflected on by thought and recognised as our own and we ourselves recognised by ourselves as affected and perceiving.—Self-consciousness.

VI. That in which we reflect upon our sensations or perceptions, and ask what they are and why they are.—Reason.

These two latter kinds of action are deliberate operations, performed, as they are, by means of *representative* ideas implying the use of a *reflective representative* faculty. Such actions distinguish the *intellect* or rational faculty. Now, we assert that possession in perfection of all the first four (*presentative*) kinds of action by no means implies the possession of the last two (*representative*) kinds. All persons, we think, must admit the truth of the following proposition:—

Two faculties are distinct, not in degree but *in kind*, if we may possess the one in perfection without that fact implying that we possess the other also. Still more will this be the case if the two faculties tend to increase in an inverse ratio. Yet this is the distinction between the *instinctive* and the *intellectual* parts of man's nature.

As to animals, we fully admit that they may possess all the first four groups of actions—that they may have, so to speak, mental images of sensible objects combined in all degrees of complexity, as governed by the laws of association. We deny to them, on the other hand, the possession of the last two kinds of mental action. We deny them, that is, the power of reflecting on their own existence or of enquiring into the nature of objects and their causes. We deny that they know that they know or know themselves in knowing. In other words, we deny them *reason*. The possession of the *presentative* faculty, as above explained, in no way implies that of the *reflective* faculty; nor does any amount of direct operation imply the power of asking the reflective question before mentioned, as to 'what' and 'why.'

According

According to our definition, then, given above, the faculties of men and those of other animals differ in kind ; and brutes low in the scale supply us with a good example in support of this distinctness ; for it is in animals generally admitted to be wanting in reason—such as insects (*e.g.* the ant and the bee)—that we have the very summit and perfection of instinct made known to us.

We will shortly examine Mr. Darwin's arguments, and see if he can bring forward a single instance of brute action implying the existence in it of the representative reflective power. Before doing so, however, one or two points as to the conditions of the controversy must be noticed.

In the first place, the position which we maintain is the one in possession—that which is commended to us by our intuitions, by ethical considerations, and by religious teaching universally. The *onus probandi* should surely therefore rest with him who, attacking the accepted position, maintains the essential similarity and fundamental identity of powers the effects of which are so glaringly diverse. Yet Mr. Darwin quietly assumes the whole point in dispute, by asserting identity of *intuition* where there is identity of *sensation* (vol. i. p. 36), which, of course, implies that there is no mental power whatever except sensation. For if the existence of another faculty were allowed by him, it is plain that the action of that other faculty might modify the effects of mere sensation in any being possessed of such additional faculty.

Secondly, it must be remembered that it is a law in all reasoning that where known causes are sufficient to account for any phenomena we shall not gratuitously call in additional causes. If, as we believe to be the case, there is no need whatever to call in the *representative* faculty as an explanation of brute mental action ;—if the phenomena brutes exhibit can be accounted for by the *presentative* faculty—that is, by the presence of sensible perceptions and emotions together with the reflex and co-ordinating powers of the nervous system ;—then to ascribe to them the possession of reason is thoroughly gratuitous.

Thirdly, in addition to the argument that brutes have not intellect because their actions can be accounted for without the exercise of that faculty, we have other and positive arguments in opposition to Mr. Darwin's view of their mental powers. These arguments are based upon the absence in brutes of articulate and rational speech, of true concerted action and of educability, in the human sense of the word. We have besides, what may be called an experimental proof in the same direction. For if the germs of a rational nature existed in brutes, such germs would certainly ere this have so developed as to have

have produced unmistakeably rational phenomena, considering the prodigious lapse of time passed since the entombment of the earliest known fossils. To this question we will return later.

We shall perhaps be met by the assertion that many men may also be taken to be irrational animals, so little do the phenomena they exhibit exceed in dignity and importance the phenomena presented by certain brutes. But, in reply, it is to be remarked that we can only consider men who are truly men—not idiots, and that all *men*, however degraded their social condition, have self-consciousness properly so called, possess the gift of articulate and rational speech, are capable of true concerted action, and have a perception of the existence of right and wrong. On the other hand, no brute has the faculty of articulate, rational speech: most persons will also admit that brutes are not capable of truly concerted action, and we contend most confidently that they have no self-consciousness, properly so called, and no perception of the difference between truth and falsehood and right and wrong.

Let us now consider Mr. Darwin's facts in favour of an opposite conclusion.

1st. His testimony drawn from his own experience and information regarding the lowest races of men.

2nd. The anecdotes he narrates in favour of the intelligence of brutes.

In the first place, we have to thank our author for very distinct and unqualified statements as to the substantial unity of men's mental powers. Thus he tells us:—

'The Fuegians rank amongst the lowest barbarians; but I was continually struck with surprise how closely the three natives on board H. M. S. "Beagle," who had lived some years in England, and could talk a little English, resembled us in disposition, and in most of our mental qualities.'—vol. i. p. 34.

Again he adds:—

'The American aborigines, Negroes and Europeans differ as much from each other in mind as any three races that can be named; yet I was incessantly struck, whilst living with the Fuegians on board the "Beagle," with the many little traits of character, showing how similar their minds were to ours; and so it was with a full-blooded negro with whom I happened once to be intimate.'—vol. i. p. 232.

<sup>a</sup> Again:—'Differences of this kind (mental) between the highest men of the highest races and the lowest savages, are connected by the finest gradations' (vol. i. p. 35).

Mr. Darwin, then, plainly tells us that all the essential mental characters of civilised man are found in the very lowest races of

of men, though in a less completely developed state; while, in comparing their mental powers with those of brutes, he says 'No doubt the difference in this respect is enormous' (vol. i. p. 34). As if, however, to diminish the force of this admission, he remarks, what no one would dream of disputing, that there are psychical phenomena common to men and to other animals. He says of man that

'He uses in common with the lower animals inarticulate cries' to express his meaning, aided by gestures and the movements of the muscles of the face. This especially holds good with the more simple and vivid feelings, which are *but little connected with the higher intelligence*. Our cries of pain, fear, surprise, anger, together with their appropriate actions, and the murmur of a mother to her beloved child, are more expressive than any words.'—vol. i. p. 54.

But, inasmuch as it is admitted on all hands that man is an animal, and therefore has all the four lower faculties enumerated in our list, as well as the two higher ones, the fact that he makes use of common instinctive actions in no way diminishes the force of the distinction between him and brutes as regards the representative, reflective faculties. It rather follows as a matter of course from his animality that he should manifest phenomena common to him and to brutes. That man has a common nature with them is perfectly compatible with his having, besides, a superior nature and faculties of which no brute has any rudiment or vestige. Indeed, all the arguments and objections in Mr. Darwin's second chapter may be met by the fact that man being an animal, has corresponding faculties, whence arises a certain external conformity with other animals as to the modes of expressing some mental modifications. In the overlooking of this possibility of coexistence of two natures lies that error of negation to which we before alluded. Here, as in other parts of the book, we may say there are two quantities  $a$  and  $a + x$ , and Mr. Darwin, seeing the two  $a$ s but neglecting the  $x$ , represents the quantities as equal.

We will now notice the anecdotes narrated by Mr. Darwin in support of the rationality of brutes. Before doing so, however, we must remark that our author's statements, given on the authority (sometimes second-hand authority) of others, afford little evidence of careful criticism. This is the more noteworthy when we consider the conscientious care and pains which he bestows on all the phenomena which he examines himself.

Thus, for example, we are told on the authority of Brehm that—

'An eagle seized a young cercopithecus, which, by clinging to a branch, was not at once carried off; it cried loudly for assistance,

upon which other members of the troop, with much uproar rushed to the rescue, surrounded the eagle, and pulled out so many feathers that he no longer thought of his prey, but only how to escape.'—vol. i. p. 76.

We confess we wish that Mr. Darwin had himself witnessed this episode. Perhaps, however, he has seen other facts sufficiently similar to render this one credible. In the absence of really trustworthy evidence we should, however, be inclined to doubt the fact of a young cercopithecus, unexpectedly seized, being able, by clinging, to resist the action of an eagle's wings.

We are surprised that Mr. Darwin should have accepted the following tale without suspicion:—

'One female baboon had so capacious a heart that she not only adopted young monkeys of other species, but stole young dogs and cats which she continually carried about. Her kindness, however, did not go so far as to share her food with her adopted offspring, at which Brehm was surprised, as his monkeys always divided everything quite fairly with their own young ones. An adopted kitten scratched the above-mentioned affectionate baboon, *who certainly had a fine intellect*, for she was much astonished at being scratched, and immediately examined the kitten's feet, and without more ado bit off the claws.' (!) —vol. i. p. 41.

Has Mr. Darwin ever tested this alleged fact? Would it be possible for a baboon to bite off the claws of a kitten without keeping the feet perfectly straight?

Again we have an anecdote on only second-hand authority (namely a quotation by Brehm of Schimper) to the following effect:—

'In Abyssinia, when the baboons belonging to one species (*C. gelada*) descend in troops from the mountains to plunder the fields, they sometimes encounter troops of another species (*C. hamadryas*), and then a fight ensues. The Geladas roll down great stones, which the Hamadryas try to avoid, and then both species, making a great uproar, rush furiously against each other. Brehm, when accompanying the Duke of Coburg-Gotha, aided in an attack with fire-arms on a troop of baboons in the pass of Mensa in Abyssinia. The baboons in return rolled so many stones down the mountain, some as large as a man's head, that the attackers had to beat a hasty retreat; and the pass was actually for a time closed against the caravan. It deserves notice that these baboons thus acted in concert.'—vol. i. p. 51.

Now, if every statement of fact here given be absolutely correct, it in no way even tends to invalidate the distinction we have drawn between 'instinct' and 'reason'; but the positive assertion that the brutes 'acted in concert,' when the evidence proves nothing more than that their actions were simultaneous, shows

shows a strong bias on the part of the narrator. A flock of sheep will simultaneously turn round and stare and stamp at an intruder; but this is not 'concerted action,' which means that actions are not only simultaneous, but are so in consequence of a reciprocal understanding and convention between the various agents. It may be added that if any brutes were capable of such really *concerted* action, the effects would soon make themselves known to us so forcibly as to prevent the possibility of mistake.

We come now to Mr. Darwin's instances of brute rationality. In the first place he tells us:—

'I had a dog who was savage and averse to all strangers, and I purposely tried his memory after an absence of five years and two days. I went near the stable where he lived, and shouted to him in my old manner; he showed no joy, but instantly followed me out walking and obeyed me, exactly as if I had parted with him only half an hour before. A train of old associations, dormant during five years, had thus been instantaneously awakened in his mind.'—vol. i. p. 45.

No doubt! but this is not 'reason.' Indeed, we could hardly have a better instance of the mere action of associated sensible impressions. What is there here which implies more than memory, impressions of sensible objects and their association? Had there been reason there would have been signs of joy and wonder, though such signs would not alone prove reason to exist. It is evident that Mr. Darwin's own mode of explanation is the sufficient one—namely, by a train of associated sensible impressions. Mr. Darwin surely cannot think that there is in this case any evidence of the dog's having put to himself those questions which, under the circumstances, a rational being would put. Mr. Darwin also tells us how a monkey-trainer gave up in despair the education of monkeys, of which the attention was easily distracted from his teaching, while 'a monkey which carefully attended to him could always be trained.' But 'attention' does not imply 'reason.' The anecdote only shows that some monkeys are more easily impressed and more retentive of impressions than others.

Again, we are told, as an instance of *reason*, that 'Rengger sometimes put a live wasp in paper so that the monkeys in hastily unfolding it got stung; after this had once happened, they always first held the packet to their ears to detect any movement within.' But here again we have no need to call in the aid of 'reason.' The monkeys had had the group of sensations 'folded paper' associated with the other groups—'noise and movement' and 'stung fingers.' The second time they experi-

ence

ence the group of sensations 'folded paper' the succeeding sensations (in this instance only too keenly associated) are forcibly recalled, and with the recollection of the sensation of hearing, the hand goes to the ear. Yet Mr. Darwin considers this unimportant instance of such significance that he goes on to say :—

'Any one who is not convinced by such facts as these, and by what he may observe with his own dogs, that animals can reason, would not be convinced by anything I could add. Nevertheless, I will give one case with respect to dogs, as it rests on two distinct observers, and can *hardly depend on the modification of any instinct*. Mr. Colquhoun winged two wild ducks, which fell on the opposite side of a stream; his retriever tried to bring over both at once, but could not succeed; she then, though never before known to ruffle a feather, deliberately killed one, brought over the other, and returned for the dead bird. Colonel Hutchinson relates that two partridges were shot at once, one being killed and the other wounded; the latter ran away, and was caught by the retriever, who on her return came across the dead bird; she stopped, evidently greatly puzzled, and after one or two trials, finding she could not take it up without permitting the escape of the winged bird, she considered a moment, then deliberately murdered it by giving it a severe crunch, and afterwards brought away both together. This was the only known instance of her having wilfully injured any game.'

Mr. Darwin adds :

'Here we have reason, though not quite perfect, for the retriever might have brought the wounded bird first and then returned for the dead one, as in the case of the two wild ducks.'—vol. i. pp. 47, 48.

Here we reply we have nothing of the kind, and to bring 'reason' into play is gratuitous. The circumstances can be perfectly explained (and on Mr. Darwin's own principles) as evidences of the revival of an old instinct. The ancestors of sporting dogs of course killed their prey, and that trained dogs do not kill it is simply due to man's action, which has suppressed the instinct by education, and which continually thus keeps it under control. It is indubitable that the old tendency *must* be latent, and that a small interruption in the normal retrieving process, such as occurred in the cases cited, would probably be sufficient to revive that old tendency and call the obsolete habit into exercise.

But perhaps the most surprising instance of groundless inference is presented in the following passage :—

'My dog, a full grown and very sensible animal, was lying on the lawn during a hot and still day; but at a little distance a slight breeze occasionally moved an open parasol, which would have been wholly disregarded by the dog, had any one stood near it. As it was, every

every time that the parasol slightly moved, the dog growled fiercely and barked. He must, I think, have reasoned to himself in a rapid and unconscious manner, that movement without any apparent cause indicated the presence of some strange living agent, and no stranger had a right to be on his territory.—vol. i. p. 67.

The consequences deduced from this trivial incident are amazing. Probably, however, Mr. Darwin does not mean what he says; but, on the face of it, we have a brute credited with the abstract ideas 'movement,' 'causation,' and the notions logically arranged and classified in subordinate genera—'agent,' 'living agent,' 'strange living agent.' He also attributes to it the notion of 'a right' of 'territorial limitation,' and the relation of such 'limited territory' and 'personal ownership.' It may safely be affirmed that if a dog could so reason in one instance he would in others, and would give much more unequivocal proofs for Mr. Darwin to bring forward.

Mr. Darwin, however, speaks of reasoning in an 'unconscious manner,' so that he cannot really mean any process of reasoning at all; but, if so, his case is in no way apposite. Even an insect can be startled, and will exhibit as much evidence of rationality as is afforded by the growl of a dog; and all that is really necessary to explain such a phenomenon exists in an oyster, or even in the much talked-of Ascidian.

Thus, then, it appears that, even in Mr. Darwin's specially-selected instances, there is not a tittle of evidence tending, however slightly, to show that any brute possesses the representative reflective faculties. But if, as we assert, brute animals are destitute of such higher faculties, it may well be that those lower faculties which they have (and which we more or less share with them) are highly developed, and their senses possess a degree of keenness and quickness inconceivable to us. Their minds\* being entirely occupied with such lower faculties, and having, so to speak, nothing else to occupy them, their sensible impressions may become interwoven and connected to a far greater extent than in us. Indeed, in the absence of free will, the laws of this association of ideas obtain supreme command over the minds of brutes: the brute being entirely immersed, as it were, in his presentative faculties.

There yet remain two matters for consideration, which tend to prove the fundamental difference which exists between the mental powers of man and brutes:—1. The mental equality

---

\* The words 'mind,' 'mental,' 'intelligence,' &c., are here made use of in reference to the psychical faculties of brutes, in conformity to popular usage, and not as strictly appropriate.

between

between animals of very different grades of structure, and their non-progressiveness; 2. The question of articulate speech.

Considering the vast antiquity of the great animal groups,\* it is, indeed, remarkable how little advance in mental capacity has been achieved even by the highest brutes. This is made especially evident by Mr. Darwin's own assertions as to the capacities of lowly animals. Thus he tells us that—

‘Mr. Gardner, whilst watching a shore-crab (*Gelasimus*) making its burrow, threw some shells towards the hole. One rolled in, and three other shells remained within a few inches of the mouth. In about five minutes the crab brought out the shell which had fallen in, and carried it away to the distance of a foot; it then saw the three other shells lying near, and *evidently thinking* that they might likewise roll in, carried them to the spot where it had laid the first.’—vol. i. p. 334.

Mr. Darwin adds or quotes the astonishing remark, ‘It would, I think, be difficult to distinguish this act from one performed by man by the aid of reason.’ Again, he tells us:—

‘Mr. Lonsdale informs me that he placed a pair of land-shells (*Helix pomatia*), one of which was weakly, into a small and ill-provided garden. After a short time the strong and healthy individual disappeared, and was traced by its track of slime over a wall into an adjoining well-stocked garden. Mr. Lonsdale concluded that it had deserted its sickly mate; but after an absence of twenty-four hours it returned, and apparently communicated the result of its successful exploration, for both then started along the same track and disappeared over the wall.’—vol. i. p. 325.

Whatever may be the real value of the statements quoted, they harmonize with a matter which is incontestable. We refer to the fact that the intelligence of brutes, be they high or be they low, is essentially one in kind, there being a singular parity between animals belonging to groups widely different in type of structure and in degree of development.

Apart from the small modifications which experience occasionally introduces into the habits of animals—as sometimes occurs after man has begun to frequent a newly-discovered island—it cannot be denied that, looking broadly over the whole animal kingdom, there is no evidence of advance in mental power on the part of brutes. This absence of progression in animal intelligence is a very important consideration, and it is one which does not seem to be adverted to by Mr. Darwin,

---

\* Mr. Darwin (vol. i. p. 360) refers to Dr. Scudder's discovery of ‘a fossil insect in the Devonian formation of New Brunswick, furnished with the well-known tympanum or stridulating apparatus of the male *Locustidæ*.’

though

though the facts detailed by him are exceedingly suggestive of it.

When we speak of this absence of progression we do not, of course, mean to deny that the dog is superior in mental activity to the fish, or the jackdaw to the toad. But we mean that, considering the vast period of time that must (on Mr. Darwin's theory) have elapsed for the evolution of an Orang from an Ascidian, and considering how beneficial increased intelligence must be to all in the struggle for life, it is inconceivable (on Mr. Darwin's principles only) that a mental advance should not have taken place greater in degree, more generally diffused, and more in proportion to the grade of the various animals than we find to be actually the case. For in what respect is the intelligence of the ape superior to that of the dog or of the elephant? It cannot be said that there is one point in which its psychical nature approximates to man more than that of those four-footed beasts. But, again, where is the great superiority of a dog or an ape over a bird? The falcon trained to hawking is at least as remarkable an instance of the power of education as the trained dog. The tricks which birds can be taught to perform are as complex and wonderful as those acted by the mammal. The phenomena of nidification, and some of those now brought forward by Mr. Darwin as to courtship, are fully comparable with analogous phenomena of quasi-intelligence in any beast.

This, however, is but a small part of the argument. For let us descend to the invertebrata, and what do we find?—a restriction of their quasi-mental faculties proportioned to their constantly inferior type of structure? By no means. We find, *e. g.*, in ants, phenomena which simulate those of an intelligence such as ours far more than do any phenomena exhibited by the highest beasts. Ants display a complete and complex political organization, classes of beings socially distinct, war resulting in the capture of slaves, and the appropriation and maintenance of domestic animals (*Aphides*) analogous to our milk-giving cattle.

Mr. Darwin truthfully remarks on the great difference in these respects between such creatures as ants and bees, and singularly inert members of the same class—such as the scale insect or coccus. But can it be pretended that the action of natural and sexual selection has alone produced these phenomena in certain insects, and failed to produce them in any other mere animals even of the very highest class? If these phenomena are due to a power and faculty similar in kind to human intelligence, and which power is latent and capable of evolution in all animals, then it is certain that this power must have been evolved in other instances also, and that we should see varying degrees of it in many

many, and notably in the highest brutes as well as in man. If, on the other hand, the faculties of brutes are different in kind from human intelligence, there can be no reason whatever why animals most closely approaching man in physical structure should resemble him in psychical nature also.

This reflection leads us to the difference which exists between men and brutes as regards the faculty of articulate speech. Mr. Darwin remarks that of the distinctively human characters this has 'justly been considered as one of the chief' (vol. i. p. 53). We cannot agree in this. Some brutes can articulate, and it is quite conceivable that brutes might (though as a fact they do not) so associate certain sensations and gratifications with certain articulate sounds as, in a certain sense, to speak. This, however, would in no way ever tend to bridge over the gulf which exists between the representative reflective faculties and the merely presentative ones. Articulate signs of sensible impressions would be fundamentally as distinct as mere gestures are from truly rational speech.

Mr. Darwin evades the question about language by in one place (vol. i. p. 54) attributing that faculty in man to his having acquired a higher intellectual nature; and in another (vol. ii. p. 391), by ascribing his higher intellectual nature to his having acquired that faculty.

Our author's attempts to bridge over the chasm which separates instinctive cries from rational speech are remarkable examples of groundless speculation. Thus he ventures to say—

'That primeval man, or rather some early progenitor of man, *probably* used his voice largely, as does one of the gibbon-apes at the present day, in producing true musical cadences, that is in singing; we may conclude from a widely-spread analogy that this power would have been especially exerted during the courtship of the sexes, serving to express various emotions, as love, jealousy, triumph, and serving as a challenge to their rivals. The imitation by articulate sounds of musical cries *might* have given rise to words expressive of various complex emotions.'

And again:

'It does not appear *altogether incredible*, that some unusually wise ape-like animal should have thought of imitating the growl of a beast of prey, so as to indicate to his fellow monkeys the nature of the expected danger. And this would have been a first step in the formation of a language.'—vol. i. p. 56.

But the question, not whether it is incredible, but whether there are any data whatever to warrant such a supposition. Mr. Darwin brings forward none: we suspect none could be brought forward.

It is not, however, emotional expressions or manifestations of sensible impressions, in whatever way exhibited, which have to be accounted for, but the enunciation of distinct deliberate judgments as to 'the what,' 'the how,' and 'the why,' by definite articulate sounds; and for these Mr. Darwin not only does not account, but he does not adduce anything even tending to account for them. Altogether we may fairly conclude, from the complete failure of Mr. Darwin to establish identity of kind between the mental faculties of man and of brutes, that identity cannot be established; as we are not likely for many years to meet with a naturalist so competent to collect and marshal facts in support of such identity, if any such facts there are. The old barrier, then, between 'presentative instinct' and 'representative reason,' remains still unimpaired, and, as we believe, insurmountable.

We now pass to another question, which is of even greater consequence than that of man's intellectual powers. Mr. Darwin does not hesitate to declare that even the 'moral sense' is a mere result of the development of brutal instincts. He maintains, 'the first foundation or origin of the moral sense lies in the social instincts, including sympathy; and these instincts no doubt were primarily gained, as in the case of the lower animals, through natural selection' (vol. ii. p. 394).

Everything, however, depends upon what we mean by the 'moral sense.' It is a patent fact that there does exist a perception of the qualities 'right' and 'wrong' attaching to certain actions. However arising, men have a consciousness of an absolute and immutable rule *legitimately* claiming obedience with an authority necessarily supreme and absolute—in other words, intellectual judgments are formed which imply the existence of an ethical ideal in the judging mind.

It is the existence of this power which has to be accounted for; neither its application nor even its validity have to be considered. Yet instances of difference of opinion respecting the moral value of particular concrete actions are often brought forward as if they could disprove the *existence* of moral intuition. Such instances are utterly beside the question. It is amply sufficient for our purpose if it be conceded that developed reason dictates to us that certain modes of action, abstractedly considered, are intrinsically wrong; and this we believe to be indisputable.

It is equally beside the question to show that the existence of mutually beneficial acts and of altruistic habits can be explained by 'natural selection.' No amount of benevolent habits tend even in the remotest degree to account for the intellectual per-

ception of 'right' and 'duty.' Such habits may make the doing of beneficial acts pleasant, and their omission painful; but such feelings have essentially nothing whatever to do with the perception of 'right' and 'wrong,' nor will the faintest incipient stage of the perception be accounted for by the strongest development of such sympathetic feelings. Liking to do acts which happen to be good, is one thing; seeing that actions are good, whether we or others like them or not, is quite another.

Mr. Darwin's account of the moral sense is very different from the above. It may be expressed most briefly by saying that it is the prevalence of more enduring instincts over less persistent ones—the former being social instincts, the latter personal ones. He tells us:—

'As man cannot prevent old impressions continually repassing through his mind, he will be compelled to compare the weaker impressions of, for instance, past hunger, or of vengeance satisfied or danger avoided at the cost of other men, with the instinct of sympathy and goodwill to his fellows, which is still present and ever in some degree active in his mind. He will then feel in his imagination that a stronger instinct has yielded to one which now seems comparatively weak; and then that sense of dissatisfaction will inevitably be felt with which man is endowed, like every other animal, in order that his instincts may be obeyed.'—vol. i. p. 90.

Mr. Darwin means by 'the moral sense' an instinct, and adds, truly enough, that 'the very essence of an instinct is, that it is followed independently of reason' (vol. i. p. 100). But the very essence of moral action is that it is *not* followed independently of reason.

Having stated our wide divergence from Mr. Darwin with respect to what the term 'moral sense' denotes, we might be dispensed from criticising instances which must from our point of view be irrelevant, as Mr. Darwin would probably admit. Nevertheless, let us examine a few of these instances, and see if we can discover in them any justification of the views he propounds.

As illustrations of the development of self-reproach for the neglect of some good action, he observes:—

'A young pointer, when it first scents game, apparently cannot help pointing. A squirrel in a cage who pats the nuts which it cannot eat, as if to bury them in the ground, can hardly be thought to act thus either from pleasure or pain. Hence the common assumption that men must be impelled to every action by experiencing some pleasure or pain may be erroneous. Although a habit may be blindly and implicitly followed, independently of any pleasure or pain felt at the moment, yet if it be forcibly and abruptly checked, a vague sense of

of dissatisfaction is generally experienced; and this is especially true in regard to persons of feeble intellect.'—vol. i. p. 80.

Now, passing over the question whether in the 'pointing' and 'patting' referred to there may not be some agreeable sensations, we contend that such instincts have nothing to do with 'morality,' from their blind nature, such blindness simply *ipso facto* eliminating every vestige of morality from an action.

Mr. Darwin certainly exaggerates the force and extent of social sympathetic feelings. Mr. Mill admits that they are 'often wanting;' but Mr. Darwin claims the conscious possession of such feelings for all, and quotes Hume as saying that the view of the happiness of others 'communicates a secret joy,' while the appearance of their misery 'throws a melancholy damp over the imagination.\*' One might wish that this remark were universally true, but unfortunately some men take pleasure in the pain of others; and Larochefoucauld even ventured on the now well-known saying, 'that there is something in the misfortunes of our best friends not unpleasant to us.' But our feeling that the sufferings of others are pleasant or unpleasant has nothing to do with the question, which refers to the *judgment* whether the indulging of such feelings is 'right' or 'wrong.'

If the 'social instinct' were the real basis of the moral sense, the fact that society approved of anything would be recognised as the supreme sanction of it. Not only, however, is this not so, not only do we judge as to whether society in certain cases is right or wrong, but we demand a reason why we should obey society at all; we demand a rational basis and justification for social claims, if we happen to have a somewhat inquiring turn of mind. We shall be sure avowedly or secretly to despise and neglect the performance of acts which we do not happen to desire, and which have not an intellectual sanction.

The only passage in which our author seems as if about to meet the real question at issue is very disappointing, as the difficulty is merely evaded. He remarks, 'I am aware that some persons maintain that actions performed impulsively do not come under the dominion of the moral sense, and cannot be called moral' (vol. i. p. 87). This is not a correct statement of the intuitive view, and the difficulty is evaded thus: 'But it appears scarcely possible to draw any clear line of distinction of this kind, though the distinction may be real!' It seems to us, however, that there is no difficulty at all in drawing a line

\* 'Enquiry concerning the Principles of Morals,' Edit. 1751, p. 132.

between a judgment as to an action being right or wrong and every other kind of mental act. Mr. Darwin goes on to say :—

‘Moreover, an action repeatedly performed by us, will at last be done without deliberation or hesitation, and can then hardly be distinguished from an instinct; yet surely no one will pretend that an action thus done ceases to be moral. On the contrary, we all feel that an act cannot be considered as perfect, or as performed in the most noble manner, unless it is done impulsively, without deliberation or effort, in the same manner as by a man in whom the requisite qualities are innate.’—vol. i. p. 88.

To this must be replied, in one sense, ‘Yes;’ in another, ‘No.’ An action which has ceased to be directly or indirectly deliberate has ceased to be moral as a distinct act, but it is moral as the continuation of those preceding deliberate acts through which the good habit was originally formed, and the rapidity with which the will is directed in the case supposed may indicate the number and constancy of antecedent meritorious volitions. Mr. Darwin seems to see this more or less, as he adds: ‘He who is forced to overcome his fear or want of sympathy before he acts, deserves, however, in one way higher credit than the man whose innate disposition leads him to a good act without effort.’

As an illustration of the genesis of remorse, we have the case ‘of a temporary though for the time strongly persistent instinct conquering another instinct which is usually dominant over all others.’ Swallows ‘at the proper season seem all day long to be impressed with the desire to migrate; their habits change; they become restless, are noisy, and congregate in flocks. Whilst the mother-bird is feeding or brooding over her nestlings, the maternal instinct is probably stronger than the migratory; but the instinct which is more persistent gains the victory, and at last, at a moment when her young ones are not in sight, she takes flight and deserts them. When arrived at the end of her long journey, and the migratory instinct ceases to act, what an agony of remorse each bird would feel, if, from being endowed with great mental activity, she could not prevent the image continually passing before her mind of her young ones perishing in the bleak north from cold and hunger.’—vol. i. p. 90.

Let us suppose she does suffer ‘agony,’ that feeling would be nothing to the purpose. What is requisite is that she shall judge that she *ought not* to have left them. To make clear our point, let us imagine a man formerly entangled in ties of affection which in justice to another his conscience has induced him to sever. The image of the distress his act of severance has caused may occasion him keen emotional suffering for years, accompanied by a clear perception that his act has been right. Again, let us suppose

suppose another case: The struggling father of a family becomes aware that the property on which he lives really belongs to another, and he relinquishes it. He may continue to judge that he has done a proper action, whilst tortured by the trials in which his act of justice has involved him. To assert that these acts are merely instinctive would be absurdly false. In the cases supposed, obedience is paid to a clear intellectual perception and against the very strongest instincts.

That we have not misrepresented Mr. Darwin's exposition of 'conscience' is manifest. He says that if a man has gratified a passing instinct, to the neglect of an enduring instinct, he 'will then feel dissatisfied with himself, and will resolve with more or less force to act differently for the future. This is conscience; for conscience looks backwards and judges past actions, inducing that kind of dissatisfaction, which if weak we call regret, and if severe remorse' (vol. i. p. 91.) 'Conscience' certainly 'looks back and judges,' but not all that 'looks back and judges' is 'conscience.' A judgment of conscience is one of a particular kind, namely a judgment according to the standard of moral worth. But for this, a *gourmand*, looking back and judging that a particular sauce had occasioned him dyspepsia, would, in the dissatisfaction arising from his having eaten the wrong dish at dinner, exercise his conscience!

Indeed, elsewhere (vol. i. p. 103) Mr. Darwin speaks of 'the standard of morality rising higher and higher,' though he nowhere explains what he means either by the 'standard' or by the 'higher;' and, indeed, it is very difficult to understand what can possibly be meant by this 'rising of the standard,' if the 'standard' is from first to last pleasure and profit.

We find, again, the singular remark:—'If any desire or instinct leading to an action opposed to the good of others, still appears to a man, when recalled to mind, as strong as or stronger than his social instinct, he will feel no keen regret at having followed it' (vol. i. p. 92).

Mr. Darwin is continually mistaking a merely beneficial action for a moral one; but, as before said, it is one thing to *act well* and quite another to be a moral agent. A dog or even a fruit-tree may act well, but neither is a moral agent. Of course, all the instances he brings forward with regard to animals are not in point, on account of this misconception of the problem to be solved. He gives, however, some examples which tell strongly against his own view. Thus, he remarks of the *Law of Honour*—'The breach of this law, even when the breach is known to be strictly accordant with true morality, has caused many a man more agony than a real crime. We recognise the same influence

in the sense of burning shame which most of us have felt, even after the interval of years, when calling to mind some accidental breach of a trifling, though fixed, rule of etiquette' (vol. i. p. 92). This is most true; some trifling breach of good manners may indeed occasion us pain; but this may be unaccompanied by a judgment that we are morally blameworthy. It is judgment, and not feeling, which has to do with right and wrong. But a yet better example might be given. What quality can have been more universally useful to social communities than courage? It has always been, and is still, greatly admired and highly appreciated, and is especially adapted, both directly and indirectly, to enable its possessors to become the fathers of succeeding generations. If the social instinct were the basis of the moral sense, it is infallibly certain that courage must have come to be regarded as supremely 'good,' and cowardice to be deserving of the deepest moral condemnation. And yet what is the fact? A coward feels probably self-contempt and that he has incurred the contempt of his associates, but he does not feel 'wicked.' He is painfully conscious of his defective organization, but he knows that an organization, however defective, cannot, in itself, constitute moral demerit. Similarly, we, the observers, despise, avoid, or hate a coward; but we can clearly understand that a coward may be a more virtuous man than another who abounds in animal courage.

The better still to show how completely distinct are the conceptions 'enduring or strong instincts' and 'virtuous desires' on the one hand, and 'transient or weak impulses' and 'vicious inclinations' on the other, let us substitute in the following passage for the words which Mr. Darwin, on his own principles, illegitimately introduces, others which accord with those principles, and we shall see how such substitution eliminates every element of morality from the passage:—

'Looking to future generations, there is no cause to fear that the social instincts will grow weaker, and we may expect that enduring [virtuous] habits will grow stronger, becoming perhaps fixed by inheritance. In this case the struggle between our stronger [higher] and weaker [lower] impulses will be less severe, and the strong [virtue] will be triumphant' (vol. i. p. 104).

As to past generations, Mr. Darwin tells us (vol. i. p. 166) that at all times throughout the world tribes have supplanted other tribes; and as social acts are an element in their success, sociality must have been intensified, and this because 'an increase in the number of well-endowed men will certainly give an immense advantage to one tribe over another.' No doubt! but this

only explains an augmentation of mutually beneficial actions. It does not in the least even tend to explain how the moral judgment was first formed.

Having thus examined Mr. Darwin's theory of Sexual Selection, and his comparison of the mental powers of man (including their moral application) with those of the lower animals, we have a few remarks to make upon his mode of conducting his argument.

In the first place we must repeat what we have already said as to his singular dogmatism, and in the second place we must complain of the way in which he positively affirms again and again the existence of the very things which have to be proved. Thus, to take for instance the theory of the descent of man from some inferior form, he says :—‘ the grounds upon which this conclusion rests *will never be shaken* ’ (vol. ii. p. 385), and ‘ the possession of exalted mental powers is *no* insuperable objection to this conclusion ’ (vol. i. p. 107). Speaking of sympathy, he boldly remarks, — ‘ this instinct *no doubt* was originally acquired like all the other social instincts through natural selection ’ (vol. i. p. 164); and ‘ the fundamental social instincts *were* originally thus gained ’ (vol. i. p. 173).

Again, as to the stridulating organs of insects, he says :—‘ No one who admits the agency of natural selection, will dispute that these musical instruments have been acquired through sexual selection.’ Speaking of the peculiarities of humming-birds and pigeons, Mr. Darwin observes, ‘ the *sole* difference between these cases is, that in one the result is due to man's selection, whilst in the other, as with humming-birds, birds of paradise, &c., it is due to sexual selection,—that is, to the selection by the females of the more beautiful males ’ (vol. ii. p. 78.) Of birds, the males of which are brilliant, but the hens are only slightly so, he remarks : ‘ these cases *are almost certainly* due to characters primarily acquired by the male, having been transferred, in a greater or less degree, to the female ’ (vol. ii. p. 128). ‘ The colours of the males may *safely* be attributed to sexual selection ’ (vol. ii. p. 194). As to certain species of birds in which the males alone are black, we are told, there can *hardly be a doubt*, that blackness in these cases has been a sexually selected character ’ (vol. ii. p. 226). The following, again, is far too positive a statement :—‘ Other characters proper to the males of the lower animals, such as bright colours, and various ornaments *have been* acquired by the more attractive males having been preferred by the females. There are, however, exceptional cases, in which the males, instead of having been selected, *have been* the selectors ’ (vol. ii. p. 371).

It

It is very rarely that Mr. Darwin fails in courtesy to his opponents ; and we were therefore surprised at the tone of the following passage (vol. ii. p. 386) :—‘ He who is not content to look, *like a savage*, at the phenomena of nature as disconnected, *cannot* any longer believe that man is the work of a separate act of creation. He will be *forced* to admit’ the contrary. What justifies Mr. Darwin in his assumption that to suppose the soul of man to have been specially created, is to regard the phenomena of nature as disconnected ?

In connexion with this assumption of superiority on Mr. Darwin’s part, we may notice another matter of less importance, but which tends to produce the same effect on the minds of his readers. We allude to the terms of panegyric with which he introduces the names or opinions of every disciple of evolutionism, while writers of equal eminence, who have not adopted Mr. Darwin’s views, are quoted, for the most part, without any commendation. Thus we read of our ‘great anatomist and philosopher, Prof. Huxley,’—of ‘our great philosopher, Herbert Spencer,’—of ‘the remarkable work of Mr. Galton,’—of ‘the admirable treatises of Sir Charles Lyell and Sir John Lubbock,’—and so on. We do not grudge these gentlemen such honorific mention, which some of them well deserve, but the repetition produces an unpleasant effect ; and we venture to question the good taste on Mr. Darwin’s part, in thus speaking of the adherents to his own views, when we do not remember, for example, a word of praise bestowed upon Prof. Owen in the numerous quotations which our author has made from his works.

Secondly, as an instance of Mr. Darwin’s practice of begging the question at issue, we may quote the following assertion :—‘ Any animal whatever, endowed with well-marked social *instincts*, would inevitably acquire a moral sense or *conscience*, as soon as its intellectual powers had become as well developed, or nearly as well developed, as in man’ (vol. i. p. 71). This is either a monstrous assumption or a mere truism ; it is a truism, for of course, any creature with the intellect of a man would perceive the qualities men’s intellect is capable of perceiving, and, amongst them—moral worth.

Mr. Darwin, in a passage before quoted (vol. i. p. 86) slips in the whole of absolute morality, by employing the phrase ‘appreciation of justice.’ Again (vol. i. p. 168), when he speaks of aiding the needy, he remarks :—‘ Nor could we check our sympathy, if so urged by hard reason, without deterioration in the *noblest* part of our nature.’ How noblest ? According to Mr. Darwin, a virtuous instinct is a strong and permanent one. There can be, according to his views, no other elements of quality than

than intensity and duration. Mr. Darwin, in fact, thus silently and unconsciously introduces the moral element into his 'social instinct,' and then, of course, has no difficulty in finding in the latter what he had previously put there. This, however, is quite illegitimate, as he makes the social instinct synonymous with the gregariousness of brutes. In such gregariousness, however, there is no moral element, because the mental powers of brutes are not equal to forming reflective, deliberate, representative judgments.

The word 'social' is ambiguous, as gregarious animals may metaphorically be called social, and man's social relations may be regarded both beneficentially and morally. Having first used 'social' in the former sense, it is subsequently applied in the latter; and it is thus that the really moral conception is silently and illegitimately introduced.

We may now sum up our judgment of Mr. Darwin's work on the '*Descent of Man*'—of its execution and tendency, of what it fails to accomplish and of what it has successfully attained.

Although the style of the work is, as we have said, fascinating, nevertheless we think that the author is somewhat encumbered with the multitude of his facts, which at times he seems hardly able to group and handle so effectively as might be expected from his special talent. Nor does he appear to have maturely reflected over the data he has so industriously collected. Moreover, we are surprised to find so accurate an observer receiving as facts many statements of a very questionable nature, as we have already pointed out, and frequently on second-hand authority. The reasoning also is inconclusive, the author having allowed himself constantly to be carried away by the warmth and fertility of his imagination. In fact, Mr. Darwin's power of reasoning seems to be in an inverse ratio to his power of observation. He now strangely exaggerates the action of 'sexual selection,' as previously he exaggerated the effects of the 'survival of the fittest.' On the whole, we are convinced that by the present work the cause of 'natural selection' has been rather injured than promoted; and we confess to a feeling of surprise that the case put before us is not stronger, since we had anticipated the production of far more telling and significant details from Mr. Darwin's biological treasure-house.

A great part of the work may be dismissed as beside the point—as a mere elaborate and profuse statement of the obvious fact, which no one denies, that man is an animal, and has all the essential properties of a highly organised one. Along with this truth, however, we find the assumption that

that he is *no more* than an animal—an assumption which is necessarily implied in Mr. Darwin's distinct assertion that there is no difference of *kind*, but merely one of *degree*, between man's mental faculties and those of brutes.

We have endeavoured to show that this is distinctly untrue. We maintain that while there is no need to abandon the received position that man is truly an animal, he is yet the only rational one known to us, and that his rationality constitutes a fundamental distinction—one of *kind* and not of *degree*. The estimate we have formed of man's position differs therefore most widely from that of Mr. Darwin.

Mr. Darwin's remarks, before referred to (*ante*, p. 77), concerning the difference between the instincts of the coccus (or scale insect) and those of the ant—and the bearing of that difference on their zoological position (as both are members of the class *insecta*) and on that of man—exhibit clearly his misapprehension as to the true significance of man's mental powers.

For in the first place zoological classification is morphological. That is to say it is a classification based upon form and structure—upon the number and shape of the several parts of animals, and not at all upon what those parts *do*, the consideration of which belongs to physiology. This being the case we not only may, but *should*, in the field of zoology, neglect all questions of diversities of instinct or mental power, equally with every other power, as is evidenced by the location of the bat and the porpoise in the same class, *mammalia*, and the parrot and the tortoise in the same larger group, *Sauropsida*.

Looking, therefore, at man with regard to his bodily structure, we not only may, but *should*, reckon him as a member of the class *mammalia*, and even (we believe) consider him as the representative of a mere family of the first order of that class. But all men are not zoologists; and even zoologists must, outside their science, consider man in his totality and not merely from the point of view of anatomy.

If then we are right in our confident assertion that man's mental faculties are different *in kind* from those of brutes, and if he is, as we maintain, the only rational animal; then is man, as a whole, to be spoken of by preference from the point of view of his animality, or from the point of view of his rationality? Surely from the latter, and, if so, we must consider not structure, but action.

Now Mr. Darwin seems to concede\* that a difference in kind *would* justify the placing of man in a distinct kingdom, inasmuch

---

\* 'Descent of Man,' vol. i. p. 186.

as he says a difference in degree does not so justify; and we have no hesitation in affirming (with Mr. Darwin) that between the instinctive powers of the coccus and the ant there is but a difference of degree, and that, therefore, they do belong to the same kingdom; but we contend it is quite otherwise with man. Mr. Darwin doubtless admits that all the wonderful actions of ants are mere modifications of instinct. But if it were not so—if the piercing of tunnels beneath rivers, &c., were evidence of their possession of reason, then, far from agreeing with Mr. Darwin, we should say that ants also are rational animals, and that, while considered from the anatomical stand-point they would be insects, from that of their rationality they would rank together with man in a kingdom apart of 'rational animals.' Really, however, there is no tittle of evidence that ants possess the reflective, self-conscious, deliberate faculty; while the perfection of their instincts is a most powerful argument against the need of attributing a rudiment of rationality to any brute whatever.

We seem then to have Mr. Darwin on our side when we affirm that animals possessed of mental faculties distinct in kind should be placed in a kingdom apart. And man possesses such a distinction.

Is this, however, all that can be said for the dignity of his position? Is he merely one division of the visible universe co-ordinate with the animal, vegetable, and mineral kingdoms?

It would be so if he were intelligent and no more. If he could observe the facts of his own existence, investigate the co-existences and successions of phenomena, but all the time remain like the other parts of the visible universe a mere floating unit in the stream of time, incapable of one act of free self-determination or one voluntary moral aspiration after an ideal of absolute goodness. This, however, is far from being the case. Man is not merely an intellectual animal, but he is also a free moral agent, and, as such—and with the infinite future such freedom opens out before him—differs from all the rest of the visible universe by a distinction so profound that none of those which separate other visible beings is comparable with it. The gulf which lies between his being as a whole, and that of the highest brute, marks off vastly more than a mere kingdom of material beings; and man, so considered, differs far more from an elephant or a gorilla than do these from the dust of the earth on which they tread.

Thus, then, in our judgment the author of the '*Descent of Man*' has utterly failed in the only part of his work which is really important. Mr. Darwin's errors are mainly due to a

radically

radically false metaphysical system in which he seems (like so many other physicists) to have become entangled. Without a sound philosophical basis, however, no satisfactory scientific superstructure can ever be reared; and if Mr. Darwin's failure should lead to an increase of philosophic culture on the part of physicists, we may therein find some consolation for the injurious effects which his work is likely to produce on too many of our half-educated classes. We sincerely trust Mr. Darwin may yet live to furnish us with another work, which, while enriching physical science, shall not, with needless opposition, set at naught the first principles of both philosophy and religion.

---

ART. III.—1. *Das Reichsgesetzblatt*. Wien.

2. *Oesterreich und die Bürgschaften seines Bestandes*. Von Dr. Adolph Fischhof. Wien, 1870.

3. *Federation oder Realunion*. Von Dr. W. Lustkaudl. Wien, 1870.

4. *Des Oesterreichers Grundrechte und Verfassung*. Wien, 1868.

5. *Oesterreich seit dem Falle Belcredi's*. 'Unsere Zeit.' Vol. V. Nos. 2, 4, 9, 12, 15.

A good deal has been written lately about 'New America' and 'New Russia,' but no one has attempted to give Englishmen anything like a detailed description of New Austria. And yet it would be difficult to point to any country in the course of the world's history which, in the short space of four years, has so completely cast away old traditions and assumed a new political and social character, as this old home of despotism, the last depositary of the traditions of the Holy Roman Empire.

Peace politicians may say that a war always does more harm than good to the nations which engage in it. Perhaps it always does, at any rate, morally speaking, to the victors; but that it does not to the vanquished, Austria stands as a living evidence. Finally excluded from Italy and Germany by the campaign of 1866, she has cast aside her dreams of foreign domination, and has set herself manfully to the task of making a nation out of the various conflicting nationalities over which she presides. It does not require much insight to perceive that as long as she held her position in Germany this fusion was hopeless. The overwhelming preponderance of the German element made any approach to a reciprocity of interests impossible. The Germans always were regarded as sovereigns, the remaining nationalities as subjects; it was for these to command, for those to obey. In like

like manner, it was impossible for the Austrian Government to establish a mutual understanding with a population which felt itself attracted—alike by the ties of race, language, and geographical position—to another political union. Nay more, as long as the occupation of the Italian provinces remained as a blot on the Imperial escutcheon, it was impossible for the Government to command any genuine sympathy from any of its subjects. But with the close of the war with Prussia these two difficulties—the relations with Germany and the relations with Italy—were swept away. From this time forward Austria could appear before the world as a Power binding together for the interests of all, a number of petty nationalities, each of which was too feeble to maintain a separate existence. In short, from the year 1866 Austria had a *raison d'être*, whereas before she had none.

It is proposed in the following remarks, first to describe Austria as she was after Sadowa; secondly, to give an account of the main events which have accomplished her political transformation; thirdly, to describe her as she is, and to glance at the probable future which awaits her.

A short preliminary account of the complicated political machinery obtaining in Austria will be necessary, inasmuch as ignorance on this point would render much of what is to follow unintelligible. Briefly then, the Empire is divided into a number of provinces, and the population of each province into three groups or classes. The first group consists of the great landlords (*Grossgrundbesitzer*), the second of the commercial men belonging to the towns, markets, and trade-guilds, the third of the inhabitants of the country parishes (*Landgemeinde*). Each of these groups has the privilege of electing a certain number of members to the provincial Parliament (*Landtag*). To take a typical instance (for the proportions vary in the different provinces), in Bohemia the great landlords elect 70 members, the towns and markets 87, and the country parishes 79. In addition to this, the archbishop and bishops of each province sit in the Landtag by right of office. The great landlords elect their members, as a rule, *en masse*; the remaining two groups are divided into a number of voting-divisions, each of which has the right of electing a certain definite number of members. Thus the country parishes are grouped together into political circles (*Wahlbezirke*), and each circle elects one member. The competence of the Landtage is two-fold. They are (1) supreme in certain questions of local administration; (2) they elect from their own body members for the Reichsrath, or central Parliament, which meets in Vienna. The method of election is as follows. The three groups or classes are all

all represented by certain fixed numbers. Thus, in Bohemia, the great landlords send 15, the towns 20, and the parishes 19 members to the Reichsrath. But the members of the three groups do not respectively choose their own delegates. The whole Landtag votes in each case, but its election is confined, as the case may be, to one of the groups. This group-system was the invention of Schmerling, who was Premier in 1861, and its object was to give an artificial preponderance to the landlords, whose votes were most easily influenced by Court persuasion. The Reichsrath consists of an Upper and Lower House (*Herren- und Abgeordnetenhaus*). The Upper House contains (1) a number of hereditary peers of different ranks, (2) the Prince-Cardinals and Archbishops of the Empire, (3) a certain number of life-peers, among whom may be found well-known statesmen, lawyers, generals, poets, &c. The Lower House contains 203 members—a certain definite number being elected by the Landtag of each province, Bohemia sending 54, Galicia 38, Moravia 22, Lower Austria 18, &c.

Perhaps no country since the days of the late Roman Empire ever found itself in a more wretched condition than Austria in the winter of 1866. An ecclesiastical despotism had for years crushed all the free thought of the nation: a civil despotism had crushed all its political life, and had now added to its many sins the crowning sin of a crushing military failure. Popular education was by legal sanction in the hands of the priests: there was no Ministerial responsibility: Parliament had lost control even of the public purse; and a heavy deficit threatened national bankruptcy. In addition to these evils the different nationalities, which had hitherto been kept in order by the sword, showed open signs of revolution, and the weak policy of Belcredi's Ministry had neither the strength to control, nor the sagacity to pacify them.

It was under these auspices that Baron Beust, on the 7th of February, 1867, took office under Franz Joseph. His programme may be stated as follows. He saw that the day of centralism and imperial unity was gone past recall, and that the most liberal Constitution in the world would never reconcile the nationalities to their present position, as provinces under the always detested and now despised Empire. But then came the question—Granted that a certain disintegration is inevitable, how far is this disintegration to go? Beust proposed to disarm the opposition of the leading nationality by the gift of an almost complete independence, and, resting on the support thus obtained, to gain time for conciliating the remaining provinces by building up a new system of free government.

It would be out of place to give a detailed account of the well-known

known measure which converted the 'Austrian empire' into the 'Austro-Hungarian monarchy.' It will be necessary, however, to describe the additions made by it to the political machinery. The Hungarian Reichstag was constructed on the same principle as the Austrian Reichsrath. It was to meet in Pesth, as the Reichsrath at Vienna, and was to have its own responsible ministers. From the members of the Reichsrath and Reichstag respectively were to be chosen annually sixty delegates to represent Cisleithanian and sixty to represent Hungarian interests—twenty being taken in each case from the Upper, forty from the Lower House. These two 'Delegations,' whose votes were to be taken, when necessary, collectively, though each Delegation sat in a distinct chamber, owing to the difference of language, formed the Supreme Imperial Assembly, and met alternate years at Vienna and Pesth. They were competent in matters of foreign policy, in military administration, and in Imperial finance. At their head stood three Imperial ministers—the Reichskanzler, who presided at the Foreign Office, and was *ex officio* Prime Minister, the Minister of War, and the Minister of Finance. These three ministers were independent of the Reichsrath and Reichstag, and could only be dismissed by a vote of want of confidence on the part of the Delegations.

The 'Ausgleich' or scheme of federation with Hungary is, no doubt, much open to criticism, both as a whole and in its several parts. It must always be borne in mind that administratively and politically it was a retrogression. At a time in which all other European nations—notably North Germany—were simplifying and unifying their political systems, Austria was found doing the very reverse. It is easy to point out the inconvenience of a state of things which makes an annual transfer of the seat of Government necessary, and forces the Imperial Parliament and Ministry to reside every other year at a distance from the Ambassadors of the foreign Courts. It might be urged that it was foolish to gratify Hungarian vanity by making a second capital, and absurd to have no single chamber where members of each kingdom could debate in common on subjects of Imperial interest. The true answer to these objections is, that the measure of 1867 was constructed to meet a practical difficulty. Its end was not the formation of a symmetrical system of government, but the pacification of Hungary. The Magyars, who with their feudal institutions and commercial backwardness are still semi-barbarians, required the concession of the capital as a sign and symbol of their independence. They refused to admit the constitution of a supreme Imperial assembly, because they foresaw that German would be spoken in such an assembly, and were unwilling

to own the superiority of the German to the Magyar tongue. Hence the justification of these and similar irrational clauses of the measure is first their necessity, and secondly their success. Before 1867 Hungary was a discontented province, kept in order by German troops: it is now the most contented and patriotic part of the empire.

The only part of the scheme which is open to really serious objection is the financial part. In this question the Hungarians must be considered as having made an unworthy use of their strong political position. In 1867 the Austrian national debt amounted to 3046 million florins, the yearly interest being 127 millions. To this large interest the Hungarians, who plaintively urged that the virgin credit of the new kingdom must not start with a burden greater than it was able to bear, refused to contribute more than 29½ millions. Throughout the negotiations they persisted in putting the question, not what it was just that Hungary should pay, but what Hungary, with advantage to herself and without injury to her political future, could pay. Through this concession the remaining provinces were burdened with a debt which they were positively unable to meet, and the Hungarians must be held mainly answerable for the disastrous repudiation of 1868, of which they had ingeniously avoided the direct responsibility.

It was further provided that from January, 1868, to December, 1877, the military and other common expenses connected with the Foreign and Finance Department should be defrayed by the two halves of the empire, in very different proportions. Cisleithania was to pay 70, Hungary only 30 per cent. Thus the latter was put in possession of half the power in the Imperial system, with less than a third of the burdens attaching to that power.

Of the defects which have been noticed in the dual system—viz., the double capital, the absence of a single supreme Parliament, and the financial anomaly—it may be observed that the second only is irremediable. As confidence in the Government increases, it may well be hoped that the Hungarians themselves will recognize the inconvenience of a double administrative centre and the uselessness of a financial prerogative, which, inasmuch as it lacks its due counterpart of financial responsibility, could never be practically exercised without leading to discontent, if not to revolution.

From this point the internal history of the two halves of the empire flows in two different channels. Graf Andrassy, the Hungarian Premier, had a comparatively easy task before him. There were several reasons for this. In the first place, the predominance of the Magyars in Hungary was more assured than

that of the Germans in Cisleithania. It is true that they numbered only 5,000,000 out of the 16,000,000 inhabitants; but in these 5,000,000 were included almost all the rank, wealth, and intelligence of the country. Hence they formed in the Reichstag a compact and homogeneous majority, under which the remaining Slovaks and Croats soon learnt to range themselves. In the second place, Hungary had the great advantage of starting in a certain degree afresh. Her government was not bound by the traditional policy of former Vienna ministries, and by the manœuvre we have noticed it had managed to keep its financial credit unimpaired. In the third place, as those who are acquainted with Hungarian history well know, Parliamentary institutions had for a long time flourished in Hungary. Indeed the Magyars, who among their many virtues can hardly be credited with the virtue of humility, assert that the world is mistaken in ascribing to England the glory of having invented representative government, and claim this glory for themselves. Hence one of the main difficulties with which the Cisleithanian Government had to deal was already solved for Graf Andrassy and his colleagues.

For this reason, it will be the main object of the following pages to describe the birth and growth of political freedom on the Austrian side of the Leitha, the parallel events that took place in Hungary being merely introduced by way of contrast and illustration.

The Reichsrath which met on May 22, 1867, was, in every way one of the most memorable in the history of Austria. Each of the members then assembled must have felt that their country was in the midst of a terrible crisis, and that it depended mainly on their exertions to save that country from ruin. The speech from the throne, after expressing a hope that the scheme of federation with Hungary would be sanctioned by the House, announced the intention of the Government to re-establish ministerial responsibility and to bring the military department once more under the authority of Parliament. The Reichsrath's first fight was with the generals. It will be hardly credited that a colossal scheme for the fortification of Vienna, the cost of which would amount to a million and a half of our money, had been set on foot by the Commander-in-chief without a word of consultation with the representatives of the people. Baron Becke, the new Minister of War, declared openly in the House that he was first made acquainted with the proceedings by the public journals. Austrian Constitutionalism may be said to date from the day that Beust, now feeling he had a Parliament to back him, summarily stopped the works and abolished the College of

General-Adjutants,

General-Adjutants, an institution which for many years had defied Parliament and rendered liberal government an impossibility.

The House then proceeded to pass three most important measures. The first related to the 'Octroyirung' (*i. e.*, carrying over the head of Parliament) of laws by the Emperor. It was ordained that, for the future, every octroyirung should be made under the responsibility of the Ministry; 2, that no such measure should have the power of setting aside any fundamental law of the state (*Staatsgrundgesetz*), of imposing any fresh burden on the taxpayers, or alienating public property; 3, that any such measure should become null and void if it were not notified within four weeks after the meeting of the Reichsrath. Thus the sting was utterly taken out of this old instrument of military despotism.

The law relating to ministerial responsibility appears, to an English mind at any rate, a somewhat curious piece of legislation. It was chiefly aimed at preventing the interference of the peers, it being evidently held that the condemnation of a minister in the Lower House could be annulled by the refusal of the Upper House to endorse the vote. It provided for the erection of a permanent tribunal, consisting of twelve members, elected by each House, not from their own midst, but from the ordinary judges and State-lawyers, before which tribunal either House had the power of bringing any member of the Ministry on a distinct charge to be set forth in the indictment. It was further provided that a charge brought against a minister and supported by two-thirds of either House should suffice to suspend the minister *ipso facto* from his office. Thus there was no recognition of the 'solidarity' of the Cabinet, and nothing but a distinct offence was held as sufficient ground for removing a minister from power.\* The depth to which Parliamentary government had sunk is told more expressively by the mere statement of this law than by the most elaborate description.

The third law concerned the freedom of public meeting. It provided that every political club (*verein*) should notify to the magistrate the nature and object of the club, the names and number of its members, as also the place and time at which each of its meetings was to be held. Further, it gave the Government power to break up any society or meeting, the object of which was 'inconsistent with the public safety or the public good.' This last clause was added by request of the Cabinet, which

---

\* This law is probably borrowed from the American constitution, which secures to the President a certain fixed period of office, while subjecting him to the possibility of impeachment. It is needless to point out that it is properly inconsistent with the English system of Cabinet government.

declared that, without some such powers, it would be impossible to offer the requisite resistance to the feudal-clerical opposition in Bohemia. Within these limits, no obstacles were offered to the formation of political clubs or the holding of public meetings.

So far the proceedings of the Reichsrath had run smoothly enough. But all the true friends of freedom in Austria felt that there still existed one fatal obstacle to all their patriotic endeavours. As long as the Concordat formed part of the law of the land, the priests had it in their power to check the free development of the nation in the very bud, and to talk of freedom was a mere mockery. There were two ways of dissolving the unholy treaty with Rome. Either the Concordat could be directly abrogated and a new set of laws introduced affirming the equality of all religions and sects in the eyes of the State, or a series of half measures might be passed through the Reichsrath, which, by laying down principles inconsistent with the Concordat, would gradually encroach on the ecclesiastical prerogative, and render the former position of the priests untenable. The objection to the first course, which was in every other way preferable, was its impracticability. The Reichsrath could not have commanded a majority for so radical a measure, still less could the nation be expected to endorse it. Hence the proposition of the veteran Mühlfeld was rejected, and the abstract motion of Dr. Herbst, affirming the expediency of new laws to regulate the action of the State on the three subjects of marriage, education, and religion, was carried by a majority of 134—22. So ended this eventful session.

It was well that Parliament had not adjourned before declaring—in principle at any rate—its willingness to grant the people religious freedom; for this act of theirs encouraged an expression of popular feeling during the vacation which greatly strengthened the hands of the ministers. On the 5th of September, a monster meeting of 1500 schoolmasters, from all parts of Austria, was held in Vienna, in which it was resolved, that for the proper attainment of their ends in the cause of education, a complete independence from the authority of the Church was requisite. There is reason to believe that, if the Government had taken the necessary steps, they might have found support from an unexpected quarter, namely, from the lower clergy. It is said that at this time there was not an editor in Vienna whose office was not daily flooded with letters from these poor men, who were bound by the Concordat to a state of the most abject servitude under their superiors. No one, however, but Mühlfeld was found brave enough to propose the liberation of the inferior

priests and the abrogation of the law conferring legal immunity on the bishops.

On the 23rd of September, the Reichsrath commenced its autumn sitting, and at once proceeded to appoint a Committee to draw up measures for the reconstitution of the laws affecting marriage and education. The new Marriage Law provided, 1, that the jurisdiction in all questions affecting marriage should be transferred from the priestly to the ordinary civil tribunals; 2, that if a priest refused to perform the rite of marriage (as, *e.g.*, when man and wife were of two different religions), the civil magistrate, after acquainting himself with the refusal of the priest, should himself sanction and register the union of the couple. The new School Law gave over the management of all religious teaching to the Church or religious society in question, but ordained that all other subjects taught in the schools should be made entirely independent of their influence; 3, it provided that all schools maintained by the State, the provincial, or municipal authorities, should be open to all citizens without distinction of religion; 4, that the office of schoolmaster should be open to any candidate who had proved his competence in an examination to be appointed by the State; 5, that all funds held by the State for the purposes of education, except where a reservation had been made by the testator, should be applied to their end without prejudice in favour of any religious sect; 6, that school-boards should be appointed in every district (*Bezirke*) and parish for the carrying-out of the above regulations, and that the organization of these boards was to be left to the Landtage. This last unfortunate clause did much to neutralize the effects of the whole law, by opening a door to clerical opposition in the provincial assemblies. Through its baneful operation much of the measure has, up to the present time, remained a dead letter.

The House then undertook the task of drawing up a number of fundamental State-laws (*Staatsgrundgesetze*), which were to constitute the Magna Charta of the Austrian citizen. These laws are four in number, and the first is divided into twenty articles. It would be beyond the scope of this essay to give the details of these laws. But a glance may be cast at the most important of them, and the main alterations effected by them in the constitution.

Law I. Article 2 declares 'All citizens are equal in the eyes of the law.' This infringes Article 14 of the Concordat, which gives immunity to the bishops, and provides that a priest condemned by a court of law shall undergo his punishment in a house of ecclesiastical discipline. Article 3 declares 'All public offices are open to all citizens.' Before the passing of this law a non-Catholic

non-Catholic could not be appointed to any of the regular University chairs, and a Jew was ineligible to the bench of judges. Article 4 gives every tax-paying citizen in a given parish the right of vote in the municipal elections. Hitherto the 'Gemeindengenossen' *i.e.*, temporary inhabitants, were excluded from voting. It further declares that the freedom of migration is only restricted by the duty of service in the army. This provision was to prevent wholesale migrations from the country in the case of war being proclaimed. Article 5 asserts the competency of Parliament to restrict, in the interest of the public weal, the right of inheritance, and to dispose of inherited property as it shall think fit. This is directed against Article 29 of the Concordat, which provides that the property of the Church is its own for ever, and cannot be alienated without consent of the Pope. Article 8—the Austrian Habeas Corpus—declares the freedom of every citizen's person. A citizen, *viz.*, can only be properly apprehended after a magisterial sentence. If confined under suspicion for more than forty-eight hours, the official responsible for the confinement is liable to a fine or imprisonment. Article 9 declares the freedom of every citizen in his own house. A private house can only be searched on the authority of a magisterial \* warrant. Article 10 provides that no private letter may be opened without express sanction of a magistrate or in case of war. Article 11 gives to every recognized corporation or society the right of petition. This restriction of the right of petition is justified on the plea that, without it, an insignificant minority might represent its views as those of the community in a given parish or province. Article 12 guarantees the freedom of public meeting under the restrictions of the law passed November, 1867: Article 13 the freedom of the press. The text of this article runs as follows:—'Every citizen has the right to express freely his opinions in word or writing within the limits laid down by law. The Press may not be subjected to censorship, nor have its rights restricted by any system of concessions.' This requires some explanation. By 'censorship' is meant condemnation of a book or journal before it has been published. It is still open to the magistrate to 'confiscate' any book, or any number of a newspaper which contains false news or unconstitutional articles. The difference is that, before the law, a writer could be condemned unheard; now, 'confiscation' must be based on a distinct charge, from which there may be a subsequent appeal. Article 16 declares the right of any religious society, not recognized by law,

\* The word magisterial is used in preference to judicial as a translation for 'richterlich.' But it must be remembered that magistrates in the English sense do not exist in Austria. These 'Richter' are rather under-judges.

to hold meetings in a private house: Article 17 the freedom of science and education from religious trammels. Article 19—the Magna Charta of the minor nationalities—declares, ‘All nationalities under the dominion of the State have equal rights. Each different race has the right to preserve its own nationality and language. The State recognizes all languages spoken in a given province as equal in the public schools, the public offices, and public life generally. Where more than one language is spoken the authorities are to provide that each citizen receives the requisite State assistance for education in his own tongue, without being forced to learn any other.’

The remaining three State ground-laws are of less importance. The second was aimed at the ecclesiastical tribunals established by the Concordat. It ordained that all jurisdiction should be administered for the future in the name of the Kaiser by officers appointed directly by him. The third provided that every officer of the State should swear obedience on entering office to the State laws in question. The fourth instituted a supreme judicial court, ‘Reichsgericht,’ which was to be a final court of appeal in all questions arising (1) between the judicial and executive bodies; (2) between the Landtage and the central executive; (3) between two Landtage of separate provinces; (4) between Landtag and Reichsrath.

Finally a law, ‘Reichsgesetz,’ was passed defining the constitution and competence of the various legislative bodies. The delegations were to be competent in all questions affecting the relations of the empire with foreign countries, whether diplomatic or commercial. Secondly, they were to have the direction of the imperial military system. Thirdly, they were to have the control of all the finances requisite for these purposes. The Cisleithanian Delegation was to be constituted after the fashion of a federal assembly. That is to say, the Reichsrath was not to choose directly the sixty best men it could nominate for the purpose; but each nationality represented was to elect a given number of members. Thus the deputation of the Bohemian Landtag was to choose ten delegates, that of the Moravian seven, and so on.

The Reichsrath reserved to itself the following powers: (1) of voting the men required for the army (*Recrutengewilligungsrecht*); (2) of voting the supplies for the army and foreign office; (3) the right of examining and accepting diplomatic or commercial treaties signed by the authority of the delegates; (4) the regulation of the schools, universities, the press, public meetings, the mint, sanitary laws, police-courts, courts of justice, postal, telegraphic, and railway systems, and a few other subjects

subjects of less importance. Everything else was left to the Landtage.

A short criticism of this remarkable law will not be thought out of place. One is at first inclined to characterize the whole scheme as an ingenious arrangement for making government impossible. The system sanctions the existence of twenty-one \* Parliaments; namely, eighteen Landtage, a Reichsrath, and the two Delegations, which, by a slight stretch of the imagination, may, perhaps, be regarded as one body. Each of these Parliaments has a sphere of its own, in which it is completely independent of the rest. Nay, more; each is provided with the means of most effectually paralysing the action of the other. Let us take a few instances. The delegations may declare so many men necessary for the defence of the country, and so much money requisite for their maintenance. The Reichsrath may refuse to grant the men or the supplies, or both. Again, the Reichsrath may make general arrangements for the management of the schools, the Landtage may refuse to carry them out. Again, the Landtage may make regulations of their own, the Reichsrath may refuse to give them the money to bring them into effect. The only Parliament which represents the unity of the State has not the power of voting a man or a kreuzer; the only ministers which represent the unity of the State (viz., the three Reichsminister) are not responsible to the body which votes the supplies. The wonder is not that such a system should fail to work smoothly, but that it should succeed in working at all.

But there is another side to the picture. A constitution is not built in a day, least of all in a State composed as Austria is composed. It must not be forgotten that the December constitution, as it is called, was Austria's first honest attempt to combine State-unity with popular freedom. The great Kaiser Joseph II., had spent a lifetime in striving to weld together the heterogeneous elements of the empire by mechanical means, but was forced on his death-bed to confess that his labours had been in vain. After the popular movements of 1848 the Vienna statesman, Bach, took in hand the same task. With an army of soldiers and officials he strove to convert Austria into a centralized State after the pattern of modern France, but two days—the days of Magenta and Solferino—undid the painful work which it had taken ten years to build up. What Bach had attempted to attain by absolutism, Schmerling tried to accomplish by a pretended appeal to the popular voice. This states-

---

\* This is exclusive of the three parliaments of the other half of the empire; the Reichstag and the Hungarian and Croatian Landtage.

man knew that the provinces were inveterately opposed to all schemes of centralization, and that no direct appeal to the country could give him a parliamentary majority pledged to any such scheme. He therefore contrived, by means of his famous system of groups, to obtain a fictitious parliamentary majority, while, by a strict censorship of the press and prohibition of public meeting, he silenced all extra-parliamentary complaints. The refusal of the Hungarians and Croats to sit in a House thus constituted at last brought this Rump Parliament into contempt, and, after a reign of four years, the February constitution came to an untimely end. Then followed the so-called *Sistirungs-period*,\* when the policy of centralization was given up without anything being put in its place, a policy which succeeded in irritating all parties and satisfying none, presided over by a man whose weak concessions gave more annoyance than the hostile measures of his predecessors. Finally, in the spring of 1867, Beust came into power, and the new constitution which has been described in the above sketch was brought into existence. This constitution, while retaining the group-system of voting, throws away the other crutches on which the February constitution had rested. It neither bids for the corrupt support of the Church, nor puts an undue pressure on the liberty of the press and of public meeting. It is centralizing in spirit without being despotic in origin.

Before criticizing it, then, too harshly, we must consider the immense difficulty of the problem it attempts to solve. Austria is composed of a number of small nations, several of which, as *e.g.*, Bohemia and Hungary, have separate histories of their own, and none of which, if we except the two central counties of Austria proper, are bound to the rest by any ties but those of common interest. No bonds of blood, of language, or of literature, bind the German to the Czech or Slovenian. The several provinces are inspired by a warm provincial patriotism, but a common Austrian patriotism there is none. In addition to these the cause of centralization is inextricably bound up in the minds of the whole non-German population with the cause of despotism. The vast majority know of no freedom but local freedom, and view even a constitutional Reichsrath as an instrument for the suppression of their local rights. This is enough to show the delicacy of the task which the statesmen of 1867 took in hand. How far they succeeded will be seen from the succeeding narrative. But before entering on the history of

---

\* *I.e.*, the period when the February constitution, without being abrogated, was allowed to fall into abeyance.

the great fight between the centralists and the autonomists, which commenced in the autumn of 1868, and the end of which is not yet, it will be well to conduct the campaign with the clerical party to its close.

In the spring of 1868 the Reichsrath again met, and the Upper House took in hand the marriage and education laws, which had passed the Lower House in the preceding session. The public took the greatest interest in the debate, as the fate of the Concordat was supposed to depend on the acceptance or rejection of these laws. Not only the galleries and the stairs, but the streets leading to the House, were filled with an excited crowd, and each member who left the chamber was breathlessly questioned by the people outside 'wie unsere Sachen oben stehen?' The following interesting account of this famous three days' debate is extracted from the German review 'Unsere Zeit,' May number, 1869:—

'The Austrian Herrenhaus has every reason to look back on those three days with pride. It exhibited such a high degree not only of statesmanlike capacity but of speaking power, that the feudal-clerical Graf Thun, instead of winning the laurels he expected, received humiliations without number. On the one side were men, who after bending long years under the clerical yoke, were at last able to stand boldly forth before their countrymen and utter the thoughts with which their "hearts had long been hot within them." On the other side were men, who after being supported for years by the Imperial bayonets and the Imperial police, were now left to fight their own battles—to maintain by argument what had before been maintained for them by force. The utter hollowness of the episcopal phrases, contrasted with the complacency with which they were uttered, the triumphant emphasis with which Prince-Cardinal Schwarzenberg, after a faltering speech "full of vain words signifying nothing," descended the tribune exclaiming "Genirt mich gar nicht, wenn die Herren lachen" (the noble lords' laughter won't discompose me) might have seemed fit subject for a comedy, if one could have forgotten the tragedy to which it formed the sequel. . . .

'The division was a drama in itself. It was the afternoon of Saturday, the 21st of March. As each name was called out, there was a breathless silence in the House, and storms of applause arose if the answerer gave his vote against the Concordat, the result being instantly passed from mouth to mouth till it reached the street, where it was received with fresh hurrahs. At last the numbers were known. The motion for adjournment was lost by 65 to 34, and the fate of the Concordat could be said to be sealed. Once more Austria's good genius had prevailed.'

The bishops were so disgusted at the results of this division that they refused to appear again during the debates of the session.

session. Hence the marriage law, as well as the school law, were passed by large majorities.

Encouraged by this success the Lower House set to work at the third bill indicated in Herbst's programme, which was to decree the equality of all religions in the eyes of the law '*inter-confessionelles Gesetz*.' This bill provided that, in the case of children whose parents had died without expressing their wishes on the subject, the sons should be brought up in the father's, the daughters in the mother's religion. At the age of fourteen, however, the child was to be allowed to choose for itself. Infidelity was no longer to incapacitate a citizen for inheritance: the preaching of infidel, *i. e.*, unchristian, doctrines no longer to constitute a misdemeanour. No citizen was to be compelled to contribute to the services, or to send his child to the schools, of a church to which he did not belong. No priest was to be able to deny the right of burial to a member of another religious sect in cases where either the family claiming the right had a private vault, or where the churchyard was the only one in the parish. This important law, the last clause of which especially put an end to a series of scandals which had for a long time been a disgrace to the country, was passed without difficulty by both Houses.

In the meantime the bishops had not been idle. Their first attempt was to bring a petition against the three bills to the Kaiser over the heads of the Ministry. Franz Joseph treated this attempt with becoming dignity, by referring the petitioners to his '*constitutional advisers*.' Their next resort was, as might have been expected, to Rome. The Pope determined to make use of all his spiritual weapons, and, on the 22nd of June, launched a characteristic allocution at the heads of the Austrian rebels. In this document the three laws in question were denounced as '*destructive, abominable, and damnable*.' '*Therefore*,' so runs the allocution, '*on the strength of our Apostolic authority, we anathematize these laws, in particular all such clauses as are directed by the Austrian Government against the rights of the Church: and we declare the laws by virtue of this same authority to be null and void*.' Popes have often taken foolish and impolitic steps, but it remained for Pope Pius IX. openly to urge the subjects of a Catholic kingdom in the nineteenth century to rebellion against their Government. The allocution proved as unsuccessful as it was gross. It is true that the bishops adhered faithfully to the instructions of their chief. Riccabona of Trient declared that any one who submitted to the May laws was a despiser of the Son of God. Schwarzenberg directed his clergy, in a pastoral letter to the four Bohemian

Bohemian bishops, to refuse confession and absolution to any couple joined by a civil marriage. But the mass of the laity rose up in indignation against the proceedings of the Pope and his advisers. Addresses poured in from every large town in the empire denouncing the Romish pretensions, and expressing sympathy with the Government. In fact the priests defeated their own ends by the extravagance of their measures, and hastened to bring about a crisis which a conciliatory policy might have indefinitely delayed. The final act which closed the campaign between Church and State is known to every one. In July, 1870, Graf Beust abrogated the Concordat.

It is now proposed to pass from the field of clerical agitation to a more important and interesting question. The contest between the Pope and Count Beust could have had but one end. The Pope's pretensions were an anachronism, and the struggle only interests us as illustrating one of the main intellectual movements which characterize the age in which we live. It is otherwise with the question at issue between the federalists and the centralists. It is not too much to say that of all the countries on the face of the earth, Austria is the one which at the present moment offers most to the study of the political philosopher. The statesmen now engaged in reconstructing her have few, if any, precedents to fall back on. If they succeed in their enterprise, they will have solved the most difficult problem of practical politics of which the present century has been a witness.

In order to make good this statement a few statistics will be necessary. Cisleithanian Austria contains a population of 19 millions, of which 6 millions are Germans, while the remaining 11 millions belong to the Slavonian race. In eight of the Austrian provinces, viz., in Bohemia, Moravia, Galicia, Krain, Istria, Gorz, Triest, and Dalmatia, the Slaves constitute the large majority of the population. If they were represented in Parliament according to their numbers, 117 of the 203 members of the Reichsrath would be Slaves, the remaining minority of 86 representing the other nationalities. How different the facts of the case are, any one who knows anything of Austrian politics can testify. The question then naturally arises, how is it that these Slaves possess so little political significance? The inquiry admits of many answers. The cause of their political insignificance is to be traced to a peculiar combination of historical, geographical, ethnological, religious, and social circumstances. In the first place they have stood almost uniformly in respect of the Italians in Istria and Triest, and in respect of the Germans elsewhere in Austria, in the relation of conquered to conquerors. In the second place, the Slaves are scattered over the face of

the empire, the Czechs in the north, the Poles in the east, the Slovenians in the south, and have thus lost the opportunity of political contact. In the third place, they do not all speak the same language nor profess the same religion, the Ruthenians of Galicia *e.g.*, belonging to the Eastern Church. Lastly, they compose for the most part the peasantry of the country, and possess, with the exception of the Poles, no influential middle class and no national nobility.

Of the Austrian Slaves, about 5,000,000 are Czechs, 2,320,000 Poles, 3,000,000 Ruthenians, 1,200,000 Slovenians. To be added to these are 600,000 Italians, and a small number of Rumanians in the Bukowina. All these stocks have a distinct individuality of their own, and many of them, as *e.g.*, the Poles and Czechs, have a past history to look back on.

The Poles are the people which have identified themselves least with the empire to which they belong. The one thought of the Polish patriot is the restoration of his country to its lost rights. At the same time, they have been treated, at least of late years, with great consideration by the Government, and have never carried their opposition to any extreme length. The tie which binds them to Austria is their hatred of Russia. They know that the disintegration of Austria would probably involve their annexation to the hated Russian, and hence their support can be reckoned on in the most perilous questions of foreign politics. The late President of the Cisleithanian Ministry, Graf Potocki, is a Pole; the Polish members are treated very much like the Irish members in our Commons, and are left to decide questions of purely Polish policy for themselves; many politicians hope by a coalition between the Germans and Poles to overbear the opposition of the remaining Slaves.

The Czechs, like the Poles, have a certain history of their own. The student of history will remember that Bohemia was originally a settlement of the Marcomanni, a German tribe who migrated there in the 5th century. This Teutonic stock was, however, overflowed towards the close of the same century by a new migration of Slavish tribes, who displaced the original inhabitants in very much the same way as the Saxons displaced the Britons in our own island. The heads of these tribes formed the beginning of the Czechish nobility. The semi-barbarous Slaves who thus obtained a footing in the country were Christianized and civilized by a new influx of German merchants and German clergy. In process of time the prosperity of these settlers and the favour shown to them by the Kings of Bohemia drew down on them the envy of the Czechs, and in the 16th century began that terrible persecution, which, assuming the form of a religious

a religious war between Hussites and Catholics, in reality was a contest between the two races for the supremacy in Bohemia. The Hussites prevailed, and the Czechs were for a long time dominant. Then came the still more terrible days when the sword of the German Kaiser brought retribution for the blood shed by the Hussites, and reinstated Germanism and Catholicism in their ancient place. Since those times until a comparatively late date the Czechs had much right to consider themselves an oppressed race. The policy of persecution, as is almost always the case, gave fresh life and energy to the nationality which it was its purpose to destroy. Long the Czechs bore their sorrows in secret. At last the revolutionary year of 1848 seemed to offer them fresh hopes of liberation from the yoke under which they chafed. Their ambition was to come forward as the leaders of the Austrian Slaves, and to win for themselves, the Slovenians and Croatians, the place in the Austrian constitution to which their numbers entitled them. But the chilling years of Bachian despotism followed, and once more they relapsed, if not into apathy, at least into sullen silence. Then the February constitution once more raised their hopes. In spite of Schmerling's artificial group-system, which procured him a German majority from Bohemia and Moravia, the Czechs took their places in the Reichsrath, hoping, with the help of the Hungarians and Croatians, to be able to offer a successful resistance to the Germans. But the Hungarians and Croatians, as we have seen, refused to appear, and the Czechs, finding themselves in a hopeless minority, left the Reichsrath, never since then to enter it again. Again the 'Sistirungspolitik' of Belcredi raised their hopes. They had secured a majority in the Bohemian and Moravian Landtage, and intended in the extraordinary Parliament to be convoked under that Minister's auspices to enter the campaign against centralism and dualism, reckoning on the support of the Hungarians in their resistance to the centralists, and on the support of the Germans in their resistance to the dualists. Once more they were doomed to be disappointed. Count Beust came into power, and, after passing the 'Ausgleich' with Hungary, with the help of a German majority raised by an unsparing use of Court influence and the Schmerlingian groups, reduced them again to an impotent minority. They saw the German party once more victors over the whole line, and once more retreated to their old position of dogged resistance. It was in vain that the December constitution offered them freedom. They refused to eat of the feast which they had had no hand in preparing. It is not our intention to give a detailed account of the modes in which their resistance asserted itself, in the Landtag, in

the school, in the press, in the public meeting; it has been deemed sufficient to describe the constitution which was offered them, to attest the discontent with which it was met, and to trace the causes of this discontent.

One thing must be carefully borne in mind by anyone who is really anxious to understand the character of this long quarrel. It does not follow that, because the Germans have generally identified themselves with the party of intellectual and religious progress, this particular political principle which they advocate is a more liberal one than that of their opponents. The love of domination is apt to obscure the judgment of the most impartial minds, and the German race, wise and peaceable as it for the most part is, shares the common failing. A foreigner in Austria is peculiarly apt to be misled in their respect. Almost all the literature that he reads is German, and bears the stamp of the German ideas. He finds the federalists allied with the clerical and reactionary party, he listens to the quaint claims which they prefer on the grounds of the 'historical' rights of the 'kingdom' of Bohemia and the 'indefeasible privileges' of the Landtage, he naturally compares the provinces of Austria to the counties, the Landtage to the Municipal Assemblies, of his own country, and decides that the Reichsrath is perfectly right in disallowing such preposterous claims. He is apt to forget that though unity of language and political institutions is an undoubted advantage, the forcible spread of this unity is as undoubted an evil: that freedom is one thing, the forcible propagation even of the freest ideas another. He must strip such phrases as the 'Mission of Teutonism,' the 'superiority of Western civilization,' of their vague surroundings, and lay bare to view the unlovely realities—the race-domination and race-hatred—which they serve to disguise. Still more must he be on his guard against such phrases, when under the form of a spurious Darwinism, they attempt to assume a philosophical garb. No more flagrant contravention of Nature's principle of selection can be imagined, than a system of persecution, which instead of gradually substituting higher for lower forms of life, kindles in the decaying forms an artificial vigour, and so counteracts the process which it is its aim to further. The proportion of the Czechs to the Germans in Bohemia and Moravia, says Von Helfert, is actually greater now, after all the efforts of successive Kaisers and Kanzlers, than it was a century ago.

Again it is important not to be misled by those main stumbling-blocks to the formation of an impartial judgment—political analogies. To an Englishman the Austrian-German will reply 'We repress the Czechs on the same principle that you repress the

the Fenians ; holding that their wishes cannot be gratified without danger to the general well-being of the empire.' To the North-German he will say 'The possession of a single administrative and legislative system is as much an advantage for Austria as it is for North-Germany: if you advocate the suppression of your petty dukedoms and princedoms, how can you consistently condemn the abrogation of provincial independence in Austria?' The answer that the federalist might make to these and similar arguments lies on the surface. Unity of administration is only so far good as there exists a unity in the material administered. There can be no universal rule laid down in this question. From certain points of view it would no doubt be an advantage for France and Germany to be governed from a single centre; but there are other points of view from which it would be an unquestionable evil. The question to be considered is, whether there exists in the various nationalities of which Austria is composed a sufficient unity of political purpose to justify the maintenance of a central administration. Apart from this argument, there are many who uphold federalism as the means to a more complete and representative centralism; who consider the establishment of a federal system as the only practical method for ridding the Government of the traditions of German supremacy. A central system, say they, should be the result of the voluntary cohesion of the political units; the movement which produces it should come from the extremities and not from the centre itself. But under the present régime a movement of this sort is impossible. Give the provinces autonomy and it will not be long before they recognize the advantages of unity.

Turning now from the general question at issue between the two parties, let us ask what are the practical claims put forward by the Austrian Slaves and their chief spokesmen the Czechs? They ask first of all for the abolition of the Schmerlingian group-system, the natural and almost necessary result of which would be the election of a Slavish majority to the Reichsrath, and the establishment by this majority of a federal constitution—a constitution indeed which in such an event the Germans would be the first to demand. Then comes the main difficulty. The Germans urge with much force that the Landtage dominated by a Slavish majority would in all probability make a tyrannical use of their new power, and treat the Germans very much worse than the Germans had treated them. Dr. Fischhof proposes to obviate this difficulty in the following manner. Either, he says, the Landtag might be divided into two different chambers for the two prevailing nationalities, and each chamber be given in certain questions a power of vetoing the resolutions of the other:

or,

or, the representatives of the two nationalities might debate in common, but vote in separate curies, the sanction of each cury being necessary for the carrying of certain laws. He proposes to restrict the right of separate voting to questions connected with education and language.

The 'tyranny of the majority' in the Reichsrath would be obviated according to his plan still more simply. He would turn the Upper House into a Senate on the American principle. Each province would here have an equal voice. The Lower House would then be no longer chosen indirectly, through the Landtage, but directly by the people themselves, while each Landtag would send an equal number of members to the Upper House. As it happens, in eight of the seventeen provinces of Cisleithania there is a majority of Germans, so that the preponderance of the Slaves in the Lower House would be checked by the almost equal balance of power in the Upper House. The two Houses would thus in De Tocqueville's words respectively represent the principles of population and federation.

It is not very probable that any so radical scheme will be adopted for the present by the Austrian Parliament. And yet the existing state of things is perilous in the extreme, and evidently calls for some heroic remedy. The centralist Ministry, which took office after the passing of the 'Ausgleich' with Hungary, succumbed in the winter of 1869 to the opposition of the Czechs and the Poles. Though commanding a majority in the Reichsrath, they represented the minority of the nation, and their government was an anomaly. Graf Potocki, the Pole, was then appointed Minister-President. His intention was to carry a gradual scheme of federation, beginning with Galicia. But he failed to conciliate the Czechs, who showed no wish to help the Poles to a liberty which they were not sure of securing for themselves afterwards. Hence the Government was left in a hopeless minority, for the German party, with a culpable want of patriotism, refused to support Potocki, and passed in the autumn of 1870 a vote of want of confidence against the Ministry. The Kaiser and Count Beust were involved in an apparently inextricable dilemma. Government by the majority, and government by the minority of the Reichsrath, had both been tried in the balances, and been found wanting. There ensued an interregnum of eight weeks. At last the list of new ministers, which had been kept completely secret till the morning of publication, was published in the 'Wiener Zeitung.' The list contained the names of a number of hitherto unknown men. Not a single member of the new government had ever sat in the Reichsrath or the Landtag, and two of them were born Czechs. The

The scheme was ingeniously planned to meet the two main difficulties of the situation—the party hostility of the centralists, and the opposition of the Czechs. But the German party, though incapable of governing themselves, seem determined to allow no one else to govern but themselves. The measure of Count Hohenwart, the Minister-President, which proposed to confer a modified liberty of initiative on the Landtage, has lately been rejected in a full house, and matters rest as they were.

What is the remedy for these things? Government with the present Reichsrath is evidently impossible. To an outside observer, there appears to be but one straightforward policy which would cut the knot. Let the Kaiser pass a decree abolishing the group-method of voting, dissolve the Reichsrath, and trust to the good sense and patriotism of the electors. The result of this would probably be the return to Parliament of an autonomist majority, which would help the Government to carry a number of measures for the conciliation of the Slavish populations. The latter have at present, in addition to their parliamentary grievances, several grounds of discontent. They complain, for instance, that the clause of the first State ground-law, enacting the equality of all nationalities and languages in the eyes of the law, is a mere dead letter. Unlike the remaining clauses of the law, it pronounced nothing but the abstract principle, and has not been followed up by the definite regulations necessary to make it effective. Hence they urge that the Reichsrath was only half-sincere in inserting it. They ask that the State should come forward and encourage the foundation of universities and high-schools, where the Czechish, Slovenian, Polish, Servian, and Rumanian tongues may be scientifically studied. At the same time, they ask that the judges and other State officials should make use in all public transactions of the language spoken by the majority of the population. A nation, says Dr. Fischhof, can only be cultivated and civilized through the medium of its own tongue. If you wish to win over the Slaves to German culture, you will defeat your own ends by forcing on them the use of a foreign idiom. Prepare the soil first in the only way in which it can be rightly prepared, and it will welcome and assimilate for itself the riches of German science and literature. These require no force to recommend them to the world; the employment of force implies a doubt of their intrinsic value.

But the Germans are opposed to these changes, and the Kaiser is naturally unwilling to alienate the sympathies of the race which forms, after all, the backbone of the empire. At the present moment especially, the victories of their Northern brothers,

brothers, and the prestige which has gathered round the German name, makes them less than ever inclined to bend the neck to the whims of their semi-barbarous fellow-subjects. Austrian statesmen see only too plainly that the link which binds the German population to the monarchy is but a slight one, and will not bear any excessive strain. It is worth while to consider what are the chances, and what would be the results, of an annexation of the German provinces by the newly founded empire. At present the relations existing between the two courts are the most amicable, and it seems improbable that Prince Bismarck is meditating any aggressive move. The feeling, too, of the German inhabitants of Vienna and the principal towns is on the whole distinctly averse to the transference of allegiance from Kaiser Franz Joseph to Kaiser Wilhelm. They have tasted the sweets of liberty, and feel little attraction to the iron system of Berlin. On the other hand, it is unquestionable that the dominant party in Germany look forward with a sort of hungry impatience to the time when the black, red, and white flag shall be planted on the Hofburg of Vienna. It is the fashion among these politicians to talk of Austria as a hopelessly demoralized country, which nothing less than the rigid rule of Prussia could restore to healthy life. Indeed, Berlin and Vienna are complete contrasts: it is no wonder that they should fail to understand one another. On the one side we see civil absorbed in military life, a feudal aristocracy, an almost Puritanic rigidity of manners; on the other side a sociable bourgeoisie, genial manners, a free and almost licentious press. It may be presumed that the time has not yet come for the incorporation of the old Kaiser-city in the empire of the North. Such an incorporation would be really harmful to the cause of European civilization. The Germans of Bohemia and the two Austrias act as a sort of political rallying-point for the inchoate civilizations which enclose them. It would be a pity if they abandoned this quasi-colonial task imposed on them. Without them the Czechs, Slovenians, Ruthenians, &c., would be incapable of holding together, and would fall a prey sooner or later to the clutches of Russia. But with their help Austria may look forward to a glorious future. The Christian populations lying to the south-east of Hungary are utterly incapable of governing themselves, and the task of their political reconstruction could be entrusted most properly to Austria. But before any such schemes can become possible, she must set her own house in order. To this end a certain amount of self-sacrifice is required on the part of the Germans, and a cheerful co-operation on the part of the remaining nationalities. The main home difficulties

difficulties which threaten the monarchy have been already described. The dangers which threaten it from without are merely, as it were, the mirror and counterpart of those which threaten it from within. Russia is only so far dangerous, as she can serve as the rallying-point for the discontent of the Austrian Slaves. The aim of the Austrian statesman should be to make the old empire a home where the mixed nationalities of central Europe may enjoy peace, prosperity, and freedom. Such a policy will be the surest safeguard against the intrigues of the Pan-slavists and Orthodoxists of Moscow. It has been shown that patriotism of the ordinary kind—the patriotism which rests on communities of blood, literature, and national history—cannot be expected in Austria. The time has gone by when patriotism could be based on the pride of a common army, and fomented by continuous acts of successful military aggression. What remaining idea is there that may serve as an element of cohesion to the Austrian peoples? The idea of common rights and a common freedom, and the knowledge that these rights and this freedom can only be secured against the attacks of foreign absolutism by the union which is strength, and the subservience of a multiplicity of wills to a common object, which is unity.

ART. IV.—*The whole Works of the Right Rev. Jeremy Taylor, D.D., Lord Bishop of Down, Connor, and Dromore: with a Life of the Author, and a critical examination of his Writings.* By the Right Rev. Reginald Heber, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Calcutta. Revised and corrected by the Rev. Charles Page Eden, M.A., and the Rev. Alexander Taylor, M.A. In 10 volumes. London, 1856.

2. *Bishop Jeremy Taylor, his Predecessors, Contemporaries, and Successors. A Biography.* By the Rev. Robert Aris Willmott, Incumbent of Bear Wood, Berks. Second Edition. London, 1848.

THE great glory of the English pulpit is, by common consent, Jeremy Taylor; and he has, we think, fairly earned his supremacy. He is much the most distinguished of those who, in the early part of the seventeenth century, turned in their sermons from the discussion of abstract points of theology to the earnest recommendation of those points of Christian life and character which are known and loved of all men; no one of his time joined in an equal degree the graver studies of morality and theology with an eager love of polite letters, not only in

classic form, but in the then comparatively new literatures of Italy and France; the fluent sweetness of his style is, in its way, unsurpassed, and this honied eloquence does but reflect the gentleness of a temper which passed unsoured, if not unruffled, through the terrible strife of the Civil War and the harshness of Puritan rule.

Jeremy Taylor was born at Cambridge, and baptized in Trinity Church in that town on the 15th of August, 1613. Of the date of his birth there is no certain evidence. It has generally been assumed that he was baptized in infancy, but if we suppose that he was two years old at the time of his baptism we obtain a date which harmonises better with the indications afforded by his later life; for when he was entered at Caius College in August, 1626, he was described as having completed his fifteenth year; and further, if we suppose him to have been born in 1611, he would be nearly of the canonical age at the date when he is said to have been ordained, instead of being under twenty, an age at which holy orders have very rarely been conferred. He was the son of a barber in the town, probably a respectable tradesman, as we find him churchwarden of his parish in 1621; and there is no difficulty in supposing that, in those days of love-locks and daintily trimmed beards, one of that occupation would occupy as high a position among the other tradesmen of the town as his successors do now. He is said to have been descended from the famous Dr. Rowland Taylor, who 'left his blood' at Hadleigh, in Suffolk, for the defence of the Protestant faith. The young Jeremy was one of the earliest alumni of the Perse Grammar School in Cambridge, which was founded in 1615, and he became a sizar at Caius College in 1626. John Milton had taken up his abode in Christ's College only one year before. The two poets—for we must not refuse to Taylor the name of poet—were, no doubt, to use Milton's vigorous expression, 'deluded with ragged notions and brabblements, and dragged to an asinine feast of sow-thistles and brambles;' that is, they had to pass through the tedious forms of scholastic logic which were still in vogue in the schools; but we may well believe that the pliant intellect of Taylor submitted to this training with far greater ease and readiness than Milton's fiery self-will; in fact, his works show that his mind had great affinity with such intellects as Aquinas and Scotus, though he also traversed fields foreign to them. 'Wranglers' and 'senior optimes' as yet were not, and we have no record of the student's success in the schools, but it is hardly doubtful that a mind so fertile in arguments and objections would be a most formidable adversary in the wit-combats  
of

of those days. He took his bachelor's degree in 1630, and, as his friend Rust tells us, 'as soon as he was graduate he was chosen fellow.' His fellowship was probably on the Perse foundation, and of small value. Soon after taking his M.A. degree, which he did in the usual course in 1634,\* he was ordained, being then, if he was born in 1611, twenty-three years of age. From the time of his ordination his life was one of frequent change and no little trouble. The patronage of Archbishop Laud procured him a fellowship at All Souls', which he enjoyed but a couple of years; then we find him for a few years Vicar of Uppingham, then ejected, and following the royal army; and at last, about 1644, settled in a Welsh village on the banks of the Towy, in Carmarthenshire, where he supported himself by keeping a school. In these years he had been himself taken prisoner; sickness and death had been busy in his family; he had lost his wife and a son, and was married again to Joanna Bridges, said to have been a natural daughter of Charles I.† For some years he led a life of poverty and seclusion; yet, if he was poor and in trouble, he was not friendless: he was constantly befriended by Lord Carbery and his family, whose beautiful seat, Golden Grove, was hard by the village where he dwelt. And he dwelt there, we believe, contentedly: if he had fallen into the hands of 'publicans and sequestrators,' he had still a loving wife and many friends to pity him, and some to relieve him; he had still his merry countenance, his cheerful spirit, and his good conscience; he could walk in his neighbour's pleasant fields and see the variety of natural beauties; and if, with all this, he chose to 'sit down upon his handful of thorns,' he was fit to bear 'Nero company in his funeral sorrow for the loss of one of Poppæa's hairs, or help to mourn for Lesbia's sparrow.'‡ In truth, his situation contrasted favourably with that of many of the royalists who were driven from house and home, and he repeatedly expresses his gratitude to Lord Carbery and his amiable wife for their patronage and protection.

It was in his Welsh retreat that the genius of Taylor was matured: there he wrote the 'Liberty of Propheying,' the 'Holy Living' and 'Holy Dying,' the 'Great Exemplar,' or Life of Christ, and many of those great sermons with which his name is always associated. If these latter were de-

\* 'Holy Dying,' ch. iii. sec. 4.

† On the single authority of the MS. of Mr. Jones, a descendant of Taylor's whose papers were used by Heber; see 'Life,' p. xxxv. f.

‡ 'Holy Living,' ch. ii. sec. 6.

livered as they were written, however they may have charmed the ears of Lord Carbery's cultivated family, they must have astonished beyond measure the Welsh villagers who formed the rest of the auditory, though it is not impossible that they, too, may have been attracted by the preacher's sweet voice and impressive manner, even without understanding his words. The collection of prayers to which Taylor gave the name of 'Golden Grove,' led to his imprisonment. Contrary to his wont, he had mingled with his panegyric on the Church of England an invective against Puritan preachers, and the authorities were perhaps rendered suspicious by the dedication to so well-known a royalist as Lord Carbery. We learn from a letter of John Evelyn's that he was in prison in February, 1654-5; \* but in April of the same year we find him at large and preaching in the little church of St. Gregory, by St. Paul's, where the use of the Common Prayer was still permitted. He returned to Wales, but in April, 1656, we find him dining with Evelyn at Says Court, in company with Boyle and Wilkins. In July he is again in Wales, much troubled by his narrow circumstances—a trouble which, to his honour be it said, Evelyn lightened so far as lay in his power †—and longing for the society and the libraries which were to be found in the 'voysinage' of London. His home in Wales was very sorrowful, for he had just lost a little boy, 'that lately made him very glad;' and again, in February, 1656-7, he speaks of small-pox and fever having broken out in his household, and of having buried 'two sweet hopeful boys.' He had then but one son left, and perhaps began to desire to leave a scene associated with so much grief. He seems generally to have visited London once in the year, and always found friends to welcome him, especially Evelyn, the Mæcenas—or ought we rather to say, the Gaius?—of distressed churchmen of those days. On one of these visits he was sent to the Tower, because his publisher had prefixed to his 'Collection of Offices' an engraving of our Lord in the attitude of prayer—a representation which some of the authorities in those days held to be idolatrous. His imprisonment, however, did not last long; in the spring of 1658, we find him at liberty in London. There Lord Conway, a great Irish landowner, offered him a lectureship at Lisburn, in the neighbourhood of his own estates, the tenantry on which he hoped would be benefited by the ministrations of so excellent a man. Of Lord Conway's kindness and Taylor's gratitude we have evidence

---

\* Heber's 'Life,' pp. xxxix. cclxxiii.

† See Taylor's letter of May, 1657, in 'Life,' p. lxiv.

in the letter given below, which is now printed for the first time from the autograph in the possession of Mr. Murray :—

‘MY VERY GOOD LORD,

April 17, 1658.

‘ I have till now deferred to write to your Lordship, because I could not sooner give an account of the time when I could attend your Lordship at Ragley ; but now that my wife is well laid and in a hopeful condition, I hope I shall not be hindered to begin my journey to my Lady Chaworth on the 26th of this month, and from thence by the grace of God I will be coming the third of May towards Ragley, unless your affairs call your Lordship from thence before that time ; but if they are like to do so, and I have intimation of it from your Lordship, I will begin my journey that way and from thence go on to Nottinghamshire. My Lord, I suppose by the first return of the carrier you will receive those pieces of Thom. Nash which I received by your Lordship’s command to put into order and to make as complete as I could. Upon the view of them, and comparing them with what I had, I found I had but one to add, which I have caused to be bound up with the rest : but I have as yet failed of getting that piece of Castalio against Beza which your Lordship wished to have, but I shall make a greater search as soon as it please God I am well ; for I write this to your Lordship in my bed, being afflicted with a very great cold, and some fears of an ague ; but those fears are going off, because I see my illness settling into a cold. . . . And now, my Lord, having given your Lordship an account of these little impertinencies, my great business, which I shall ever be doing but shall never finish, is to give your Lordship the greatest thanks in a just acknowledgement and publication of your greatest, your freest, your noblest obligations passed upon me ; for the day scarce renews so often as your Lordship’s favours to me. My Lord, I have from the hand of your excellent Lady received 30*l*. : for your Ladyship not only provides an excellent country for me, but a viaticum, and manna in the way, that the favour may be as much without charge to me as it is without merit on my part. Truly, my Lord, if your Lordship had done to me as many other worthy persons have, that is, a single favour, or a little one, or something that I had merited, or something for which I might be admitted to pay an equal service, or anything which is not without example, or could possibly be without envy to me, I could have spoken such things as might have given true and proper significations of my thankfulness ; but in earnest, my Lord, since I have understood the greatness of the favour you have done and intended to me—if I had not been also acquainted with the very great nobleness of your disposition, I should have had more wonder than belief ; but now, my Lord, I am satisfied with this, that although this conjugation of favours is too great for me to have hoped for from one person, yet it was not too great for your Lordship to give ; and I see that in all times, especially in the worst, God is pleased to appoint some heroical examples of virtue, that such extraordinary precedents might highly reprove and in some measure restore the almost lost worthiness

worthiness of mankind. My Lord, you read my heart, which with the greatest simplicity and ingenuity sends forth some of its perpetual thoughts; but if I can have my option, I shall not receive this heap of favours with so great joyfulness as I shall with earnestness beg this greater favour, that it may be in some measure put into my power to express how much I love, how much I honour, how willingly I would serve so excellent, so dear a person. My good Lord, I am,

‘Your Lordship’s most humble,

‘most obliged, and most affectionate servant,

‘JER. TAYLOR.

‘I pray, my good Lord, present my humble service to your excellent and pious mother, and to good Mr. Whitby.’

From this interesting document we learn for the first time that Taylor was acquainted with the family of Chaworth of Annesley, so well known in later times from their connexion with another man of very different stamp of genius. It gives us a glimpse of Taylor’s book-hunting habits, when we find that his patron employed him to complete his collection of Tom Nash’s works—which, though not by any means of a theological character, were already in his own library—and to procure him a copy of Castalio against Beza. The latter was probably of Taylor’s own recommending; for he sympathised with him both in his anti-Calvinistic theology and in his desire for freedom of religion. There is no denying that his expressions of gratitude to Lord Conway are, to our notions, hyperbolical and unsuited to the dignity of a great divine. Such expressions are quite in the manner of the time; yet Lord Conway seems to have been a little annoyed at their exuberance, for his manly reply contains something very like a reproof.

This letter makes certain what Heber had already conjectured, that Taylor’s letter of May 12, 1658, in which he declines a lectureship offered him by a friend of Evelyn’s, on the condition of alternating with a presbyterian, ‘like Castor and Pollux, the one up and the other down,’ does not refer to Lord Conway’s chaplaincy.

In Lord Conway he had one of the kindest and most considerate of patrons, who did the best to smooth the way for him in his difficulties. Besides giving him the benefit of his own influence, he procured for him introductions to some of the most considerable persons in Ireland, and Dr. Petty,\* who had been employed in the survey of Ireland and knew the country well, ‘promised to provide him a purchase of land at great advantage.’ Moreover, my Lord Protector, who was perhaps not sorry to have so distin-

\* Afterwards Sir William Petty, author of the ‘Political Anatomy of Ireland,’ and founder of the English settlement at Kenmare.

guished a royalist removed from London, 'gave him a pass and protection for himself and his family under his sign manual and privy signet.' The letter\* from which these expressions are taken is dated June 15, 1658, and Taylor had probably left London for Ireland a short time before.

He settled at Portmore, 'a place,' says Rust, 'made for study and contemplation,' where he may have seen 'the round towers of other days' shining in the wave beneath him as he strayed on the banks of Lough Neagh. He evidently enjoyed this 'most charming recess,'† and writes in a tone of great contentment to Lord Conway, to whom a son and heir had just been born: 'since my coming into Ireland, by God's blessing and your lordship's favour, I have had plenty and privacy, opportunities of studying much, and opportunities of doing some little good.' He is 'endeared with the neighbourhood,' he 'would count it next to a divorce to be drawn from it;' he 'would fain account himself fixed there during his life;' if his lordship will but come himself to reside on his Irish estates, he may bore Taylor's ear,‡ and make him his slave for ever.§ Yet he confesses, in the same letter, that, in the absence of Major Rawdon, Lord Conway's brother-in-law and agent, there was nothing around him but '*ingens solitudo*,' and 'the country like the Nomades, without law and justice.' In truth, the troubles of the time penetrated into his pleasant recess. In June, 1659, he writes to Evelyn:—'a Presbyterian and a madman have informed against me as a dangerous man to their religion and for using the sign of the cross in baptism.'|| This information led to the issuing of a warrant by the Irish Privy Council, which brought him to Dublin early in 1659-60, 'in the worst of our winter weather,' to the serious detriment of his health. He seems, however, to have obtained an easy acquittal from the 'Anabaptist commissioners.' On April 9, 1659, he writes to Lord Conway¶ that his *opus magnum*, his great book on cases of conscience, is finished, except two little chapters, and that he has sent a servant to London with the copy; he begs his lordship to forward to him the sheets of his work as they were printed, Lord Conway having no doubt frequent communications with friends who resided on his Irish property.

Meantime, Oliver Cromwell was dead, and the reins of government were slipping from the slack hands of his son Richard. In

\* Printed in Heber's 'Life,' p. cclxxxvi.

† Taylor dates his epitaph on Dr. Stearne, 'ex amœnissimo recessu in Portmore;' Heber's 'Life,' p. lxxxvii.

‡ Alluding to Exod. xxi. 6.

§ Letter of Feb. 26, 1658-9, in Mr. Murray's possession.

|| 'Life,' p. lxxxiv.

¶ Autograph in Mr. Murray's possession.

the spring of the momentous year 1660 we find Taylor in London ; on April 24 in that year he signed the famous 'Declaration' to General Monk ; in May, Charles landed in England ; and in June Taylor dedicated to his restored sovereign the work of many laborious years, his 'Ductor Dubitantium.'

Charles probably did not bestow much attention on the learned work thus offered to him, for his was not a conscience troubled with doubts ; but so eminent a royalist as Jeremy Taylor could not be passed over in the distribution of ecclesiastical preferment. In August, 1660, he was appointed to the see of Down and Connor, to which that of Dromore was afterwards added. Various conjectures have been offered to account for his not having been nominated for an English see ; as, that the King wished his natural sister, Taylor's wife, to be removed to a distance from the court ; a conjecture which seems in the highest degree improbable, even if we grant the fact, not too well attested, that Joanna Bridges was a daughter of Charles I. It is, of course, possible that Taylor was appointed to an Irish see, simply because he had eminent qualifications for it. If we look to the interests of the diocese, we shall hardly find another man so qualified to preside over it ; at once learned, able, and conciliatory ; already acquainted with the district, and skilled in the controversy both with Roman Catholics and Presbyterians. Lord Conway, too, seems to have used his influence to procure the appointment of his much-esteemed friend—whom he thought 'the choicest person in England appertaining to the conscience'—to the diocese in which he was himself most interested.\* Yet we cannot help suspecting that Sheldon, the great manager of ecclesiastical patronage in those days, bore Taylor no good will. He had disliked his appointment at All Souls : he had been offended by what he thought his Pelagian theology, and there was perhaps some other cause of rancour in the background ; for Taylor, in a piteous letter to Sheldon,† in which he begs to be translated to England if his Grace does not wish him to 'die immaturely,' says that he had been 'informed by a good hand,' that his Grace had said that he (Taylor) was himself the only hindrance to his being removed to an English bishopric. That which was the hindrance to his being translated to an English bishopric may have been the cause of his being removed from England in the first instance. Whatever the cause of the appointment, we cannot but fear that he left the pleasant society of London, then bubbling with excite-

\* Taylor says (letter to Lord Conway of March 2, 1660-1, in Mr. Murray's possession) 'that I am here . . I owe to my relations to your Lordship.'

† 'Life,' p. cxix.

ment, for his disturbed diocese, with somewhat the same feelings with which Gregory Nazianzen sought his see in dull and remote Sasima. He was consecrated, with eleven other bishops, in the cathedral church of St. Patrick, Jan. 27, 1660-1, and himself preached the sermon. He had previously, on Ormond's recommendation, been chosen Vice-Chancellor of the University of Dublin, where he 'found all things in a perfect disorder;' and in February he was made a member of the Irish Privy Council;\* neither of these offices was a sinecure.

The state of his diocese may well have filled with dismay a man who loved study and quiet, and shrank from heat and violence. In no part of Ireland had the clearance of the clergy of the Reformed Irish Church been more effectual. The new bishop found himself in the midst of a body of Presbyterians, led by Scotchmen of the school of Cameron, with their original fanaticism exasperated to the utmost by contact with the votaries of Popery and Prelacy. He was received with a storm of denunciation when he visited his diocese before his consecration; the Scotch ministers were implacable; they had agreed among themselves to preach vigorously and constantly against episcopacy and liturgy; they talked of resisting unto blood, and stirred up the people to sedition. The bishop-designate preached every Sunday among them, he invited them to a conference, he courted them with most friendly offers; but they would not even speak with him: they had newly covenanted to endure neither the person nor the office of a bishop. They bought his books, and appointed a 'committee of Scotch spiders to see if they could gather or make poison out of them;' they drew up a statement against him, and intended to petition the King against his appointment. Nay, his very life was not safe; not only did they try by every means to take the people's hearts from him, but they threatened to murder him outright. No wonder that he says in despair, 'It were better for me to be a poor curate in a village church than a bishop over such intolerable persons;' no wonder that he begs the Duke of Ormond to give him some parsonage in Munster, where he may end his days in peace.† He had probably but little peace for the remainder of his days; for though many of the laity in his dioceses were well disposed, the opposition of the Presbyterian ministers, who were generally as disloyal to the Government as unfriendly to the bishop, never ceased. In the summer of 1663, we find him again complaining

\* He begs Lord Conway's interest to get him placed on the Privy Council, because 'it would add so much reputation to him among the Scots, and be useful for settling the diocese.' (Letter of Jan. 2, 1660-1, in Mr. Murray's possession).

† Letter of Dec. 19, 1660, to the Duke of Ormond, in 'Life,' p. ci.

of the meetings of the 'pretended ministers,' of the refractoriness of the people and their mutinous talkings; and a few months before his death he tells Ormond of the advance of the former mischiefs, and believes that the Scotch rebellion of 1655 'was either born in Ireland or put to nurse there.'\* The North of Ireland immediately after the Restoration was certainly no place for a bishop who loved peace.

Yet his misery was not without alleviations; the great Ormond supported and encouraged him, and Lord Conway was a steady and sympathising friend. He hoped in the first instance to live at Lisnegarvy [Lisburn], and got 'a very pretty design for his house' from a gentleman in Dublin that had 'very good skill in architecture.'† Probably, this design was found for the time impracticable, for he continued to reside at Portmore, where he had a house and farm, as we learn from a curious story preserved in Glanvil's 'Sadducismus triumphatus,'‡ of the ghost seen by David Hunter, 'neatherd at the bishop's house at Portmore.' Still, however, he does not seem to have abandoned the hope of having a cathedral and a palace at Lisburn. The church of that place was made a cathedral for the united sees of Down and Connor by letters patent October 22, 1662, the old cathedral of Down having been burnt by Lord-Deputy Gray in 1538, and still lying waste in 1637, when it was the subject of a correspondence between Laud and Strafford,§ which had no result in consequence of the troubles soon following. In 1665, we find him urging upon Lord Conway the care of their 'great concern, the cathedral of Lisburn,' and proposing to his Lordship to give lands in Lisburn in exchange for Church lands, that the bishops may have a 'convenient seat' there. It was important for them to have a strong, as well as a convenient house, for it was not improbable that they might have to maintain themselves in it by force against a rebellion.¶ Again, in a later letter (probably of 1666) he hopes that by this time his Lordship hath some account of the King's letter for their cathedral. He rebuilt the choir of the ruined cathedral of Dromore at his own expense, and the 'handmaid of the Lord,' Joanna Taylor, the bishop's wife, presented the chalice and paten.¶ Nor was this the only form in which his liberality showed itself; all accounts agree, that now that he was able, for the first time in his life, to dispense instead of receiving bounty, he fed the hungry, clothed the naked, and

\* See the Letters in 'Life,' p. ciii.

† Letter of March 2, 1660-1, in Mr. Murray's possession.

‡ Reprinted in 'Life,' p. ccxciv.

§ Mant's 'Hist. of the Ch. of Ireland,' p. 512.

¶ Letter of Jan. 28, 1664-5, in Mr. Murray's possession. ¶ 'Life,' cix. ccxcii.

provided for the fatherless. 'He was,' says Sir James Ware,\* 'so charitable to the poor, that, except moderate portions to his daughters, he spent all his income on alms and public works.'

All this time his health appears to have been delicate. We find constantly in his letters that he is suffering from a 'great cold,' with pain and feverishness; more than once he complains, as in the letter to Sheldon above referred to, that the climate in which he lived was unsuitable for him. And he was not without heavy domestic affliction. Of the sons of his second marriage, only one survived the sickness which attacked the household in Wales, and him he buried at Lisburn. Two sons of the first marriage grew up to manhood, both of whom seemed to have shared in the wild follies of the Restoration period. The eldest, a captain of horse, fell in a duel with a brother officer named Vane, who also died of his wounds;† and the good bishop almost sank under the blow. The second became secretary to Villiers, Duke of Buckingham, and died at his house in Baynard's Castle a few days before his father, who was probably spared the pain of hearing of his death. The bishop himself was attacked by fever at Lisburn, on the 3rd of August, 1667, and died after ten days' illness, in the seventh year of his episcopate. He was fifty-four years of age, if we suppose him to have been born in 1613, or fifty-six, if, as the records of Caius College seem to indicate, he was born in 1611. Whatever his age, his fancy had not grown dim, nor the natural force of his intellect abated.

Probably no English divine, even in those days when so many were cast out of their stalls or their parsonages, led a more chequered life than Jeremy Taylor. Cambridge, London, Oxford, Uppingham, the royal army, the retreat in Wales, the lectureship and the bishopric in Ireland, all pass before us in a life not prolonged much beyond middle age. No doubt these many changes, with their attendant miseries, and the feeling of being constantly under suspicion, must have been very grievous to the soul of one who loved study and evidently enjoyed the refinements of courtly society. In fact, a tone of querulousness does appear here and there in his letters; yet on the whole we believe that Taylor, in the midst of his distresses and wanderings, was a happy man; he had the disposition which instinctively withdraws itself from the contact of the petty roughnesses of life and seizes such enjoyments as are attainable. He would walk in the sunshine while sunshine was to be found, and not

---

\* 'Hist. of Ireland,' Ed. Harris, ii. 210.

† This rests on the authority of Lady Wray, Taylor's granddaughter, who, making her statement at an advanced age, has probably confused some of the details. See 'Life,' pp. cxx. ccxcviii.

voluntarily seek the bleak hill-side. The works of so very imaginative a writer give but an imperfect reflection of the character of the man; when a man can so readily throw himself into the mood which befits the occasion, we hardly know what mood is natural to him: Garrick's *Hamlet* gives no indications of Garrick's own personality. Nevertheless, with all Taylor's changes of style and even of thought, the undercurrent of sweetness, gentleness, and tolerance is so constant that we can hardly doubt that these did indeed form an essential part of his character. And to this sweetness we have a better testimony than that of his works—his power of attracting friends. We have seen in the course of this sketch how John Evelyn, Lord Carbery, and Lord Conway valued him as a friend and spiritual adviser, and were ready on all occasions to forward his interests. And these were not all; another of his noble friends was Christopher, Lord Hatton, to whom he dedicated the '*Life of Christ*;' that he was received in the mansion of the Chaworths we find from the letter quoted above; and in Ireland, he seems to have lived on the most friendly terms with the Rawdons and the Hills of Hillsborough. If the richness of his conversation at all corresponded to that of his writings, he must have been a most charming companion; and he had that instinctive sympathy which adapts itself without effort to the disposition of the person addressed. Probably his episcopate was the least happy portion of his life; but such a man, with such friends, was not likely to be altogether miserable.

It is even pathetic to see how, in the midst of the distractions of his changeful life, he continues with indomitable perseverance his study and his writing. Besides Greek and Latin, he understood French and Italian; and not only was he extremely well read in patristic and scholastic theology, but he was constantly in communication with Mr. Royston, the bookseller, and contrived to keep himself acquainted with the current literature of the day, both English and foreign. He 'would rather furnish his study with Plutarch and Cicero, with Livy and Polybius, than with Cassandra and Ibrahim Bassa;'<sup>\*</sup> yet he did not despise either Madame de Scuderi, or Whetstone, or Tom Nash; he read Dante, but he was not averse to pass an hour with Poggio Bracciolini; he would recreate himself after his meditations on Holy Dying with a story of Petronius. His cry is still, 'how is any art or science likely to improve? What good books are lately public? What learned men abroad or at home begin

<sup>\*</sup> '*Essay on Friendship*,' p. 81. '*Promos and Cassandra*' is a 'comical discourse,' by G. Whetstone. '*Ibrahim Bassa*' is a romance by Madame de Scuderi (Mr. Eden's note, *in loco*).

anew to fill the mouth of fame in the places of the dead Salmasius, Vossius, Mocelin, Sirmond, Rigaltius, Des Cartes, Galileo, Peiresc, Petavius, and the excellent persons of yesterday?''\* When he hears that Lord Conway is likely to reside on his Irish estates, his hope is that his lordship will bring his library with him.† Never was there a more eager devourer of books; if he kept a common-place book, it must have been at least as remarkable as Southey's; but we are inclined to think, from the way that his illustrations are introduced, that he drew most of them from the stores of his memory. Yet there were considerable gaps in his vast reading; he does not seem to have had much sympathy with the great philosophical movement of his own time; he refers, as we have seen, to Des Cartes; yet that intrepid spirit, who undertook to reconstruct philosophy from its foundations, does not seem to have influenced his writings; he is scarcely quoted, though he wrote on Taylor's favourite science of Ethics. He refers to Galileo, but we doubt whether, even in passing, he alludes to any discovery of the Tuscan artist. He always gives us the impression that he loved belles lettres, rhetoric, and casuistic theology, rather than the severer pursuits of philosophy. When he talks 'metaphysically,' he is rather apt to talk 'extravagantly' also.‡ Of the books which he thought most essential for a student of theology we have a list in a letter to Mr. Graham, a Fellow of Trinity College, Dublin.§ From this we find that, in his opinion, the works of Episcopius, the great leader of the Arminians in the Low Countries, 'contained the whole body of orthodox religion;' and there are manifest traces of the influence of this remarkable man upon his theology, and, indeed, upon a considerable portion of the contemporary theology of England. Other continental writers whom he commends are Chemnitz, Gerhard, Du Moulin, Chamier, Vossius, and Casaubon. For school divinity he prefers Occam on the 'Sentences,' Aquinas's 'Summa Theologiæ,' with Suarez's 'Comment;' Biel; and Estius on the 'Sentences;' his emphatic preference for the Jesuits Estius and Suarez helps to explain some of the weak points of his moral theology. In English divinity he recommends Hooker, Andrews, Laud, Lord Falkland 'Of Infallibility,' Bramhall, Overall, Field, Sanderson, and Faringdon, besides several of 'Dr. Taylor's' works, and some treatises—tracts for the times—the fame of which has long passed away. But this list, intended for a student in

\* To Evelyn, in 'Life,' p. lxxxi.

† Letter of April 9, 1659, in Mr. Murray's possession.

‡ Letter to Lord Conway, Feb. 26, 1658-9, in Mr. Murray's possession.

§ 'Life,' p. lxxxviii.

theology whom he wished to imbue with his own theologic opinions, very imperfectly represents Taylor's reading, though it sufficiently indicates his preferences; it is, as he himself says, but the beginning of a theological library, fit for one who wished 'to be wise and learned in the Christian religion, as it is taught and professed in the Church of England.' He himself studied the writings of foes as well as friends; he did not contend, as some have done, against Bellarmine and Calvin without reading their works; and he is often more successful in attacking his enemies than in supporting his friends.

And if his perseverance in study is remarkable, his industry in writing is no less so. In all the changes of his life, whether in his Welsh retirement or in the midst of the distractions of his Irish see, his pen seems to have been scarcely ever out of his hand. He wrote with extraordinary facility. In the twenty-five years between the publication of his 'Defence of Episcopacy' and his death, he published matter which, in his own days, filled several folio volumes, and even in the more compressed form of modern times furnishes a respectable shelf of octavos. If we could recover the whole of his correspondence, another volume would probably have to be added to the series. And these works were not of the kind which an ingenious person with a sufficient command of words may produce almost at will; they almost all involved careful research and reflection. His studies and writings ranged over the whole field of theology; there is hardly a doctrinal point on which he has not expressed an opinion, generally one which marks him as beyond his age in vigour and independence of thought. He is not always judicious, but he is rarely prejudiced; if he comes to a wrong conclusion it is not for want of admitting what might be urged on the other side.

He is eminently a Church of England man; the breadth, simplicity, and nobleness of our National Church were dear to one who loved moderation and largeness of spirit, and hated violence and tyranny with all his heart. He loved the middle way between tyranny and license; he thinks 'to the churches of the Roman Communion we can say that ours is reformed; to the Reformed churches we can say that ours is orderly and decent. At the Reformation we did not expose our churches to that nakedness which the excellent men of our sister churches complained to be among themselves.' It was not yet characteristic of an Anglican divine to refuse the title of 'sister' to the Protestant churches of the continent. He sincerely loved the Book of Common Prayer, and mourned when it was 'cut in pieces with a pen-knife and thrown into the fire,' though it was not consumed;

consumed ; he longed for it, as for a blessing once common, now removed to a distance ; ‘when excellent things go away, and then look back upon us, as our blessed Saviour did upon St. Peter, we are more moved than by the nearer embraces of a full and actual possession.’ Of Scripture he speaks in terms at once reverent and reasonable, maintaining always its supreme authority, yet rejecting the opinion of those who think that ‘errors or imperfections in grammar were (in respect of the words) precisely immediate inspirations and dictates of the Holy Ghost.’\*

With regard to the discipline of the Church he was a constant assertor of the superior claims of episcopal government. Not only in a set treatise, published in the very crash of the falling Church, but everywhere, if the subject suggests it, he defends episcopacy against the Presbyterian or Independent ‘novelists’ of his time. He had an instinctive repugnance to democracy, whether in Church or State ; his feelings, in spite of his breadth and tolerance, were essentially dainty and aristocratic ; he liked not to be ‘pushed at by herds and flocks of people that follow anybody that whistles to them or drives them to pasture ;’† he was clearly of Charles II.’s opinion, that Presbyterianism was no religion for a gentleman ;‡ his tastes concurred with his principles in favour of the ancient form of ecclesiastical government ; he could not but prefer the decent order, the traditive authority, and the long prestige of episcopacy to the often tumultuous self-government of Presbyterians or Independents ; but he is not for permitting ecclesiastical powers to employ secular force.

That which has been most assailed in Taylor’s theology is his doctrine on the great mystery of original sin and free-will, which appears most prominently in the ‘Treatise on Repentance.’ When that treatise first appeared it was attacked by Puritans and mourned over by Churchmen ; in our own times it has furnished a theme for the severe remarks of his warmest admirers, S. T. Coleridge and Reginald Heber. It is not to be denied that he does extenuate the effect of Adam’s fall, and exalt to the utmost the free-will and the natural powers of man ; yet it is but fair in estimating his offence to remember his circumstances. A kind of Manichæism had crept into theology ; the teaching of a large and powerful party tended to make man a mere puppet between opposing forces of good and evil, and

\* ‘Life,’ clxix.

† ‘Essay on Friendship,’ p. 72.

‡ In an undated letter to Lord Conway (in Mr. Murray’s possession) Taylor says that the Privy Councillors knew that his lordship was ‘too much a gentleman to be undone with such principles’ as those of the Presbyterians.

this teaching assumed its harshest form in the mouths of some of the Puritan leaders of the seventeenth century; in the treatises of some of these divines man scarcely appears a moral being; he is simply swayed by forces which he cannot control, propelled onward to a destiny which he cannot mitigate. Against this doctrine Taylor revolted with all his soul; man was to him, before all things, a moral agent, a responsible being; his favourite study lay in the region of man's will and man's conscience; hence he was eager to assert that man's will was constrained by no irresistible force. We do not think that he goes further in the assertion of man's moral dignity than Basil or Chrysostom would have approved, but, hedged round as he was by the technical theology of his time, he was compelled to seek his end through bye-paths, which sometimes led him into dangerous country.

With the sacrament of the Lord's Supper he deals in a more satisfactory manner; at once devout and learned, he was especially fitted to treat a matter so sacred, and so perplexed by the subtleties of a thousand years. Against the Roman doctrine of Transubstantiation he is clear and convincing; his familiarity with scholastic logic served him well in his arguments, and his great learning in his discussion of historical facts; to use Coleridge's words,\* 'he transubstantiated his vast imagination and fancy into subtlety not to be evaded, acuteness to which nothing remains unpierceable, and indefatigable agility of argumentation.'

The same skilful polemic which in the treatise on the sacrament he directed against Transubstantiation, he turned against the tenets of the Roman Church generally in his well-known 'Dissuasive from Popery,' certainly one of his most successful works. It is, in truth, a model of Christian controversy; his tone towards his adversaries is gentle and affectionate, even while he lays bare, with an unsparing hand, enormities which might well move his indignation; his exposure of the novelties and inconsistencies of the Roman Church is complete and triumphant; he knew both their theories and their practices, their theories which they dared not put in practice, and their practices supported by no theory; yet, with all this, he speaks to Romanists as one who endeavours to persuade friends, and—to his honour be it said—he earnestly deprecates penal measures against them. It was said, during the troubles of the seventeenth century, that if there had been an Earl of Cork in each province of Ireland, there would have been no Irish Rebellion;

---

\* 'Notes on English Divines,' i. 280.

who shall say how the history of unhappy Ireland might have been changed, if at the Restoration each province had been blessed with a Jeremy Taylor?

The 'Ductor Dubitantium,' or 'Doubters' Guide,' was, no doubt, regarded by its author as his great work, the one which was to perpetuate his fame. And, in truth, few English works rival it in learning and ingenuity; yet, instead of being as Taylor doubtless hoped it would be, the treasure-house where generations of Englishmen might find resolution of painful doubts, it has become the amusement of a few retired students. And this by no fault of the author; even in his lifetime Hobbes appealed to the common intellect with greater force and directness; and before the race of the 'old cavaliers' had quite passed away, Locke's famous Essay gave a new direction to metaphysical and ethical enquiry. Our limits forbid us to offer even an outline of the discussions contained in Taylor's *Opus Magnum*; we can but mention briefly its leading characteristics. He published the book, he tells us in the preface, because his countrymen were almost wholly unprovided with casuistical treatises, and so 'were forced to go down to the forges of the Philistines to sharpen every man his share and his coulter, his axe, and his mattock,' and by answers from abroad their needs were very ill supplied. English literature, it is true, in Taylor's time was not absolutely destitute of casuistical works; but none of these older works are comparable in range with the 'Ductor Dubitantium,' nor do they discuss the grounds of morality with the same completeness. The 'Ductor' is not, as is perhaps sometimes imagined, a mere collection of cases and resolutions for the use of those who 'direct' souls, such as had been common for many generations in the Roman Church; though it does discuss special cases, it is in the main a treatise on moral philosophy, grounded on the belief that man has an intuitive perception of right and wrong; Taylor teaches, as Abelard had done long before, that the ground of morality is the will of God revealed to us through Conscience, as well as through Holy Scripture; 'God is in our hearts by His laws; he rules us by His substitute, our conscience.' Conscience therefore is, says Taylor characteristically, 'the household guardian, the spirit or angel of the place.' On this foundation he builds his ethical edifice. He discusses the various kinds of conscience, distinguishing, perhaps with more subtlety than profit, the right, the confident, the probable, the doubtful, and the scrupulous conscience; thence he proceeds to treat of the obligations of conscience in relation to the natural law, to the ceremonial law, and to the law of Christ; thence to human positive law, whether

of states, or of the Church, or of the several families of which states are composed; his last book he devotes to the consideration of the nature and causes of good and evil, and of the efficient and final causes of human actions. It is in that part which relates to the 'probable or thinking conscience' that he introduces a magnificent sketch of the probabilities on which faith in Christianity is founded; a sketch which contains some of his most splendid passages. The work is not free from grave faults; his casuistic reading tended to make him sometimes over-subtle and unreal in his distinctions, he does not always keep a firm grasp of his principles, and his illustrations are sometimes—to say the least—injudicious; yet we cannot help admiring the exhaustive learning, the ample illustration, and the eloquence maintained with unflagging vigour to the close. Taylor, as we have already said, was jostled from the course by a crowd of lighter-footed and less-burdened competitors; but if he cannot compete with Butler in calmness and justness of intellect, nor with Paley in clearness of style and arrangement, his work remains unrivalled among English ethical works for breadth of learning and stately harmony of diction.

The work of Taylor's, which is, on the whole, most original and characteristic, is undoubtedly the 'Liberty of Prophesying,' his great plea for freedom in the formation and expression of opinion. In other works Taylor did but adorn forms of literature which were common before his time; but in his plea for toleration he is epoch-making; few had risen to that height of contemplation at which the fainter lines vanished from the surface of the ecclesiastical world, none had expressed with so much vigour and eloquence the thoughts of a large and charitable heart on the divisions of Christendom. In ages to come, Taylor's fame will, perhaps, rest even more on his 'Liberty of Prophesying' than on his incomparable sermons.

Like many of the greatest works of genius, like Hooker's 'Ecclesiastical Polity' and Milton's 'Areopagitica,' the 'Liberty of Prophesying' was an 'occasional' work; it was called forth by the necessities of the time. It first made its appearance in 1647, one of the most critical periods of the great struggle. That it had any political end in view we do not believe; but there can be no doubt that Taylor's conviction of the evil of intolerance was quickened by the sight of the miseries inflicted on the country by a war of religion. Only a man whose soul, 'like a star, dwelt apart' from the passion and turmoil of the time could have conceived the thought of 'persuading the rough and hard-handed soldiers to have disbanded themselves presently,'

sently,' at the voice of charity and reason; if he had been a politician, we should perhaps have smiled at his simplicity; in a Christian preacher we honour the faith in the power of love and truth, which led him to cast his little cruse of oil on the troubled waters, even in their wildest rage.

The argument of the 'Liberty of Prophesying' has two ends in view; on the one hand it deals with the great question of terms of communion, and the social and ecclesiastical considerations involved in it; on the other, it discusses the duty of a civil government with respect to the forms of Christianity which exist within its jurisdiction. With regard to the first of these he holds that no dogmas ought to be made necessary conditions for admission to the membership of a church, but such as can be propounded *infallibly*. What then are these dogmas? The greater part of the theological propositions about which Christendom is divided he sets aside, as being either not revealed, or not perfectly clear, or not necessary; the various authorities to which men have attributed infallibility he sweeps aside in succession; neither ecclesiastical tradition, nor Councils, nor Popes, nor Fathers of the Church, nor the Church itself 'in its diffusive capacity,' can in his judgment claim immunity from error in interpreting Scripture or propounding dogmatic sentences. How then are we to find guidance for our steps? He answers, following the line of thought which Hooker had indicated half-a-century earlier, 'in the due exercise of Reason.' The supreme authority of Scripture is assumed throughout the discussion; this being assumed, reason 'proceeding upon the best grounds is the best judge.' Not that he is unaware that human reason often judges wrongly; but he thinks that its errors, if not wilful, are venial, and he sees that, right or wrong, a man who judges at all must needs use his own judgment, just as a man who sees at all must needs use his own eyes, however imperfect. It may be wisest to choose a guide once for all, and follow him always; still, this choice is the act of the individual reason; and Taylor himself is not well assured 'whether intrusting himself wholly with another, be not a laying up his talent in a napkin;'<sup>\*</sup> he fears lest he sin in not using the talent which 'is death to hide.' The conclusion arrived at is, that no proposition can be laid down as necessary to Christian communion beyond those contained in the Apostles' Creed, which 'the Apostles, or the holy men their contemporaries and disciples, composed to be a rule of faith to all Christians.'<sup>†</sup> With

<sup>\*</sup> Sec. 10, s. 3.

<sup>†</sup> Taylor is perhaps not quite ingenuous in this. Though it be true that a creed, or rule of faith, descended from Apostolic times, he can hardly have supposed that

With regard to the civil government, Taylor's view appears to be of this kind; that it is no more oppressive for a sovereign prince to require from his subjects the knowledge of that which is open to the 'common sense' of mankind in theology, than in morals or politics; a man may as well be presumed to know the leading facts of the Christian revelation, as to know that theft is contrary to law, and that the magistrate is to be obeyed. Hence, his whole discussion relates to those who receive the articles of the Apostles' Creed, the reception of which he had already maintained to be of universal obligation; all who receive these articles are to be tolerated, unless their tenets are such as to be dangerous to the civil government or to public morality. This leads him to discuss the special cases of the Roman Catholics and the Anabaptists. With regard to the former, he will not allow that the mere falsehood of their speculative doctrines is a sufficient reason for persecuting them; the body politic is no judge of dogma; Gallio was right—Taylor was almost alone in that age in thinking so—when he said, 'if it be a question of words and names, and of your laws, I will be no judge of such matters;'<sup>\*</sup> but he condemns them for holding principles both leading to ill life and subversive of civil government; and as our duties in respect of morality and obedience to the law of the land are plain and obvious, he who preaches doctrines contrariant to them is to be condemned as a traitor, or a 'destroyer of human society.' And similarly with regard to the Anabaptists. He will not allow that their objection to infant-baptism is any good reason for persecuting them, or for excluding them from Christian communion; for there is, he holds (rather to the scandal of some of his contemporaries), no command of Scripture, nor even any canon of the Church within the first four centuries, 'to oblige children to the susception of it;' but with regard to their opinion on government, he lays it down in the strongest manner that the safety and well-being of the State is, and ought to be, the paramount consideration with the civil ruler, and that, therefore, he cannot tolerate the preaching of such doctrines as 'that it is not lawful for princes to put malefactors to death, nor to take up defensive arms, nor to minister on oath, nor to contend in judgment;' such principles as these 'destroy the bands of civil societies, and leave it arbitrary to every vain or vicious person whether man shall be safe, or laws be established, or a murderer hanged, or princes rule;' nay, we must put any sense

---

this particular form, and no other, was Apostolic; for he refers to passages in Irenæus, Tertullian, and Cyprian, which are not consistent with such a supposition. Compare Coleridge, 'Notes on English Divines,' i. 209 ff.

<sup>\*</sup> Sec. 20, s. 5.

whatever

whatever upon passages of Scripture, which seem to support such doctrines, rather than have it supposed 'that Christianity should destroy that which is the only instrument of justice, the restraint of vice and the support of bodies politic.'\*

In a word Taylor lays it down in the clearest manner, that the civil government is not concerned with opinions, however false or absurd, unless they prejudice the government as such; in that case, they must be suppressed as offences against government, not as speculative opinions. But in all this he contemplates a state composed of none but such as agree in accepting the article of the Apostles' Creed; and this, it may be said, is not complete toleration. True, it is not; but in Taylor's time the acceptance of this theory would in fact have produced almost complete toleration, for in spite of individual aberrations, there was then no sect which would not have accepted the simple statement of the objects of Christian faith contained in the Apostles' Creed; their disputes lay in another region altogether; and if he advocated a scheme which might have put an end to division and persecution then, he is not to be blamed if he did not provide for a state of things which did not exist until long afterwards. His work marks the highest level to which toleration of different opinions had then advanced, for even Milton's treatises† on toleration did not cover all Taylor's ground; and when, some generations later, the proposition to which Taylor's arguments in fact tended, that the State should tolerate all opinions whatever not dangerous to government or to society, was frankly and unconditionally maintained, it was maintained rather on the ground of the indifference of religions, than on the ground that Christianity inculcates the largest charity towards those who merely differ in opinion. Even now, few probably are prepared to receive Taylor's dictum, that involuntary error is not to be anathematized, and that 'heresy is not an error of the understanding, but an error of the will.'‡

We spoke just now of Milton and his noble defence of toleration. There is on this point so much community of spirit between him and Taylor, that we almost wonder to find them on opposite sides in the great struggle. Yet we ought not to wonder; for the objects which lay nearest the heart of Taylor and Milton alike were the dominant objects with no party; each

\* Sec. 19. It is of course evident, from what is here stated, that the 'Anabaptists' of the seventeenth century had nothing in common with the respectable 'Baptists' of our day, except their objection to pædo-baptism.

† Moreover, Milton's treatise on 'Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes,' which contains the most noteworthy coincidences with the 'Liberty,' did not appear until 1659.

‡ Sec. 2.

party was bent upon making its own views prevail, rather than on bringing about that state of government which should best secure the rights of all; and the leading spirits in a disturbed age had naturally more sympathy with the men of action than the men of thought, whose dominant interests were not those of the majority; and in such circumstances the side taken by the more contemplative and wide-reaching spirits is often determined by considerations which have but slight connexion with their deepest convictions. Questions of prelacy or no-prelacy sever men who are agreed on the great questions of faith and charity.

But a heavy charge is made against Taylor, that having been an advocate for toleration when the Church of England was oppressed, he abandoned his principles and advocated oppression when the Church of England triumphed. Let us examine this; for, if it be well grounded, it is a deep stain on a great reputation. One ground of this charge, that he so changed the 'Liberty of Prophesying' after 1660 as to weaken its characteristic arguments may be at once dismissed. It reappeared in successive editions of his 'Controversial Tracts,' of which one (the second) was published when he was a bishop and his party triumphant. Changes there are certainly; additions are made in later editions, from books published since the date of the first; \* but the argument in favour of toleration is as clear in the last edition as in the first. A more tenable ground of reproach is that Taylor, in his sermon before the Parliament of Ireland in 1661, depreciated the rights of conscience in a manner inconsistent with the liberal principles which he formerly held. But this too is founded on a mistake; what he does maintain in the sermon in question is simply what is maintained by all jurists, that 'tenderness of conscience' cannot be pleaded against the law of the land; if it could, the execution of the law would depend upon individual caprice, and there would, in fact, be an end of all law. And he maintained the very same proposition in the 'Liberty of Prophesying' itself; 'if the laws be made so malleable as to comply with weak consciences, he that hath a mind to disobey is made impregnable against the coercitive power of the law by this pretence; for a weak conscience signifies nothing in this case but a dislike of the law upon a contrary persuasion.'† A man may wish for a change in the law, and yet be anxious that the respect due to existing laws should be maintained. So

---

\* The famous apologue of Abraham and the fire-worshipper, for instance, taken from a book published in 1651, is found in the second and all subsequent editions. This is illustrative of the widest possible tolerance, and as such was adopted by Benjamin Franklin and by Lord Kaimes from him.

† Sec. 17, s. 1.

far, Taylor is not inconsistent; but we are somewhat startled to find him in the sermon inverting his favourite argument from the uncertainty of human opinion. In the 'Liberty' he had contended, that in the great uncertainty of opinions, states and churches should enforce upon their members the fewest and simplest opinions possible; in the sermon he contends on the contrary that, as opinion is uncertain, the individual should be ready to resign his own at the bidding of the government, which has prescription in its favour. He exalts to the utmost the prerogative of the King, and it must be confessed that the tone of the sermon is somewhat hard and unsympathising. The truth probably is, that the preacher thought, not unreasonably, that the first task which lay before the Irish Parliament was to restore order, to which end it was his duty to preach obedience; and his own experience had probably convinced him that to include in one church the Irish Presbyterians and the Irish Prelatists was a consummation rather to be wished than hoped for. He is still careful to maintain that an 'opinion which does neither bite nor scratch, if it dwells at home in the house of understanding, and wanders not into the outhouses of passion and popular oration,' is not subject to the animadversion of the ruler; but he warns dissidents that it is one thing to be tolerated, another to be endowed and privileged. When they 'think they cannot enjoy their conscience unless you give them good livings . . . they do but too evidently declare, that it is not their consciences but their profits they would have secured.'\* In truth, his glorious vision of a national church founded simply on the acknowledgment of the great Christian verities, a church in which there should be difference of opinion without wrath and envying, had passed away; his mood was changed, nor is there any need to charge him with insincerity if years of trial had somewhat embittered his gentle spirit. Probably no other prelate of the newly restored Anglo-Irish Church could have been found who would not have declaimed against the late oppressors with far greater vehemence.

To pass from books which, like those we have just been discussing, bear a strong impress of the tumults of the seventeenth century to the devotional works, is like passing from the bustle of a street to the silence of a church. We must content ourselves with but a brief notice of these; for, in truth, prayers, and meditations, and directions for the conduct of Christian men in the most solemn incidents of their lives, are not fair subjects for criticism; the real test of the value of a devotional work is the

---

\* Dedication of the 'Sermon before the Parliament.'

amount of comfort which it has supplied to generations of earnest worshippers. And there can be no doubt that the 'Holy Living,' and 'Holy Dying,' the 'Golden Grove,' and other like works, have stood this test; they have helped to raise the thought and comfort the hearts of many worshippers. Yet we cannot but believe that men are fast losing the taste for such works as the 'Holy Living and Dying,' works, that is, which aim at suggesting the right thoughts, the right actions, and the right prayers under given circumstances. Men like Lord Conway and John Evelyn, women like Lady Carbery and Mrs. Philips, now-a-days aim rather at that general right-mindedness from which right conduct springs than at the cautious guidance of particular actions. The difference in tone between Taylor's 'Holy Living' and Dean Goulburn's 'Thoughts on Personal Religion,' measures very fairly the difference between the Christian gentleman of Taylor's time and the Christian gentleman of our own.

The 'Life of Christ' and the Sermons may be classed together, for they are, in fact, works of the same kind. Of the first, we may say that nothing can be more unlike the 'Lives of Jesus' of which we have had more than enough in these latter days. Criticism there is none; Taylor simply arranges the facts of the Lord's life in historical sequence, and inserts from time to time discourses on topics suggested by the history. The work may possibly have been suggested by 'Vita Jesu Christi' of Ludolphus de Saxonia; but the two works only resemble each other in the circumstance that in both prayers and moral reflections are mixed with the narrative; the discourses themselves, which form the greater portion of Taylor's 'Life of Christ,' are entirely his own, and differ little in style and manner from those which were published under the title of 'Sermons.' His object was not to criticise facts or harmonize apparent discrepancies; in an age of strife, when men 'hugged their own opinions dressed up in the imagery' of truth, and went on to 'schisms and uncharitable names, and too often dipped their feet in blood,' he wished to withdraw them from 'the serpentine enfoldings and labyrinths of dispute' to contemplate the love and mercy displayed in the 'Great Exemplar.' To fill 'the rooms of the understanding with airy and ineffective notions is just such an excellency as it is in a man to imitate the voice of birds;' but if a man lives 'in the religion and fear of God, in justice and love with all the world,' he is certain that he will 'not fail of that end which is perfective of human nature.'\*

---

\* Dedication of the 'Life of Christ' to Christopher, Lord Hatton; one of the noblest of Taylor's many excellent dedications.

The discourse in the 'Life of Christ' and the Sermons contain the richest specimens of their author's gorgeous eloquence. In the polemical and practical treatises the style is comparatively subdued, though even here it is figurative and allusive beyond that of most of his other contemporaries; but in the Sermons he gave the reins to his fancy. He claims for them the praise, that they are on subjects of great and universal interest, which are the concern of all. Here and there he touches on his favourite pursuit, the resolution of cases of conscience, but generally he confines himself to the tracing of 'the greater lines of duty;' he cares but little if any 'witty censorer' shall say that he has learned from them nothing but he knew before; for no man ought to be offended, 'that sermons are not like curious inquiries after new nothings, but pursuances of old truths.' And his description of his own work is fair enough; the Sermons are in substance, if not in form, plain, practical discourses. The subjects are those on which the greatest amount of common-place has been written and preached; he discourses of 'righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come,' of zeal and prayer, of feasting and marriage, rather than of those abstruse points of metaphysical theology where men 'find no end, in wandering mazes lost;' the plans of his Sermons are simple, the topics for the most part obvious, so that an analysis of one of them gives no truer impression of the effect of the whole than an outline of a Titian does of the subtle colouring of the original. It is not ingenuity of structure nor newness of topic that distinguishes the sermons of Taylor; in these respects he is surpassed by many of his contemporaries; it is the extraordinary wealth of illustration which he bestows upon old truths and simple schemes. In no sermons that we know of are obvious truths adorned with so gorgeous an array of thought, and fancy, and learning. His fancy was quick, his reading immense, and his memory retentive; not a subject can be suggested to him but there come trooping into his glowing mind illustrative images; struggles that he has beheld in the civil war; gentle landscapes from Golden Grove; words of Homer and Euripides, of Virgil and Lucan, of Dante and Tasso, of the singers of his own land; stories from the Fathers and the Lives of the Saints, from Hebrew Rabbis or Persian fabulists. Nothing comes amiss to him; he empties his cornucopiæ before us without stint or grudging; if the plan of his sermon is simple and unpretending, every part of it is garnished and decorated with the most luxuriant wealth of rhetorical and poetic trappings. We may compare one of his discourses to such a country church as we sometimes see in these days, where some loving hand has covered the simple work of village

village masons with rich carvings, and filled the old windows with 'prophets pictured on the panes.'

He has often been compared to Chrysostom, and there can be no doubt that the mind of the English preacher was largely influenced by his study of the great orator of Antioch and Constantinople. There is in both the same peculiar union of real earnestness of purpose with rhetorical form and florid imagery; there is the same tendency to a gentle melancholy, and, in spite of the difference of language, there is even a resemblance in style: Taylor's style reflects Chrysostom's in much the same way that Hooker's does Cicero's. But Chrysostom, though exuberant in comparison with Demosthenes, is chaste compared with Taylor; he shows the training of the Athenian schools, which still formed an 'academy' of Greek style; he has none of Taylor's multifarious learning; Chrysostom and Photius together might have formed a Jeremy Taylor. In truth, we can recall only one other who unites wealth of learning, of fancy, and of expression, in the same degree as Jeremy Taylor—his contemporary, John Milton. The reading of these two extended in great measure over the same fields; we trace in both the same fondness for the Greek, Latin, and Italian poets—the same tendency to decorate Christian thought with Pagan imagery—the same delight in the modulation of long-drawn sentences—the same dissatisfaction with the discords and divisions of an age which must needs discuss prelacy and presbytery, synods and 'classic hierarchies,' while government could hardly be maintained, and Christianity itself was in danger. But with these points of likeness, how wide is the gulf between the two men! Nothing can be less like the fiery scorn of Milton than the gentle melancholy of Taylor; while Milton plunges into the arena, eager to enforce his own views of right and truth, unsparing in denunciation of those who oppose him, Taylor tenderly laments the evils of the time, and would fain persuade men and set them at one again: in Milton we are always conscious of strong will and fixed resolve; Taylor sometimes seems to be hardly master of himself to float passively on the full stream of his own learning and fancy. It is hardly likely that the two great masters of English prose were known to each other personally; in early Cambridge days, no doubt, the young scholar of Caius may have met face to face the scholar of Christ's, though in after times it is difficult to imagine that Cromwell's secretary can have had occasion to meet King Charles's chaplain. But with each other's works they were no doubt acquainted: it is not to be supposed that so omnivorous a reader as Taylor would remain ignorant of his great contemporary's '*Allegro*,' and '*Comus*,' and '*Lycidas*,' or that Milton would neglect a work

which in many respects so chimes with his own humour as the 'Liberty of Propheſying.' Taylor ſeems to ſhow an acquaintance with one at leaſt of Milton's early works, when, ſpeaking of the triumphs of Chriſtianity, he ſays that 'the holy Jeſus made inviſible powers to do him viſible honours,' and that 'His apoſtles hunted demons from their tripods, their navels, their dens, their hollow pipes, their altars,' and that 'he made their oracles ſilent;\* words in which we trace an echo of the well-known lines of the 'Ode on the Nativity':—

'The oracles are dumb,  
No voice nor hideous hum  
Runs through the arched roof in words deceiving,'

And Heber would fain perſuade us that Milton had Taylor in his eye when he ſpoke of—

'Men, whoſe life, learning, faith, and pure intent  
Would have been held in high eſteem by Paul,'

who yet had been 'branded heretics' by ſuch as Edwards; and certainly we can hardly help ſuppoſing that Taylor's eloquent treatiſe would be more attractive to Milton than thoſe of Goodwin and Peters, which ſhared the wrath of Rutherford and 'Scotch What-d'ye-call.'

In reſpect of his ſimiles Taylor is the very Homer of preachers. His ſtyle is commonly metaphorical and alluſive, but here and there, when he hits upon an image of unuſual beauty, he ſeems unwilling to leave it with a mere touch, and elaborates it into a diſtinct and glowing picture. Sometimes his ſimiles are wrought out from an anecdote in ſome recondite book, and theſe certainly, however they may adorn, do not render the ſubject more eaſy of apprehenſion to an ordinary intelligence; but the moſt beautiful are thoſe which are drawn from natural objects. He evidently delighted in the varied beauty of country ſcenes; the ſky and the clouds, the woods and vales and ſtreams, the ever-new phenomena of the growth and decay of plants filled his ſoul with admiration and love. With the example of Thomson before us, who is ſaid to have written in bed his famous deſcription of morning, we heſitate to infer a man's habits from his imaginative writings; yet it is difficult not to believe that Taylor delighted in the dewy freſhneſs of ſunriſe and the ſong of the early lark. His comparison of the aſcent of the Chriſtian's prayer to the riſing of the lark—ſometimes ſoaring, ſometimes beaten back by rough winds—is too well known for quotation. He more than once

---

\* 'Duct. Dubit,' Book I., c. iv. s. 22. The coincidence is noted by Mr. Willmott.

uses the sunrise as an illustration, and manages it with great felicity. In the 'Holy Dying,'\* he says that reason gradually dawns on the soul,—

'As when the sun approaching towards the gates of the morning first opens a little eye of heaven, and sends away the spirits of darkness, and gives light to a cock, and calls up the lark to mattins, and by-and-by gilds the fringes of a cloud and peeps over the eastern hills, thrusting out his golden horns like those which decked the brows of Moses when he was forced to wear a veil because himself had seen the face of God; and still, while a man tells the story, the sun gets up higher, till he shows a fair face and a full light, and then he shines one whole day, under a cloud often, and sometimes weeping great and little showers, and sets quickly.'

The same simile is again used, with excellent effect, to illustrate the gradual spread of Christianity over the world:—

'I have seen the sun with a little ray of distant light challenge all the powers of darkness, and, without violence and noise climbing up the hill, hath made night so to retire, that its memory was lost in the joys and sprightfulness of the morning: and Christianity, without violence or armies. . . . with obedience and charity, with praying and dying, did insensibly turn the world into Christian and persecution into victory.'†

A good instance of Taylor's strength and weakness in the management of comparisons is found in the very beautiful simile by which he illustrates the calm, sweet life of Lady Carbery ‡:—

'In all her religion, and in all her actions of relation towards God, she had a strange evenness and untroubled passage, sliding toward her ocean of God and of infinity with a certain and silent motion. So have I seen a river deep and smooth passing with a still foot and a sober face, and paying to the Fiscus, the great exchequer of the sea, the prince of all watery bodies, a tribute large and full; and hard by it a little brook skipping and making a noise upon its unequal and neighbour bottom; and after all its talking and bragged motion, it paid to its common audit no more than the revenues of a little cloud or a contemptible vessel. So have I sometimes compared the issues of her religion to the solemnities and famed outsides of another's piety.'

The first clause of this passage is contrasted by Keble § with Burke's famous description of Marie Antoinette, in the first freshness of her queenly beauty, rising like the morning-star above the horizon. He quotes it as an instance of the poetical as opposed to the rhetorical treatment of imagery. And it serves that pur-

\* Ch. I, sec. iii. s. 2.

† Sermon on the 'Faith and Patience of the Saints,' Pt. i. s. 1.

‡ In the Funeral Sermon on Lady Carbery.

§ 'Prælectiones Academicæ,' i. 39.

pose admirably; the image is beautiful in itself, well adapted to illustrate the thought, and sufficiently suggested by the mere use of the words 'sliding toward her ocean.' More than this offends our modern sense; but if we concede to the florid taste of the preacher's age that he was justified in expanding his beautiful metaphor into a simile, we must still protest against the introduction of another figure within it; the words 'fiscus,' 'exchequer,' 'prince,' 'tribute,' 'audit,' though quite of the kind which even Milton himself might have used upon fit occasion, must surely be felt as jarring notes here. In a word, the passage suffers, like many others, from Taylor's unpruned exuberance; he is not content to suggest an image, he must give it in detail; he gives us so fully the work of his own imagination that he leaves nothing for ours, which is always a mistake in art. He wanted, in a far greater degree than Shakspeare, 'the art to blot,' and few men needed it more.\*

The following comparison, illustrating the blessing of God's chastisements, which seems to us nearly perfect in all its parts, is besides worthy of note from the fact that Southey transferred it entire to 'Thalaba':—

'I have known a luxuriant vine swell into irregular twigs and bold excrescences, and spend itself in leaves and little rings, and afford but trifling clusters to the wine-press, and a faint return to his heart which longed to be refreshed with a full vintage; but when the Lord of the vineyard had caused the dressers to cut the wilder plant and make it bleed, it grew temperate in its vain expense of useless leaves, and knotted into fair and juicy branches, and made account of the loss of blood by return of fruit.'

Here is Southey's version:—

'Repine not, O my son, the old man replied,  
That Heaven hath chastened thee. Behold this vine!  
I found it a wild tree, whose wanton strength  
Had swoln into irregular twigs  
And bold excrescences,  
And spent itself in leaves and little rings;  
So in the flourish of its wantonness  
Wasting the sap and strength

---

\* It is interesting to compare the use of the same figure by another great master of imagination, Walter Scott. "Murmurer that thou art," said Morton, in the enthusiasm of his reverie, "why chafe with the rocks that stop thy course for a moment? There is a sea to receive thee in its bosom, and there is an eternity for man, when his fretful and hasty course through the vale of time shall be ceased and over. What thy petty fumings are to the deep and vast billows of a shoreless ocean, are our cares, hopes, fears, joys, and sorrows to the objects which must occupy us through the awful and boundless succession of ages."—"Old Mortality."

That

That should have given forth fruit.

But when I pruned the plant,  
Then it grew temperate in its vain expense  
Of useless leaves, and knotted as thou seest,  
Into those full clear clusters, to repay  
The hand that wisely wounded it.\*

The laureate, who fully acknowledged his appropriation of the image, altered as little as possible what he himself called Taylor's 'unimprovable' language; yet the whole passage has in Southey a heaviness which it has not in Taylor: Taylor was, in truth, much the better poet of the two.

Such beauties as those which we have quoted meet us everywhere in Taylor's sermons and practical works: his fancy always glows; yet it must needs be confessed that his superabundant illustrations, especially those which are drawn from books, very much detract from the impression of earnestness which a sermon ought to produce. They give to his discourses the appearance of *ἐπιδείξεις*, or show-speeches, rather than of the didactic and persuasive oratory which ought to characterize the utterances of a Christian preacher. After making all possible allowance for the florid and learned style of the seventeenth century, we cannot but feel that the preacher is rather amusing than persuading or instructing us when, inveighing against luxury, he tells us that there are 'in the shades below no numbering of healths by the numeral letters of Philenium's name, no fat mullets, no oysters of Lucrinus, no Lesbian or Chian wines,' and bids us 'now enjoy the delicacies of nature, and feel the descending wines distilled through the limbeck of thy tongue and larynx, and seek the delicious juices of fishes, the marrow of the laborious ox, the tender lard of Apulian swine, and the condited bellies of the scarus,' and speaks of desiring 'to have the wealth of Susa, or garments stained with the blood of the Tyrian fish, or to feed like Philoxenus, or to have tables loaden like the boards of Vitellius.' It is not to much purpose that he tells an English congregation, speaking of the somewhat more delicate food which is necessary for the mental activity of the student, that 'neither will the pulse and the leeks, Lavinian sausages and the Cisalpine suckets or gobbets of condited bull's flesh, minister such delicate spirits to the thinking man.' In a very remarkable description of the Last Judgment, there shall come together, he says, 'all kingdoms of all ages, all the armies that ever mustered, all the world that Augustus Cæsar taxed, all those hundreds of

\* 'Thalaba,' Book viii. st. 17.

millions that were slain in all the Roman wars, from Numa's time till Italy was broken into principalities and small exarchates.\* It seems to us a perversity to spoil a striking passage with those 'principalities and small exarchates:' they add nothing to the picture; on the contrary, they draw off the attention from the thronging multitudes to the curious nicety of the describer. And such instances as these are not isolated; we can hardly read a discourse without finding its solemnity marred here and there by illustrations which remind us rather too forcibly of the ingenuity and learning of the preacher.

The truth is, we are afraid we must needs confess it, that Taylor's 'linked sweetness long drawn out' tends here and there to mawkishness: the banquet of sweets is too much for us; we long for plain wholesome fare. And this tendency is very much increased by the preacher's singular want of humour. We may perhaps do him injustice: his face might perhaps have suggested his perception of the ludicrous side of some passages in his sermons, if we could have seen him deliver them; but whatever the subject, he never smiles at us from the printed page. In the peroration of the 'Holy Dying,' where he is dissuading us from excessive grief at the death of friends, he does not seem to perceive the exquisite incongruity of that choice story from Petronius about the Ephesian widow who was so remarkably consoled, though he tells it in a manner not unworthy of Boccaccio. He illustrates the folly of a rash marriage by the following apologue:—

'The stags in the Greek Epigram, whose knees were clogged with frozen snow upon the mountains, came down to the brooks of the valleys, hoping to thaw their joints with the waters of the stream; but there the frost overtook them, and bound them fast in ice, till the young herdsmen took them in their stranger snare. It is the unhappy chance of many men, finding many inconveniences upon the mountains of single life, they descend into the valleys of marriage to refresh their troubles; and there they enter into fetters, and are bound to sorrow by the cords of a man's or woman's peevishness.'

His manner betrays here no sense of drollery; and yet his audience must have been made of sterner stuff than we are if they did not smile at this quaint description of the unfortunate case of those who rush from the ills of celibacy to 'others that they know not of.'

Yet this want of humour was not incompatible with a great power of sarcasm; in the 'Dissuasive from Popery,' in particular, he directs against certain practices of the Roman Church and its

\* 'Christ's Advent,' Sermon I. s. 1. He was fond of these 'exarchates.' In the 'Holy Dying' (ch. i. sec. iv. s. 4) he speaks of the ants dividing their little mole-hills into provinces and exarchates. Here, however, the big word contrasts well with the little subject; we feel the ants' assumption of dignity.

various orders a sarcastic irony not unworthy to be compared with Pascal's. And if in his stately solemnity Taylor sometimes indulges in overmuch amplification, he shows himself nevertheless, upon occasion, a master of terse, vigorous, vernacular phraseology. His controversial treatises are not written in the florid style of his sermons; in truth, nothing is more remarkable than the instinctive tact with which he adapts the style to the subject, though, no doubt, his strain is always pitched in a key somewhat too high for modern ears. Nor does his exuberant fancy preclude the exercise of remarkable keenness and subtlety. Mr. Hallam thought that Taylor could never have made a great lawyer. We are by no means of his opinion. The author of the '*Ductor Dubitantium*' might surely have been a great equity lawyer; and both his excellencies and his defects fitted him for the profession of an advocate. For he is always rather rhetorician than philosopher; he does not reason up to his conclusions; he takes a proposition and defends it by ingenious arguments; and he shows great skill in discovering and attacking the weak points in his opponent's case. When we add to these qualifications his power of 'getting up' a subject and of finding apt language and ready illustration, we surely have before us the very ideal of a successful candidate for the highest honours of the bar. But we believe that a genuine vocation brought Taylor into the ranks of the priesthood; he could not have borne to waste his splendid powers on fines and recoveries, or in making the worse appear the better reason; his arguments may sometimes be rather specious than sound, but they are always employed in favour of what he believed to be just, and true, and noble.

His great defect is a certain want of masculine firmness and vigour; his intellect and fancy are dominant over his will. Hence, we sometimes desiderate a greater force of rough moral indignation; he disapproves rather than condemns; he rather shows the ugliness of evil than dashes it from him as a twining monster; perhaps he hardly knew it nearly enough to be really moved to loathe its deformity. Where Milton would thunder and South would spurn, Taylor deprecates. But, apart from this cardinal defect, how noble is his character! He is unstained, so far as we know, by any suspicion of intrigue or meanness; his personal sweetness and attractiveness seem to have been as manifest as Shakspeare's; we can well imagine the gentler spirits of a disturbed time joyfully adopting him as a 'ghostly father.' As long, probably, as Englishmen retain a taste for elevated thought, pure aspiration, and quaint imagery clothed in rich and ornate diction, so long will Jeremy Taylor retain his high place in our literature.

- ART. V.—1. *Die Lehre der Tonempfindungen als physiologische Grundlage für die Theorie der Musik.* Von H. Helmholtz, Professor der Physiologie an der Universität zu Heidelberg. Brunswick, 1865.
2. *Histoire générale de la Musique.* Tomes I. II. Par F. J. Fétis. Paris, 1869.
3. *Philosophie de la Musique.* Par Charles Beauquier. Paris, 1866.
4. *History of Modern Music.* By John Hullah. London, 1862.
5. *A Course of Lectures on the Transition Period of Musical History.* By John Hullah. 1865.

“NEITHER the enjoyment nor the capacity of producing musical notes are faculties of the least direct use to man in reference to his ordinary habits of life.’ So says Mr. Darwin;\* and yet, a little further on, we read:—‘I conclude that musical notes and rhythm were first acquired by the male or female progenitor of mankind for the sake of charming the opposite sex.’ We may leave the reader to reconcile these two ingenious statements, the last of which seems to be in contradiction to the first. To ‘charm the opposite sex’ is surely now, as it has ever been, one of the most ‘ordinary habits’ of man, and we ought to admit that if the ‘capacity of producing musical notes’ is calculated to help him in this arduous undertaking, then this ‘capacity’ is of some ‘direct use’ to him. That music has a great many other uses, it is our object on the present occasion to prove: meanwhile, we have quoted the above statements, not because they appear to be in one respect contradictory, but because in them we have the latest scientific testimony concerning the uselessness and the usefulness of music.

The origin of Vocal music has been the subject of much conjecture. Whether we think, with Mr. Darwin, that music was developed from cadences used to charm the opposite sex and expressive of strong emotion; or, with Mr. Herbert Spencer, that music was developed from the cadences of emotional speech—whether speech preceded music, or music preceded speech—is of little importance to our present inquiry; in either case, the Singing Art would have to be traced to one and the same root, viz. the vocal expression of emotion through sound. The famous hairy creature with a tail and pointed ears may have been the first distinguished vocalist, for aught we know—at all events, we are not in a position to dispute the fact.

The origin of Instrumental music is not far to seek. We need hardly quarrel with the mythic account. Very likely, the

\* ‘Descent of Man,’ vol. ii. p. 233.

wind blowing into broken reeds as they stood up stiffly in some low marsh-land or river may have suggested the first rude Pan-pipe, of which the flute would be a later modification. Dried sea-weed, stretched on rocks or shells, may possibly have been the primitive Æolian lyre, from whence came the harp and guitar. The clapping of hands, or the knocking of two bits of stick together, may have suggested the numerous drum tribe, from whence would come, in due time, every variety of percussion instrument. It is true, when we think of a percussion instrument like the grand piano-forte as derived from knocking two bits of sticks together, or an Erard harp as descended from sea-weed fibres stretched on rocks, or the Crystal Palace organ as having originally come from a few rotten reeds blown upon by the fitful wind, the missing links seem innumerable, but a musical Darwin would make very light of the difficulty ; and, indeed, the difference between Nature's musical instruments and the latest attempts of man in a similar direction is not nearly so great as the difference between that early Ascidian from which the progenitors of man are said to be descended and the highest, not to say the lowest, representative of man with which we are acquainted.

We need hardly have recourse to the Egyptian or Assyrian monuments to prove the immense antiquity of wind instruments. In one of the tombs at Poitiers, Dr. Cannes, of Paris, and M. Lartet have discovered an undoubted flute, belonging, in all appearance, to the later stone period, and at all events pre-historic. M. Fétis, in his 'History of Music,' gives an exact representation of it. It is made out of a bit of stag's horn, and lay surrounded by flint arrowheads and other stone implements. Another excellent flute, of reindeer's bone, four holes, and a blow-pipe—incontestably a flute and nothing but a flute—was found by M. Lartet in a cave, amongst the bones of extinct races of animals.

Nearly three thousand years before the Christian era the first Emperor of China, Fo-hi, is said to have invented the stringed instrument called *kin*, which consists of a strip of wood, over which silken cords are stretched. The *kin* is laid on a table, and played like the modern *cither*, with the fingers of both hands : its sound was held in China to calm the passions and inspire the mind with virtuous sentiments.

Percussion instruments, such as drums, sonorous bits of wood or metal struck with hammers, are the most universal of all instruments. The shock produced by them upon the rude nervous system is found most useful in promoting a kind of frenzied ardour for battle ; nor is it less favourable to the paroxysms of  
ascetic

ascetic devotion common amongst uncultured races. Most pagan gods are supposed to be delighted with the noise produced by yelling, clapping, and banging gongs about; and amongst savage tribes, sacrifices and religious ceremonies are usually accompanied by percussion instruments of every description. Most savages are deeply alive to the charms of accentuated rhythm, expressed by a hammering on drums. The tribes of Central Africa have a habit of stringing half-a-dozen drums between two poles, and strumming six at a time, whilst an ebony enthusiast stands opposite this demoniac orchestra to mark the rhythm.

It is impossible to say when stringed instruments played with bows were first invented. Some such instrument has been known in India from time immemorial; it is also to be found amongst many savage tribes, and, although apparently unknown to the Greeks, or rejected by them as too barbarous, some kind of bowed instrument appears, from a very early period, to have been known to the Northern races of Europe.

Now, regarding as we do all the above methods of howling, blowing, twanging, and hammering—in other words, all deliberate attempts to express emotion through sound, as so many rough elements of music—we may fairly affirm that the art of producing musical sounds is the most ancient and universal of all the arts. It is the most ancient, because, according to Mr. Darwin, it is a quality common to the animal creation as well as to the earliest races of mankind; and it is the most universal, because we can find no race, ancient or modern, which has been entirely without it.

Hitherto we have spoken of all kinds of sound as musical; but it would be more correct to say that most of the sounds found in nature, or used by savages, are the mere rough materials out of which musical notes have to be manufactured. It is true that any noise acts, in some way or other, upon the emotions by setting the auditory nerves in vibration; but for the purposes of musical art we must select only those kinds of sound, those forms of vibration, which possess certain properties of pitch, intensity, and quality.

First, then, what constitutes PITCH? When we speak of the pitch of a note, we mean that the sonorous body or instrument from which it comes is vibrating so many times a second. These vibratory movements are communicated to the air, and the air communicates them, through the elastic pressure of its waves, to the complex system of fibres stretched upon the drum of the ear, which collects them for transmission, through a winding labyrinth, to the auditory nerve, from which they are passed on to the brain. But the perceptive powers of the human

ear are limited. No sound can be heard if the vibrations are too slow, or less than four or five (or, according to M. Savart, six or seven) to the second; or too quick, that is to say, more than 67,000 to the second. Shrill sounds of 30,000 are very unpleasant; but cats and other animals, whose ears are in some respects more highly organised than ours, can hear many sounds inaudible to human beings. As to pitch, then, the limits of musical sound will be within about six octaves.

Secondly, what constitutes INTENSITY? As pitch is regulated by the number, so intensity is regulated by the force of the vibrations. This force is communicated to the air, and the air-waves produce, in proportion to their force, a greater or less degree of tension in the membrane of the tympanum. A very feeble sound is not sufficient to make the tympanum vibrate at all, and a very violent one—such as the explosion of a cannon—sometimes cracks it; and thus it is no mere metaphor to speak of the drum of the ear being broken. The intensity of *musical* sound will, therefore, be found to lie in the mean between the too feeble and the too forcible.

Thirdly, what constitutes QUALITY? The quality or *timbre* of a sound, *i. e.*, the quality which makes the difference between the same note played on a flute or on a violin, depends neither upon the force nor on the rapidity of the vibrations in the instrument—in the air—in the ear. Upon what, then, does this all-important attribute of sound depend? We must try and imagine a vibrating body, such as the back of a violin or the tube of a diapason, to consist (as is actually the case) of a vast number of lines distributed in a vast number of different layers of matter. All bodies are composed of such countless different molecules, arranged in layers and packed in different degrees of density. When we set our board, violin, or organ-pipe in vibration, these molecules begin to move; some vibrate feebly, some strongly, whilst certain others remain at rest. By strewing sand on the back of a violin whilst in vibration, or affixing a pencil to an organ-pipe, the form of the vibrations representing the disturbance of the molecules may in either case be obtained in lines. These lines then indicate the different arrangement of the molecules of matter in violin, wood, or organ-pipe, which yield a different order of molecular vibration, and transmit to the air differently formed waves, and consequently a different stroke and quality of sound to the ear.

We have now refined our rough element of sound by determining its pitch, its intensity, and pointing to the existence of various qualities or *timbres*; but we have yet to distinguish properly between musical sound and Noise.

M. Beauquier

M. Beauquier gives the following explanation of the difference between noise and musical sound.

A true note, or musical sound, contains in itself a third, a fifth, and an octave. In addition to the fundamental note, a cultivated ear will be able, under certain experimental conditions, to recognise these other three, like faint musical emanations. These three are called the fundamental harmonics of a note, and every sound is thus complex, just as white light is complex, containing within itself what may be called the three harmonical colours, blue, red, and yellow. Now, when the ear receives one distinct sound, and the accessory harmonics are at the same time of very faint intensity and very high in pitch, then we have a pure or clear musical sound called a note; but when the accessory or harmonical sounds are so loud, confused, and so near to the fundamental note that we have difficulty in separating between them and the note itself, then we have the negation of musical sound—that is to say, *noise*. The Chinese gong is an admirable example of unmusical sound, or noise, and a well-tuned kettle-drum is almost as good an example of a true musical note.

But when we have thus manufactured our materials we have not arranged them. We have got the threads, but we have not woven them into any fabric—we have not invented any pattern—we have not given them any form—we have not created any work of art. We might as well give a man a bundle of coloured threads, and expect him without machine or instruction to produce an Indian shawl, as give him musical notes without teaching him the secret of the scale, or of symmetrical arrangement, and expect him to produce melody and harmony. We are still a long way off from what we call music.

Now before we enter upon any further account of the rise and progress of the musical art, the question naturally arises, What claims has it upon our attention? What wants does it meet? Why is it worth studying?

We might point to the fact that people nowadays spend much time and money upon music. But why do they do so? Because it gives them very keen enjoyment. Why does it give them enjoyment? what is the enjoyment worth? Is it pleasure and nothing more, or is it pleasure and something besides? What right have we to speak of Beethoven in the same breath with Goethe? In what sense is the musical composer a teacher or an intellectual and moral benefactor? All such questions, and many more like them, which are asked more frequently than they are answered, may be summed up in a single sentence,—What is the dignity of the musical art? To this question we hope to give some definite reply.

Speaking generally, all the arts may be said to have arisen out of a certain instinct, which impels us to make an appeal to the senses, by expressing our thoughts and emotions in some external form. When a man is haunted by the beauty of the outer world, when he has been for a time purely receptive, watching the light upon summer fields or through netted branches, or at evening the floods of liquid fire that come rolling towards him upon the bosom of the sea, at last before his closed eyes in the dreams of the night there arises within him the vision of an earth, and sky, and sea even more fair than these; and seizing his palette and canvas in the morning, he endeavours to fix the impalpable images which have almost pained his heart with their oppressive loveliness. Who can look at some of Turner's pictures, and see there 'the sunshine of sunshine and the gloom of gloom,' without feeling that the picture stands for the deliverance of a soul's burden? It is its own justification. No one asks first why it gives us joy, or why it is so good; that questioning may come afterwards and may have to be answered, but our uppermost thoughts are such as these:—'I, too, have had such visions, but never till now have they lived and moved before me: henceforth their life is doubled because revealed; their beauty is painless because possessed: now that I have prisoned this fleeting memory, it is mine for ever—*κτῆμα ἐς αἰῶν*. In freeing his own soul the painter, the orator, the poet has freed mine; I shall not suffer in this direction from the void and the agony of the unattained, for it is there worked out for me and for all men to rejoice in and to love.' Therefore the great justification of all art is simply this—that all life tends to outward expression, and becomes rich in proportion to the degree and perfection with which it is mastered inwardly and realised outwardly.

It is evident that the artistic instinct is involved in the constitution of our nature, and only waits for the peculiar times and seasons favourable to each of its several developments. Hence in all sorts of ages and countries we find traces of the arts, but only in certain countries and at certain epochs the full development of any. The seed of a political system, of a religious creed, or of a new art, may lie long in the fallow ground of history, waiting for the mysterious and happy combination of circumstances necessary to its special development. By and by this nation will be ready for such a government; and that form of government, which may have tried in vain to spring up before, will then rise. Such has been the history of representative government in England. By and by a nation will feel the need of a new intellectual form for its religion; and

then, and not before, will the new system prevail. Such has been the history of the Protestant Reformation. By and by the æsthetic and imaginative impulses of a people will demand a certain appropriate channel of expression; and then the art which can best express the imperative mood of the popular life is certain to spring up. That is the history of all Literatures, and also of the directly sensuous arts of Sculpture in Greece, of Gothic Architecture in modern Europe, of Painting in Italy, and, finally, of Modern Music in Italy, France, Belgium, Germany, and England. Each art has been strikingly appropriate to its own age, and each art has more or less exhausted the impulses which it was destined to express. We will now endeavour to show the real position and speciality of music amongst the arts, by a general glance at some of the art developments of the past.

No doubt the art of sculpture existed in a rude form amongst those Eastern nations from which Greece derived the germs of all that she ever possessed. Yet we do not admit any high development of sculpture to have taken place before the period of Grecian art, or about B.C. 500; nor do we venture to say that the works of Phidias and Praxiteles have ever been surpassed. The fact is, that sculpture was the art which rendered concrete, or gave outward expression to, the Greek's highest idea of what was desirable and excellent in life. He was passionately enamoured of the external world. Beauty had no hidden meaning for him; the incompleteness or insufficiency of life never occurred to him; there seemed no moral, no aspiration written upon the face of man or nature: hence he loved outline better than colour, and cared more for form than for expression. His life was exceedingly simple; his intellect remarkably clear and active and subtle; he lived much out in the open air, gossiping incessantly, learned a little Homer and a few lyrics, sometimes peeped into a work of Anaxagoras or Zeno, at other times amused himself with the disputations of the Sophists, or listened to the orators in the Agora. But whatever else he did, his body was his first care. The staple of his education consisted in gymnastic exercises and the cultivation of rhythm as applied to motion. His greatest admiration was lavished upon a beautiful human body, and in Greece there was never the slightest difficulty in studying the human form divine. What every one was proud of, every one was prone to exhibit; and what was universally exhibited and admired naturally became the object of the most elaborate and successful cultivation. Hence Greece, in her eager simplicity, her exquisite perception, her naïve enjoyment of life, and her material

prosperity,

prosperity, found an appropriate expression for her ideal in the Art of Sculpture.

If we glance at Rome in her best days, we shall hardly be surprised to find that she had no original leanings in the direction of the sensuous arts. The art expression, if such it can be called, of her ideal is to be found in the Justinian code. Her notion of life was not beauty, but law, in its most prosaic aspects: stern patriotism, regulated by military despotism; stern justice, regulated by civil law. She had no time to design her own public buildings; she borrowed the designs from Greece. Her statues and her ornaments, when not actually made by degenerate Athenians, were but the cold parodies of Grecian art. It was not until centuries later, when the old Empire had been split up into a thousand fragments, that a new and genuine art began to arise in Italy,—but an art responsive to a new age, and to an utterly changed state of political life and religious feeling. We allude, of course, to the Art of Painting, which culminated in the sixteenth century in the schools of Padua, Venice, Umbria, Verona, Bologna, Sienna, Florence, and Rome.

But there is one growing characteristic of the art of the new world after Christ as contrasted with the art of the old world before Christ, which it is highly important for our present purpose to notice. That characteristic is its ever-increasing tendency to express *complex emotion*. The Greek schools which succeeded Phidias indeed supply numerous expressions of suffering, such as the Laocoon; action, such as the Discobolos; and occasionally some simple and strong emotion, such as the Niobe.

But even in the post-Phidian period, when emotion is expressed at all, it is usually of a simple and direct kind; the fever of the new world had not yet set in. Upon the religions of the past the accumulated moral influences and religious feelings which we are in the habit of expressing by the one word Christianity, broke like a second flood, submerging the old philosophies and the old faiths. The rise of that tide was irresistible, and it brought with it the elements of a new ideal life, in violent antagonism to the traditions of many an earlier civilization. Thanks to this antagonism, which drew hard and fast the line between the Church and the world, the emotional life of the early Christians was also simple and strong. Missionary work afforded an ample and sufficient outlet for feeling; there was little time for anything else. The New Church shrank from Heathen art, as the Jews had shrunk from Egyptian images; and although a reformed Orpheus cropped up later in the character of the Good Shepherd, preference was given to mere symbols,  
and

and only a few coarse representations of Christ, His apostles or His miracles, were allowed to grace a religion which was intended to appeal to the spirit more than to the senses. Then, when the Christian seed had been sown throughout the length and breadth of the Roman Empire, the beginning of the end drew nigh; and we have heard to satiety how the Gothic hordes came down from the Northern Alps upon the plains of Italy, and how the worn-out organization of the Empire fell like an avalanche before the breath of spring. But the imperial sceptre had only passed from the Emperor to the Bishop of Rome, and it was under the timidly admitted presidency of the Pope that the Christian Church first stepped forward as the inspired guide, ready to reduce to order the confused life and weld together in new combinations the heterogeneous elements of the old and the new worlds.

The rise of the Roman Church and the rise of the nations of modern Europe after the death of Charlemagne (814) gave birth to what we call the modern spirit, which is emphatically the spirit of a complex emotional life. In Italy, after the close of the ninth century, the stiff forms of Byzantine art had entirely ceased to have any charm for a nation distracted with wars, and in the eleventh century Italian art had reached its lowest condition.

But another art had already begun to assert itself in France, in Germany, and in England—an art which, taking its rise amongst the masonic guilds, found its perfection in the cloister, yet mingled freely with the world, and became in a remarkable degree the monumental expression of its ‘lights and shadows, all the wealth and all the woe.’ Gothic architecture received some of its finest developments at the hands of priests, but the Gothic temples were the darlings of the people and became the models of popular architecture for the nation. Into them, as we can see to this day, were woven the miseries and the joys, the wild fancies, the morbid tendencies, and the confused aspirations of a spiritual faith, struggling with new and untried aspects of social and political life. It is unnecessary to describe all that the Gothic architecture of the twelfth, thirteenth, and fourteenth centuries strove to express. How highly emotional it became they know who have marked the faces that peep out between the network of leaves or clustering fruit in florid architrave and capital. When the art began to lose all temperance, and assumed wild and flamboyant forms, it was simply because the artist was in despair at not being able to transcend the plastic limits of his material—to express the varied emotions which were daily becoming more numerous and more oppressive, and

which neither stone-carving nor any other known medium could suffice to express. But a more highly emotional art was already preparing to take its place—the art of Italian painting—which, beginning with Cimabue (born 1240), gradually rose along with the decline of Gothic art until, with the successors of Titian and Tintoret, that too had exhausted its emotional functions and began to decline along with the rise and sudden ascendancy of the latest and most perfect art-medium of emotion—MODERN MUSIC.

There never was a time in the history of the world when life was so rapid and human emotion so complex as it has become during the last three centuries. The printing press, the discovery of America, the increase of commerce, the general circulation of thought, have given rise to abnormal combinations and changes of which the old world never dreamed. This has generated a peculiarly restless and feverish temperament of life. Can we wonder that art should try to keep pace with these developments—that in its own region, that of the emotions, it should twist stone into every conceivable shape, and then cast it aside as inadequate; then seize upon colour, and after depicting through its aid every possible scene capable of exciting the imagination, still pine for some more complete expressional medium? And now what more could be done by art than Raphael, Titian, Michael Angelo, had accomplished? What still cried out for direct expression which they had not been able directly to express? Something there was in those independent states of consciousness generated within the mind—something there was in what we call emotion, and especially complex emotion—which called for direct expression, and which found it not in carved stone or limited canvas. What was that something? In a word, it was *Movement* or *Velocity*. That is a fundamental property of all emotion. There was no direct expression for that in sculpture, or architecture, or painting: the stone did not move; the scene on canvas, however excited, required an effort of the imagination before it became a thing of motion; the battle raging on canvas was an æsthetic fiction—it acted upon that inner movement of the mind, which is so fundamental a property of emotion, not directly but only through the imagination; the colours did not change; the canvas was as still as the stone. For a perfect emotional art actual velocity was indispensable, and it is the addition of this one property which the art of music alone possesses in combination with all the other properties of emotion that makes music the supreme art-medium of emotion.

One thoughtful glance is sufficient to show us that the rough elements of emotion and the rough elements of musical sound

have all the common properties which fit them for meeting upon a common ground and for acting upon each other.

Emotion is never long at the same level ; it has its *elations* and *depressions*. Sound, as manipulated by the art of music, has its *elations* and *depressions*—musical notes go up and down in the scale.

Emotion has various *intensities*. Musical notes, as has been seen, directly communicate various *intensities* of sound to the drum of the ear ; music has its *ff* and *pp*, its *crescendos* and *diminuendos*, its loud and soft combinations of instruments.

The progressive steps in a continued state of emotion have something like *form* ; they can be arranged ; they have a beginning, a development, an end, or, at all events, somewhere a transition to a different region of feeling altogether. Music has a *form*, obvious even to the eye ; the notes indicate a theme or subject which is developed and brought to a close ; the words *unity*, *proportion*, *development*, are sufficiently familiar to all readers in connection with music.

The meeting of two or more emotions—such, for instance, as is the case when we pass out of a dark room into the light, or when we hear a sudden burst of laughter in the midst of intense grief—these are simple enough forms of complex emotion ; but in all complex emotion we get simultaneous *variety*. Need we say how wonderfully harmony in music, even a simple chord, possesses the property of such simultaneous *variety* ?

And lastly, the progress of emotion is fast or slow ; at all events, it is incessantly beating out time with every pulse and throb of the blood ; in other words, it has its *velocity* : and this is the important quality which makes the 'Sound Art,' of all arts hitherto discovered, the great medium for the expression and for the generation of emotion, simple or complex. No outward presentation of scene or action is needed, as in the drama—no aid from imagination, as in painting or sculpture—in order to supply velocity or movement. The sound vibrates directly upon the drum of the ear ; the auditory nerve receives pulse after pulse, and transmits it to the emotional region of the brain. Emotions, simple or complex, are thus generated directly and physically by the power of sound, without the aid of imagery or thought ; and, again, emotions already working in the brain find relief in the sort of outward and concrete expression which the art of music procures for them.

If, then, at this stage of our disquisition it be asked what is the use of music, we ask in reply, What is the use of stimulating, regulating, and disciplining the emotions ? What is the use of providing for them a psycho-physical outlet, when they

are excited or roused? Music excites, expresses, regulates, and relieves the life of emotion. These are its functions and these are its uses. Life is rich almost in proportion to the fulness of its emotional activity. As a physical fact, music re-creates exhausted emotion by nerve currents generated through direct vibration of the nervous tissues; and by the same means music arouses and cultivates emotion into its highest activity. Again, life is noble almost in proportion to the strength and balance of emotion. Control of emotional activity is as essential to worthy life as the abundance of emotion. Noble music possesses this power of controlling and disciplining emotion to a consummate degree. The notion that music is only intended to please and tickle the ear is a notion worthy of a savage. To listen to a symphony of Beethoven is not all amusement. The emotions aroused are steadily put through definite stages, just as definite and just as salutary to the realm of feeling, just as well calculated to bring it into discipline and obedience, as the athlete's progressive exercises are calculated to strengthen and discipline the muscles of the body. The emotions are not allowed to run wild. The music, if we put ourselves to the strain of following it, checks them here, rouses them there, holds them as it were in suspension, gives them a fair vent at times, shows them the way out of unrest into rest, and out of varied and apparently inconsistent states of discord to harmonious development and unity. The mere intellectual task of appreciating the technical form and excellence of a truly great musical work or Tone-Poem is no light one, but it is a highly refining one. Nevertheless, the intellect in music must be held subordinate to the plain purpose of elaborating schemes of complex and simple emotions: it is this power which raises music, through, but beyond, connection with the senses, into a moral agent.

That all music is not of this kind, is not calculated to stimulate and arrange the emotions beneficially, may be taken to be a self-evident fact. Much of Italian and French music is so wedded to languishing sentiment or absolute frivolity that the best-disposed musician cannot treat it *au sérieux*, as the presentation of emotion in any salutary or re-creative order. Place any Italian love-song by the side of one of Schubert's Romances, and the emotional difference will be apparent to any one at all capable of enjoying music. The Italian view of love and the German view of love are well represented in the different emotional atmospheres of Italian and German songs. The music of Italy expresses passion without restraint; and then follows of necessity sentiment vamped up with artificial shocks and thrills to supply the place of exhausted passion. That, with all its exquisite gift of melody, with all its

cunning appropriation of melting, though limited, harmonies, is the morale of modern Italian music:—of course we do not allude to the great schools of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

But when we pass to Germany, we have to come to the 'true and tender North.' Life is there no dream on a Venetian balcony, love is there no short-lived rapture of summer days and starry nights; but 'life is real, life is earnest,' and love is of such fabric as will last out a lifetime and be true to the end; and, therefore, there must be restraint and economy of passion, there must be the middle tints as well as the glowing lights, there must be midnight watches as well as noonday dreams. Parting must be real pain, and meeting must be real rapture: the fount is so full, there is no need of pumping up sentiment; the life is a life within as well as a life without: and hence the German music is not dependent upon external scenes or exciting stories; it can be cast in the mould of opera, but it can also do without it: above all, it can play upon the whole key-board of existence, instead of confining itself to a few tragic octaves of passion; it can carry out symphonies as well as operas, and can make songs for every event and preludes and sonatas for every phase of feeling—from its most glacial intensities to its most glowing heats—and for every gradation of delicate emotion which may lie between the two.

Much more might be advanced in support of the moral and emotional functions of music, but we trust enough has been suggested to vindicate the almost passionate conviction of thoughtful musicians, that music is more than a pastime; that it holds a distinct, a legitimate, and clearly defined position amongst the arts; and that it is capable of exercising the most powerful and beneficial, as well as the most delightful, influences upon the cultured few and upon the uncultured many.

We shall now glance rapidly at the dawn of the great Sound Art of modern music.

It may be a relief to the reader to be told at once that he need not trouble himself about the music of the Greeks, the Hebrews, or the peoples of Asia and Africa. The traditions about Greek music contributed a little towards the formation of the modern art, and a great deal towards its hindrance. Those who have studied the subject have come to the conclusion that Greek music, with all its apparatus of modes and rhythms, was nothing but a kind of monotonous intoning, accompanied by various instruments, which served to emphasize the time and movement of the intoned or spoken cadences. No doubt the poetry of motion was much more studied and much better understood by the Greeks than by us, and Greek pipes and lyres were

copiously

copiously employed in regulating, by gradations of sound and complicated intervals of time, the action of all who wished to excel in the Greek games, or take part in any public performance. Instruments were, no doubt, of the greatest use to the gymnast; but the recitative or Greek melody must after all have been but a lame accessory to Greek poetry and declamation. Of Greek harmony there is not a trace.

It is very improbable that the music of the Hebrews, or that of any of the highly civilized nations of antiquity, differed materially from that of the Greeks. We may get some idea of Greek, and probably Hebrew, intoning from the extant Gregorian chants, although of course Gregorian is a vague term which covers all sorts of modern adaptations. St. Ambrose, about A.D. 374, notoriously founded his new church music at Milan on a few of the Greek scales; and St. Gregory, about 590, who revived as much as he could find of the Ambrosian music, simply gave his name to Gregorian chants which had been in use long before his time. Hucbald, a Belgian monk about 920, has left a musical treatise, in which we may see how far music had got in his day. Up to that time we find no bars, no flats or sharps indicated, and no time; we might add, no harmony, for the diaphony employed by him is to our ears most terrible discord. Let us fancy any melody harmonized with the assistance of an eighth above or below, or with the fourth above or the fifth below. It is fair to add that this music was executed by singing the top and bottom lines soft, and the middle or principal melody loud. We need hardly say that the notion of playing two different notes in successive harmony to one of longer duration, or the art of *descant*, had not yet occurred to any one. In Hucbald's harmony all the notes played together are of the same length, so that we have chords of consecutive fifths and fourths and so on. The inventions attributed to Guido of Arezzo are without number, and perhaps it is impossible now to determine precisely what he really did or did not invent. It is safer to say that he adopted a system of notation, which enabled his pupils to connect written notes with sounds much more easily than before, and hence gave an enormous impulse to the study of music throughout ecclesiastical Europe. There can be no doubt that Greek traditions still hung like lead about the neck of church music. In many respects the productions of secular musicians, the songs of *jougleurs* and the *troubadours*, were in advance of the monks, simply because they were unshackled by any respect for, or even knowledge of, Greek models. Who can tell how the rise of harmony was retarded by such a Greek dictum as that a *third*, the most agreeable

agreeable of intervals, is inadmissible? Such rules were doubtless disregarded by the wild players at fairs and tourneys; indeed, it was their rude instruments which in all probability first opened up the mystery of sweet chords, for many of their bowed viols of six or more strings were so constructed that it was next to impossible to play upon one string without sounding some of the others; and as the player had only his own ears to consult, he doubtless stumbled upon many combinations that he practised habitually, but was either too ignorant or too lazy to record.

Thus, like so many great movements, modern music was in the air, and yet year after year its development was suspended. The monks were beating about the bush, blinded by a false system; the *jougleurs* went their own way without any system at all. But certain discoveries had not only to be stumbled upon, but to be recognized and formulated, before the foundations of the real art of modern music, as we have it, could be laid. The first and greatest of these discoveries was the discovery of a scale system or tonality, based on natural laws and a symmetrical division of the octave. All that could be done without our modern fixed system of tonality was done between the great Gallo-Belgian, Josquin des Pres, at the beginning of what Mr. Hullah calls the Second Period of Music, or about 1400, and Palestrina at the end of that same period, about 1600. And it is remarkable how often, by following the inspirations of natural instinct, the combinations of both these great men leave the impression of a fixed tonality upon the ear, although it was not yet generally accepted.

The old masters would begin a scale on any one of the eight notes of the octave, their intervals of tones and semitones would be in different places in each scale, and thus leave upon our ears the impression of an unfinished scale. The modern scales are all complete, because, although begun on different notes, the semitones fall in the same places in each scale. Each major has a minor, but in each minor the semitones also fall in the same places. In each major the semitones fall between the third and fourth sound; in each minor they fall between the second and third sound. This, and the consequent discovery of what is called the *perfect cadence*, or the discord of the dominant seventh and its resolution, which was once considered monstrous, but which has now become the most common of all modulations,—these two discoveries, and the new laws which they reveal, form at length the firm natural and scientific basis of our modern music.

One great name stands out as the genius that presided over these new and startling developments; it is that of Carissimi, 1581—1672.

1585—1672. This great man has been called the very type of the Transition Period, that bridge over which we pass from the old tonality to the new, or from ancient to modern music. Carissimi might have seen Palestrina, and he lived to hear Corelli. The germs of every style of music known since arose during his lifetime—he witnessed, as Mr. Hullah points out, the bloom and gradual decay of the madrigal in England and Germany, the birth and adolescence of the musical drama in France under Lulli, the invention of the oratorio in the oratory of San Filippo Neri at Rome, and lastly the rise and progress of instrumental music as an independent branch of art.

We have now fairly launched the reader into the ocean of Modern Music. It would be quite beyond our present purpose to follow its rise and progress in France, Italy, and Germany. We have said enough to show that it is not a revival of any old art, but essentially a new art with recently discovered principles, and unique capacities for the direct expression of emotion. It may now be interesting to inquire—1st, how far England is or ever has been a musical country; 2nd, how musical culture may be improved and extended in this country; and lastly we may point to some of the more popular and practical, or, as Mr. Darwin would say, ‘direct uses’ of music ‘to man in reference to his ordinary habits of life.’

Great and laudable exertions have from time to time been made by English writers to show that the English possess a real and not a borrowed genius for music; that they have originated great improvements, such as harmony and counterpoint, and invented new forms, such as the glee and madrigal, or at least been the first to bring these to perfection. Further on, Purcell and Pelham Humphrey are quoted; and after them—well, then, of course, there is a pause, and we take refuge in old English songs of doubtful origin, for all attempts to prove the existence of a real English school of music for the last 200 years must of course fail.

About 1400 the complex elements which have entered into the composition of England may be said to have been fairly welded together into a kind of national life; at all events we can then speak of the English people with some degree of correctness, and examine their tastes, their pursuits, and their industries as natural products. There can be no doubt that about the year 1400 an English name, that of John Dunstable, stands out and represents a great musical force in this country. Yet there is no reason to suppose that he invented anything essentially new, or that he did more than systematize the musical movement then going on in Belgium under Dufay, who was born forty years before,

before, and who carried counterpoint to Rome at the close of the thirteenth century.

Then, in speaking of English church music, it is impossible to forget that all its early rudiments and developments came over with the Christian Church from Italy. St. Ambrose, and after him St. Gregory, whose influence in England is sufficiently notorious, put their stamp indelibly upon the earliest chants; whilst such men as Hucbald, Guido of Arezzo (1050), and Franco of Cologne reduced the still confused notation to some sort of order. If, then, we suppose the English nation to date from about 1400, or even somewhat earlier, chronology itself forbids the supposition of England having contributed to the invention of church music, because it had already been invented by Italy. We are aware that a good deal has been made of the alleged fact that Alfred the Great, in 866, instituted a musical professorship at Oxford; but unfortunately we have no proof of the existence of the University till the twelfth century. Also the origination of part-singing has been claimed for the inhabitants of these isles on the strength of a statement that Hereward and his sons sang in three parts at the bridal feast of a Cornish king. In 1159 we hear of part-singing in connection with the choirs which accompanied Thomas à Becket to Paris; and in 1250 the six men's song, 'Sumer is a cumen in,' has been quoted *ad nauseam* to prove how far the secular music was in advance of the sacred music of the period. In all this there may be some truth. We have no doubt that many chords were discovered and played on popular instruments, such as the crouth, of which the Church took no account; but when we hear of three-part songs, we must know wherein they were supposed to differ from the barbarous diaphony in Hucbald's 'Musica Enchiriadis,' which dates as far back as 932, and where we find real harmony, as in 'Sumer is a cumen in,' we must remember that the art of descant was known in the Church as early as 1150, or at least a hundred years before the date ascribed to that famous song. As to the popular music in vogue here in the fourteenth century at fairs and tourneys, no one can doubt where that came from. It came from Provence, Northern France, and Belgium. In 1400 an immense romantic and poetical literature already existed, and the *trouvères* were all over Europe.

Later on, as regards the essentially foreign origin of all the forms of modern music, we cannot do better than quote the following succinct statement, which, coming from so conscientious and distinguished an authority as Mr. Hullah, will carry its own weight. After doing full justice in a previous part of his

volume to the Belgians and the French in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, and to the Germans in the last and present centuries, he adds, 'The Italians are the inventors of some, and the perfectors of most of the instruments used in the modern orchestra. The resources of these instruments were developed in Italy, and the earliest great performers on them were Italians. Not only were the oratorio and opera born and bred in Italy, but every distinct form of musical compositions, instrumental as well as vocal, is the invention of Italians.'

But if we must, as a nation, surrender our claims to musical originality, the next question is, Have we ever so assimilated the productions of foreign art as to carry on, for any length of time, any continuous and characteristic development of musical composition? Our madrigal and motet writers will then, of course, be quoted: but, unfortunately, the very words madrigal, *madre gala*, song of the Virgin, and *motett*, are Italian. However, between 1500 and 1600, the names of Tye, Tallis, Farrant, Byrd, Bevin, Morley, Weelkes, Wilbye, Ward, Dowland, Bull, and Orlando Gibbons, formed the glory of music in England; and we are bound to confess that nothing so fine as the compositions of these eminent men was produced by Englishmen until the post-Restoration period graced by the names of Henry Purcell and Pelham Humphrey.

But although English madrigals were composed and appeared simultaneously in England and Italy during the sixteenth century, so that it may not be easy to derive them in the first place from Italy alone, we must remember that both countries owed the development of counterpoint and harmony to the previous Belgian wave of musical progress, which, under Josquin des Pres and his successors, appears to have reached Italy and England about the same time. At all events the obligations of the Englishmen Tallis, Farrant, Byrd, and their Italian contemporary Palestrina, to Josquin des Pres will hardly be denied. We may also remark that Luca Marenzio and Orlando Lasso, heads of the Italian madrigal school, both resided in England. 'The madrigal,' says Mr. Chorley, 'comes from the south.' This Reformation period was our golden opportunity. Never until the present century has there been such a taste for music in England as existed from the reign of Henry VIII. to that of James I. Singing at sight in those days became a common accomplishment; and large numbers of musical instruments, chiefly manufactured in Italy, were imported into England. 'Most kinds of musical instruments,' says Carl Engel, 'in use at the time of Queen Elizabeth, were evidently introduced into Northern Europe from Italy and Spain.' But the increased suppression

suppression of highly ritualistic services dealt one blow to the church music, and the severe Puritan feeling dealt another to its more secular culture. Still people were much merrier under Cromwell than might have been expected; and it is remarkable that in 1656 the first English opera was performed at Rutland House, in which Mrs. Henry Coleman also appeared as the first female singer, it is said, who ever performed in public.

With John Jenkins and Henry Lawes the great Elizabethan school of music—the nearest approach to a national school which England has ever had—died; and all through the Commonwealth, until the restoration of Charles II., musical art, though still cultivated in private circles, lay to some extent under a public cloud.

Then arose in this country what we may call the Anglo-French school, with which must be connected the great names of Pelham Humphrey and Purcell; and once more there seemed a chance of something like the rise of a real English school: but the music of the Restoration was not a revival or even a development of the Elizabethan schools. Our composers had once more gone a-begging. The King hated the old masters, and was all for French tunes. 'He was a brisk and airy Prince,' and did not like the 'grave and solemn way of Tallis and Byrd;,' so he encouraged his young choristers to compose in the French style, and Humphrey, who had lately come back from France, as Pepys says, 'an absolute French monsieur,' promised to give the King's old-fashioned choir-master a lift out of his place. The fact was that 'Master Humphrey' had been to Paris to study under Lulli the French composer, and came back to form a school of French music in England.

His greatest successor, Purcell, a man who in originality and fertility must be ranked with Mozart, attempted to blend the grace of the French school with the science and severe learning of the old Elizabethan masters,—and he succeeded; but he left no followers at all comparable to himself—none that were not soon compelled to yield the palm in music to Scarlatti, Pergolesi, and Marcello in Italy, and to Handel, Gluck, and Bach in Germany. Against such names it is almost superfluous to remark we have only to set talented and worthy composers like Croft, Greene, Arne, and the greatest, Boyce. Our later developments are, beside the colossal strides of Germany, of a still more dubious and meagre description. To quote a recent author, 'The so-called English school had not life enough to survive the paralysis of the civil wars, nor memory enough to continue its own traditions, and France and Italy alternately

contended for the honour of carrying off the musical prizes in England, until Germany, like a very David, arose and slew both the lion and the bear.'

We are sometimes told that the Hanoverian Georges crushed native talent by encouraging the Germans; but neither Italy nor Germany was encouraged at the expense of England. On the contrary, English talent was for a long time protected. For many years great efforts were made to encourage our native musicians; and their ballads were as much bought, and sold, and sung as they are now. As late as George II.'s reign, only an Englishman could fill the post of King's organist; and almost every English composer of any note was Doctor of Music, and installed in some place of honour or emolument. Englishmen have for centuries taught our cathedral choirs: nor was there ever any serious attempt made to keep their operas off the stage, such as they were, nor is there now. Mr. Balfe, Mr. John Hullah, and Mr. Vincent Wallace have all been successful writers of opera in our own day. Yet for all this England has originated nothing, or next to nothing. Pistochi and Goudemel founded singing schools, as Stradiuarius and the Amatis created the modern violin, and thus made the modern orchestra possible. Italy, again, gave us the opera; Handel elaborated the highest form of the oratorio; and Haydn may be said to have created the symphony and the quartet.

It would require a great deal of time and patience to establish beyond a cavil all of the foregoing positions; however, it may be well to state them here, as the results of some research, and to sum them up briefly as follows:—

In speaking of Music in England, let it be clearly understood that we allude to modern music, and that we start from about 1400, at which time England possessed a distinct national life; and we say that her church music came from Italy, and her secular music came from Provence. The schools of Henry VIII. were deeply indebted to the influence of Josquin des Pres; and the schools of Elizabeth, James I., and Charles I. were as deeply indebted to the influence of Palestrina. Nevertheless, between 1500 and 1650 there flourished in England a very illustrious series of composers who will bear comparison with any of their contemporaries in Belgium, France, or Italy. The Restoration music was mainly of French origin, deeply infected with the genius of Lulli; and although Purcell broke away from many French forms, and endeavoured to chasten the English school by an admixture of the old Elizabethan severity, yet he left none capable of carrying out the new development, and from his time to our own, as far as we have had any composers capable of writing

writing anything beyond a ballad, we have been mainly influenced by the Italian writers of the early part of the eighteenth century, and by the German writers of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, of whom many have been hospitably received in this country, and one, Handel—according to Beethoven the greatest musician who ever lived—dwelt for many years in London, and made England his adopted home.

If, then, we say that England is not a musical country, let us not be misunderstood. We are speaking of its actual products, not of its latent capacities. During the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries Germany itself had no school to speak of, nor could she during the seventeenth century at all compete with her Italian rival. The most fatal point against England is this, that twice it has missed rare opportunities for developing a national school. The schools of the Reformation and the schools of the Restoration both died, and have never been revived. And now once again there is a great musical impulse in England. This time it comes from Germany. We have at this moment a number of talented English composers living, from Cipriani Potter and Sterndale Bennett to Arthur Sullivan, composing German music in England. Shall we end by developing a really national school? Shall we be able not only to copy, to paraphrase, to adopt, but to assimilate the foreign elements, and blend them together with something which is not foreign, as Germany once assimilated grace and melody from Italy, as France is even now taking science and counterpoint from Germany? Shall we be able so to take and make our own as to become creators of national music?

If we review the history of music in England during the last half-century, we shall be greatly encouraged to hope for the best. Appreciation must precede production. England has always been famous for paying others to do what she could not do for herself, but she generally ends by learning the trick. England in the last fifty years, if she has not produced so many fine vocalists and instrumentalists as Italy, has, at all events, had several worthy to be placed quite in the front rank. In a curiously conceited book written by the Earl of Mount Edgecumbe, and published in 1828, in that nobleman's old age, we may still read of the profound impression which such singers as Mrs. Billington and Mrs. Storace made; and those who wish to carry the record of great names almost up to the present date may refer to Mr. Ella's 'Musical Sketches.' But the great test of musical progress in England is to be found in the enormous multiplication of concerts and subsequent growth of musical societies, not only in London, but throughout the country. At the beginning of this

century the Haymarket, the Pantheon, and the Hanover Square Rooms were the chief scenes of musical action. From time to time there was a Handel festival in Westminster Abbey or York Minster. English operas were produced profusely larded with ballads, and Italian, occasionally German and French, operas were adapted for the English public, with additional bravours and comic points; and last, but not least, there were the symphonies of Haydn, regarded by the enthusiasts with the same sort of favour as Schumann's music is now by amateurs, and stigmatized by the general public as the music of the future. Such was the state of affairs about the year 1800. Towards 1816 the opera-goers, being terribly tired of the old Italian and French operas, began to discover the merits of Gluck and Mozart. Soon afterwards Rossini arrived in England, and was immediately proclaimed to be the greatest musician that ever lived.

The connoisseurs still held fast to Beethoven and Mozart, but for a time the brilliancy of the new Italian school eclipsed everything. Then came Weber, who, with the assurance of a bold and eclectic genius, preferred to serve two masters, and succeeded to some extent in producing the most fascinating compromise between the scientific harmonies of Germany and the sensuous melodies of Italy. As a natural consequence, neither country has ever forgiven him: he has been weighed in the Italian balance, and found too heavy; and in the German, and found too light. His success was, nevertheless, very great in this country, and the English showed their appreciation of him by singing nothing but the 'Huntsman's Chorus' for years, and hissing all through the first performance of his *chef d'œuvre*, the overture to 'Euryanthe.'

Meanwhile to the Philharmonic Society belongs the glory of keeping alive the sacred flame of the highest German inspiration. It was in 1820, before the Italian mania, that this honourable Society invited over Spohr, who wrote expressly for it his G-minor symphony; it was in 1827, in the full flush of Rossini's and Weber's popularity, that they sent the ever-memorable 100*l.* to Beethoven, then on his deathbed; nor is it necessary for us to remind our musical readers how, through evil report and good report, the Philharmonic Society has held on to this day with two symphonies at each concert, so that the echoes of Mozart, Haydn, and Beethoven for more than half a century have never been allowed to slumber in the Hanover Square Rooms. The Society's concerts now take place in St. James's Hall. Cipriani Potter, Sir George Smart, and Sir Henry Bishop were all good friends of music in England; and Mr.

Moscheles,

Moscheles, who settled in London in 1821, and remained here until 1846, did as much as any one to diffuse a sounder musical taste amongst the upper classes. But between the years 1830-40 three new influences made themselves felt almost simultaneously. They were connected with three names of very different calibre, all of which were destined to have the most far-reaching and beneficial influences upon musical taste and musical education in England. These three names are Dr. Felix Mendelssohn-Bartholdy, with whom we must connect the name of his gifted friend and pupil, Sir Sterndale Bennett ; M. Jullien ; and Mr. John Hullah. On these three heterogeneous influences we shall now make a few remarks.

The presence of Mendelssohn was in itself a power. His was a bright, sunny, and at the same time energetic personality, which took possession of people wherever he went ; and everywhere he carried with him the same single-hearted devotion to art, the same tireless faculty of creation, the same intense activity, and the same lofty ideal. Once more England, the refuge of Luca Marenzio and Orlando Lasso, the adopted home of Handel, the hospitable host of Haydn, the reverent patron of Beethoven, Spohr, and Weber, was happy in securing the affection of the great, the gifted, and the lamented Mendelssohn. Seldom have so many amiable and endearing qualities met in any one individual as were to be found in Mendelssohn.

Many now living remember the shock of grief that ran through the musical world when the announcement of the great composer's death reached these shores. People who had never seen him felt as though they had lost a friend ; those who had known him were overcome by a sorrow so deep that even now they cannot pronounce his name without emotion ; whilst all felt the vast, the irreparable injury done to art by the removal of that brilliant centre round which for twenty years all the best living musicians had been revolving.

In 1829 Mendelssohn first came to England, and brought with him the wonderful 'Midsummer Night's Dream' overture. In the same year he visited Scotland, and celebrated that country whilst enriching the world with one of his most lovely and original compositions. The strange echoes of Fingal's Cave, where the water comes eddying in over the singular rock formations that lie clearly visible beneath it, the wild concourse of sea-birds, and the musical winds—how much of all this is woven into the Hebrides or the overture to Fingal's Cave we all know.

In 1832 Mendelssohn again came to England, and played his G-minor concerto at one of the Philharmonic concerts. In the following

following year he brought over his A-minor symphony, which was not either played or understood thoroughly until some years later. The trumpet overture in C and the 'Melusine' were both heard during that year, but the 'Midsummer Night's Dream' long remained the popular favourite; and, indeed, it was the key which first opened up to the English public the rich and fertile treasures of Mendelssohn's genius.

In 1837 Mendelssohn brought over his 'St. Paul,' which was that year performed at Birmingham and London. In 1842 we first heard his Scotch symphony, and he himself played his D-minor concerto at the Philharmonic.

In 1844 he was invited by that Society to conduct six concerts, and all the *élite* of London crowded into the Hanover Square Rooms to see and hear him. His very cadenzas and marvellous improvisations on the piano are remembered to this day as events of importance in the history of music in England. Mendelssohn may be said to have invented a new school for the pianoforte—unlike that of Beethoven, unlike that of Weber, very unlike Thalberg, whose compositions he nevertheless warmly admired: the 'Lieder ohne Worte' turn the piano into the artistic chronicler of every passing emotion, sad or joyous or capricious or hasty or solemn. How many reveries, five minutes long, live and die and are clean forgotten; yet they too would fain have found expression, and are often remembered with a certain pain, as unrealized moments in the eternal silence. Mendelssohn has, as it were, embalmed a few of such precious waifs and strays of time in sound; and he has thus shown the way to others. Is it too much to say that half the pianoforte music reveries, *momens musicales*, &c., published during the last thirty years are reflections of the style and manner of the songs without words?

In 1846 Mendelssohn, already failing from the strain and excitement produced by overwork, conducted for the first time the 'Elijah' at Birmingham. It was to be the bright and fitting crown of his short life. He might have lived a little longer if he had given up all work; but, as it was, the 'Elijah' rehearsals at Exeter Hall, in 1847, destroyed him. He died at Leipsic in September of that year.

His influence on the music of this century is second only to that of Beethoven, and his influence over the English musical world has been second to none. He has taught our professional musicians that their art is more than a trade, and our amateurs that music is more than a pastime. The great improvement in the social status of professional musicians in England is largely due to the fact that Mendelssohn, who lived and laboured so much

much amongst us, was not only a perfect musician but a perfect gentleman.

It is difficult either to estimate or to over-estimate the influence of Mr. John Hullah on music and musical taste in England, which we have the more pleasure in recording, as many persons seem now to forget the services he has rendered. In 1840, under the sanction of the Committee of Council on Education, Mr. Hullah brought over from Paris the French system of Wilhelm, and singing schools soon sprang up throughout the country. Exeter Hall was the scene of the first great Hullah Concerts, and in 1853 St. Martin's Hall was built and fitted up by Mr. Hullah's own exertions. Here was performed every then existing work of importance, many for the first time. He brought out a large number of the best living singers—Madame Sherrington, Sims Reeves, Santley, Thomas, Cummings; and many of our best instrumentalists made their first *débuts* under him. He also inaugurated the class-teaching in schools under his charge, and a large number of the students in the training schools who have shown special talent for music have become choir-masters and organizing masters in different parts of the country, and real centres of civilization. Mr. Hullah is the author of several operas which were produced with success in their day; he has also written songs and part-songs, besides numerous exercises and vocal studies of all kinds for the instruction of his classes.

It is impossible not to mention here the name of the Rev. John Curwen, who within the last few years has introduced the Tonic Sol-fa system into this country. The notation he employs is a letter notation, and the prominent tonal difference between the Hullah and the Sol-fa methods turns on this one important fact that *Do* is a fixed sound in Hullah's system, but *Do* stands for the keynote of any key whatever with the solfaists. Thus Mr. Curwen's method is based on the principle of key relationship, which regards tones not as high or low but as grouped about the governing or keynote. The rapid spread of this system in schools, factories, and the rural districts would seem to indicate that it is especially well adapted for teaching the more ignorant masses the elements of music. But upon this subject there is a great difference of opinion amongst good musicians. However, the Committee of Council on Education announced in 1869 their resolution to accept 'the Tonic Sol-fa method and the Tonic Sol-fa notation upon the same terms as should from time to time be applicable to the ordinary method and notation.' In connection with the progress of singing in England, it must be noted for the honour of our country that Mr. Henry Leslie has produced out of English voices

voices and English enthusiasm a choir so perfect that we may doubt whether anywhere in the world there exists or ever has existed such a body of trained voices both male and female. To hear Bach's motet, 'The Spirit also helpeth,' Mendelssohn's 43rd Psalm, or Schubert's 23rd Psalm, by this choir, is to listen to a delicacy of execution which has probably reached the limits of choral perfection. Mr. Leslie is also known as the author of a fine oratorio, 'Immanuel,' and numerous songs and part-songs.

Jullien (Louis Antoine) was too popular for his own fame—a scornful smile is apt to pass over the sound musician's face at the very mention of it—yet no man did more than Jullien to kindle the love of music, good, bad, and indifferent, throughout the length and breadth of England. Let us be pardoned if we pause to pay a passing tribute to one who has been a little underrated. Jullien arrived here in 1838, with a prodigious reputation as a popular *chef d'orchestre*, and his promenade concerts soon became the rage. The music played was at times extravagant; pistols, crackers, and even blue and red fires and musketry, were employed to enhance the powers of the orchestra and astound the audience. A new polka by Jullien was an event—for no mortal could tell what would take place before the end of it. But Jullien was also a lover of good music: he knew his public, and stooped to it, but he also to some extent trained it. At his concerts thousands heard for the first time in their lives, for the small sum of one shilling, some of the finest overtures of Weber and Mendelssohn, and parts of the immortal symphonies of Haydn, Mozart, and Beethoven. But these classical pills were so excessively gilded in every programme with sensation dance music, that poor M. Jullien to this day passes with many as a mere charlatan. In justice to him we ought at least to remember that he secured for popular hearing almost every great soloist of his day, and that such men as Vieuxtemps, Sainton, and Sivori were to be found amongst the violins of his band. This band, with their *mises en scène* and voluminous *impedimenta*, was as ubiquitous as a corps of Garibaldians in the great days of Garibaldi—they overran the kingdom—they were often announced at one time for a dozen different concerts in different parts of the world—they even went bodily to America, and were back again before they began to be missed here. M. Jullien had many followers but no rivals. After running through several large fortunes and making many disastrous speculations, he at last went mad, and cut his throat at Paris, in 1860, at the age of forty-eight.

For many years the influence of Mendelssohn, which at one

time threatened to extinguish even that of Spohr or Weber, kept the works of many excellent composers in the background. Chopin and Thalberg succeeded in establishing a speciality for the piano, and in these last years the merits of Schubert, Schumann, and let us hope we may soon be able to add Richard Wagner, have been amply acknowledged. If in this place we do not refer at length to the labours of Cipriani Potter, Sir Sterndale Bennett, Mr. Moscheles, Sir Michael Costa, Sir Frederick Gore Ouseley, Sir J. Benedict, Sir M. Balfe, Mr. Henry Leslie, the brothers Macfarren, Mr. Arthur Sullivan, and a few other important names, it is not from any want of respect, but simply from want of space. Most of them Englishmen, they have all worked for and in England. The immense progress of music, owing to the above-mentioned causes, will be realized by these two facts,—that in London alone there exist at the present time no less than 104 well-established musical societies, and 2150 resident musical professors; and London supports at least eight musical journals. The most powerful and accomplished orchestras are those of the Crystal Palace (conductor Mr. Manns), the old Philharmonic (conductor Mr. W. G. Cusins). The best quartet concerts are the Monday Popular, the Musical Union concerts at St. James's Hall, and Mr. Holmes' Musical Evenings at St. George's Hall. For refined choral singing there is no choir equal to Mr. H. Leslie's. The Sacred Harmonic under Sir W. M. Costa and Mr. Barnby's Choir give annual splendid performances of the principal oratorios at St. James's and Exeter Hall; and the Albert Hall promises to be a formidable rival to the Crystal Palace as a new and magnificent centre for giant concerts of all kinds. The late Handel Festival has been a great pecuniary and choral success above its predecessors, but the superiority of the Albert Hall for the execution of solos was never more apparent. We may also well ask why the seats in the area blocks are always the highest in price, as they are undoubtedly the worst for hearing. Being so much below the level of any part of the orchestra, the sound floats over the listener's head. The Birmingham Festivals and the Cathedral Festivals at Gloucester, Hereford, and Worcester, have done an incalculable amount of good to the cause of music in the English provinces; and musical societies abound all over the country. England, therefore, at this moment is rich in the most splendid raw material for a great national organization for the promotion of the musical art. There is plenty of private enterprize, but there is great want of union, of system, of organization, and we must add of generosity and goodwill. There are three ways in

which, if the Government were convinced that music is as good for the nation as picture galleries, it might further the cause of music in England:—1st. By the encouragement of a sound system of musical instruction in schools. 2ndly. By supporting or aiding to support a central academy for musical instruction, with a select band for regular concerts, similar to the Conservatoire in Paris or the Gewandhaus in Leipsic. 3rdly. By supporting or aiding to support a much larger pension list than at present exists, for superannuated or eminent musicians in reduced circumstances. We will explain each of these proposals in a few words. First as to musical education.

We propose that a competent Committee be asked to decide on the best method of popular instruction, and that one uniform method be adopted in all schools receiving Government grants. Every school would then be properly taught music, instead of most schools, as is now the case, being taught badly. The difficulties raised about examination are so puerile that no one having the smallest acquaintance with the subject would ever have raised them. There is no difficulty which an ordinarily intelligent inspector, whether he knew music or not, could not with a little assistance from the schoolmaster or local organist easily and satisfactorily surmount. Besides, why not make a certain knowledge of music henceforth incumbent upon all school inspectors? After all, schools are not made for the benefit of inspectors, but inspectors for the benefit of schools.

Secondly, we ought to have a central academy for musical instruction supported in great measure by Government. The Royal Academy of Music would form an excellent nucleus, and is highly favoured in receiving at present 500*l.* a year from Government. Therefore the Government, by this slender endowment, has admitted the principle for which we plead. The scholarships should be increased in number and value, and the society should confer different diplomas or degrees of merit after the manner of our universities. These should be coveted by our musicians as a B.A. degree is coveted by our scholars. Instead of anybody calling himself professor, and hundreds professing to teach singing and the piano who have never been properly taught themselves, we should soon have a class of well-taught and able professors, organists, and pianists, properly certificated. No church would engage a man without some degree, and every parent would have some guarantee that the person who taught his children had himself been taught. We should soon have a great and beneficial weeding in the musical profession. Persons whose only merit consisted in a foreign nationality and a limited acquaintance with the English language would presently be at a discount,

discount, and the social position, standard, and tone of our native musicians would quickly rise throughout the land.

This academy should be always training a band of its own pupils, and might thus supply bands all over the kingdom with well-trained and certificated musicians. The musicians in all our metropolitan societies should bear certificates of merit, and thus be members of the one large society; and then the societies' great performances, say at the Albert Hall, might consist of the best men chosen out of all the affiliated bands and choruses in London.

Before any such scheme can be got to work it is necessary that all existing societies should cease to be rivals and learn to be friends. And this might be. Our central society would displace no one, and encourage and strengthen all existing organizations. Its professors would be chosen from amongst able leaders and musical directors, who now stand too often in bitter rivalry towards each other; and the richer the central society became the more scholarships could be founded, and the more funds would there be wherewith to make grants to other societies and promote the general prosperity of numerous affiliated branches in the provinces.

And, lastly, the scope of the present Royal Society of Musicians might be immensely extended. When a musician is too old for his work, he ought to be allowed to retire honourably on a pension; and the Government, which occasionally places on its civil list some very peculiar specimens of literary merit, should certainly aid such a musical pension fund as we propose. There is no hope of retaining an efficient orchestra anywhere, for any length of time, owing to the impossibility of getting rid of old, prejudiced, and often incompetent men. Many old orchestral players are invaluable, but others simply cannot play their parts, nor can they well be turned out without a retiring pension. Such bands of splendid players as the old Philharmonic and the Crystal Palace should be kept efficient in this way, and their musicians, after years of faithful work, should be able to look forward to an honourable retirement accompanied by something better than penury or starvation. In all cases our central society should, through its committee, examine the claims and award the pensions to retiring or indigent musicians of merit.

And, let us observe, we are suggesting nothing new or strange: much of our scheme has been carried out with success on the Continent. It cannot be said when the Government expends such vast sums on pictures that it is intentionally indifferent to the interests of Art, and as regards music the germs of our three

propositions

propositions already exist in England, they only await fertilization and development.

Music is already officially acknowledged in our schools; let it be well taught under Government. The Royal Academy of Music is already on the right track, and is assisted with official funds; let it be expanded into a great central organization—for instance, either let it absorb the South Kensington scheme, or let it be itself absorbed into the Albert Hall. The Society of Musicians already provides pensions and pecuniary aid to many deserving musicians all over the land, with an honourable maintenance; let them be encouraged to establish a claim upon it by the payment of a small annual fee. And, lastly, let the general public, as well as the Government, awake to the importance, musically and philanthropically, of such a pension fund as we suggest, and contribute accordingly. We have no fear for the prospects of music in England. Our professors and amateurs have borne down much opposition, and have already obtained from an unmusical Government several unwilling concessions. Let them persevere, and if they are asked by Mr. Lowe himself, in the words of Mr. Darwin, ‘Pray, what do you consider may be the direct uses of music to man in reference to his ordinary habits of life?’ let them answer in some such words as these, ‘There is no class of society which music is not calculated to recreate and improve. The lowest are brought most easily under its dominion, and the highest cannot escape its influence. Thousands of poor children who are being daily gathered into our schools acknowledge practically the helpfulness of music. We may convince ourselves of this by entering any national schoolroom on some hot summer’s day. Who can estimate the fatigue and listlessness that come over the spirits of children wholly unused to mental application? Soon the teacher’s voice rings in their ears without conveying any definite meaning—the mind, “like a jarred pendulum, retains only its motion, not its power;” the master exhausts himself in vain, and the already overworked mistress grows disheartened to see that no authority she can exercise will revive the worn-out attention of the pupil. But, the music lesson—or perhaps only one song is thrown in—the little faces brighten up, the listless hands are raised to beat time, the eager eyes are turned towards one of Mr. Hullah’s big boards with big music and words, and, in a moment, the room resounds with music from a hundred fresh voices; and the wearied teacher forgets with a smile the tedium and the toil, whilst the children, by music, are drawn more closely to the teacher and the task; as if by magic the emotional atmosphere of the room is changed, and the spelling or arithmetic

is attacked with as much vigour as if the little students had only just come in from the green fields or pleasant playground. Has music been of no direct use to these children?

Again, is it nothing that the innocent pleasures of our poor should be indefinitely increased? These school children throughout the land carry home their songs; they sing them to the labourer when he comes back at nightfall, the mother sings them to her fractious babe, the eldest daughter sings them as she goes about her household drudgery or farmwork, the very animals prick up their ears, and it is notorious that horses are cheered by the sound of their tinkling bells, and encouraged by the cheery songs of the ploughman. Many animals have good ears for time, and can be got to labour better with some musical accompaniment than without it. Let our poor have musical homes, and they will be less likely to go to the public-house for society, as well as for the music they find there. Let us train our poor children to music, and we shall have got one transforming element into the poor homes of the future.

But let us enter the workrooms of our great cities. Ought we not to be glad that through the long hours thousands of poor girls in crowded factories should be taught to sing together in parts over their work, and thus refresh themselves with an emotional life beyond the reach of the grinding machinery around them and the fumes of overheated workrooms? The fingers will speed none the less swiftly, but the young frames will not suffer so much, because the work will become more mechanical, less mental, and the mind refreshed by sweet sounds will be less apt to brood over morbid and unhealthy themes.

Like a good physician, like a tender friend, music comes to the aid of all classes, a gentle minister of consolation—sweeping clear the sky and showing the blue beyond, making grief bearable and loss tolerable. Music soothes the fever heat of the sick man, and ministers strangely to the disordered mind when other remedies fail; it enables the soldier to accomplish forced marches and fight battles at the end of them, it draws the bands of social and family life more closely together, it recreates the wearied professional man, it kindles new fervour in the sluggish soul, and is, moreover, ready to bear on high the inarticulate aspirations of many a toiling and careworn spirit.

These, and a thousand others, are amongst the benefits which Music is able to confer upon her votaries. Is it strange that those who are impressed with her power, and are aware of her infinite resources, should labour for the extension of musical education, and try, meanwhile, to provide some real answer to the objection  
which

which has of late found more ways than one of uttering itself,—  
 ‘Neither the enjoyment nor the capacity of producing musical notes are faculties of the least direct use to man in reference to his ordinary habits of life’?

---

- ART. VI.—1. *Village-Communities in the East and West*. Six Lectures, delivered at Oxford, by Henry Sumner Maine, Corpus Professor of Jurisprudence in the University, &c. London, 1871.
2. *On the Agricultural Community of the Middle Ages, and Inclosures of the Sixteenth Century in England*. Translated from the German of E. Nasse, by Colonel H. A. Ouvry. Published under the sanction of the Cobden Club. London, 1871.
3. *Les Ouvriers Européens. Études sur les Travaux, la Vie Domestique et la Condition Morale des Populations Ouvrières de l'Europe*, &c. Par M. F. Le Play. Paris, 1855.

A VILLAGE-COMMUNITY may be roughly defined as a group of families, settled on a tract of land which maintains them, and which they hold on the principle of common ownership, more or less fully in practical operation. Recent researches have shown that society, becoming consolidated in the agricultural stage, began in very early ages to organize itself into such village-communities. To investigate the history of this now unfamiliar social institution is no profitless antiquarian task, but a problem of practical importance. The beginnings of the inquiry lie, indeed, in dark places of ancient history, but its ends reach into the midst of our modern life. The peasantry of ancient England habitually lived in village-communities, and our land laws cannot be rightly understood without the consideration that this early state of society underlay what is called the feudal system. Our dominion of India is still, in no small measure, organized in village-communities, so that a knowledge of their constitution is essential to a sound judgment in Indian affairs. Moreover, the history of these ancient agricultural associations bears stringently on certain modern projects of a communistic possession and cultivation of land—schemes confidently advocated as a cure for the evils of our present social system. From this point of view it is a matter of no slight or distant interest to observe that a large fraction of mankind has been engaged for many centuries in experimenting, in the strictest practical way, on the social and economic

economic results of a more or less communistic land-tenure. It is not to be thought, however, that because the theory of village-communities is important to professional lawyers and statesmen, it must be obscure or dull to laymen. It is high time that Sir Henry Maine's reproach against his countrymen, as exceptionally wanting in knowledge of and popular interest in law, should be done away with. He himself, in his lectures on 'Ancient Law,' published ten years since, has done much—more than he thinks, perhaps—to remove it. Neither he, nor any other writer equal to the task of tracing the development and expounding the philosophy of law in the plain language of the historian, is likely to complain henceforth that readers are either few or careless. Sir Henry Maine's present course of lectures on 'Village-Communities' has, indeed, little of the conventional technical character of a law-book. Printed much as they were delivered, his discourses are lightened by frequent digressions, always instructive and sometimes most brilliant. Far from overloading his arguments with heavy details, he even goes too far in suppressing them; so that it may be fairly suggested that in future editions a larger appendix should give positive particulars of village organizations in such typical districts as Russia and India—details which actual students require to have before them, but which are as yet by no means easy of access. Still, as to the general theory of the subject, the treatise, as it stands, is perfect in its scope. Bringing compactly together the results of researches by Maurer, Nasse, and others, the author connects them with his own work into a whole. He offers a rational explanation of the origin of the village-community, a history of the process of 'feudalization' which has so generally modified it, and a sufficient statement of the causes which have everywhere tended to supersede it by social arrangements more suited to advanced civilization.

In speaking of an explanation offered by Sir Henry Maine for the origin of the barbaric village-community, it is not meant that he advocates the views of the influential modern school of ethnologists, who seek the origin of society in an utterly low primitive condition of man, whence a course of simply natural development, acting through a vast period of time, is supposed to have raised him to higher social levels. Our author's starting-point, in defining the primitive family tie, differs extremely from that taken by Mr. J. F. McLennan, in his 'Primitive Marriage,' and accepted in a modified form by Sir John Lubbock, in his 'Origin of Civilization.' Readers of Sir Henry Maine's 'Ancient Law' are aware that he receives the 'patriarchal theory' of the primeval state of man in society. In his present

lectures he puts prominently forward, as the very basis of his argument, the patriarchal family—'a group of men and women, children and slaves, of animate and inanimate property, all connected together by common subjection to the paternal power of the chief of the household.' Far from accounting for the existence of this complex social group by evolution from a lower state, he declares that, if the patriarchal family 'is really to be accepted as a primary social fact, the explanation assuredly lies among the secrets and mysteries of our nature, not in any characteristics which are on its surface.' Not to enter on the discussion of doctrines of the primitive condition of society—doctrines which, whether right or wrong, are not to be disposed of by a passing touch of criticism—we will here only express surprise that Sir Henry Maine should be so little inclined to simplify his theory of early society as to include (or seem to include) slavery as one of its primitive institutions. Surely, starting with the existence of simple families, then war between them, and the capture of prisoners, furnish an obvious natural cause capable of converting the earlier and simpler clan of kinsfolk into the later and more complex group of freemen and slaves. Within the present special subject, however, diverse theories of the origin of society scarcely clash. If it be disputed how patriarchal families arose in the world, it is admitted on all hands that they have existed from the remotest historic ages, and exist still. Thus Sir Henry Maine sets a firm foot on ground common to all schools of ethnology, when, taking for granted the patriarchal family, he makes his next step by treating it as the unit of a larger natural group—the village-community.

The patriarchal family, on the death of its chief, tends to separate into a group of families, each under its head of the next generation. Let a patriarchal family, occupying a tract of land in pasture and tillage, thus in a few generations separate naturally into a group of households, but without dividing the common-land. Or, let several households emigrate together to occupy in common an outlying tract. The result, in either case, is a village-community, and the circumstances and needs of a simple agricultural life are so similar, that a fairly general definition may be given of its arrangement. It is not an unexampled custom even now, and it may have been frequently a transitional stage, for the arable land to be tilled jointly for the common profit. But it is usual to find the arable land more or less permanently apportioned out in plots among the households, while the ground left in forest and waste remains enjoyed in absolute common by the villagers. Such arrangements, though especially prevalent among nations of the Aryan race, are

are not confined to them. To show the general likeness among these simple associations, founded by whatever race, in whatever country, and at whatever period of history, we may briefly cite two accounts, describing the settlements of Tatars in East Russia at the present day, and of English yeomen colonizing North America in the seventeenth century. In the magnificent treatise of Le Play (a collection of evidence on the various conditions of industrial society which we commend to the study of all political economists)\* will be found a description of the social economy of the Bashkir village-communities in the forest clearings on the eastern slopes of the Ural. As belonging to a Tatar race whose original character is that of pastoral nomades, these Bashkirs represent, in an interesting manner, an early stage of settled life. During half the year they follow, on the mountains, their ancient pastoral habit, not wandering indeed at large, but the villagers of each settlement keeping to the summer pasture which now belongs to it. The other half year is spent in the home village, and here each household has attained to absolute property in its house and immediately adjacent garden. But the arable land and the hay-fields are in the intermediate state. It is true they are parcelled out among the families, but their original condition of common land is shown by the village council not only assigning to new families new plots from the village reserve, but actually taking away and throwing back into the reserve any plots on which a family has for several years raised no crop. With the social scheme of these simple and lazy half-nomade barbarians may be compared that which arose among a people of vastly different type. So well did the principle of the village-community seem adapted to the needs of new agricultural settlements, that it was adopted by the English emigrants who colonized New England. When a town was organized, the process was that the General Court granted a tract of land to a company of persons, who then proceeded so far to divide it as to assign to the individual proprietors their house-lots and tracts of meadow, while they retained the woodland and outlying pasture as the common property of the company. In the barbaric world, village-communities thus set on foot might have lasted for ages. But in New England the disintegrating influences of our modern social scheme, with its pressure of population, its tendency to change, and its habits of individuality, were fatal to this antique constitution. Within half a century the law had to limit the privilege of commonage to houses already in being, or to be

---

\* See 'Quarterly Review,' vol. cxxviii. p. 89.

afterwards erected with the consent of the town. The commoners thus became a kind of aristocracy, and the common lands were gradually divided up. Sir Henry Maine aptly winds up his argument by citing this remarkable case as typical of the history of village-communities in ancient Europe and modern India, illustrating at once their origin, their arrangement, and the causes which lead to their ultimate dissolution.

Now in these modern accounts we find the key to one of the greatest facts of European history. The ancient Teutonic agricultural settlement of Northern Europe was, on the whole, made on the principle of the village-community. How it took shape in Scandinavia is well described by Hyltén-Cavallius, the Swedish ethnologist, in his account of the ancient land-tenure. From the oldest times, he says, and so long as the Gothic tribes remained half-nomade clans, all the land taken up remained as common and undivided clan-land. But when in time permanent agriculture came to be added to cattle-breeding and the shifting tillage of patches of fire-cleared land, they began gradually to divide that part of the tract which had previously been tilled as a whole as odal-land, but which, now separated into lots, became the heritage of the different households, what was not odal-land remaining undivided as the common pasture and woodland, and the enclosed but still undivided land likewise retaining the character of common property. The Scandinavian 'by,' or township, is a relic of the old Teutonic community. The village-commoners were originally a family, gradually formed into an independent group or tribe, and their whole enclosed tract was the tribe-land. This was long enjoyed in common, but at last was parcelled out in lots according to the number of households, which lots became heritable within the family, and were extremely subdivided. The out-mark of the township, on the other hand, continued to be used in common by the townsmen for pasture and supply of wood, and the bys, with their subdivided in-fields and undivided out-mark, took a character of partly maintained and partly broken-up common, which they have often kept to our own day.\* Years ago Sir Walter Scott met with remains of this old Scandinavian land-tenure in Shetland, and it is curious to see how the able lawyer and antiquary was puzzled by them, wanting, as he did, the key to decipher them by, the knowledge that they were relics of a primitive state of society fast falling away. Sir Henry Maine quotes an extract from his journal :—

'I cannot get a distinct idea of the nature of the land-rights. The Udal proprietors have ceased to exist, yet proper feudal tenures seem

---

\* G. O. Hyltén-Cavallius 'Wärend och Wirdarne, ett försök i Svensk Ethnologi.' Stockholm, 1863-8, part ii., p. 290.

ill understood. Districts of ground are in many instances understood to belong to townships or communities, possessing what may be arable by patches, and what is moor as a commonity *pro indiviso*. But then individuals of such a township often take it upon them to grant feus of particular parts of the property thus possessed *pro indiviso*. The town of Lerwick is built upon a part of the commonity of Sound; the proprietors of the houses having feu-rights from different heritors of that township, but why from one rather than other. . . . seems altogether uncertain.'

The word 'mark,' just mentioned in describing the 'out-mark,' of the Scandinavian village, involves the leading idea of the whole Germanic land-system, to which the Scandinavian belongs. The Teutonic Township, as Sir Henry Maine defines it, 'was an organized, self-acting group of Teutonic families, exercising a common proprietorship over a definite tract of land, its mark, cultivating its domain on a common system, and sustaining itself by the produce.' This tract was divided into three parts. 'These three portions were, the Mark of the Township or Village, the Common Mark or Waste, and the Arable Mark, or cultivated area. The community inhabited the village, held the common mark in mixed ownership, and cultivated the arable mark in lots appropriated to the several families.' Though it need hardly be said that the organization of the ancient mark has long occupied the attention of historians and legists in Germany, it is especially through the recent series of researches by G. L. von Maurer\* that its importance in explaining the facts of modern German land-tenure has been established. The 'Allmende,' or 'Allmand,' of the German townships is still used for tillage and pasture by the householders, under regulations little changed in principle for this thousand years and more. In the more backward parts of the country, especially, the vestiges of collective property are most abundant. A summary account of Von Maurer's conclusions will be found in Mr. Morier's paper in the volume of 'Systems of Land Tenure in Various Countries,' recently published under the sanction of the Cobden Club. Instead of entering on this branch of the evidence, however, it will answer the purpose to speak of the remarkable traces of similar Teutonic land-laws surviving in our own English counties. Why the bearing of the facts in question was till lately overlooked is clear enough. It was hardly the fault of historians such as Palgrave, Kemble, or Freeman, who have kept clearly in view the fact that the early English proprietary-system was that of the mark or township. The question was, whether this ancient form of property had died out, and our legal text-books had led to the impression that this was

\* See the list of Maurer's works in Appendix II. to 'Village-Communities.'

the case. It is not quite to the credit of historico-legal science in England, that it should have been left to Professor Nasse, of Bonn, to bring into prominent notice the proofs that local land-holdings which our commentators have treated as incidental, and the intention of which they have explained, if at all, by superficial guesses, are in fact relics of the domains of English village-communities, dating from before the Norman Conquest.

Such lands, when arable, are called 'common fields,' 'open fields,' 'shack lands,' 'intermixed lands,' &c. When in grass, they are often known as 'lot meadows,' or 'lammas lands.' It is very usual for the 'common fields' to be divided by green turf-baulks into three long strips. The several properties consisted of subdivisions of these strips, the principle of division being that each owner has his plot in each of the three strips. The purpose of this division was that the common fields might not be tilled at the discretion of individual owners of parcels, but that the whole might be worked on the principle of the old three-field husbandry—each strip, for instance, bearing wheat one year, oats or beans the next, and lying fallow the third. In a general way, it may be said that individual ownership in such commonable lands only extends from seed-time to harvest, the whole body of owners, and sometimes other persons, having the right of pasture on the whole of one strip during its fallow year, and on the green baulks dividing the three fields (which often afforded a surface of many acres), as well as the right of 'shack' or pasturage over the stubbles of the two tilled strips, after the crops have been got in. It seems seldom that the shares in the arable fields shift yearly from one owner to another, but this is more frequent in the meadows, which may be distributed by lot, or in rotation, among those entitled to appropriate and inclose them, the inclosures being generally removed after hay-harvest—sometimes on Old Lammas Day (August 13), by a kind of popular tumultuary assembly. It is needless to state minute details or exceptions as to these remarkable customs. But it must not be supposed that the examples of them are few and local, representing no general principle. Marshall, an eminent writer on agriculture about 1800, gives a general account of common-field township in England, and goes so far as to assert that a few centuries ago nearly the whole of the lands of England lay in an open, and, more or less, in a commonable state. Till comparatively recent years, such statements might still be made as that half Berkshire, Huntingdonshire, and Wiltshire were still in the state of commonable meadows, commons, and common fields. 'One of the largest of the common fields,' says Sir Henry Maine, 'was found in the immediate neighbourhood of Oxford; and the grassy

baulks which anciently separated the three fields are still conspicuous from the branch of the Great Northern Railway which leads to Cambridge.' Looking at the history of the mark or township in Germany, Scandinavia, and our own country, it seems in great measure established that in England such commonable lands are remains of early township-lands, in the intermediate stage between common and individual property, while a great part at least of the waste land which has been inclosed during past centuries, or still lies as open common, was originally the out-mark of the village-community. Tracing the course of social history back through the feudal system, it appears that in England, as elsewhere, there was a time when the land was still owned by the proprietary group which cultivated it, a community whose social characteristics may still be studied, in forms more or less modified, in less advanced regions of the world.

If the whole problem of the history of these proprietary groups were that of following and accounting for the gradual ascendancy gained by the principle of individual ownership over that of community, the considerations involved in it would be comparatively simple. But in the actual course of events this is found intricately involved with another problem, one of the most complex as it is one of the most important of history, the process of feudalization, the subjection of the community to a chief or lord, and the transformation of the commoner into the lord's tenant. In most of the districts where society is, or has been, organized on a large scale on the system of village-communities, some more or less advanced stage of the feudalizing process has been reached. It is one of Sir Henry Maine's especial objects to show the importance of the study of the native tenures of British India as throwing light on this problem. The Indian village-community, at once an organized patriarchal society and an assemblage of co-proprietors, is the real unit of social and political organization. For various reasons this fact was for many years of our rule not sufficiently understood and acted on. The system was strange to our early administrators, who happened also to begin their work in Bengal, a district where the old village-system had fallen into decay. And as in England the tendency of legal commentators, steeped in feudal tradition, was to ignore, and by ignoring to aid in suppressing the remains of the old township-organization, so in India the Brahminical code of Manu, in which the two leading ideas are the performance of religious rites and the maintenance of caste, threw into the background the native village-law, of which the constitution must be learnt by oral inquiry. The subject is not yet, despite of vigorous labour, thoroughly worked out, but an instructive

paper on it by Mr. George Campbell, now Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal, will be found in the volume of 'Systems of Land-Tenure' already referred to. Looking only to the essential constitution of our Indian villages, it appears that they mainly correspond with the mark of old Germany or England. There is the arable land divided into household-lots, but cultivated on a plan which all must conform to, there are sometimes the reserve-meadows, there is the village waste, the undivided pasture-ground of the community. In hundreds of cases there is nothing to prevent our accepting the view that a single family went out ages ago into the jungle and founded a settlement which grew by mere throwing off of young households into such an organized village as this; into which were also taken up aliens, whether of the founder's race or of other stocks even ethnologically different, so that an Indian community may include men of several castes, higher and lower. Nor is it a mere co-operative farm, with its weavers, and potters, and smiths to make it complete and self-dependent, but an organized political society, with its functionaries to regulate the levying of taxes and the administration of justice and police. Tradition, real or fictitious, of founders and ancestors, constitutes the theoretical bond which holds these communities together. In that the village consists of households, each ruled absolutely by its patriarch, and so far as the council of village elders settle disputes by reference to ancient custom, the guiding rule of Indian life, so far we seem to see the village-community in its primeval form. But the process of feudalization has had more or less part in shaping the actual constitution of the Indian villages. Sir Henry Maine has not found a single community under the unmodified collective government of the heads of households, but there is a headman, whose office is under various conditions hereditary within some particular family or families. Let a powerful central Government like ours recognize such privileged families as, even in a limited sense, owners of their villages, and let these be settled with as the class bound to collect the taxes and pay them to the treasury, this is one of the various courses of events which increase the tendency to feudalization. And while neither extreme of the feudalizing process, neither the primitive democratic community, nor the medieval feudal manor with its lord, can be seen in India, yet in complex varieties of the intermediate stages the transition from the village-system to the manorial-system is to be studied as matter of modern history.

Turning from Asia to Europe, in the Slavonic districts which on the whole represent the most backward state of European civilization, and taking no notice of changes within the last few years,

years, we find in a social system of which the village is the basis, at once instructive illustrations of the primitive cultivating group, and of the feudalization<sup>\*</sup> which has more or less transformed its nature. Perhaps the most striking known examples in the world, of communistic agriculture as an ancient political institution, are the villages of Servia, Croatia, and Austrian Slavonia, brotherhoods of persons who are at once co-owners, and, at least in theory, kinsmen. These communities not only hold their land in common, but they actually cultivate it by the combined labour of all the households, among whom the produce is divided yearly, sometimes according to their supposed wants, sometimes according to rules which give fixed shares to particular persons. This extreme socialistic scheme, in which the land is not even theoretically divisible, may be contrasted in this respect with the Russian agricultural village. Here the common arable land is parcelled out among the households, but only for a term of years, sometimes only three, after which it is thrown together and re-apportioned. In certain villages we find that social adjustments of this kind are practically made by the village council of elders, and in general it may be said that the ancient organization has maintained itself through the great political change, made within historical times, which assigned the village to a noble proprietor, whose serfs, working in *corvée* for his benefit, the freemen became. The assertion is even current that serfdom was introduced in order to prevent the peasants from breaking up the co-operative village system, on which depended the ancient order of the land.\*

Far different from this has been the historical fate of the village-system in Western Europe. The growth of the feudal-system so changed its ancient constitution, that, to take the phrase now accepted as the rough expression of this social revolution, the mark became transformed into the manor. Among the varied and complex causes of this vast change must be counted the development of that germ of aristocracy which was recognized in the old German as in the modern Indian communities, the existence of certain families within the community whose descent tradition traced from the primitive ancestor, and from whom was chosen the chief, general in war and governor in peace; this tendency to form a nobility headed by a King being naturally accompanied by the practice of assigning lands, especially lands carved from the territory of conquered tribes, to become the King's spoil and the warrior's reward. It would be vain to take up as in a parenthesis the huge and intricate problem

\* Maine, 'Ancient Law,' p. 267. See the works of Haxthausen, Tengoborski, and Le Play.

of the feudalization of Europe, yet with due reservation as to views not yet brought to absolute proof, it may be admitted that these and kindred causes go far toward explaining it. Whether it was seldom or often that the old mark or village-community was actually transformed into the manor with its feudal lord, the historical succession of the manor-system to the mark-system is at least plausibly inferred by Sir Henry Maine. The tenants retained in some degree the old commoner's rights of pasture and taking firewood, but the waste or common-land became the lord's waste, and in time it came to be assumed by legal authorities that the commoners had obtained their rights by sufferance of the lord.\* In later ages the decay of the feudal-system, far from re-establishing the ancient agricultural institution of the mark, still further obliterated the traces of its past existence, so that the claim to explain as its relics our village-commons as well as our remaining open-fields and lammas-meadows, sounds to most Englishmen somewhat startling at the first hearing, though admitted on consideration as not at all unreasonable in itself.

We cannot show in modern England anything approaching the remarkable case of actual maintenance of the old village-community, which might be studied in Central France within a quarter of a century. In Mons. Le Play's volume will be found a description of the village of Les Jault, the last survivor of a number of communities which existed in the Nivernais. These were considered to have been established by feudal seigneurs some centuries ago, but with our present information we must come to the somewhat different conclusion that they represented more ancient village-settlements, which in the course of history came under the authority of feudal lords, but continued to exist after the abolition of the feudal-system. About 1840, the little community of Jault consisted of seven partial families, whose heads were kinsmen and bore the same name. The land, buildings, and cattle were held in common, each family having a separate dwelling-compartment in the common building, furnished principally at the common cost, and the members taking their meals in the common hall, where the chief and his second had the distinction of a separate table. The community, industrious and moral in its habits, prospered till, in the present century, the 'spirit of individualism' among the young people began to undermine the patriarchal authority. They were no

---

\* It is a fair instance of the currency of the feudal view that the origin of manors lay in grants of territory to lords, to find it generally accepted in 'Six Essays on Commons Preservation: written in Competition for Prizes offered by Henry W. Peek, Esq.' (London, 1867). Mr. W. P. Beale, however, in his acute Essay (No. 2), traces common-rights from the mark.

longer content, as in the good old days, to work with good-will and obedience under the master who knew what was right better than they did, who treated them as his children, and divided the produce of the common labour according to the wants of each. Now they wanted to lead the old folks, to work for their own private gain, to have accounts and interfere in the division of proceeds. Thus it came to pass that the members quarrelled and went to law, and the society was broken up in 1846.

Looking, from a political point of view, at the system of communities which has thus had so important a place in the history of the world, we see in it an institution eminently suitable for the agricultural settlement of new countries by barbaric clans, and for the permanence and extension of barbaric society. The life is favourable to patriarchal virtues, to simplicity, sobriety, obedience, family attachment. The value of the village-system is excellently shown in India, where observers who judge most severely the moral condition of the individual Hindoos speak with favour of the institution which binds them together with a bond of mutual goodwill and justice. Where our legislators have to deal with such communities, deep-rooted in the present national life of India, they, no doubt, do well to take the ancient organization as in present fitness with the character of the races who have been shaped for ages under its influence, and to maintain it as the basis of social order. It is true that, under the influence of English ideas, the native political standards are changing. The change is inevitable, and in many ways desirable; nor is it to be expected that the primitive village-organization will for ever escape in India the fate to which progressive civilization seems everywhere to doom it. Its virtues are great, but its practical defects seem insurmountable. While a country is only cleared in isolated patches by a scanty population of simple habits and moderate desires, the emigrant families who have obtained their titles, each to its village-tract, by a right compounded of conquest and collective squatting, may long continue to grow into communities, large, prosperous, and closely knit within themselves. But as they more and more occupy the land, and come too near to close contact, their intensely quarrelsome habit will lead to intertribal war, one of the effects of which is to give to individual chiefs that uncontrolled possession of large estates which is fatal to the very scheme of the village-community. And where the tendency to war is restrained, the peaceable increase of such villages tends to determine their limits of existence by intensifying the causes of their dissolution. Better agricultural methods are required to obtain subsistence from the more crowded land ;

and it need scarcely be said that a peasant-village, governed by old men whose supreme authority is ancestral custom, is not a society with progressive tendencies. Socialistic cultivation of land is an institution which village-communities have existed long enough to condemn as practically objectionable; for in most districts the parcels of tilled ground apportioned among the several households are well on their way to become individual holdings. We must guard against a certain ambiguity of terms, which may lead to the erroneous inference that the villages classed as communities are always or even generally communistic in the extreme sense as to their practical working. Their state is, in fact, much more instructive, seeming, as it does, to show the tendency to break down socialism into individualism. Even the weaker remains of the community-system are likely to disappear altogether in countries where they come into competition with the larger capital and superior management which belong to individual ownership. The necessity of conforming to a rude traditional tillage made the open-field-system in England utterly contemptible even to old-fashioned judges of agriculture. Three hundred years ago, Tusser, in his 'Five Hundreth Pointes of Good Husbandry,' gave his own experience of the remains of the old community-system, still to be studied on a large scale in many parts of the country, where the question between it and the inclosure-system was being fought out in a practical way. His verdict was absolutely against the old village-husbandry, with its bad produce, and its idle, thieving, poverty-stricken population. It was absolutely in favour of inclosure:—

'The country inclosed I praise,  
The t'other delighteth not me,  
For nothing the wealth it doth raise  
To such as inferior be.

\* \* \* \*

More plenty of mutton and beef,  
Corn, butter, and cheese of the best;  
More wealth anywhere to be brief,  
More people, more handsome and prest,  
Where find ye, go search any coast,  
Than there, where inclosure is most.'

Even the right of common pasture in lammas-meadows and the like—picturesque relic of old English manners as it is—is unprofitable from an economic point of view. The late history of a single estate, burdened with such rights, may serve as a general example. It consisted of several hundred acres of pasture and woodland, on which a number of persons, the representatives, apparently,

apparently, of the original commoners, had each during the summer the right of so many leazes (*i. e.*, pasture for so many head of cattle). These leazes were bought up by the proprietor of the estate, who, keeping it still as a principally pasture-farm, spent a few years' rent on draining and improvements, and tripled its annual produce. On the whole, it may be laid down as a conclusion, that so far as regards the problem of feeding the greatest number of mouths from a given district, the decision of history, after a trial lasting through many ages, is being given for individual as against communistic possession of land.

---

ART. VII.—1. *Mémoires d'Alexandre Dumas*. Tomes 16.

2. *Mémoires d'Alexandre Dumas*. Deuxième Series. Tomes 8.

**B**ACON never gave stronger proof of his knowledge of mankind than when he left his 'name and memory to foreign nations and the next ages.' A whole host of proverbs might be cited in justification of this bequest; and Lord Russell has felicitously described a proverb as the wisdom of many and the wit of one. 'No man is a prophet in his own country.' 'No man is a hero to his valet de chambre.' 'Familiarity breeds contempt.' What are these but so many variations of the same familiar tune, so many modes of expressing the same universally recognized truth, that it is vain to hope for a just and fair appreciation from our contemporaries. We may be unduly exalted as well as unduly lowered by them, for a brief period or for a set purpose; but that they should hold the scales even, and pronounce impartially on the merits or demerits of a living rival or associate, would seem to border on a moral impossibility. In conversation with James Smith, Crabbe expressed great astonishment at his own popularity in London, adding, 'In my own village they think nothing of me.' If people cannot bring themselves to contemplate as a real genius the quiet unobtrusive character whom they see moving amongst them like any other ordinary mortal, how can they be expected to recognize, as a duly qualified candidate for the character, one who is mixed up in a succession of literary or party intrigues and contests, who is alternately wounding their prejudices or flattering their self-love, whose fame or notoriety resembles the shuttlecock, which is only kept from falling by being struck from side to side in rivalry.

In England, of late years, political acrimony has been nearly banished from the higher regions of criticism; but an infinity

of disturbing forces have been unceasingly at work to prevent the fair estimate of a popular writer in France, and there never was a popular writer who had better reason than Alexander Dumas to protest against the contemporary judgment of his countrymen, or to appeal, like Bacon, to foreign nations and the next ages. This could hardly have been his own opinion when he commenced the publication of his autobiography, which was far from mitigating the spirit of detraction he had provoked; but his death may be accepted as an atonement for his manifold offences; and the most cursory glance at his career will show that its irregularities were indissolubly connected with its brilliancy. It was an adventurous one, in every sense of the term. From its commencement to its close he threw reflection overboard, and cast prudence to the winds. He is one of the most remarkable examples of fearless self-reliance, restless activity, and sustained exertion, we ever read or heard of. His resources of all sorts, mental and bodily, proved inexhaustible till six months before his death, although he had been drawing upon them from early youth with reckless prodigality. Amongst his many *tours de force* was the composition of a complete five-act drama within eight days, and the editorship of a daily journal. *Le Mousquetaire*, upon a distinct understanding with his subscribers, faithfully observed, that the contents should be supplied by his pen. It was towards the end of the second month of the satisfactory performance of this task that he received the following letter:—

‘MY DEAR DUMAS,

‘You have been informed that I have become one of your subscribers (*abonnés*), and you ask my opinion of your journal. I have an opinion on things human: I have none on miracles: you are superhuman. My opinion of you! It is a note of exclamation! People have tried to discover perpetual motion. You have done better: you have created perpetual astonishment. Adieu; live; in other words, write: I am there to read.

‘LAMARTINE.

‘Paris, 20th December, 1853.’

■ He set up a theatre—*Le Théâtre Historique*—for the representation of his own plays, as he set up a journal for his own contributions. He has not written quite as many plays as Lope de Vega, but he has written four times as many romances as the author of ‘Waverley;’ and he has done quite enough in both walks to confute the theory that a successful dramatist must necessarily fail as a novelist and *vice versa*; a theory, it will be remembered, maintained and exemplified by Sir Walter Scott, and plausibly supported by the

the illustrious examples of Fielding, Smollett, Cervantes and Le Sage. Postponing for a moment the questions of morality and originality, it can no longer be denied in any quarter that Dumas' influence, whether for good or evil, has been immense on both sides of the Channel. Indeed, we are by no means sure that his romances have not been more read by the higher class in this country than in his own. Nor, in glancing over his multifarious claims to rank amongst the leading spirits of his age must we forget his numerous 'Voyages' and 'Impressions de Voyages,' constituting altogether between twenty and thirty most amusing and instructive volumes of travels. But they are wholly unlike what are commonly called Travels, and constitute an entirely new style of writing. He has a prodigious memory, filled to overflowing with the genuine romance of history; he lights instinctively upon every local tradition that is worth recording; he has a quick eye for the picturesque and (above all) an exquisite perception of the humorous. He is about the best possible storyteller in print, and he rarely dwells too long on a ludicrous incident, nor forces us to keep company with his laughable characters till they grow wearisome.

The wonder at his unprecedented fertility and versatility had led at one time to a very general belief that most of his publications were concocted by a set of 'prentice hands or journeymen, whom he paid at so much a sheet; and that the utmost he contributed to their handiwork was a masterly touch here and there and his name on the title-page. One of these, named Macquet, boldly laid claim to a lion's share in the composition of the best, and was strenuously supported by critics of authority.\* But Macquet was avowedly employed by Dumas for twenty years to hunt up subjects, supply accessories, or do for him what eminent portrait painters are wont to leave to pupils, namely, the preparation of the canvas, the mixing of the colours, the rough outline of the figures, or the drapery. That Macquet was capable of nothing better or higher, was proved by his utter failure as a novelist, whenever, both before and after the alleged partnership, he set up for himself. A curious attempt was then made to show by calculation that the number of pages which Dumas, according to his own account, must have composed

---

\* *Fabrique de Romans: Maison Dumas et Compagnie.* Par Eugène de Mirecourt. Paris, 1845. *Les Supercheries littéraires dévoilées.* Par J. M. Quérard. Troisième Edition. Paris, 1859. Article 'Dumas' (Alexander Davy). This article, containing 152 pages of close print in double columns, is a collection of all the criticisms and attacks founded or unfounded, ever levelled against Dumas; and although invaluable as a fund of information, it carries little weight as an authority by reason of its obvious exaggeration and injustice.

during

during his literary life, was more than the most practised penman could have copied in the same space of time at the rate of sixty pages a day. But as his literary life lasted more than forty years, the required quantity per day is quadrupled or quintupled in this estimate; and the production of twelve or fourteen widely-printed pages, on the average, for a series of years is by no means a physical impossibility. This rate of composition was often exceeded by Sir Walter Scott; who wrote or dictated the 'Bride of Lammermoor' whilst suffering from cramp in the stomach to an extent that often compelled him to break off and throw himself on a sofa to writhe in agony. Lope de Vega is known to have written five full-length dramas in fifteen days, and his dramatic compositions, published or unpublished, have been computed to exceed two thousand.\* Edgeworth states, in his 'Memoirs,' as an ascertained fact on which heavy bets were laid and won, that a man could run faster with a carriage-wheel, which he propelled with the bare hand as a child trundles a hoop, than when he was entirely unencumbered, provided the prescribed distance were sufficient for the *impetus* or adventitious motion thus acquired to tell. This sounds more paradoxical and open to doubt than a statement made in our hearing by Dumas, that, when he warmed to his work, he can supply original matter faster than it could be transcribed by the readiest penman. His mode of life was thus described in the 'Siècle':—

'He rises at six: before him are laid thirty-five sheets of paper of the largest size; he takes up his pen and writes in a hand that M. de Saint-Omer would envy till eleven. At eleven he breakfasts, always in company: the author of "Monte Christo" is the most hospitable of men of letters: during this meal, in which he plays a good knife and fork, his spirits and his wit never flag. At twelve, he resumes the pen not to quit it again till six in the evening. The dinner finds him what he was in the morning, as lively, as lighthearted, as ready at repartee. If by chance he has not filled the allotted number of sheets, a momentary shade passes over his face, he steals away, and returns two or three hours later to enjoy the pleasures of the *soirée*. The year has three hundred and sixty-five days: we have described three hundred and sixty-five days of the famous novelist and dramatist.'

We have now before us (received from Dumas) the original manuscript of a chapter of the 'Mémoires d'un Médecin,' obviously dashed off at a heat. The handwriting is large, round, and free, bearing a strong resemblance to that of Scott; who, according to Lockhart, rose at the same hour, and whenever (as was frequently the case) there was a distinguished company at

---

\* Ticknor's 'History of Spanish Literature,' vol. ii. p. 204.

Abbotsford, completed his allotted task before breakfast, so as to be free to attend to the amusement of his guests.

The charge of plagiarism is one easily brought, and not easily parried except by showing that there is nothing new under the sun, and that the most inventive minds have not disdained to borrow from their predecessors. Virgil borrowed from Homer; Racine, from Euripides; Corneille (for his *Cid*), from a Spanish dramatist. '*Je prends mon bien ou je le trouve*,' was the unabashed avowal of Molière. 'Evil betide those who have said or written our good things before us,' was the half-comic, half-serious exclamation of a truly original wit. Shakespeare drew largely on chronicles, popular histories and story-books for his characters and plots: his Greeks and Romans frequently speak the very words placed in their mouths by Plutarch: 'Julius Cæsar' was preceded by a Latin play on the same subject, and (amongst other things) the famous *Et tu, Brute?* (which rests on no classical authority) was taken from it. Voltaire sedulously ran down Shakespeare to throw dust in the eyes of the French public and prevent them from discovering his obligations to the barbarian, as they designated the author of 'Hamlet,' 'L'Ermite' in 'Zadig' is a mere paraphrase of Parnell's poem, 'The Hermit;' and the fable (Voltaire's) of 'Le Lion et le Marseillais' is borrowed from Mandeville. The framework and all the solid portions of Mirabeau's best speeches were notoriously supplied by Dumont; little being left for the orator but to infuse the Promethean fire and vivify the mass.

In a recent notice of Talleyrand, we mentioned a note in the handwriting of his brother to the effect that the only breviary used by the ex-bishop was 'L'Improvisateur Français,' a voluminous collection of anecdotes and jests; the fraternal inference being that his conversational brilliancy was partly owing to this repository. Pascal copies whole pages from Montaigne without quoting him. Sheridan confessedly acted on Molière's principle or no-principle: he was indebted to Farquhar for the 'Trip to Scarborough:' the most admired bit of dialogue between Joseph Surface and Lady Teazle is the recast of a fine reflection in 'Zadig':\* and consciously or unconsciously, Tom Jones and Bifil must have influenced the conception of Charles and Joseph Surface. 'With regard to the charges about the Shipwreck,' wrote Lord Byron to Mr. Murray, 'I think that I told you and Mr. Hobhouse years ago that there was not a single circumstance of it not

\* '*Astarté est femme; elle laisse parler ses regards avec d'autant plus d'imprudence qu'elle ne se croit pas encore coupable. Malheureusement rassurée sur son innocence, elle néglige les dehors nécessaires. Je tremblerai pour elle tant qu'elle n'aura rien à se reprocher.*'—*Zadig*.

taken from fact; not, indeed, from any single shipwreck, but all from actual facts of different shipwrecks.' So little was Tasso ashamed of occasional imitations of other poets, or incorporated details from history, that, in his commentary on his 'Rime,' he takes pains to point out all coincidences of the kind in his own poems. Scott lays particular stress in his Preface on the fidelity with which he has followed the narratives and traditions on which his romances are almost uniformly based, but he forgot to note that the scene in 'Kenilworth,' where Amy is kneeling before Leicester and asking him about his orders of knighthood, was copied from the 'Egmont' of Goethe. Balzac has appropriated for one of his novels an entire chapter of 'The Disowned.' Lamartine has been tracked to gleanings grounds, which he hoped to visit incognito, by Sainte Beuve. Dr. Ferriar has unsparingly exposed the poaching propensity of Sterne, who, besides making free with Rabelais and Burton, has been indirectly the means of dragging more than one author from obscurity by stealing from him. Lord Brougham left a translation of Voltaire's 'Memnon, ou La Sagesse Humaine,' to be published as an original composition of his own; and his executors, entering fully into the spirit of the testator, and carrying out his last wishes to the letter, have published it as he left it, without a hint, haply without a suspicion, of its quality.

One of the fine images with which Canning wound up his peroration on the Indemnity Bill of 1818 was certainly anticipated by Madame de Stael.\* The embryo of Macaulay's 'New Zealander' has been discovered in Horace Walpole's curious traveller from Lima; and the Theodora of 'Lothair' bears so strong resemblance to the Olympia of 'Half a Million of Money,' as to raise a compromising conviction of identity. But these are trifles. On one of the most solemn and memorable occasions within living memory, in expressing as leader of the House of Commons the national feeling of gratitude and admiration for the hero of a hundred fights, Mr. Disraeli took boldly and bodily, without the change of a word, rather more than a third of his prepared oration from the translation of an article in a French review, on a French Marshal, by M. Thiers.

We have been at some pains to illustrate the various shades and degrees of what is commonly called plagiarism; because Dumas has been accused of all of them, from the gravest to the lightest, and needs all the support and sanction that can be derived from example and authority. If we are to put faith in

---

\* 'If in the hour of peril the statue of Liberty has been veiled for a moment, let it be confessed in justice that the hands whose painful duty it was to spread that veil, have not been the least prompt to remove it.'

his assailants, he has pushed to extravagance the appropriation doctrine of Molière: he has rivalled not only the broom-maker who stole the materials, but the one who stole his brooms ready-made: he has taken entire passages like Mr. Disraeli, complete stories like Voltaire and Lord Brougham; and as for plots, scenes, images, dialogues, if restitution to the original proprietors were enforced, he would be like the daw stripped of its borrowed plumes, or (to borrow a less hackneyed image from Lord Chatham) he would 'stand before the world, like our first parents, naked but not ashamed.' But somehow these charges, though pointedly urged, have utterly failed in their main object: there is no denying the real genius, the genuine originality, of the man after all: and the decisive test is that what he takes assimilates to what he creates, and helps to form an harmonious whole, instead of lying, 'like lumps of marl upon a barren moor, encumbering what they cannot fertilise.' Nor is his one of those puny reputations that must be kept alive by nursing, that cannot bear exposure, that go down at once before a storm. On the contrary, it has almost invariably been confirmed and augmented by the most formidable attacks levelled at him, as a great flame is increased and extended by the wind which blows out a small one.

The autobiography of such a man could not well fail to abound in curious information, lively anecdote, and suggestive reflection; nor are these Memoirs wanting in merits of a more sterling order. They contain some capital canons of criticism; and, despite of the irrepressible influences of national and personal vanity, they are marked by a pervading spirit of kindly feeling and good sense. If ill-disposed to spare the errors and weaknesses of his political adversaries, he is almost always candid and generous towards his literary rivals. His highest admiration is reserved for real genius and true greatness; although the one may be fallen and the other out of fashion. It is never the reigning dynasty, nor the actual dispensers of favour and fortune, that are the objects of his most enthusiastic praise, but the friends or patrons who sacrificed their prospects to their principles, and lingered in exile, or died poor. We wish we could add that he had kept himself equally free from interested considerations in his choice of topics and materials; for it is impossible not to fancy that many of these have been pressed into the service with an exclusive eye to bookmaking. For example, a long chapter is filled with an abstract of Moore's Life of Byron; and each volume contains episodical narratives of public events which have no peculiar bearing on his life. Still, we should gladly hail his reminiscences as a valuable contribution to the literary and political

tical history of the nineteenth century if we could rely on their general accuracy. But we were startled at the commencement by sundry statements which, assuming them to be true, strikingly illustrate the maxim *le vrai n'est pas toujours le vraisemblable*; and we found more and more, as we proceeded, that would go far towards justifying the theory of the late Vice-Chancellor Shadwell, who formally laid down from the judgment-seat that writers of fiction are not good witnesses, because they necessarily contract an incurable habit of trusting to their imagination for their facts. On this delicate point, however, our readers may judge for themselves after reading Dumas' account of his birth, parentage, and education.

It were to be wished that the same philosophical indifference touching the distinctions of birth which was exhibited by Sydney Smith,\* had been manifested by all autobiographers who could not boast of an admitted or clearly established claim to ancestral honours; for an apocryphal progenitor is very far indeed from conciliating respect or favour for his *soi-disant* descendant. After stating that he was born on the 24th July, 1802, at Villers-Coterets, 'two hundred paces from the *Rue de la Noue*, where Desmoutiers died, two leagues from Ferté-Milon, where Racine was born, and seven leagues from Chateau-Thierry, where La Fontaine first saw the light,' Dumas proceeds to state that his real hereditary name is not Dumas:—

'I am one of the men of our epoch whose right has been contested to the greatest number of things. People have even contested my right to my name of Davy de la Pailleterie, to which I attach no great importance, since I have never borne it, and because it will only be found at the end of my name of Dumas in the official acts which I have executed before notaries, or in the documents in which I have figured as principal or witness.'

To prove his title to this honourable designation, he prints an exact copy of the register of his birth, from which he undoubtedly appears to be the legitimate offspring of Thomas Alexandre Dumas-Davy de la Pailleterie, General, &c. &c., who by other references is made out to be the son of the Marquis de la Pailleterie, a French nobleman of ancient family, who, adds his grandson, 'by I know not what Court quarrel, or what speculative project, was induced, about 1760, to sell his property and domicile himself in St. Domingo.' It would seem that his expatriation did not last long, for in 1786 we find him settled in Paris, where

\* In reference to Lockhart's attempt to make out an irreproachable pedigree for Sir Walter Scott, Sydney Smith said—'When Lady Lansdowne asked me about my grandfather, I told her he disappeared about the time of the assizes, and we asked no questions.'

the following brief dialogue between him and his son, the father of the narrator, explains the alleged change of name. The son calls upon the Marquis and announces a sudden resolution. 'What is it?' inquires the Marquis. 'To enlist.' 'As what?' 'As soldier.' 'Where?' 'In the first regiment that comes to hand.' 'As you like,' replied my grandfather; 'but as I am the Marquis de la Pailleterie and Colonel Commissary-General of Artillery, I cannot permit my name to be dragged about in the lowest grades of the army.' 'Then you object to my enlisting?' 'No; but you will enlist under a *nom de guerre*.' 'Nothing can be more just; I will enlist under the name of Dumas.' 'Be it so.' And the Marquis, who had never been the tenderest of fathers, turned his back on his son, leaving him free to do as he chose. 'My father therefore enlisted, as agreed, under the name of Alexandre Dumas.' The Marquis died thirteen days afterwards, but the new recruit never assumed his hereditary name and title—an omission which might fairly warrant a passing doubt of his right to them, were it not for a certificate, signed by four notables of St. Germain en Laye, to the effect that he was by birth a genuine Davy de la Pailleterie.

This weighty question being disposed of, Dumas proceeds to enlarge on the corporal advantages of his father, who, if he answered to the description, must have united the grace and beauty of Antinous to the strength of Hercules:—

'He had the brown complexion, chestnut hair, soft eyes, and straight nose which belong exclusively to the mixture of the Indian and Caucasian races. He had white teeth, sympathetic lips, the neck well set upon powerful shoulders, and notwithstanding his height of five feet nine inches (French), the hand and foot of a woman. His foot in particular set a swearing (*faisait damner*) his mistresses, whose slippers he was rarely unable to wear. *At the epoch of his marriage, his calf was exactly the size of my mother's wrist.* His wild mode of living in the colonies had developed his address and his strength in an extraordinary manner. He was a regular American cavalier, a Guacho. With gun or pistol, he did wonders of which St. Georges and Junot were jealous. As to his muscular force, it had become proverbial in the army. *More than once, he amused himself in the riding school whilst passing under a beam, by taking this beam between his arms, and lifting his horse off the ground between his legs.* I have seen him (and I recollect the circumstance with all the excitement of childhood) carry two men upright on his bent leg and hop with them across the room. . . . Dr. Ferus, who served under my father, has frequently related to me that, on the evening of his arrival to join the army of the Alps, he saw by the fire of a bivouac a soldier who, amongst other feats of strength, was amusing himself by inserting his finger in the barrel of a musket and raising it, not at arm's length, but

at finger's length. A man wrapped in a cloak mixed with the spectators and looked on like the rest, till smiling and throwing off his cloak, he said; not bad that, now bring me four muskets. They obeyed, for they had recognised the General-in-Chief. He then inserted his four fingers in the four barrels, and lifted the four muskets with the same ease with which the soldier had lifted one. Ferus, when he told me this anecdote, was still at a loss to comprehend how a man's muscles could raise such a weight.'

We are as much at a loss as the Doctor; but further marvels are to come:—

'During one of the General's Italian campaigns, the soldiers were forbidden to leave the camp without their side-arms under pain of forty-eight hours' arrest. My father was passing on horseback, when he met Père Moulin, since *maitre d'hotel* at the Palais Royal, who, at this period, was a tall and fine young man of twenty-five. Unluckily this tall and fine young man had no sword by his side. On seeing my father, he set off on a run to gain a cross street; but my father, who had caught sight of the fugitive and guessed the cause of his flight, put his horse to the gallop, overtook him, and exclaiming, so rascal, you are resolved to get yourself assassinated; collared him, and lifting him from the ground, without pressing or slackening the pace of his horse, my father carried the man thus in his talons as a hawk carries a lark, till, finding a *corps de garde* on his way, he threw Moulin towards them, exclaiming, Forty-eight hours arrest for that—.'

The following incident may serve to convey a notion of the manner in which the General's personal prowess was exhibited against the enemy in the field:—

'It was at Mauldi that my father found the first opportunity of distinguishing himself. Commanding as Brigadier a look-out party composed of four dragoons, he unexpectedly fell in with an enemy's patrol composed of thirteen Tyrolese chasseurs and a corporal. To see and, notwithstanding the disparity of numbers, charge them, was the affair of an instant. The Tyrolese, who did not expect this sudden attack, retreated into a small meadow surrounded by a ditch wide enough to stop cavalry. But, as I have already observed, my father was an excellent horseman; and he was on an excellent horse called Joseph. He gathered up the reins, gave Joseph his head, cleared the ditch like M. de Montmorency, and found himself in an instant in the midst of the thirteen chasseurs, who, stupefied by such hardihood, presented their arms and surrendered. The conqueror collected the thirteen rifles into a single bundle, placed them on his saddle-bow, compelled the thirteen men to move up to his four dragoons, who remained on the other side of the ditch which they had been unable to clear, and having repassed the ditch the last man, he brought his prisoners to head-quarters. Prisoners were rare at this time. The appearance of four men bringing in thirteen produced a lively sensation in the camp.'

This we can well believe, and we know of no parallel for the exploit except that of the Irishman, who, single-handed, took four Frenchmen prisoners by surrounding them ; or that of Sir Frizzle Pumpkin, to whom a squadron of cavalry surrendered at discretion on his coming suddenly upon them in a woody defile when he was consulting his personal safety by flight.

If an English writer were to begin in this fashion, his countrymen would most assuredly set him down for a rival of Munchausen, and haply hold themselves excused from attaching any serious importance to his future revelations, real or pretended. But in the case of a vivacious Frenchman, ample allowance must be made for a national habit, which we would rather exemplify by instances than characterize in plain language.

If M. Lamartine occasionally laid himself open to censure by indiscretion, he rendered invaluable services to the cause of peace and order by his courage and presence of mind at an extremely critical period, in 1848 ; and the praise of high-minded and unswerving integrity has been unanimously conceded to him. It is impossible to suspect such a man of wilful or conscious departure from veracity, and we may therefore cite the Waterloo chapter of his 'History of the Restoration' as one of the most remarkable examples on record of the predominance of imagination over judgment in a Frenchman. In the course of a few pages he makes the Duke of Wellington, mounted on his eighth horse after seven had been killed under him, gallop up to two of his regiments of Dragoons, make them take off the curbs of their bridles to prevent them from checking their horses in the charge, and distribute brandy to the men before launching them against the foe. He then orders his 'intrepid Scotchmen,' after allowing the approach of the French cavalry without firing, to slip under the horses, and rip them up 'with the short and broad sword of these children of the North.' By way of episode, Ney figures in the front, flourishing his general's hat in his left hand, his broken sword in his right, his dying horse at his feet ; and General Lesourd dismounts, whilst his dragoons are rallying, to have his arm amputated, and then leads them to the charge.

It may possibly be urged that M. Lamartine is essentially a poet, and cannot be expected to clip the wings of his fancy when once fairly set in motion by so exciting a theme. But M. Thiers is eminently endowed with most of the qualifications which are supposed to guarantee the trustworthiness of an historian. He has a clear head, a ready pen, penetration, sagacity, and large experience of affairs acquired as a practical administrator. Yet, strange to say, his account of the battle of

Trafalgar is substantially as much at variance with both fact and probability, though not quite so extravagant on the face of it, as M. Lamartine's 'Waterloo.' According to M. Thiers, hardly one of the French ships struck until assailed by an irresistible superiority of numbers—three or four to one—although, when the battle began, Nelson had four ships of the line and three frigates less than Villeneuve. To the same category belong the famous boast, *La garde meurt et ne se rend pas*, attributed to Cambronne, who was actually taken prisoner at Waterloo, the dying words (never spoken) of Desaix, and the alleged, self-immolation of the sailors of 'Le Vengeur,' who, instead of sinking with the cry of *Vive la Republique*, scrambled into the English boats, crying loudly for help. The extraordinary fictions to which French ministers and generals habitually resorted during the late war to keep up the spirits of the people and the troops, must be fresh in the recollection of our readers. There was not a pin to choose between the expiring Empire, the government of National Defence, or the government of the National Assembly, in this respect. No sooner had M. Thiers got together the semblance of an army than he declared it to be the finest army ever possessed by France; and when, after several days of desultory street fighting, he had worn out rather than conquered the armed rabble of the capital, he proclaimed that the whole world was lost in admiration at the splendour of his victory and the irresistible prowess of French troops.

If we recall attention to this national weakness, it is simply for the purpose of suggesting that we cannot throw aside Dumas as unworthy of further notice by reason of his tendency to exaggeration, without laying down a rule which must prove fatal to the reputation of the most distinguished of his countrymen. Fortunately, too, the value of his 'Memoirs' consists principally in anecdotes and revelations which may be easily verified by accessible evidence, or in views, reflections, and criticisms based upon patent and acknowledged facts. With regard to the alleged events of his boyhood, we are inclined to assume his general accuracy, because we are utterly at a loss to see what motive he could have in inventing or colouring stories, most of which are by no means flattering to his self-love. He frankly tells us that he was bred up in poverty in a petty provincial town, by a doting mother, whose fondness, we must do him the justice to add, he uniformly repays by the most affectionate and unremitting solicitude for her feelings and comforts. Indeed the endearing and ennobling sentiment of filial love breathes throughout the whole of his family details as freshly and naturally as in Moore's Diary, thereby affording another striking

striking proof that real goodness of heart may co-exist with a more than ordinary degree of vanity and self-consciousness, even when pampered by flattery and inflated by success.

Dumas' master-passion from boyhood was the chase, or, more correctly speaking, *la chasse*, which means something widely different from the corresponding word in English. One of the first official notices that meets the eye on the wooden pier or landing-place at Calais is, '*Il est defendu de chasser sur les ponts*,' a puzzling intimation to sportsmen who are not aware that almost everything that runs or flies is the legitimate object of *la chasse* in France. All is game that comes to the Gallic sportsman's bag. He does not despise a tomtit or yellowhammer; he regards a thrush as a prize, and he ruthlessly exults over the broken wing of a cock-robin or *rouge gorge*. The Calais notice is especially addressed to sportsmen in pursuit of mud-larks. One of the most amusing stories composed or stolen (the fact is disputed) by Dumas, is '*La Chasse au Chastre*,' in which he depicts the trials and perils into which a worthy professor of music is hurried by the reckless pursuit of a field-fare. He best can paint it who has felt it most, and Dumas is confessedly the chronicler of his own sensations in this book. Although he rose in time to the dignity of a regular poacher, and made unlawful prize of any stray hare or partridge that came within range, he dwells with unrestrained rapture upon the delights of the day when a friendly neighbour gave him leave to shoot larks upon a strictly preserved common. We also learn from his lively sketch of his first visit to Paris, that he undertook it in well-founded reliance on his skill as a sportsman for supplying the ways and means of the expedition. It was in 1822, when he was in his twentieth year, that this expedition was thus conceived and arranged in the course of a walk with a friend, a notary's clerk like himself.

"Ah, I exclaimed, an idea!" "What is it?—Let us go and spend three days at Paris." "And your office?"—"Mr. Lefevre (his master) himself starts for Paris to-morrow. He commonly stays away two or three days; in two or three days we shall be back." Paillot felt in his pockets, and pulled out twenty-eight francs. "Behold," said he, "all I possess! And you?"—"I have seven francs." "Twenty-eight and seven make thirty-five. How do you suppose we are to reach Paris with that? There is thirty francs for coach-hire to begin." "Stop a minute, I have a way." "What?"—"You have a horse?" "Yes." "We pack our clothes in a portmanteau, we take our shooting-jackets and our guns, and we shoot as we go; we eat our game on the journey, and we spend nothing."—"How is that to be managed?" "Nothing easier: between this and Dammartin, for example, we shall kill a hare, two partridges, and a quail." "I hope we shall kill more than

than that.”—“And so do I, but I take the lowest estimate. We arrive at Dammartin; we dress and eat our hare; we pay our wine, our bread, and our salt with the two partridges, and we give the quail to the waiter. We have nothing then to provide for but your horse, which may be well done for three francs a day.” “But we have only one gun!”—“It is all we want; one of us will shoot, the other will follow on horseback. In this manner, it being sixteen leagues to Paris, we shall have only eight leagues each.” “And the game-keepers?”—“Ah, a precious obstacle! The one of us who is on horseback describes them at a distance; he gives due warning to the one who is shooting. The horseman dismounts, the sportsman mounts and gallops off the beat. As for the dismounted horseman, the keeper overtakes him, and finds him strolling along with his hands in his pockets.” “What are you doing here?”—“I! you see what I am doing.” “Never mind, let us hear.”—“I am taking a walk.” “Just now you were on horseback.”—“Well, is it contrary to law to take a walk after a ride?” “No, but you were not alone.”—“That may be.” “Your companion was shooting.” “You don’t say so.” “He is down there on horseback with his gun.”—“If so, run after him and try to catch him.” “But I can’t run after him and catch him, since he is on horseback and I am on foot.”—“In this case, my friend, your better course would be to go to the first village and drink our health.” “Whereupon we—you or I—give him a franc, which is set down to our account of profit and loss; the keeper makes his bow, and we continue our journey.” “Well, well, exclaimed Paillot, that is not badly imagined. I had heard that you had tried your hand at play writing.” “It is precisely to see Leuven on the subject of my attempts in this line that I wish to go to Paris. Well, once at Paris——”

The scheme was forthwith put in practice. They started the same evening for Paris, where they arrived the night following, with four hares, twelve partridges, and two quails, for which the landlord of an hotel in the Rue des Vieux Augustins agrees to lodge and board them for two days and present them with a paté and a bottle of wine at parting. Dumas’s grand object was to see Talma, and his first visit is to a literary friend, who introduces him to the great actor at his toilette:—

“Talma was very shortsighted. I do not know whether he saw me or not. He was washing his chest. His beard was nearly all shaved, which particularly struck me, insomuch as I had heard a dozen times that in *Hamlet* at the appearance of the father’s ghost, Talma’s hair was seen to stand on end. It must be owned that the aspect of Talma under these circumstances was far from poetical. However, when he stood upright, when, with the upper part of the body uncovered and the lower part enveloped in a kind of large mantle of white cloth, he took one of the ends of this mantle and drew it on his shoulder, so as to half-veil the breast; there was something imperial in the movement that made me tremble. Leuven explained the object of our call.

Talma

Talma took up a kind of ancient stylus, at the end of which was a pen, and signed us an entrance ticket for two.'

What follows is characteristic. *Virgilium tantum vidi*; and our autobiographer cannot trust his readers to complete the natural train of association, but must fain suggest that the first meeting between the great actor and the great dramatist is not to be passed over as an every-day occurrence:—

'He held out his hand to me. I longed to kiss it. With my dramatic notions, Talma was a god for me; an unknown god, it is true—unknown as Jupiter was to Sémélé—but a god who appeared to me in the morning, and was to reveal himself to me at eve. Our hands touched. Oh, Talma, if you had then twenty years less, or I twenty years more! Alike honour was for me, Talma. I knew the past; you could not divine the future. If you had been told, Talma, that the hand you had just clasped would write sixty or eighty dramas, in each of which you, who were looking out for parts all your life, would have found a part that you would have converted into a marvel, you would hardly have parted so easily with the poor young man who coloured up to the eyes at having seen you, and was proud of having touched your hand. But how could you have seen this in me, Talma, since I did not see it in myself?'

An odd ebullition of the same sort once exposed him to a clever rebuke, attributed to Madame Dejazet. Arriving together on a theatrical expedition at Rouen, they were requested by the police to state their respective professions. '*Moi,*' said Dumas, '*si je n'étais pas dans la ville ou fut né le grand Corneille, je me nommerais auteur dramatique.*' '*Et moi,*' said Dejazet, '*si je n'étais pas dans la ville ou fut brûlée Jeanne d'Arc, je me nommerais Pucelle.*' His son, the author of '*La Dame aux Camélias*,' in reference to his complexion and his vanity, said of him: 'My father is capable of getting up behind his own carriage to make people believe that he has a man of colour for footman.' Dumas begins one of his chapters thus:—'I know not who—*perhaps myself*—has said that the Revolution of 1830 was the last shot of Waterloo. *It is a great truth.*' Yet the graceful and truthful apology which Lord Russell has made for Moore's vanity may be made with equal justice for that of Dumas. It is a frank, joyous, and cordial vanity, without the slightest tincture of envy; and, far from seeking to depreciate his distinguished contemporaries, his proudest boast is that he has fairly earned a right to be named along with them:—

'At the epoch of my arrival in Paris (1822), the men who held a rank in literature, the illustrious, amongst whom I came to claim a place, were Chateaubriand, Jouy, Lemercier, Arnault, Etienne, Baour-Lormian, Béranger, C. Nodier, Viennet, Scribe, Théaulon, Soumet, Casimer

Casimer Delavigne, Lucien Arnault, Ancelot, Lamartine, Victor Hugo, Desangiers and Alfred de Vigny. Let it be well understood that, by the order I assign them, I am only naming, not classifying them. Then came the half-literary half-political, as Cousin, Salvandy, Villemain, Thiers, Augustine Thierry, Michelet, Mignet, Vitet, Cavé, Mérimée, and Guizot. Lastly, those, who not being yet known, were to produce themselves by degrees, such as Balzac, Soulié, de Musset, Sainte-Beuve, Auguste Barbier, Alphonse Karr, Théophile Gautier. The women in vogue, all three poets, were Mesdames Desbordes-Valmore, Amable Tastu, and Delphine Gay. Madame Sand, still unknown, was to be first revealed by "Indiana," in 1828 or 1829. I believe I have known all this Pleiad, which has supplied the world of ideas and poetry for more than half a century, some as friends and supporters, the others as enemies and adversaries. The good the former have done me, the evil the latter have attempted to do me, will in no respect influence the judgments I shall pass upon them. The first, by pushing me on, have not caused me to make a step the more; the second, by trying to stop me, have not caused me to make a step the less. Across the friendships, the hates, the envies—in the midst of an existence harrassed in its details, but always calm and serene in its progression—I have reached the place that God had marked out for me; I have reached it without intrigue, without coterie, and never elevating myself but by mounting on my own works. Arrived where I am, namely, at the summit which every man finds at the half-way point of life, I ask for nothing, wish for nothing. I envy nobody, I have many friendships, I have not a single enmity. If, at my starting point, God had said to me, "Young man what do you desire?" I should not have dared to ask from his omnipotent greatness that which he has been graciously pleased to grant me in his paternal goodness. I shall say then of these men whom I have named, so soon as I met them on my road, all that there may be to say of them; if I hide anything, it will be the ill. Why should I be unjust towards them? There is not amongst them a glory or a fortune for which I have ever wished to change my reputation or my purse.

'Yesterday I read upon one of the stones of a house I had had built for myself, and which, whilst waiting for me—me or another—has hitherto lodged only sparrows and swallows—these words, written by an unknown hand: "*O Dumas! tu n'as pas su jouir, et pourtant tu regretteras.*"—E. L. I wrote under, "*Niais! si tu es un homme. Menteuse! si tu es une femme.*"—A. D. But I took good care not to efface the inscription.'

It is difficult to avoid sympathising with a man of genius who pours forth his soul in this fashion, and the egotism may be pardoned for the sake of the frankness and generosity of the burst. Neither, looking at the peculiar character of the writer, do we deem it clear that he formed an erroneous theory of what is called success in life, or that he had much reason to envy the majority

majority of those who, according to their own or the popular estimate, may have made a better use of their opportunities. Every reflecting person must be the best judge of what is necessary to his (or her) happiness, and Dumas was pre-eminently one of those who would repeat after Scott—

‘To all the sons of sense proclaim,  
One glorious hour of crowded life  
Is worth an age without a name.’

He wanted constant agitation and excitement, as well as notoriety. A fixed station, a defined rank, nay, even an established fortune, would have become irksome, fretting, and galling incumbrances when the flush of novelty had passed away. He would have felt like Manon Lescant, when she declared the conventional restraints of constancy and propriety insufferable; when—

‘Virtue she found too painful an endeavour,  
Condemned to live in decencies for ever;’

or like the opium-eater, when he was put upon the short allowance of fifty or sixty drops of laudanum per day; or like Henry Beyle (Stendhal), who, settled in a comfortable consulship, exclaims, ‘How many cold characters, how many geometricians, would be happy, or at least tranquil and satisfied, in my place! But my soul is a fire which dies out if it does not flame up. I require three or four cubic feet of new ideas per day, as a steamboat requires coal.’

It was the remark of an astute man of the world, that if he could choose and portion out a new life he would be a handsome woman till thirty, a victorious general from thirty to fifty, and a cardinal (*i. e.* a cardinal of the olden time) in his old age. A Frenchman of the Restoration and the July monarchy might have hesitated between being a victorious general or an author in renown. ‘Bear in mind,’ wrote Jules Janin, in 1839, ‘that it is now the poets, the novelists, the dramatists, the journalists in renown that have the titles, the coat-armour, the coronets. It is they that people press forward to gaze upon when they enter a room; it is they whose names the very lacquey pronounces with pride when he announces them. Let a Créqui and M. de Chateaubriand enter at the same time, and you will see on which side all heads and all hearts will incline first. Announce M. le Duc de Montmorency and M. de Balzac, and everybody will look first at M. de Balzac.’ Under similar circumstances all eyes would have been turned towards Alexandre Dumas; and when we reflect that what the majority of the world are striving for is to

be

be distinguished amongst their fellows—*quod monstrer digito prætereuntium*—there is little room for surprise that he should have found ample compensation for all his labours and all his trials in his fame.

We left him exulting in the hope of seeing Talma act, and for once the reality did not fall short of the expectation. The play was 'Sylla,' one great attraction of which consisted in the analogy in the hero's fortunes, as depicted by the author of the piece, to those of Napoleon I. After the performance, Dumas was taken to see Talma in his dressing-room, which he found crowded with notabilities :—

'Talma caught sight of me near the door. "Ah, ah," he said, "come forward." I advanced two steps nearer. "Well, Mr. Poet," he continued, "are you satisfied?"—"Better than that, I am lost in wonder." "Well, you must come and see me again, and ask me for more tickets."—"Alas, I leave Paris to-morrow, or the day after at latest." "That's unlucky, you would have seen me in *Regulus*. You know that I have made them fix *Regulus* for the day after to-morrow, Lucien (Arnault, the author)?"—"Yes, I thank you," said Lucien. "What, you cannot stay till the day after to-morrow?"—"Impossible, I must return to the country." "What is your employment in the country?"—"I dare not tell you. I am clerk to a notary." "Bah," said Talma, "you must not despair on that account. Corneille was clerk to a procureur. Gentlemen, I present a future Corneille!" I coloured to the eyes. "Touch my forehead," I said, "it will bring me luck." Talma placed his hand upon my head. "Come then," said he, "so be it. Alexandre Dumas, I baptize thee poet in the name of Shakespeare, Corneille, and Schiller! Return to the country; resume your place in your office, and if thou hast verily the vocation, the angel of poetry will take care to find thee wherever thou art, to carry thee off by the hair of the head like the prophet Habakkuk, and to carry thee where thou hast work to do." I seized his hand, which I tried to carry to my lips. "*Allons, allons*," he exclaimed, "this lad has enthusiasm; we shall make something of him," and he shook me cordially by the hand.'

So ended this memorable interview, and Dumas returns to his province and his desk in a very bad mood for copying deeds or serving processes. His master probably saw that the embryo poet was likely to make a bad clerk; for Dumas immediately received warning that his future services would not be needed, and he forthwith set about the requisite preparations for the definitive transfer of his household gods to the capital. The want of money was the grand difficulty. He owed 150 francs to his tailor, and all his available assets consisted of a dog named Pyramus, famous for voracity. This is not the precise quality which commends or adds value to an animal of the

the canine species, yet it proved the salvation of Dumas. His dog had left him to follow a butcher loaded with half a sheep, and he was in the very act of vainly endeavouring to parry the demands of the tailor, when he was informed that an Englishman requested the honour of his company at a neighbouring inn. On repairing thither, he finds a man, 'from forty to forty-five years of age, of a reddish fair complexion, with hair like a brush, and whiskers shaped like a collar, dressed in a blue coat with metal buttons, a shamois waistcoat, and grey kerseymere breeches, with gaiters to match, such as are worn by grooms. He was seated before a table on which he had just been dining, and which exhibited the remains of a dinner for six. He might weigh from three hundred to three hundred and sixty pounds.' Seated near him, with a depressed look, was Pyramus; and around Pyramus lay ten or a dozen plates, cleaned with that neatness which characterized him in respect to dirty plates. On one, however, lay some unfinished morsels. It was evidently these that caused the depression of Pyramus. '*Venez parler à moâ, Monsieur,*' said the Englishman, '*Le Dog a vos, il pluit a moa.*'" From a dialogue thus commenced and carried on in the same dialect by the stranger, we learn that the dog's power of eating had won his heart, '*Je aimé, moâ,*' he exclaims, '*les animals et les gens qui mangé beaucoup; c'est qu'il ont un bon estomac, et le bon estomac il faisé le bon humour.*'

Our sagacious compatriot, it will be observed, differed slightly from Lord Byron, who envies and commends the gifted mortals who have a bad heart and a good stomach, who feel little and digest well. But so much the better for Dumas, who, after a hard internal struggle with his conscience which is hushed by an opportune reminiscence of the dun, agrees to part with his four-footed friend for the moderate sum of five napoleons, only a third of the price which the fat Englishman was anxious to force upon him.

This anecdote is an apt illustration of the manner in which Dumas and other popular French authors perseveringly foster the prejudices of their countrymen. The fat and fair Englishman, with his broken French and ridiculous eccentricity, still keeps his place in their light literature and on their stage; although nearly half a century has elapsed since we, on this side of the channel, ceased to believe in brown and lean marquisses living on frogs and *soup maigre*, taking enormous quantities of snuff, wearing collars or shirt fronts for want of shirts, and gaining a scanty livelihood as fiddlers or dancing-masters. A still longer period has elapsed since we tolerated, even in a Fielding or a Smollett, the coarseness of expression which has little, if  
at

at all, lessened the popularity or impeded the circulation of 'Paul de Kock,' although the more fastidious portion of the Parisian public may disdainfully set down his works as '*la lecture des grisettes*.' These very Memoirs are occasionally defaced by expressions and allusions for which it would be difficult to find a parallel in any respectable English publication of later date than the editions of Pope containing the Poisoning and the Circumcision of Edmund Curll.

Relieved from difficulty by his dog, like Whittington by his cat, our hero is preparing to start for Paris. The five napoleons having been reduced one-half by a payment on account to the tailor, he hits upon an ingenious expedient for defraying the expenses of his journey. He plays billiards with the bookkeeper of the *diligence* for a *petit verre d'absinthe* a game, and leaves off the winner of 600 glasses, which, at three sous each, make a total gain of ninety francs, enough to pay for twelve places to Paris. He satisfies himself with one, arrives on the scene of his future glory with his fifty francs untouched, and proceeds to look round for a protector amongst the old friends of his father on the strength of his name. He is coldly received by Marshal Gourdain, and narrates as follows the result of his visit to Marshal (then General) Sebastiani:—

'The General was in his cabinet: at the four corners of this cabinet were four secretaries, as at the four corners of our almanack are the four points of the compass or the four winds. These four secretaries were writing to his dictation. It was three less than Cæsar, but two more than Napoleon. Each of these secretaries had on his desk—besides his pen, his paper, and his penknife—a gold snuff-box which he presented open to the general, each time that the latter stopped before him. The General delicately introduced the forefinger and thumb of a hand that his half-cousin Napoleon would have envied for its whiteness, voluptuously inhaled the scent, and then resumed his walk. My visit was short. Whatever my consideration for the General, I felt little disposed to become a snuff-box bearer.'

He is coolly bowed out by another military friend of his father, and calls, as a last resource, on General Foy, to whom he has fortunately the additional recommendation of being the friend and protégé of one of the General's most influential constituents. His reception was favourable, and the following colloquy takes place:—

"I must first know what you are good for."—"Oh, not much." "Of course you know a little mathematics?"—"No, General." "You have at least some notions of algebra, of geometry, of physics?" He paused between each word, and at each word, I felt myself colouring more and more. It was the first time that I was placed face to face with  
my

my ignorance.—“No, General,” I replied, stammering, “I know none of these.” “You have gone through your law course, at all events?”—“No, General.” “You know Latin and Greek?”—“Latin, a little: Greek, not a word.” “Do you speak any living language?”—“Italian.” “Do you understand accounts?”—“Not at all.” I was in torture, and he suffered visibly on my account. . . . “And yet, he resumed, I am unwilling to abandon you.”—“No, General, for you would not abandon me only. I am a dunce, an idler, it is true; but my mother, who reckons upon me, whom I have promised to find a place, my mother ought not to be punished for my ignorance and my idleness.” “Give me your address,” said the General, “I will consider, what can be made of you. There, at this desk.” He offered me the pen with which he had been writing. I took it, I looked at it, wet as it still was; then shaking my head, I returned it to him.—“No, General,” I said, “I will not write with your pen; it would be a profanation.” He smiled. “What a child you are,” he continued. Here then is a new one. I began to write, with the General looking on. Hardly had I written my name than he clapped his hands. “We are saved,” he exclaimed, “You write a good hand.” My head dropped upon my breast—I had no longer strength to bear up against my shame. A good handwriting, this was the sum total of my qualifications. This brevet of incapacity, oh! it was mine beyond dispute.’

This brevet of incapacity, however, has been possessed by a large majority of the most illustrious men of all ages, and it is only within the century that persons of superior education have deemed themselves licensed to indulge in an inconvenient and selfish degree of negligence in this respect. It will appear from any good collection of autographs that, if our ancestors were deficient in orthography, they were proficient in calligraphy, and that they became comparatively careless as to their penmanship about the time when they began to pay strict attention to their spelling. In particular, they invariably made a point of signing their names clearly and distinctly, in marked contrast to the modern fashion, which often renders it impossible to do more than guess at the identity of a correspondent. In the round-robin addressed to Dr. Johnson on the subject of Goldsmith’s epitaph (a facsimile of which is given by Boswell), the names of the most distinguished malcontents—Gibbon, Burke, Sheridan, Colman, Joseph Warton, Reynolds, &c.—although affixed at the dinner-table, bear no marks of haste or slovenliness; and amongst the French authors of the eighteenth century, the two most remarkable for the excellence of their handwriting were Voltaire and Rousseau. The press of public business may be alleged as some excuse for statesmen; whilst the hurry and flutter of composition may account for the bad writing of poets and authors of the imaginative class. When Napoleon first attained power, his

signature was of the orthodox length and character; it gradually shrank to the three first letters (Nap.); and later in his career it consisted of a dash or scrawl intended for an N. Byron latterly wrote a sad scrawl. Yet against these great names may be placed Washington, Wellington, Pitt, Fox, Canning, Peel, Moore, Rogers, Scott, Coleridge, Wordsworth, and a host of famous contemporaries, whose example, we hope, will save both 'young France' and 'young England' from the mischievous error of ever again regarding an eminently useful and becoming accomplishment as a 'brevet of incapacity.'

On the strength of his handwriting, Dumas is received into the establishment of the Duke of Orleans (afterwards King of the French) as a clerk at sixty pounds a year, and is singularly fortunate in finding amongst his companions of the desks one duly qualified to give him some excellent advice as to his literary projects. We shall quote the best of it, the rather that we suspect Dumas of having placed the results of his own studies and experience in the mouth of his friend:—

"Whom then ought one to imitate in comedy, tragedy, the drama?" "In the first place, you ought not to imitate at all: you must study. He who follows a guide must necessarily walk behind. Do you wish to walk behind?"—"No." "Then study. Write neither comedy, nor tragedy, nor drama; take the passions, the events, the characters; melt them all together in the mould of your imagination, and make statues of Corinthian brass." "What is Corinthian brass?" "You do not know?"—"I know nothing." "You are lucky." "In what respect?" "Because you will learn all by yourself; because you will undergo no levelling process but that of your own intelligence, no rule but that of your own capacity for instruction. Corinthian brass? You must have heard that once upon a time Mummius burned Corinth. If so, you may have read that from the heat of the conflagration, gold, silver, and brass had been melted and ran in streams through the streets. Now, the mixture of these three metals, the most precious of all, formed a compound metal, which was called Corinthian brass. Well, he who shall effect, by his genius, for comedy, tragedy, and the drama, that which, unconsciously, in his ignorance, in his barbarism, Mummius did for gold, silver, and bronze,—he who shall melt by the fire of inspiration, and melt in a single mould, Eschylus, Shakspeare, and Molière,—he, my friend, will have discovered a brass as precious as the brass of Corinth.

'I reflected a moment on what Lapagne had said. "What you tell me, I replied, is very fine; and as it is fine it ought to be true." "Are you acquainted with Eschylus?"—"No." "Shakspeare?"—"No." "Molière?"—"Hardly." "Well then, read all that these three have written; when you have read them, read them a second time; when you have read them a second time, learn them by heart—and then—oh, then, you will pass from them to those who proceed from them—

them—from Eschylus to Sophocles, from Sophocles to Euripides, from Euripides to Seneca, from Seneca to Racine, from Racine to Voltaire, and from Voltaire to Chenier. So much for tragedy. Thus, you will be present at this transformation of a race of eagles, ending in parrots.

“And to whom shall I pass from Shakspeare?”—“From Shakspeare to Schiller.”—“And from Schiller?”—“To nobody.”—“But Ducis?”—“Oh, don’t let us confound Schiller with Ducis: Schiller draws inspiration, Ducis imitates; Schiller remains original: Ducis becomes a copyist, and a bad copyist.

“Now for Molière?”—“As to Molière, if you wish to study something worth the trouble, instead of descending, you will ascend from Molière to Terence, from Terence to Plautus, from Plautus to Aristophanes.”

“But Corneille, you have forgotten him, I fancy?—I do not forget him, I place him by himself, because he is neither an ancient Greek, nor an old Roman. He is a Cordovan, like Lucan; you will see, when you compare them, that his verse has a great resemblance to that of the *Pharsalia*.”

\* \* \* \* \*

“And in romance, what is to be done?”—“Everything, as with the theatre.” “I believed, however, that we had excellent romances.” “What have you read in this line?”—“Those of Lesage, of Madame Cottin, and of Pigault-Lebrun.” “What was their effect on you?”—“Those of Lesage amused me, those of Madame Cottin made me shed tears, those of Pigault-Lebrun made me laugh.” “Then you have read neither Goethe, nor Walter Scott, nor Cooper? Read them.

“And when I have read them, what am I to make of them?”—“Corinthian brass, as before; only you must endeavour to add a trifling ingredient which is to be found in neither one of them—passion. Goethe will give you poetry, Walter Scott the study of character, Cooper the mysterious grandeur of the prairie, the forest, and the ocean; but as for passion, you will seek for it in vain in any of them.”

As an indispensable preparation for the historical romance, he is told to read Joinville, Froissart, Monstrelet, Chatelain, Juvénal des Ursins, Montluc, Saulex-Tavannes, l’Estoile, De Retz, Saint Simon, Villars, Madame de la Fayette, Richelieu; and he then begs to have a course of poetic reading marked out for him.

“In the first place, what have you read?”—“Voltaire, Parny, Bertin, Demoustier, Legouvé, Colardeau.” “Good. Forget the whole of them. Read, in antiquity, Homer; amongst the Romans, Virgil; in the middle age, Dante. It is living marrow that I am now prescribing for you.” “And amongst the moderns?”—“Ronsard, Mathurin, Regnier, Milton, Goethe, Uhland, Byron, Lamartine, Victor Hugo, and, above all, a little volume about to appear entitled “*André Chenier*.”

Dumas' first publication was a volume containing three novels, entitled '*Nouvelles Contemporaines*.' He sold four copies, neither more nor less, and having contributed 300 francs (borrowed money) towards the printing, began to turn over in his mind the suggestions of an intelligent publisher: 'Make yourself a name and I will print for you:—'

'There (he continues) was the entire question. Make oneself a name. This is the condition imposed on every man who ever made himself one. This is the condition which at the moment when it was imposed on him, he has asked himself despairingly how he was to fulfil. And yet he has fulfilled it. I am no believer in unknown talent, in undiscovered genius. There were reasons for the suicide of Escousse and Lebras. It is a hard thing to say—but neither one nor the other of these two poor madmen, if he had lived, would have had at the end of twenty years of work, the reputation which the epitaph of Beranger conferred upon them.\* I therefore seriously set about making myself a name, to sell my books and not print them again at half profits.'

It was as dramatist that he was resolved to make the desiderated name; and the time was singularly opportune, for the innovating and vivifying influences which had transformed and elevated the literature of the Restoration were on the point of extending to the stage,—that stage which had survived the monarchy, survived the republic, survived the first empire, and might have survived the second but for the united and co-operating energies of two master spirits, of whom Dumas took the lead. 'Well, M. de Fontanes, have you found me a poet?' was the habitual demand of the would-be Augustus every time he met his improvised Mæcenas. The answer was uniformly in the negative: poetry could not be made to order; poets would not be forthcoming, like armed legions, at the stamp of the iron heel of a despot. Yet they began to crop up abundantly as soon as they were allowed to breathe freely:—

'Their names gave present promise of the immense reverberation they were to produce in the future. Lamartine, Hugo, De Vigny, Sainte Beuve, Méry, Scribe, Barbier, Alfred de Musset, Balzac—these fed with their sap or rather with their blood that large and unique spring of poetry at which the whole nineteenth century, France, Europe, the universe, were to drink. But the movement was not only in this pleiad: an entire soldiery were engaged, co-operating in a

---

\* Escousse and Lebras were two young men who, on the failure of a small piece at a minor theatre, shut themselves up in a garret with a pan of charcoal and suffocated themselves. Escousse left in prose and verse pathetic appeals to the press to do justice to his memory, and especially to state that "Escousse killed himself because he felt his place was not here, because the love of glory did not sufficiently animate his soul, if he had a soul."

general work by particular attacks: it was who should batter the old poetry in breach. Dittmer and Cavé published the *Soirées de Neuilly*: Vitot, the *Barricades* and the *Etats de Blois*: Mérimée the "*Theatre de Clara Gazul*." And observe well that all this was beside the theatre, beside the acting drama, beside the real struggle. The real struggle, it was myself and Hugo—I am speaking chronologically—who were about to engage in it.

This claim is recognised and confirmed by Sir Henry Bulwer (Lord Dalling), writing in the height of the contest between the Classicists and Romanticists, intimately acquainted with both schools and fully imbued with the spirit of the period:

'This (the age of Louis Quatorze) was a great period of the human mind, and, from this period to our own, tragedy has taken but one giant stride. The genius which governed the theatre stood unappalled, when the genius that had founded the throne lay prostrate. The reign of Robespierre did not disturb the rule of Racine. The republican Chenier, erect and firm before the tyranny of Bonaparte, bowed before the tyranny of the Academy. The translations of Ducis were an homage to the genius of Shakspeare but no change in the dramatic art. In M. Delavigne you see the old school modernized but it is the old school. I pass by M. de Vigny who has written "*La Maréchale d'Ancre*:" I pass by M. Soulier, who has written "*Clotilde*:" I pass by the followers to arrive at the chiefs of the new drama, M. Victor Hugo and M. Alexandre Dumas.\*

The bare definition of the rival schools went far in popular opinion to decide the merits of the controversy. 'Romanticism,' says Beyle, 'is the art of presenting a people with the literary works which, in the actual condition of their habits and modes of faith, are capable of affording them the greatest possible amount of pleasure. Classicism, on the contrary, presents them with the literature which afforded the greatest possible amount of pleasure to their great grandfathers.' It was a clear gain to the dramatist to be emancipated from the rigid observance of the unities, to be free to choose subjects from modern history or the ordinary walks of life, to drape them appropriately, and make them talk naturally, instead of being tied down to Greek and Roman models, or rather what passed for Greek and Roman amongst the courtiers of the Grand Monarque. But a revolution in literature and art is as difficult to moderate as a revolution in government: it is idle to play Canute, and say 'thus far shalt thou go and no farther' to the advancing waves of thought: we must take the evil with the good; and it was Victor Hugo himself who drew a parallel between the excesses of the Reign of

\* 'France, Social, Literary, Political.' By Henry Lytton Bulwer, Esq., M.P. In two volumes. London, 1834.

Terror and what he called the nightmares of the new school, as the necessities or inevitable results of progress. The extravagance to which they pushed their doctrine may be collected from the fact that, on the night of their crowning triumph after the first representation of 'Henri Trois,' a party of them formed a ring by joining hands in the *foyer* of the Theatre Français, and danced round the bust of Racine, shouting in chorus, '*Enfoncè, Racine ! Enfoncè, Racine !*' Dumas, to do him justice, never lost his reverence for the best classic models, and in the first of his accepted dramas, 'Christine,' he was obviously still trammelled by their rules. The representation of this play was indefinitely postponed through a theatrical intrigue, which is amusingly detailed in the Memoirs—

'What happened to me during this period of suspense. One of those accidents which only happen to the predestined gave me the subject of Henri Trois as another had given me the subject of Christine. The only cupboard in my bureau was common to Ferisse (his fellow-clerk) and me. In it, I kept my paper: he, his bottles. One day whether by inadvertence or to establish the superiority of his rights, he took away the key of this cupboard. Having three or four documents to transcribe, and being out of paper, I repaired to the accountant's office to get some. A volume of Anquetil lay open upon a desk: I cast my eyes mechanically on the page and read what follows.'

What he read was a scene between the Duc de Guise and the Duchesse, in which the Duc compels her to choose between the dagger and the bowl. This led Dumas to study the domestic history of the pair and the manners of the period. The result was the play familiar to English readers as 'Catherine of Cleves.' It succeeded, and deserved to succeed: the historical portraits were true and life-like; the tone and manners in perfect keeping with the times; and the leading scenes admirably adapted for effect. The part of the Duchess was played by Mademoiselle Mars, who was the tyrant of the green-room as well as the queen of the stage:—

'After the reading, I was summoned to the director's cabinet, where I found Mademoiselle Mars, who began with that sort of brutality which was habitual to her!—"Ah, it is you? We must take care not to make the same *betises* as in 'Christine.' "What *betises*, Madame?"—"In the distribution of parts."—"True, I had the honour of giving you the part of Christine, and you have not acted it."—"That may be: there is a good deal to be said on that subject; but I promise you I will play that of the Duchess of Guise."—"Then, you take it?"—"Of course. Was it not intended for me?"—"Certainly, Madame."—"Well then."—"Therefore I thank you most sincerely." Now, the Duc de Guise. To whom do you give the Duc de Guise?"'

They differ upon this part and two or three others which Dumas refuses to her friends—

“So far so good : now for the page. I play three scenes with him. I give you fair warning that I insist on some one who suits me for this part.”—“There is Madame Menjaud, who will play it to admiration.”—“Madame de Menjaud has talent, but she wants the physical qualities for the part.”—“Oh, this is too much! And doubtless this part is given too?”—“Yes Madame, it is, to Mademoiselle Louise Despreaux.” “Choose her for a page!” “Why not? Is she not pretty?”—“Oh yes, but it is not enough to be pretty.” “Has she not talent?”—“It may come in time; but make that little girl play the page!” “I am ready to listen to any good reason why she should not.”—“Well then, see her in tights; and you will see that she is horribly knockkneed.”

\* \* \* \* \*

‘I made my bow and took my departure, leaving Mademoiselle Mars stupefied. It was the first time an author had held out against her. I must confess, however, that the legs of my page kept running in my head.’

The young lady turned out an unexceptional page in all respects; and Dumas explains that the real objection to her was her youth. Mademoiselle Mars at fifty-one did not wish to be brought into close contact with sweet seventeen.

From the moment Dumas took up the position of—

‘Some youth his parents’ wishes doom’d to cross,  
Who pens a stanza when he should engross,

his official superiors lost no opportunity of finding fault with him, and at length the Duc d’Orleans was overpersuaded to write against his name: *Supprimer les gratifications de M. Alexandre Dumas, qui s’occupe de littérature*. Unabashed by this marked disapproval, Dumas, the day before the first performance of his play, boldly presented himself at the Palais Royal and demanded to speak with his royal master. Under the belief that he came by appointment, he was admitted.

“So, M. Dumas, it is you. What good wind brings you or rather brings you back?”—“Monseigneur, ‘Henri Trois’ is to be brought out to-morrow, and I came to ask a favour or rather an act of justice, to attend my first representation. During a full year passed since your Highness has been assured that I am ‘a vain, headstrong, foolish fellow: during a full year I have maintained that I am a humble and hardworking poet: you have sided, without hearing me, with my accusers. Haply your Highness should have waited: your Highness judged differently and has not waited. To-morrow the cause comes before the public to be judged. Be present, Monseigneur, at the judgment. This is the prayer I am come to prefer.

“With

"With the greatest pleasure," replied the Prince, after a brief hesitation, "but unluckily it is impossible, judge for yourself. I have twenty or thirty princes and princesses to dinner to-morrow." "Does your Highness believe that the first performance of 'Henri Trois' would be a curious spectacle to offer to these princes and princesses?" "How can I offer to them? The dinner is at six and the performance begins at seven."—"Let Monseigneur put on the dinner an hour, I will put off 'Henri Trois' an hour. Your Highness will have three hours to satisfy the appetites of your august guests." "But where shall I put them, I have only three boxes?"—"I have requested the administration not to dispose of the gallery till I should have seen your Highness." "You took for granted then that I should consent to attend."—"I reckoned on your justice. . . . Monseigneur, I appeal to Philip sober."

This was published, and passed unchallenged, when Philip sober was on the throne. The house was crowded with princes and notabilities: twenty louis were given for a box. The fate of the piece hung on the third act, especially on the scene where the Duc, grasping his wife's wrist with his gauntleted hand, compels her to write the note of assignation to Saint Megrin. 'This scene raised cries of terror, but simultaneously elicited thunders of applause: it was the first time that dramatic scenes of such force, I may also say of such brutality, had been risked upon the boards.' At the conclusion of the third act, he hurries off to the sickbed of his mother, and returns just in time to witness a complete success and receive the enthusiastic congratulations of his friends. 'Few men have seen so rapid a change operated in their life as was operated in mine during the five hours that the representation lasted. Completely unknown the evening before, I was the talk of all Paris, for evil or for good, on the morrow. There are enmities, enmities of persons I have never seen, enmities that date from the obtrusive noise made by my name at this epoch. There are friendships, too, that date from it. How many envied me this evening, who little thought that I passed the night on a mattress by the bedside of my dying mother.'

The Duc d'Orleans (Louis Philippe) was present at the second representation also, and called Dumas to his box. After the expected compliments and congratulations, he was informed that he had nearly got his royal patron into a scrape—

"How so, Monseigneur?" "Why, *apropos* of your drama. The king (Charles X.) sent for me yesterday, and began: '*Mon Cousin* (laying a marked emphasis on our relationship), I am told that you have in your employment a young man who has written a play in which we both have parts, I that of Henri Trois, and you that of the Duc de Guise.'—"Your highness might have replied that this young  
man

man was no longer in your employment." "No, I declined saying what was not true, for I retain you." I replied, 'Sire, you have been misinformed for three reasons. The first is that I do not use personal violence to my wife; the second, that she is not unfaithful to me; the third, that your Majesty has no more faithful subject than myself.' Is not this a better reply than the one you suggested to me?"

An attempt was made to prevent the second representation of the piece through the censorship, and, on this failing, a formal protest against its admission into the repertory of the Theatre Français, signed by seven men of letters more or less eminent, was presented to the King, who replied, in terms no doubt suggested by his Minister, Martignac:—

"Messieurs: Je ne puis rien pour ce que vous desirez; je n'ai, comme tous les Français, qu'une place au parterre."

The utmost that could be urged against the originality of this play was that two or three incidents had been borrowed and turned to good account. The act of violence by which the Duc de Guise extorts the signature of his wife was probably suggested by the scene in 'The Abbot' between Lord Lindsay and Queen Mary. In 'The Conspiracy of Venice,' Fiesco's suspicions are excited by finding his wife's handkerchief wet with tears in a room which she and Calcagno have just left; and the Duchesse de Guise's handkerchief, found in a compromising spot, is what first turns the Duc's suspicions on her lover. This incident gave rise to the following epigram, preserved by Lord Dalling:—

'Messieurs et Mesdames, cette pièce est morale,  
Elle prouve aujourd'hui sans faire de scandale,  
Que chez un amant, lorsqu'on va le soir,  
On peut oublier tout—excepté son mouchoir.'

Although the accusation of immorality was unscrupulously brought against the chiefs of the romantic school, they were not more open to it than the classicists in regard to the choice of subjects, so long as these were taken from history. The most repulsive subject ever chosen by either of them, that of 'La Tour de Nesle' for example, was not more repulsive than that of 'Medea' or 'Œdipus;' and neither Lucrece Borgia nor Marion Delorme could be put to shame by Phèdre, who sums up her ruling passion in one line:—

'C'est Venus tout entière à sa proie attachée.'

A plot laid in the middle ages, in a corrupt French or Italian court, should be judged by the same rules as one laid in Thebes or Colchis. Nor should a poet or dramatist be summarily condemned for immorality, merely because he describes immoral actions,

actions, or brings immoral characters on the stage, so long as these are true to nature and correct representatives of their epoch, with its passions, its vices, and its crimes. Dramas can no more be compounded entirely of virtue, than revolutions can be made with rose-water. It was when Dumas abandoned the past for the present, forsook romance for reality, chose his heroes and heroines from modern life, and bade us sympathise with their perverted notions of right and wrong, their systematic defiance of all social ties, their sensuality, and their selfishness,—when, in short, he ‘dressed up the nineteenth century in a livery of heroism, turned up with assassination and incest,’ that he justly fell within the critic’s ban, and gave point to the most stinging epigram levelled at his school:—

‘A croire ces Messieurs, on ne trouve dans les rues,  
Que des enfants trouvés et des femmes perdues.’

In his drama of ‘Antony’ he set all notions of morality at defiance; yet his bitterest opponents were obliged to confess that it bore the strongest impress of originality, and that its faults were quite as much those of the epoch, of the applauding public, as of the author. ‘It contains,’ says one of them, ‘badly put together, illogical and odious as it is, scenes of touching sensibility and intense pathos.’ ‘It is perhaps the play,’ says Lord Dalling, ‘in which the public have seen most to admire. The plot is simple, the action rapid; each act contains an event, and each event develops the character, and tends to the catastrophe.’

Antony is a man formed after the Byronic model, gloomy and saturnine, whose birth (illegitimate) and position are a mystery. He is in love with Adèle, a young lady of family and fortune, who returns his passion, but not venturing to propose to her, he suddenly disappears, and is absent for three years; at the end of which he returns to find her the wife of Colonel d’Hervey, with a daughter.

In the first Act an opportune accident causes him to be domiciled in her house whilst her husband is away.\* Explanations take place. He eloquently expatiates on his love, his heart-broken condition, his despair; and Adèle, distrusting her own powers of prolonged resistance, suddenly gives him the slip, orders post-horses, and makes the best of her way to join the Colonel at Frankfort. She is pursued by Antony, who passes her on the road, arrives first at the little inn at which she is

---

\* *Appropos* of plagiarism, this mode of bringing the lover under the conjugal roof is employed by Charles de Bernard in his fascinating novel, ‘Gerfault.’

compelled to sleep for want of post-horses, and makes arrangements as to rooms, which may be collected from the result.

'Adèle. Jamais il n'est arrivé d'accident dans cet hôtel ?

L'Hotesse. Jamais . . . Si Madame veut, je ferai veiller quelqu'un ?

Adèle. Non, non . . . au fait, pardon . . . laissez-moi . . . (*Elle rentre dans le cabinet et ferme la porte*).

Antony paraît sur le balcon, derrière la fenêtre, casse un carreau, passe son bras, ouvre l'espagnolette, entre vivement, et va mettre le verrou à la porte par laquelle est sortie l'hotesse.

Adèle (*sortant du cabinet*). Du bruit . . . un homme . . . ah ! . . .

Antony. Silence ! . . . (*La prenant dans ses bras et lui mettant un mouchoir sur la bouche*.) C'est moi . . . moi, Antony . . . (*Il l'entraîne dans le cabinet*).'

This is the end of the third Act. In the fourth, the lovers are again in Paris and suffering tortures from the sarcasms and covert allusions of their social circle, in which their inn adventure has got wind. Antony, hearing that the Colonel will arrive within the hour, has only just time to prepare Adèle for the meeting. We borrow Lord Dalling's translation of the catastrophe :—

'Adèle. Oh ! it's he. . . . Oh ! my God ! my God ! Have pity on me ! pardon, pardon !

Antony. Come, it is over now !

Adèle. Somebody's coming upstairs . . . somebody rings. It's my husband—fly, fly !

Antony (*fastening the door*). Not I—I fly not . . . Listen ! . . . You said just now that you did not fear death.

Adèle. No, no . . . Oh ! kill me, for pity's sake.

Antony. A death that would save thy reputation, that of thy child ?

Adèle. I'll beg for it on my knees.

(*A voice from without, "Open, open ! break open the door !"*)

Antony. And in thy last breath thou wilt not curse thy assassin ?

Adèle. I'll bless him—but be quick . . . that door.

Antony. Fear nothing ! death shall be here before any one. But reflect on it well—death !

Adèle. I beg it—wish it—implore it (*throwing herself into his arms*)—I come to seek it.

Antony (*kissing her*). Well then, die.

(*He stabs her with a poniard*.)

Adèle (*falling into a fauteuil*). Ah !

(*At the same moment the door is forced open, Col. d'Hervey rushes on the stage*.)

#### SCENE IV.

Col. d'Hervey, Antony, Adèle, and different servants.

Col. d'Hervey. Wretch !—What do I see ?—Adèle !

Antony. Dead, yes, dead !—she resisted me, and I assassinated her. (*He throws his dagger at the Colonel's feet*.)'

In point of conventional delicacy or propriety, the action of this play is not more objectionable than 'La Grand Duchesse,' and even the concluding scene of the third Act is not more hazardous than the critical one in 'Tartuffe,' nor than the famous scene in 'Les Intimes,' which, after an unavailing remonstrance from our decorous and esteemed Lord Chamberlain, Mademoiselle Fargueil played not many weeks since, in her own manner, to one of the most aristocratic audiences which this metropolis could supply. But the profound immorality, the ingrained corruption and perversion of principle, the mockery of sensibility, which pervade 'Antony,' and struck a sympathetic chord in a highly cultivated audience (half the notabilities of Paris being present at the first representation) are positively startling. There is nothing to idealise; nothing to throw a delusive halo over vice; not a particle of ennobling passion—

‘That exquisite passion—ay, exquisite, even  
In the ruin its madness too often hath made,  
As it keeps even then a bright trace of the heaven,  
The heaven of virtue, from which it has strayed.’

What one redeeming quality has Adèle, who only shrinks from remaining under the conjugal roof, and affecting innocence, for fear of discovery? What one redeeming quality has Antony, if we except the nerve to perpetrate crime and the courage to face the criminal court? He is hard, selfish, material, brutal throughout; and the crowning atrocity is an absurdity. There is a charming novel by Count de Jarnac in which the hero endures torture, and is ready to endure death, rather than compromise a woman. This is natural and (it is to be hoped) not very improbable. But how could Antony hope to silence a scandal, which was already the talk of Paris, by deepening it? What human being would believe that he had killed his known, almost avowed, mistress for resisting him! But the French mind, or rather the mind of the French play-going public, is so constituted that a moral paradox or sentimental extravagance fascinates them, and they will applaud impulsively whatever creates a sensation or excites, however false or foolish in conception or in act. And that public, when 'Antony' was brought out, was still seared and disordered, still seething and surging, from the Revolution of July. The subversive spirit was in the ascendant: established rules and principles had shared the fate of established institutions: the legitimate drama had fallen with the legitimate monarchy; and the Academy was at a discount like the throne.

The sole place of refuge for the classic muse, the single fane at which the sacred fire was still kept burning by her worshippers, was the Theatre Français. Yet it only escaped profanation by a caprice. 'Antony' had been accepted there: an early day had been fixed for the first representation, and the company were assembled for the last rehearsal, when Dumas hurries in with excuses for being late, and the following dialogue takes place between him and Mademoiselle Mars, who was to play Adèle:—

'Mars. The delay is of no consequence; you have heard what has happened? We are to have a new chandelier, and be lighted with gas!

D. So much the better.

M. Not exactly; I have laid out 1200 francs (sixty pounds) for your piece. I have four different *toilettes*.\* I wish them to be seen; and since we are to have a new chandelier——

D. How soon?

M. In three months.

D. Well!

M. Well, we will play *Antony* to inaugurate the new lustre.'

The new lustre was a pretence. The company of the classical theatre had resolved not to act the piece. It was immediately transferred to the more congenial atmosphere of the Porte St. Martin, to which Victor Hugo emigrated about the same time; and this theatre thenceforth became the head-quarters of their school. The part of Adèle was played by Madame Dorval, and played *con amore* in every sense of the phrase. On learning the arrival of her husband, Adèle exclaims, *Mais je suis perdue, moi!* At the last rehearsal, Madame Dorval was still at a loss how to give full effect to these words, and, stepping forward, requested to speak to the author. 'How did Mademoiselle Mars say *Mais je suis perdue, moi?*' 'She was sitting down, and she stood up.' 'Good,' replied Dorval, 'I will be standing up, and sit down.' On the first night of the performance, owing to some inadvertence, the arm-chair into which she was to drop was not properly placed, and she fell back against the arm, but the words were given with so thrilling an expression of despair that the house rang with applause.

The key to the plot being in the last position and last words, the angry disappointment of the audience may be guessed, when one evening the stage-manager let down the curtain as soon as Antony had stabbed Adèle. *Le dénouement! Le dénouement!* was the sustained cry from every part of the house;

---

\* We beg our female readers to mark this and meditate on it. Four complete *toilettes* or costumes for sixty pounds!

till Madame Dorval resumed her recumbent position as dead or dying woman to complete the performance. But Bocage (who acted Antony), furious at the blunder, stayed away, and the call was renewed in menacing tones, when Dorval raised her drooping head, reanimated her inert form, advanced to the foot-lights, and in the midst of a dead silence, gave the words with a startling and telling variation: *Messieurs, je lui résistais, il m'a assassinée.* Dumas complacently records this incident with apparent unconsciousness of the ridicule which it mingles with the supposed pathos or horror of the catastrophe.

The chief honours of the poetical revolution are assigned by Dumas to Lamartine and Hugo, but the dramatic revolution, he insists, began with the first representation of 'Henri Trois.' Hugo, an anxious spectator, was one of the first to offer his congratulations. 'It is now my turn,' were his words to Dumas, 'and I invite you to be present at the first reading.' The day following he chose his subject; and 'Marion Delorme,' begun on the 1st June, 1829, was finished on the 27th. Dumas was true to his engagement, and at the end of the reading he exclaimed to the Director—'We are all done brown (*flambés*) if Victor has not this very day produced the best piece he ever will produce—only I believe he has.' 'Why so?' 'Because there are in "Marion Delorme" all the qualities of the mature author, and none of the faults of the young one. Progress is impossible for any one who begins by a complete or nearly complete work.'

'Marion Delorme' was stopped by the Censorship, and did not appear till after 'Antony.' The striking similarity between the two heroes of the two pieces respectively, raised and justified a cry that one was copied from the other, and suspicion fell upon Hugo, who came last before the public; when Dumas gallantly stepped forward and declared that, if there was any plagiarism in the matter, he was the guilty person, since, before writing 'Antony,' he had attended the reading of 'Marion Delorme.'

An amusing instance of the manner in which Hugo was piqued into abandoning the Theatre Français for the Porte St. Martin, is related by Dumas. At the rehearsal of 'Hernani,' the author, as usual, being seated in the pit, Mademoiselle Mars, who played Doña Sol, came forward to the foot-lights, and shading her eyes with her hand and affecting not to see Hugo, asked if he was there. He rose and announced his presence:—

"Ah, good. Tell me, M. Hugo, I have to speak this verse—  
Vous êtes mon lion ! Superbe et généreux.

"Yes, Madame, Hernani says—

Helas !

Helas ! j'aime pourtant d'un amour bien profond !  
 Ne pleure pas . . . mourons plutot. Que n'ai-je un monde,  
 Je te le donnerais ! . . . Je suis bien malheureux."

"And you reply—

Vous êtes mon lion ! Superbe et généreux.

"And you like that, M. Hugo ? To say the truth, it seems so droll for me to call M. Firmin *mon lion*."

"Ah, because in playing the part of Doña Sol, you wish to continue Mademoiselle Mars. If you were truly the ward of Ruy Gomez de Sylva, a noble Castilian of the sixteenth century, you would not see M. Firmin in *Hernani* ; you would see one of those terrible leaders of bands that made Charles V. tremble in his capital. You would feel that such a woman may call such a man her *lion*, and you would not think it droll."

"Very well ; since you stick to your lion, I am here to speak what is set down for me. There is *mon lion* in the manuscript, so here goes, M. Firmin—

Vous êtes mon lion ! Superbe et généreux."

At the actual representation she broke faith, and substituted *Monseigneur* for *mon lion*, which (at all events from the author's point of view) was substituting prose for poetry. Nothing can be more injudicious or vain than the attempt to tone down a writer of originality or force ; for the electric chain of imagination or thought may be broken by the change or omission of a word. The romantic school which delighted in hazardous effects,—in effects often resting on the thin line which separates the sublime from the ridiculous,—could least of all endure this description of criticism. Dumas suffered like his friend ; and their concerted secession to the Porte St. Martin was a prudent as well as inevitable step.

At this theatre Dumas was like the air, a chartered libertine ; and here he brought out a succession of pieces, which, thanks to his prodigality of resource and unrivalled knowledge of stage effect, secured and permanently retained an applauding public, although many of them seemed written to try to what extent the recognised rules of art might be set aside. To take 'La Tour de Nesle,' for example, we agree with Lord Dalling, that judging by the ordinary rules of criticism, it is a melodramatic monstrosity ; but if you think that to seize, to excite, to suspend, to transport the feelings of an audience, to keep them with an eye eager, an attention unflagged, from the first scene to the last—if you think that to do this is to be a dramatist, that to have done this is to have written a drama—bow down to M. Dumas or M. Gaillard, to the author of 'Tour de Nesle' whoever he be, that man is a dramatist, the piece he has written is a drama,—

‘Go and see it! There is great art, great nature, great improbability, all massed and mingled all together in the rapid rush of terrible things, which pour upon you, press upon you, keep you fixed to your seat, breathless, motionless. And then a pause comes—the piece is over—you shake your head, you stretch your limbs, you still feel shocked, bewildered, and walk home as if awakened from a terrible nightmare. Such is the effect of the “Tour de Nésle.”’

Such *was* the effect when Mademoiselle Georges played Marguerite, and Frederic Le Maître, Buridan; and (independently of the acting) the rapid succession of surprises make it a masterpiece in its way. No one can doubt that these are the creation of Dumas, along with everything else that constitutes the distinctive merits or demerits of the piece. We should also say, Go and see Mademoiselle de Belle-Isle; you will follow the action with wrapt and constantly growing interest; and you will listen to sparkling dialogue, exquisitely adapted to the characters.

It was as a dramatist that Dumas became famous, although his world-wide renown is owing to his romances, which he composed at headlong speed, contemporaneously with his dramas, without much adding to his reputation until 1844-45, when he published ‘*Les Trois Mousquetaires*,’ ‘*Vingt ans Après*,’ and ‘*Monte Christo*,’ the most popular of his works. There is hardly an inhabited district, in either hemisphere, in which Dumas, pointing to a volume of one of them, might not exclaim like Johnson pointing to a copy of the duodecimo edition of his Dictionary in a country-house:—

‘*Quæ regio in terris nostri non plena laboris?*’

They have remained the most popular, and remained moreover exclusively associated with his name, although the authorship has been confidently assigned by critics of repute to others, and the most persistent ridicule has been levelled at their conception, their composition, their materials, and their plan. Amongst the most mischievous assailants was Thackeray, in a letter addressed to M. le Marquis Davy de la Pailleterie, printed in the ‘*Revue Britannique*’ for January, 1847. We give a specimen:—

‘As for me, I am a decided partisan of the new system of which you are the inventor in France. I like your romances in one-and-twenty volumes, whilst regretting all the time that there are so many blank pages between your chapters, and so small an amount of printed matter in your pages. I, moreover, like your continuations. I have not skipped a word of “*Monte Christo*,” and it made me quite happy when, after having read eight volumes of the “*Trois Mousquetaires*,” I saw M. Rolandi, the excellent circulating-library man, who supplies me with books, bring me ten more under the title of “*Vingt*

Ans

Ans Après." May you make Athos, Porthos, and Aramis live a hundred years, to treat us to twelve volumes more of their adventures! May the physician (*Médecin*) whose "*Mémoires*" you have taken in hand, beginning them at the commencement of the reign of Louis XV., make the fortunes of the apothecaries of the Revolution of July by his prescriptions!

Innumerable readers would reciprocate in earnest the wishes thus ironically expressed, and Thackeray might have remembered that length is more a merit than an objection so long as interest is kept up. It is strange, too, that he should have hailed Dumas as the inventor of the voluminous novel, particularly after calling attention to the blank pages between his chapters and the small amount of printed matter in his pages. There is an English translation of '*Les Trois Mousquetaires*,' in one royal octavo volume, and of '*Monte Christo*' in three volumes octavo. The seven volumes of '*Clarissa Harlow*' contain more printed matter than the longest of Dumas' romances. Mademoiselle Scudery beats him hollow in length, and might be apostrophised like her brother—

'Bienheureux Scudery, dont la fertile plume,  
Peut tous les mois sans peine enfanter un volume.'

So does Restif de la Bretonne, one of the most popular novelists of the eighteenth century, whose '*Les Contemporaines*' is in forty-two volumes.

So much for length. In point of plot, they are on a par with '*Don Quixote*' and '*Gil Blas*;' in point of incident, situation, character, animated narrative, and dialogue, they will rarely lose by comparison with the author of '*Waverley*.' Compare, for example, the scene in '*Les Trois Mousquetaires*' between Buckingham and Anne of Austria, with the strikingly analogous scene between Leicester and Elizabeth in '*Kenilworth*.'

If Dumas occasionally spun out his romances till they grew wearisome, it was not because he was incapable of compressing them. His '*Chevalier d'Harmenthal*,' which we ourselves are inclined to consider one of his best novels, is contained in three volumes. His '*Impressions de Voyage*' abound in short novels and stories, which are quite incomparable in their way, like pictures by Meissonnier and Gerome. Take for dramatic effect the story told by the monk of '*La Chartreuse*;' or, for genuine humour, that of Pierrot, the donkey, who had such a terror of both fire and water that they were obliged to blind him before passing a forge or a bridge. The explanation is, that two young Parisians had hired him for a journey; and having recently suffered from cold, they hit upon an expedient which they carried into execution without delay. They began by putting a layer of wet turf upon

his back, then a layer of snow, then another layer of turf, and lastly a bundle of firewood, which they lighted, and thus improvised a moveable fire to warm them on their walk. All went well till the turf was dried and the fire reached poor Pierrot's back, when he set off braying, kicking, and rolling, till he rolled into an icy stream, where he lay for some hours; so as to be half frozen after being half roasted. Hence the combination of hydrophobia and pyrophobia which afflicted him.

Where Dumas erred and fell behind was in pushing to excess the failing with which Byron reproached Scott—

‘Let others spin their meagre brains for hire,  
Enough for genius if itself inspire.’

He could not resist the temptation of making hay whilst the sun shone—of using his popularity as if, like the purse of Fortunatus, it had been inexhaustible—of overtaking his powers till, like the overtaken elephant, they proved unequal to the call. There was a period, near the end of his life, when Theodore Hook, besides editing a newspaper and a magazine, was (to use his own expression) driving three novels or stories abreast—in other words, contemporaneously composing them. Dumas boasts of having engaged for five at once; and the tradesmanlike manner in which he made his bargains was remarkable. ‘M. Véron (the proprietor of the ‘*Constitutionnel*’) came to me and said: “We are ruined if we do not publish, within eight days, an amusing, sparkling, interesting romance.” “You require a volume: that is 6000 lines, that is 135 pages of my writing. Here is paper; number and mark (*paraphez*) 135 pages.”’

Sued for non-performance of contract, and pleading his own cause, he magniloquently apostrophised the Court. ‘The Academicians are Forty. Let them contract to supply you with eighty volumes in a year: they will make you bankrupt! Alone I have done what never man did before, nor ever will do again.’ We need hardly add that the stipulated work was imperfectly and unequally done—

‘Sunt bona, sunt mediocria, sunt mala plura.’

Du Halde is said to have composed his ‘*Description Géographique et Historique*’ of China without quitting Paris, and Dumas certainly wrote ‘*Quinze Jours au Sinai*’ and ‘*De Paris à Astracan*,’ without once setting foot in Asia. But most of his ‘*Impressions de Voyage*,’ in France, Italy, Spain, &c., were the results of actual travel; and his expedition to Algeria in a Government steamer, with a literary mission from the Government, gave rise to an animated debate in the Chamber of Deputies (February 10, 1847), in which he was rudely handled till M. de Salvandy

Salvandy (Minister of Public Instruction) came to the rescue, and, after justifying the mission, added—'The same writer had received similar missions under administrations anterior to mine.' Dumas (we are assured) meditated a challenge to M. Leon de Malleville for injurious words spoken in this debate, and requested M. Viennet, as President of the Society of Men of Letters, to act as his friend. M. Viennet, after desiring the request to be reduced to writing, wrote a formal refusal, alleging that M. Dumas, having in some sort, before the civil tribunal of the Seine, abdicated the title of man of letters to assume that of marquis, had no longer a claim on the official head of the literary republic. Hereupon the meditated challenge was given up. The representation of '*Les Mohicans de Paris*,' a popular drama brought out by Dumas in 1864, having been prohibited by the Censorship, he addressed and printed a spirited remonstrance to the Emperor:

'Sire,—There were in 1830, and there are still, three men at the head of French literature. These three men are Victor Hugo, Lamartine, and myself.

'Victor Hugo is proscribed; Lamartine is ruined. People cannot proscribe me like Hugo; there is nothing in my life, in my writings, or in my words, for proscription to fasten on. But they can ruin me like Lamartine; and in effect they are ruining me.

'I know not what ill-will animates the censorship against me. I have written and published twelve hundred volumes. It is not for me to appreciate them in a literary point of view. Translated into all languages, they have been as far as steam could carry them. Although I am the least worthy of the three, these volumes have made me, in the five parts of the world, the most popular of the three; perhaps because one is a thinker, the other a dreamer, and I am but a vulgariser (*vulgarisateur*).

'Of these twelve hundred volumes, there is not one which may not be given to read to a workman of the Faubourg St. Antoine, the most republican, or to a young girl of the Faubourg St. Germain, the most modest, of all our faubourgs.'

His politics were never incendiary or dangerous in any way. They were always those of a moderate Republican, and he consistently adhered to them. His best romances rarely transgress against propriety, and are entirely free from that hard, cold, sceptical, materialist, illusion-destroying tone, which is so repelling in Balzac and many others of the most popular French novelists. But Dumas must have formed a strange notion of the young ladies of the noble Faubourg to suppose that they could sit out a representation of '*Antony*' or '*Angèle*' without a blush. After recapitulating the misdeeds of the imperial censorship and the enormous losses he had sustained, he concludes:—

‘I appeal, then, for the first time, and probably for the last, to the prince whose hand I had the honour to clasp at Arenenberg, at Ham, and at the Elysée, and who, having found me in the character of proselyte on the road of exile and on that of the prison, has never found me in the character of petitioner on the road of the Empire.’

The Emperor, who never turned a deaf ear on a proselyte or companion on either road, immediately caused the prohibition to be withdrawn. Amongst the many strange episodes of Dumas’ adventurous and erratic career was his connection with Garibaldi, who made him Director of the Museum at Naples during the interregnum. The illness which ended with his death, brought on a complete paralysis of all his faculties, and he died towards the close of 1870, happily insensible to the hourly increasing disasters and humiliations of his country.

Occurring at a less anxious and occupied period, his death would have been commemorated as one of the leading events of the year, and it would hardly have been left to a foreign journal to pay the first earnest tribute to his memory. Take him for all in all, he richly merits a niche in the Temple of Fame; and what writer does not who has been unceasingly before the public for nearly half a century without once forfeiting his popularity? whose multifarious productions have been equally and constantly in request in London, Paris, St. Petersburg, Vienna, Calcutta, Sydney, and New York. Think of the amount of amusement and information he has diffused, the weary hours he has helped to while away, the despondency he has lightened, the sick-beds he has relieved, the gay fancies, the humorous associations, the inspiriting thoughts, we owe to him. To lie on a sofa and read eternal new novels of Marivaux and Crebillon, was the *beau idéal*, the day dream, of Gray, one of the finest and most fastidious minds of the eighteenth century; and what is there of Marivaux or Crebillon to compete in attractiveness with the wondrous fortunes of a Monte Christo or the chivalrous adventures of a D’Artagnan?

A title to fame, like a chain of proofs, may be cumulative. It may rest on the multiplicity and universality of production and capacity. Voltaire, for example, who symbolizes an age, produced no one work in poetry or prose that approximates to first rate in its kind, if we except ‘Candide’ and ‘Zadig;’ and their kind is not the first. Dumas must be judged by the same standard; as one who was at everything in the ring, whose foot was ever in the stirrup, whose lance was ever in the rest, who infused new life into the acting drama, indefinitely extended the domain of fiction, and (in his ‘*Impressions de Voyage*’) invented a new literature of the road. So judged—as he will be,

when French criticism shall raise its drooping head and have time to look about it—he will certainly take rank as one of the three or four most popular, influential, and gifted writers that the France of the nineteenth century has produced.

- 
- ART. VIII.—1. *A Refutation of the Wage-Fund Theory of Modern Political Economy as enunciated by Mr. Mill, M.P., and Mr. Fawcett, M.P.* By Francis D. Longe, Barrister-at-Law. London, 1866.
2. *On Labour: Its Wrongful Claims and Rightful Dues; Its Actual Present and Possible Future.* By William Thomas Thornton, Author of 'A Plea for Peasant Proprietors,' &c. Second Edition. London, 1870.
3. *Pauperism: Its Causes and Remedies.* By Henry Fawcett, M.A., M.P., Fellow of Trinity Hall, and Professor of Political Economy in the University of Cambridge. London, 1871.
4. *Systems of Land Tenure in Various Countries.* A Series of Essays published under the Sanction of the Cobden Club. London, 1870.
5. *Land Systems and Industrial Economy of Ireland, England, and Continental Countries.* By T. E. Cliffe Leslie, LL.B., of Lincoln's Inn, Barrister-at-Law, Examiner in Political Economy in the University of London, and Professor of Jurisprudence and Political Economy in the Queen's University in Ireland, and Queen's College, Belfast. London, 1870.
6. *Programme of the Land Tenure Reform Association.* With an Explanatory Statement by John Stuart Mill. London, 1871.
7. *Trades' Unions Abroad, and Hints for Home Legislation, Reprinted from a Report on the Amsterdam Exhibition of Domestic Economy for the Working Classes.* By the Hon. T. J. Hovell Thurlow. Second Edition. London, 1871.

WE have no objection to Utopias frankly set forth as such, whether in prose or verse.\* The ideal aim of one age may become the realized possession of an age following. Nor have we any objection to enthusiasm which knows itself, and knows the workday world. Without enthusiastic motive-power, no great moral or social enterprise was ever accomplished. But there is an Utopianism which counts its chickens before they

---

\* See a rather remarkable lyrical effusion, entitled 'Labour's Utopia,' at p. 460 of Mr. Thornton's volume 'On Labour.'

are hatched, nay, cackles over chickens it expects to hatch from eggs that are addled. There is an enthusiasm which a writer before us, who yet avows himself an enthusiast, describes with great justice as follows :—

‘The besetting sin of enthusiasts, and notably of enthusiastic philanthropists, is a proneness to anticipate events, a desire to legislate as if mankind were already what it is barely conceivable that they may become, and to force upon them institutions to which they can only be fitted by long ages of training, instead of beginning by endeavouring to educate them into fitness for the institutions.’\*

This is excellent sense, and we could only have wished that all the Utopianisms of the writer, as well as those of all his fellow-‘enthusiasts’ amongst contemporary economists, resembled the preceding extract in sobriety of sentiment and expression.

A former generation of political economists laid themselves more or less open to the charge of assigning to individual activity, exclusively occupied in the pursuit of wealth, the lion’s share in the entire economy of nations. Thence in part the reaction which in these days we witness. Thence, in quarters where one would least have been prepared to look for them, the tendencies in a socialistic direction which have been very perceptible in some of the most remarkable economical publications of late years.

The school of political economists at present in the ascendant seem to have an implicit faith in legislative omnipotence, whenever it thinks fit to exert itself, to remodel all industrial and social relations in the supposed interest of the labouring classes. If Mr. Mill, the recognized leader of that school, is to be designated as an economical ‘enthusiast’—or perhaps more properly as the founder and propagator of economic enthusiasm amongst the junior apostles of the philanthropic agrarianism he preaches (Mr. Thornton will scarcely rank as a junior, but rather as a senior prophet of that creed)—he has earned that designation more by the excessive exercise of the dialectical than of the imaginative faculty, and does not so much body forth to himself the forms of things unknown, as suggest to his disciples revolutions, unrealised even in imagination, of all existing relations between classes and sexes—as *logically* admissible, and not to be set aside as practically chimerical without actual experiment. His enthusiasm is the speculative passion of starting ever fresh game in the wide field of abstract social possibilities—philosophically indifferent to all objections drawn from the actual conditions

---

\* ‘On Labour,’ p. 121.

of men, women, or things in the concrete. Mr. Mill would be very capable, like Condorcet, of deriving from the doctrine of human perfectibility the inference that there was no demonstrable reason why the duration of human life might not be prolonged indefinitely by discoveries (hereafter to be made) in hygiene. And to all objections drawn from universal human experience of the growth and decay of vital power within a limited period, it would be quite in the character of his mind and temper to reply calmly that the life of man, like the genius of woman, had not hitherto been developed under such conditions as to draw out its capabilities to the full extent. Like Condorcet, too, while dealing perturbation all round him, Mr. Mill is imperturbable, and might be described as *he was*, as '*un mouton enragé—un volcan couvert de neige.*'

There is a curious playing at cross-purposes between the recent economical champions of the claims of labour to rank as something else than labour, and receive as its reward something that shall not be called wages, and the practical assertors for their class, so far as combined in Trades' Unions, of the simpler claim of a maximum of wage for a minimum of work. The former (we borrow the words of Mr. Mill) 'cannot think that the working classes will be permanently contented with the condition of labouring for wages as their ultimate state. They may be willing to pass through the class of servants in their way to that of employers, but not to remain in it all their lives.' On the other hand, the whole action of the latter—the Trades' Unionists—tacitly assumes for all who enter their combinations (and rightly assumes in the great majority of cases) the position of life-long wage-receivers. If Unionism is an authentic expression of the views and wishes of the more stirring section of the working classes, it is an expression contradictory of the views and wishes which the school of political economists, headed by Mr. Mill, think those classes must entertain.

Never did a pair of poor correlative terms become the subject of such unreasoning or wrong-reasoning animosity as those of *Labour for Wages*. In the novel vocabulary of national and international labour-leagues, work for wages by manual labourers in the employ of capitalists is denounced as a badge of slavery, and political economists who swear by Mr. Mill are taking up the same strain in milder language. Whereas the only man who works *not* for wages, as M. Edmond About justly observes, is *the slave*.\* Labour for wages—for pay received as the equivalent of work done—as the same lively and acute

\* 'A, B, C du Travailleur,' p. 234. Paris, 1868.

writer says with perfect truth—is the general rule of service, public or private, in the whole social hierarchy; and the one class incited by some who should know better to revolt against that rule as a special injustice and indignity to itself is precisely the class whose simple manual service comes most distinctly under it.

If wage-receiving labour, according to the new doctrine, is the slave, wage-paying capital (according to the same doctrine) is the tyrant of the modern organization of industry. Here, again, that doctrine is precisely the reverse of truth. Everywhere, and at all times, capital is labour's most submissive 'help' or servant. Everywhere, and at all times, the advances of capital are at the service of the effective worker: and to give proof of possession of the qualities of the effective worker is to command the power of the purse. The tyranny of capital is only true in the sense that, by laws as old as the world, those must obey who have not qualities to command; those must be soldiers who are not fit to be officers in the army of industry. Mr. Mill has said that 'the labourers need only capital, not capitalists.'\* Like most smart sayings of the social-revolutionary sort, this is quite beside the mark. What labourers need, speaking generally, is neither capital nor capitalists, so much as the qualities which inspire confidence in capitalists, or even confidence in each other. Capital is always, at least as eagerly as labour, in quest of employment; and, so far from tyrannizing over labour, is always willing to serve it at the lowest living wages, if only coupled with security. It is that security which the ordinary manual labourer is unable to afford. He must look somewhere above him, not so much for capital as for guarantee and guidance. Somebody must be found, whom the capitalist, not himself employing his capital, can feel himself morally safe in trusting with funds to employ profitably in his stead. That somebody is not the hand-worker but the head-worker—the 'captain of industry' in the now well-worn Carlylian phrase. He it is who can alone afford a moral guarantee to the capitalist that the funds entrusted to him shall be employed with a discretion ensuring their replacement with a profit. And everywhere the man who can be trusted with capital is the man whom capital helps to wealth. Working men may organize trades-unions against him, abuse him as their tyrant, echo Mr. Mill's dictum that they want capital only, not capitalists; but work under him they must, if they would have their hand-labour facilitated in its processes, and forwarded to its markets, by the

---

\* 'Fortnightly Review,' June, 1869, p. 689.

aid of capital, machinery, and commercial knowledge and connection.

As to Mr. Mill's notion that the working classes generally are not likely to be permanently contented with the condition of labouring for wages as their ultimate state, it may be replied, firstly, that men and classes are seldom contented with any state in which they happen to find themselves; but, secondly, that what men or classes may be 'willing,' and what they may be able for, are apt to be two different things. Few people perhaps, at the outset of life, would be found exactly willing to accept what, nevertheless, proves to be their ultimate place in it.

No anticipated organization of the labour of the future can be more ungrounded on any induction from the past than that which imagines the main body of the employed as merely passing through the class of servants in their way to that of employers. These latter must always be the *élite* of their class in industrial and intellectual faculties. While there is a mass of manual labour to be done, those must continue to do it, whose economical circumstances or intellectual culture raise them least above their work. Certainly the lowest stratum in the social order should not be a *caste*; and when Mr. Mill talks of 'two hereditary classes, employers and employed,' he assumes the existence of that which does not exist in any free country—some impassable barrier of caste forbidding the ascent of superior minds to superior positions. But there always must remain a lowest social stratum naturally forming the manual labouring class, the reward of whose labour may as well be called wages as by any other name—the thing to be named requiring to be distinguished in degree, if not in nature, from the profits of capital, or the payment of managerial direction and superintendence.

We have said, in *degree* if not in *nature*, since, in truth, of no class in a free country can it be said with accuracy that it is a class exclusively devoted to labour, and destitute of capital. As the exertion of the comparatively rare faculties required for the superintendence of industrial establishments, and the conduct of commercial transactions, entitles capitalist employers (or employers whose credit commands the use of capital) to the title of labourers of the most elevated and the most indispensable order, so the fact of having made savings, or acquired skill, at more or less cost of training, entitles provident and skilled labourers to the designation of capitalists. It is one of the most weighty and serious accusations brought against Trades' Unionism, that it is an actual, if not avowed part of its system,

to prevent such men from earning or saving as much as they otherwise might do in comparison with the less skilled or provident, and, therefore, from rising to that position in the social scale due to their individual energies, were those energies left unshackled.

'It seems inaccurate,' says Sir William Erle, in his 'Memorandum on the Law Relating to Trades' Unions,' 'to contra-distinguish labourers or working men from capitalists or employers, as if they were separate classes; for both classes labour; and the labour of the brain for the employing class may be immeasurably more severe than the labour of the muscles of motion for the working class. The accumulated stores of the mental labour of past ages exceed in value all money capital, or past labour accumulated. These stores must be used by the employer in the degree required by his business; but muscular action may be supplied with very slight recourse to accumulated knowledge in many departments of labour.'

We are not amongst those who regard Trades' Unionism as a monstrous and portentous birth from its very origin. Nothing can be more natural in its first growth than union in some shape amongst men employed in one common occupation, and sensible of one common interest. And nothing could be more certain, in the modern progress of industry, to give concentrated force to that principle of union amongst the working population than the operative multitudes assembled in vast establishments at our great seats of industry. A mill or foundry, collecting work-people by the thousand within one enclosure, may be said to constitute a Trades' Union in itself,\* and all the artificial extension

---

\* On this point we are able to cite the testimony, unexceptionable to that purpose, of Mr. George Potter, who probably did not perceive the inference which the following words must at once suggest to the reader:—

'Take the case of one master on one side, and a thousand men on the other: his position as proprietor, capitalist, and employer, gives him a power which, *if not quite equal to the united power of his thousand men*, is immensely too great for any one among the thousand to cope with single-handed; whereas, *let the whole number combine in one demand for what they conceive to be no more than their due, and then the parties would be equally matched*.'—Contemporary Review, June, 1870, p. 409.

It is not very easy to understand what more can be wanted in the shape of effective representation of the feelings and interests of employed and employers than such an agency as has for some years been supplied by the Boards of Conciliation established in Nottingham, the Staffordshire Potteries and Wolverhampton, of the satisfactory working of which full evidence was given to the Trades' Union Commissioners by Mr. Mundella, M.P., Mr. Hollins, and Mr. Rupert Kettle. 'These Boards,' say the Commissioners in their Final Report, 'require no complicated machinery, no novel division of profits, no new mode of conducting business; they need no Act of Parliament, no legal powers or penalties. All that is needed is that certain representative employers and workmen should meet at regular stated times, and amicably discuss around a table the common interests of their common trade or business. There is not a trade or business in the United Kingdom in which this system might not at once be adopted; and we see no reason why, in every case, results should not follow

extension and elaborate officialism of the later Union organization, seeking to embrace whole trades, nay, to constitute national and even international federations, can add little or nothing to the power possessed already by the operative masses on the spot where employed, by the mere fact of their conscious indispensableness to keep profitably at work the capital engaged in large concerns, and sunk in buildings, machinery, and material. That there will always be union in their common interest amongst masses of workpeople we hold to be as certain as that no ambitiously extended organization of that union can give it a force which does not already belong to it in the nature of things. And it would really seem as if the great body of workpeople were of the same opinion. 'As yet,' says Mr. Thornton, 'there are very few trades in the United Kingdom in which more than 10 per cent. of the men employed are Unionists; there is but one, that of the plasterers, in which as many as half are. In counting up their future conquests they are decidedly reckoning without their hosts. Their progress hitherto has been due less to their own strength than to their opponents' weakness of purpose.'

Mr. Thornton, in his last publication '*On Labour*,' &c., which has attracted more attention from its dashing style of moral paradox and social prophecy than his '*Plea for Peasant Proprietors*' did, some score and odd years back, till Mr. Mill endorsed its most hazarded and amazing statements (of which more anon), somewhere likens himself to Saul sitting at the feet of Mill, his Gamaliel. In this last publication the modern Saul requites in a singular manner the flattering acceptance by his Gamaliel of his former agrarian lucubrations, by taking into his hands the task of showing up the baselessness of a theory on which Mr. Mill (with other economists) had founded his doctrine of wages, and his disbelief of the power of Trades' Unions to effect their artificial elevation. Now, Mr. Thornton has taken it into his head to turn champion of Trades' Unions—though on grounds upon which they certainly would not accept his championship. In assuming it, however,—with ulterior objects which we shall presently see—he had first of all to disarm Mr. Mill of his Wage-fund theory. Very opportunely he found that theory already demolished, and had only to appropriate a demonstration already done to his hand.

We think we hear the unsophisticated reader exclaim, 'What

---

follow from the establishment of Boards of Conciliation, as satisfactory as those at Nottingham and in the Potteries to which we have before referred. Under such a system we should look hopefully for a peaceful, prosperous future for the industry of this country.'

on earth is a *Wage-fund* theory?' Let the unsophisticated reader rejoice with us: a *Wage-fund* theory is a thing—or unthing (to borrow a German idiom)—which is henceforth shunted fairly out of the way of future discussion of all questions affecting labour and labour's wages.

Mr. Longe, the barrister, in a pamphlet published four or five years back, which, at the time of its appearance, received less notice than it deserved—none at all at the hands of the political economists, one of whose fundamental doctrines it refuted—has the merit of having first methodically exposed the so-called *Wage-fund* theory. Mr. Thornton, in the first edition of his above-cited work '*On Labour*,' adopted without acknowledgment Mr. Longe's previously published refutation of that theory, using that refutation as the basis of his own apology for 'Trades' Unions. And Mr. Mill, in two review-articles from his pen \* on Mr. Thornton's first edition, accepted with a good grace his second-hand refutation of that theory, but equally ignored its source. There seems a sort of Japanese etiquette in the matter. It is only to his own hand, aided by that of a selected and sympathizing friend, the illustrious convict can consent to owe his 'happy despatch.' †

In

---

\* '*Fortnightly Review*,' May and June, 1869.

† If we decline to stand by simply assisting as spectators of that Japanese etiquette, it is because we consider Mr. Longe's refutation of the '*Wage-fund* theory' as having exploded, together with that theory, much more of the economical doctrines previously inculcated as orthodox than the most authoritative teacher of those doctrines, Mr. Mill, even now has seen fit to acknowledge. But, in mercy to the general reader, we place the following details of that exploded theory at the foot of our pages, instead of inserting them in the text.

The theory, now exploded, once looked fairly in the face, is absurd in a degree to which nothing could have so long blinded its promulgators but the habit of reliance on abstract reasoning unverified by recurrence to facts. We extract, as follows, Mr. Mill's own enunciation of that theory made in the act of renouncing it:—

'There is supposed to be, at any given instant, a sum of wealth, which is unconditionally devoted to the payment of wages of labour. The sum is not regarded as unalterable, for it is augmented by saving, and increases with the progress of wealth, but it is reasoned upon as at any given moment a predetermined amount. More than that amount it is assumed that the wages-receiving class cannot possibly divide among them; that amount, and no less, they cannot but obtain. So that, the sum to be divided being fixed, the wages of each depend solely on the divisor, the number of participants.'

That is—we quote the words of Mr. Longe—

'we are to regard *capital* as wealth which has been destined by its owners to the definite object of carrying on production by the employment of labourers in their own country. Just as money subscribed to some charity is destined for the objects of such charity. It may have to lie idle for weeks, months, or years, while mercantile or foreign undertakings offer their 10 per cent. profits for its use. Its owners are never to change their minds. It can never be directed from its original object. It cannot be spent unproductively. It cannot be lost, either to its owner, or to the country, or to the labourers, for the purchase of whose labour it has been destined, while its owners were as yet ignorant in what trade, in what production, it should be actually employed.'

This '*aggregate capital*,' predestined exclusively and irreversibly to the function of *wage-fund*, will, it was assumed, with equally predestined certainty, be distributed to the last farthing, by the process of competition, among the different classes of labourers making up the collective entity of the '*general labourer*.'

This

In the preceding foot-note the reader will find in brief compass the substantial refutation of the so-called Wage-fund theory,—a theory which formed the foundation, down to the date of Mr. Mill's imperfect palinode, of the orthodox economic creed on the whole subject of wages of labour. Had any rash champion of plain good sense ventured at an earlier period to question the solidity of that foundation, he would doubtless have been consigned to the *limbus infantum* of immature inquirers, cut off ere they had well crossed the threshold of economic existence, or even perhaps stigmatized by Mr. Fawcett with the epithet of 'practical man' or 'man of business.\*' The modern economist has never thought he could get far enough from the old-fashioned practical man. It must be owned the latter personage was too apt to confound inference with fact, and to claim for illegitimately drawn conclusions from observation and experience the credit due to these latter only. One important advantage, however, the despised practical man has always had over the man of closet-science and 'paper logic.' The former has always had *some* basis of fact, the latter has often had none. We do not hesitate to say that for every error or fallacy which 'scientific' economists have superciliously laid to the account of 'practical men,' we should be able to charge to those same economists another error or fallacy, destitute of any even seeming foundation in fact or experience, and which practical knowledge of the subject-matter of their subtle reasonings would have enabled them to avoid. The editor of the new Oxford edition of the 'Wealth of Nations,' Mr. Thorold Rogers, justly observes in his preface that, 'to be scientific, political economy must be constantly inductive. Half, and more than half, of the fallacies into which persons who have handled the subject have fallen, are the direct outcome of purely abstract speculation.'

This is the crowning absurdity of a theory absurd at all points. Mr. Longe asks—

'How could the shoemakers compete with the tailors, or the blacksmiths with the glass-blowers? Or how should the capital which a master shoemaker saved, by reducing the wages of his journeymen, get into the hands of the master-tailor? Or why should the money, which a reduction in the price of clothes enables the private consumer to spend in other things, go to pay or refund the wages of any other class of labourers belonging to his own country? It would clearly be just as likely to be spent in the purchase of foreign wine or in a trip to Switzerland.'

'The notion of all the labourers of a country constituting a body of *general labourers* capable of competing with each other, and whose "general" or "average" wage depends upon the ratio between their number and the "aggregate" wage-fund, is just as absurd as the notion of all the different goods existing in a country at any given time, *e.g.*, the ships, and the steam-engines, and the cloth, &c., constituting a stock of general commodities, the "general" or "average" price of which is determined by the ratio between the supposed quantity of the whole aggregate stock and the total purchase-fund of the community.'

\* 'The business man,' says Mr. Fawcett, 'assuming a confidence which ignorance alone can give, contemptuously sneers at political economy, and assumes that he is in possession of a superior wisdom which enables him to grapple with all the practical affairs of life, unhampered by theories and unfettered by principles.'—'The Economic Position of the British Labourer,' p. 1.

In no exercise of human intellect, indeed, is it more indispensable that the athlete, from time to time, Antæus-like, should touch earth.

A logical deduction—a deduction expressly drawn by Mr. Mill, in which also he was implicitly followed by Mr. Fawcett—from this henceforth exploded wage-fund figment of a certain predetermined portion of national wealth—exclusively to be distinguished by the title of capital—and constituting a fund inalienably predestined by capitalists to the employment of labour (apparently for labour's own sake) is that this *wage-fund* constitutes the sole effective demand for labour, and that—as Mr. Mill has expressly affirmed—*‘demand for commodities is not a demand for labour.’*

As Mr. Longe was the first demolisher of the doctrinal foundation for this prodigious paradox, so he was the first to contrast with the real course of facts in this workday world the paradoxical superstructure reared, as we have seen, on that foundation. We extract as follows the main points of his answer to Mr. Mill's proposition that *demand for commodities is not demand for labour*, referring our readers to his pamphlet for detailed illustrations drawn from the actual system on which the different industrial trades of this country are commonly conducted:—

‘The demand for commodities *which could be got without labour* would certainly be no demand for labour; but the demand for commodities which can only be got by labour is as much a demand for labour as a demand for beef is a demand for bullocks. Assuming the goods for which there is a demand to have been already produced, the demand for such specific goods would certainly not be a demand for labour; but if such specific goods would not satisfy the demand, the demand for such kind of goods would be a demand for the labour required to increase the supply. It is not “labour” that the employer buys but the labourers’ “work” (*opus* as distinguished from *labor*); and it is the self-same thing that the consumer wants, and the purchaser of commodities buys, whether it is embodied in the materials which the capitalist supplies or not, and whether he buys it directly of the labourer himself, as in the case of the independent workman or working tradesman, or whether he buys it of a master-manufacturer, merchant, or retail dealer, at a price which includes, together with the labourers’ wages, the profits which those intervening dealers require as remunerative for their trouble, and interest on their capital, which has been advanced either in the purchase of materials, or in the payment of wages, or, in the case of the merchant and retail dealer, in the purchase of the finished goods for resale. In the case of the large manufacturing trades, the wages of the workmen employed in producing goods might be, and, probably are, often paid, at least partly, out of the funds supplied by the merchants who purchase the goods which they have made. The funds supplied by the merchant and the

the manufacturer are certainly *capital*, according to the common meaning and use of that term; but they clearly form no part of that "capital" in which, according to Mr. Mill's theory, the "wage-fund" of the labourers consists, for they are not employed in the *maintenance of labour*, but in the *purchase of its products*. Whatever may be the use of the merchant's capital to the manufacturer and labourer, it is clear that neither he nor his capital come within Mr. Mill's theory of the causes which determine the wages of productive labour.\*

It would be interesting to know whether, having unconditionally surrendered the 'Wage-fund theory,' Mr. Mill elects to surrender or adhere to the above-cited deduction from that theory. The one, in our judgment, has been as thoroughly exposed as the other, and, indeed, the superstructure must logically fall with the foundation.

In the meanwhile a rising disciple and zealous champion of Mr. Mill\* has endeavoured to effect a diversion in his master's favour by charging Mr. Longe, whom he curtly designates as 'an assailant of Mr. Mill's theory of wages,' with having fallen into the fallacy that '*all the funds expended upon commodities of whatever kind are expended on labour.*' If Mr. Longe had fallen into that fallacy, he would simply have furnished a pendant to the fallacy he exposed—viz., Mr. Mill's fallacy that demand for commodities was *no demand for labour*. The one fallacy would have been neither less nor greater than the other. But Mr. Longe, as our foregoing extracts have sufficiently shown, expressly guarded his position of demand for commodities being equivalent to demand for labour by the proviso that such commodities should be obtainable only by setting labour at work. And he further guarded himself by anticipation against any such construction as that fastened on him by Mr. Leslie—of having asserted that '*all the funds expended on commodities are expended on labour*'—by stating expressly that the price paid for such commodities must include, together with the labourers' wages, the profits of the intervening dealers between labourer and consumer. To what purpose then of convicting Mr. Longe of a counter-fallacy (which might keep in countenance the prodigious paradox he exposed) does Mr. Leslie cite the case of the cabinet-makers of East London, whom, as he alleges, the furniture-dealers screw down to iniquitously low wages? Suppose they do—how does that impugn the position that demand for chairs is demand for the labour by which chairs are made? How does it palliate the paradox that demand for those chairs is *no demand for that labour*?

---

\* 'Land Systems of Ireland, England, &c.' By T. E. Cliffe Leslie. Appendix. In

In all fields of human study and speculation one extreme is apt to provoke its opposite. It was a currently-received doctrine, within living memory, that the spending class, the more lavish their expenditure, were the more pre-eminently the benefactors of national industry. In eschewing this error, the reigning school of economists have embraced an opposite one of at least equal grossness. From the old fallacy, that the *fruges consumere nati* were the most effective encouragers of native industry, they have rushed to the new fallacy, that a class of wealthy consumers are no encouragers of native industry at all. That Irish absentees, for example, may expend the rents they draw from poor Ireland entirely in foreign countries, without making Ireland any the poorer, was an economical paradox, started by the late Mr. M'Culloch, and adopted by Mr. Mill and his school, who have otherwise no particular respect for Mr. M'Culloch's doctrines. In combating that paradox, the late Lord Rosse, in his pamphlet on Ireland,\* carefully guarded himself against 'being supposed to place productive and unproductive expenditure on the same footing. The former has a tendency to increase the wealth of the country, the latter to keep things as they are; but, even in the latter case, as many who are engaged in providing the objects of unproductive expenditure make fortunes, the wealth of the country is somewhat increased.' The same late noble author says, in another place, with perfect truth, 'The common expression that landlords *consume* a definite proportion of the produce of their estates conveys a very erroneous idea. What a landlord *consumes*, be his estate large or small, is very much what other men consume. The word should be *distribute*.'

That the distribution of wealth secured by the presence of the propertied classes in a country in no manner benefits the producing classes in that country is a proposition, whether advanced in the concrete or the abstract, simply insulting to common-sense. It follows as a consequence, however, and an accepted consequence, from the doctrine propounded, as we said, by Mr. Mill, and echoed unhesitatingly by Mr. Fawcett, that *demand for commodities is no demand for labour*. We repeat, it would be interesting to know whether Mr. Mill is now content to let that doctrine fall with its previously-supposed 'scientific' foundation, or thinks it still susceptible of—and still worth—some other logical underpinning. It is hard to the logical mind to let go a long-cherished paradox. 'In pure mathematics,' said Lord Rosse, in the pamphlet above cited, 'in solving a problem, it is

\* 'A Few Words on the Relation of Landlord and Tenant in Ireland, and in other parts of the United Kingdom.' By the Earl of Rosse. London, 1867.

useful to consider whether the result is probable. In applied mathematics, it is still more necessary to appeal to common-sense. How much more necessary is it in political economy, where the reasoning is often loose and obscure! A learned philosopher, willing to determine trigonometrically the height of Nelson's Pillar, having obtained the necessary data with a tape and sextant, worked out the problem, and found that the top of the Pillar was ten feet below the surface of the ground. He was a wise man, and not resting satisfied with the result, he returned to his figures and found them wrong.'

When Mr. Fawcett implicitly follows Mr. Mill's leading through labyrinths of abstraction, where there is no footing of solid fact, he frequently does a service to economical science, which we are far from undervaluing, by setting himself, in good faith, to illustrate by individual cases Mr. Mill's abstract positions,—a process by which the best possible *reductio ad absurdum* of those positions is supplied (that is to say, of course, when the positions themselves happen to be absurd). Apparently unconscious of the exposure by Mr. Longe, some four or five years back, of the fallacy of Mr. Mill's position that *demand for commodities is not demand for labour*, Mr. Fawcett, in the last edition of his 'Manual of Political Economy' [1869], persists in illustrating it by putting individual cases which complete that exposure. He supposes the case of a person who has a certain amount of property to dispose of in the form of some useful commodity—say corn. He sells a portion of this—say fifty pounds' worth—with which he purchases some useless luxury (by the way, a very unphilosophical way of writing, as all use is relative), say superfine cloth for his own dress, or Brussels lace for his wife's. 'If,' writes Mr. Fawcett, 'it is correct that a demand for commodities is not a demand for labour, then the purchaser of this lace ultimately does no more good to the labourers than would be done if the individual wantonly destroyed the property which has been sold in order to purchase the lace. *The capital of the country, and therefore the fund which is distributed amongst the labourers, is not in any way diminished if an individual should wantonly destroy so much wealth, instead of consuming it unproductively for his own gratification.*'

At the risk of incurring the appellation of 'practical man,' or even 'man of business,' we will affirm that 'the capital of the country'—'the fund available for distribution amongst the labourers'—must manifestly suffer more detriment if the owner of the aforesaid 50*l.* makes 'ducks and drakes' of them—throws them, for instance, into the sea in pure wantonness—than if he 'unproductively' buys with them superfine cloth for his own

dress or lace for his wife's. Is it possible that the most Mill-guided writer or reader can fail to see that *the coin of the realm*, when the supposed property takes that shape for purchases, is as much a part of the wealth of the realm as any other commodity, and that it is not destroyed, when paid to clothmakers or lacemakers, as when thrown in the sea? On the former supposition, an exchangeable value to the amount of 50*l.* is simply annihilated, and the wealth which might have employed labour diminished to that extent. On the latter supposition, the 50*l.* has been saved to 'the fund available for distribution amongst the labourers,' and has actually been so distributed amongst them, unless clothmakers and lacemakers are to be struck off the list of labourers. The cloth and lace may, indeed, be said to be consumed unproductively, as any other article may be said to be so consumed which cannot be classed among necessities of life or implements of labour. But the price paid for them has gone to demand and employ labour, and there is nothing to prevent some of it being saved by those who receive it, and employed as capital in aid of further production. Yet it would have made no difference to the wealth of the country had it been thrown in the sea! Are we not justified in repeating that, when Mr. Mill propounds palpable absurdities, the final *reductio ad absurdum* is supplied by Mr. Fawcett?

Mr. Fawcett has the difficult task to reconcile the holding of 'extreme democratic opinions' (for such are the opinions he says he holds—and the very phrase implies a sense of their excessiveness) with the soberer views which liberal culture on general subjects has tended to produce in a mind very receptive of such culture. As Mr. Auberon Herbert professes speculative republicanism, tempered by personal loyalty, so Mr. Fawcett atones for the austere Malthusian censures of operative improvidence contained in his Cambridge Lectures by repudiation of royal dowries and hereditary legislature,—essential articles, we suppose, of the advanced Liberalism adapted to the meridian of democratic Brighton. We only wish the Cambridge Professor could permit himself to forget the Brighton member, and did not think it due either to his own 'extreme democratic opinions,' or to those of the 'fierce democratie' *super mare* he has to 'wield,' to drag into political economy lectures, at a learned University, crude sentences, without a syllable of argument to support them, against hereditary legislature and landed aristocracy, hitherto recognized integrants of our not yet overthrown monarchy. Whatever Mr. Fawcett's Brighton constituents may think, calm and instructed observers of recent and pending European events will be apt to think that our nearest Continental neighbours have

not been such clear gainers by the violent uprooting, within the last eighty years, of all habitually respected hereditary powers, and all politically-organized independent landed influences, as to suggest the like root-and-branch work here, as a social benefit so self-evident that it needs nothing more than naked enunciation for general recognition.

While the orthodox political economists adhered to their Wage-fund theory, they made use of it to maintain the doctrine (valid on other grounds) that neither employers nor workpeople can arbitrarily raise or lower the wages of labour. But the Trades' Unionists had *their* Wage-fund theory too, and founded on the same assumption of a permanent wage-fund, in the hands of capitalists, the conclusion that it was possible for that portion of the working people organized in Unions to cause the lion's share of that fund to come into their own hands, to the exclusion, as far as possible, of outsiders—that is to say, of the whole body of workpeople outside the Unions. All that can be said of the Unionist creed on this head is, that it is a shade less absurd than that which has just been abjured by the chief of the so-deemed orthodox economists. If there really exists, deposited in the hands of capitalists, a permanent predestined wage-fund, which can be spent no otherwise than in paying the wages of 'the general labourer' in these islands, the lion's share of that fund may doubtless be successfully scrambled for by those sections of that collective entity best organized for the scramble.

Where the Unionist reading of the Wage-fund theory has been put in most pernicious action has been in the systematic limitation, dictated by that reading of that theory, of the efficiency of labour, by the enforcement of all sorts of arbitrary restrictions by the Union authorities on the combined workmen, with the avowed object of securing that the work to be done shall be divided among as many (Unionist) hands as possible. The idea of *labour for wages*, like any other honest business transaction, being, in its nature, a fair exchange of *equivalent values*, would seem never to have been admitted or realized by the Unionist mind. Its idea of wages is rather that of the lion's share of a spoil, supposed to be accumulated, ready to be scrambled for, in the hands of capitalists, than of the labourer's fair share of the joint product obtained by the unfettered co-operation of capital and labour—a share which the competition amongst capitalists secures to labour, where labour is free and labourers provident—and more than which working men cannot permanently extort, strike they never so unwisely.

It is asked by Mr. Thornton how many instances exist of masters spontaneously raising wages. We would reply by another

question, how many instances exist of masters refusing to raise wages, when the prosperous state of trade makes masters competitors for working hands, rather than working hands for employment? This point is well handled as follows in a Criticism, by Mr. James Stirling, in the recently-published volume of 'Recess Studies,' on Mr. Mill's newly-espoused doctrine on Trades' Unions:—

'The striking effect upon the labourer's mind of a brisk or slack demand for labour—although a mystery to the closet student—is a familiar fact to every business man practically conversant with the hiring of labour. No intelligent foreman, who has stood at the gate of a public work engaging hands, has failed to note the different bearing of the workman in good times and in bad. When trade is dull the labourer deferentially comes up to his employer, whispering, with bated breath, his humble petition for employment. But let hands get scarce, and labour be in demand, and unconsciously he alters his tone and raises his demands. When railway bills are rife, and a demand springs up for strong arms to wield pick and shovel, then no man so independent as your isolated navvy. Feeling his importance, he offers himself to no one, but stands quietly in the market-place, sucking his pipe, and waiting to be coaxed; and it is only when the bewildered contractor yields his utmost demands, that he deigns to take off his coat, and handle his pick-axe. The secret of his power is not combination, but competition; not the union of helpless labourers, but the rivalry of powerful capitalists. All this the baffled contractor knows to his cost; and to tell him, [as Mr. Mill tells him] that "nothing but a close combination" can give his imperious navvy "even a chance of successfully contending with his employers," must sound in his ears like a dismal mockery.'

Whatever exceptions may be taken to the apologetic style of Mr. Thornton, which is certainly peculiar, he is not chargeable with any disposition to throw a decent veil over those principles or practices, which have procured its present evil repute for Trades' Unionism in this country. While confessing for his clients all the violence of means and all the class-selfishness of ends they have ever been accused of, he nevertheless stands forward in their defence on the ground, common, as he affirms, to all classes, of 'that *universal selfishness*, which is, and always has been, the governing principle of all human institutions.' Masters and men, according to Mr. Thornton, fatally confront each other in something like Hobbes's misanthropically imagined state of nature, with nothing but force, or the fear of force in the background, to appeal to for arbitrament on any point of dispute, and no principle of justice recognized, as regulative of their relations, on one side or the other.

When Mr. Thornton says there is no particular rate of wages

to which the labourer *has a right*, or by not obtaining which he can be *wronged*, and that 'no price can be proposed either *to him* or *by him* which can be one whit more fair or just than any other price,' we think he may fairly be called upon to define his terms. If he means by right, *legal* right, his proposition is a self-evident truism. Clearly the employer cannot be compelled by law to pay more than he contracted a legal obligation to pay in wages. But if Mr. Thornton means by right, *moral* right, his proposition becomes a shocking paradox. In a moral sense surely the labourer has a right—and what is more is pretty sure to be sensible of it—to be paid wages by his employer at a rate proportionate to the value of the products of his labour to the latter. As the employer knows his capital has a right to profits, so the labourer knows *his* capital (the skill his training and handicraft have acquired for him) has a right to profits also—i. e., to be paid the just value of its contribution to the joint work of production. If, indeed, he has no skill and not much industry he may be content to be paid low wages for little work; or if his personal capital is a drug in one particular market, he will probably make up his mind to take it to some other—just as his employer, under the like circumstances, would probably make up his mind to transfer *his* capital from an over-stocked to an under-stocked field of production. But, in a free country, no working man will long content himself to do work for others which contributes to the profit of *their* capital, without producing a proportionate profit to *his*. If he cannot get his wages raised proportionately to his work, and cannot *get away* (an unlikely circumstance in this age of locomotion), he will not fail finally to lower his work proportionately to his wages.

'In the higher trades and professions,' says Mr. Longe, the employers 'can safely (so far as regards the interests of the labourers, at all events) leave the determination of wages to the labourers themselves. In the lower trades, however, and more especially in the case of agricultural labourers, it would be mere mockery of the necessities of the poor, as well as false economy, so far as regards the general interests of society, and of the employers themselves as a permanent class, to allow competition to determine the wages they should pay, whenever wages have been already reduced to such a rate as would at all involve the question of sufficiency. In such a case a true political economy would require the employer to study well the difference between cheap labour and low wages—a distinction which the false theory we have been considering entirely ignores.'

But a distinction which is ignored by no enlightened employer of labour! Lord Dudley's agent, Mr. Smith, who holds  
a leading

a leading position in the iron trade, declared to the Trades' Union Commissioners that he would never consent to reduce puddlers' wages below 7s. 6d., and that he should prefer the present rate of 8s. 6d. to be the minimum. 'I do not wish,' he very justly remarks, 'ever to see a puddler working at a less rate of wages than he is at the present time, even though, unfortunately, the price of iron should have to be reduced; because the moment you bring a class of men like the puddlers, who are very hard-worked, below a certain rate of wages, that moment you rid the community of the best men.'

'I believe,' remarks an iron-moulder, 'that nothing but England's well-paid artisans maintained our position during the great struggle and crisis of revolutions on the Continent. And you will recollect further, that at the moment when the Chartist agitation was going on in the country, their cry was, "Only pull down the artisan class of the country to the level of the labourer, and the charter would have to be granted."'

In a remarkable speech delivered in the House of Commons on the 7th July, 1869, and subsequently republished in a pamphlet with additional statistical details, by Mr. Thomas Brassey, Junr., who, as our readers may be aware, has a hereditary title to practical experience of the conditions of labour in some of its most stirring skilled departments during the last twenty years, we find the same disinclination expressed by one versed in the profitable employment of labour to regard the mere figure of money wages as decisive of the cheapness or dearness to the employer of the labour for which those wages are paid. Mr. Brassey maintains unhesitatingly that, daily wages are no criterion of the actual cost of executing works or carrying out manufacturing operations. In the construction of the Paris and Rouen Railway, where some 4000 Englishmen were employed, 'though these English navvies earned 5s. a day, while the Frenchmen employed received only 2s. 6d., it was found, on comparing the cost of two adjacent cuttings in precisely similar circumstances, that the excavation was made at a lower cost per cubic yard by the English navvies than by the French labourers. On the Delhi and Umritsur Railway, it has been found, as I am informed by Mr. Henfrey, my father's resident partner in India, that, mile for mile, the cost of railway work is about the same in India as it is in England, although the wages, if estimated by the amount of daily pay, are marvellously low.'

Mr. Lothian Bell is cited by Mr. Brassey as having given in a recent address read at a meeting of ironmasters in the north of England, the result of his investigations as to the cost of smelting pig-iron in France, which he said distinctly established the fact that

that more men were required to do an equivalent quantity of work in France than in England.

‘ Taking into account the saving in respect of fuel, the cost of producing pig-iron in France was twenty shillings, in some cases even thirty shillings, more than that exhibited by the cost-sheets of the manufacturers at Cleveland. So too, Mr. Hewitt, an American iron-master, stated that the price of iron was one pound sterling per ton higher at Creuzot than in England. And M. Michel Chevallier, in his introduction to the Reports of the Jurors of the French Exhibition, says, that rails are from twenty-five to thirty francs dearer per ton in France than in England. To the same effect, Mr. Lothian Bell says that whereas labour in Westphalia costs from twenty to twenty-five per cent. less than with us, the labour-saving arrangements are much neglected ; and a ton of iron smelted in the Ruhrort district cannot be produced for less than fifteen shillings a ton above the cost upon the Tees. A similar difference is shown in the price of the rails recently purchased for the Mont Cenis Railway, the price of which at the works in France was from seven pounds twelve shillings to eight pounds per ton, while the price in England was seven pounds per ton. In proof of the conscious inability of the French iron-masters to compete with our manufacturers in an open market, I may mention that the import duty in France on rails is two pounds eight shillings per ton.’

The twin assumptions that there is no principle of justice applicable to any rate of wages which may be agreed to between employers and labourers, and no permanent interest influencing the employers of labour to respect any such principle, or regard any rule towards the employed but that of paying their labour at the lowest rate at which it can be constrained to sell itself, would certainly constitute, if they were but a little better established on facts, a moral apology more than adequate for any coercion the employed can put on the employers. On such assumptions there is room for no other than belligerent rights in the relations between employers and employed. The next task is to show that the belligerency of the Unions has on the whole been successful. And to show this another enormous assumption is called in aid—viz., that every rise of wages in the various branches of industry of late years has been directly or indirectly due to the action of Trades’ Unions.

Mr. Thornton indeed admits that every protracted strike of late years has been unsuccessful in its object. He admits further that every protracted strike *must* be unsuccessful, if only the masters hang together with the same tenacity as the men. Evidently therefore a strike, or the threat of a strike, on the part of the men can effect its object only in cases in which the masters do

do not think it worth while to oppose lock-outs to strikes. Then the question arises—Can all the cumbrous and costly machinery of national, nay international, labour leagues—really be required to constrain masters to yield points to their men which the latter are resolute to obtain, and which the former are not resolute to refuse? Mr. Thornton himself, in one of those lucid intervals, the recurrence of which in his writings throws the suspicion of artistic artifice on the Rembrandt shadows of other passages in them, acknowledges that ‘*Masters are generally fond of peace and quietness.*’ Their hearts are in their business pursuits; they are eager to be doing, and dislike proportionably to be checked in mid-career. They are in consequence so averse to industrial strife, and incur so much inconvenience and risk so much loss by engaging in it, that, great as have been their past concessions for tranquillity’s sake, they would not improbably concede a good deal yet, if they could believe that any concessions would suffice, or could see any end to the exactions continually practised on them.’

Mr. Thornton asserts roundly that, ‘it is indeed notorious that in all trades whatsoever in which Unionism prevails, the Unions have of late years been able materially to raise wages.’ This involves, as we have observed, the assumption, that wherever wages have risen, they have been raised by Unionism. But, as a matter of fact, wages have not risen, of late years ‘in all trades whatsoever in which Unionism prevails.’ It is stated by Mr. Brassey, and the statement is confirmed by an unimpeachable Unionist authority, Mr. George Potter,\* that ‘between 1851 and 1861 no advance took place in the wages of the engineers, though theirs is the most powerful of the Trades’ Societies; but in the case of the boiler-makers wages rose from 26s. to 32s. 6d., in consequence of the extension of iron ship-building, and the great amount of iron bridge-work.’

Mr. Brassey cites the evidence of Mr. Moulton, the Secretary to the Master Builders’ Association of Birmingham, before the Trades’ Union Commissioners, that ‘of the 900,000 men employed in the building trades not more than 90,500 were members of the Trades’ Unions; and that while the Trades’ Unions professed to aim at securing uniformity of wage throughout the country, yet the wages of masons varied in different parts from 4½d. to 7¾d. per hour, the wages of bricklayers from 4½d. to 8d., and those of carpenters from 4½d. to 8d. per hour. These figures conclusively prove the fallacy of the idea that Trades’ Unions can secure for their clients an uniform rate of wages,

---

\* ‘Contemporary Review,’ June, 1870, Art. 6, above cited.

irrespective of the local circumstances of the trades in which they are engaged.'

Who, indeed, can imagine that the rise of wages during the last twenty years in the building trades has been due to the stupid savagery of the Manchester Bricklayers' Union, or to Messrs. George Potter and Co's. periodically replenished windbags, and abortive though stubborn strikes in London? The reason why wages in the building trades had risen is sufficiently explained in the following answer of Mr. Trollope, the eminent London builder, to the Trades' Union Commissioners—'I am bound to say that hitherto there has been such an enormous pressure for work, that almost every man who can handle a tool has been taken on at an unreasonable rate.' 'Again,' says Mr. Brassey:—

'Speaking of the advance in wages in the building trades in the provinces, Mr. J. Mackay, an experienced agent in my father's employ, says in a report he has made to me on the subject—"Wages have risen during the last twenty years from 20 to 25 per cent.; but, by the force of circumstances, they would have risen as much or more if Trades' Unions had never existed." To the same effect, Mr. Robinson, the Managing Director of the Atlas Works, Manchester, in his evidence before the Commissioners, says "I do not think the Unions have altered the rate of wages; the changes are rather due to the demand for labour in particular branches."

'Statements,' says Mr. Brassey, 'have been widely circulated, and largely accepted by the public, to the effect that there has been a greater advance in the wages of operatives in recent years in England than in the corresponding period abroad; this increase being, it is alleged, entirely attributable to the powerful organization of the Trades' Unions. Whereas on the contrary, "the advances which have occurred in the rate of wages abroad prove that, without the introduction of Trades' Unions, and solely in consequence of a greater demand for skilled labour, through the development of manufacturing industry on the Continent, the wages of the working classes have risen more rapidly than in any industry in this country."

Mr. Brassey cites in support of his statements on this head the official correspondence with Her Majesty's missions abroad which had been published before the date of his speech. We find these statements further corroborated by the subsequent publication of the 'Reports from Her Majesty's Diplomatic and Consular Agents respecting the condition of the Industrial Classes in Foreign Countries.' Mr. Phipps reports to Lord Clarendon, on the position of the artizan and industrial classes in Würtemberg, that 'the average increase in the rate of wages in eight branches of industry during the last thirty years amounts to from 60 to 70 per cent.' In the building trade in particular,

particular, 'in the case of masons, bricklayers, carpenters, and painters, may be observed a remarkable rise in the rate of wages of 80 or 90 per cent., to be accounted for simply by the unusual activity in the building trade during the last twelve years, especially in the capital. The wages of a mason or bricklayer are, at present, 3s. to 3s. 4d., and first-class workmen receive even more.' Würtemberg has hitherto rejoiced in combination laws as rigorous as any that ever existed in England, and has not yet learned to rejoice in the equally rigorous code of Unionism for its opposite objects. Yet these objects seemed gained more effectually in Würtemberg without Unions than in England with them, in those trades in which the extraordinary rise of wages in late years has been set down unhesitatingly to the artificial operation of Unionism.

The pessimism of Mr. Thornton's representations of the sheer unmitigated selfishness of all actual and all possible relations between labour and its employers—so long as *labour* shall continue simply to be paid *wages*—is made with artistic contrast to lead up to the optimism of his fancy pictures—which blossom at length into rhyme—of Labour's Utopia in the future, when labour shall be conducted (and land also, it would seem, cultivated) under conditions of purely co-operative association—'destined' in time 'to beget, at however remote a date,' something 'superior to itself'—and that something 'a healthy socialism.' But he adds (and here, at least, we agree with him) that 'for the forthcoming of such offspring it is indispensable that there be no violent shortening of the natural period of gestation.' The natural period of gestation of a healthy socialism must be protracted indeed! In the meantime the whole course of modern civilization seems running in the direction of giving ample room and verge enough for the pioneer operations of a healthy individualism. The cabin and rifle of the latest emigrant to the backwoods are human nature's protest against all artificial socialisation.

Mr. Thornton would be content to rest for awhile, and be thankful, at the half-way house to his industrial Utopia of pure co-operative association (which, as we have seen, is itself only to be regarded as a half-way house to the millennial beatitude of a healthy socialism), which he considers as provided for our 'present poor and purblind workday world by 'industrial partnerships' between employers and workpeople.

With reference to the various modifications of this system, the Trades' Union Commissioners, in their eleventh and final Report, have expressed themselves with a wise reserve on the shape assumed, in some few instances with success, in France and in  
this

this country, of remuneration for extra exertions of the work-people employed in large concerns by bonuses calculated on the increased profits of those concerns supposed due to such extra exertions. It is evidently only in cases where that supposition is consistent with facts that, on the principle for which we have contended of *suum cuique*, the workman is entitled to recognition in proportion to the extra profits which, by the hypothesis, are due to the extra investment of what may be termed personal capital, manual or mental, in the shape of supererogatory zeal and diligence on his part over and above the ordinary day's tale of work which could be demanded of, or enforced on, him by his employers.

Somewhat too much has been made by sensation-economists, and effect-writers generally, of the few instances (they might be counted on the fingers of one hand) of advantageous results from awarding to workpeople, in addition to their wages, some stated proportion of the annual profits of the concerns they work for. The only real principle of universal application is that every one should be paid his due,—wages to whom wages are due, profits to whom profits. Work-people can have no right to additional pay (though Trades' Unions have often claimed it for them) on account of additional efficiency given to their labour by improved machinery, set up and paid for by their employers. They can have no claim to share the profits of capital which they have not invested, or the remuneration due to the ability and experience of the directing heads of concerns. In a word, what workpeople have alone a right to is *the value of their contribution to products*. In establishments, whether such as M. Leclaire's at Paris, or Messrs. Briggs' at Methley, where the economy and efficiency of the conduct of the concern in great measure depend on the unsuperintended voluntary zeal and diligence of the individual workmen, the recognition of extraordinary profits as due to extraordinary exertions is at once just and politic. But there is a manifest incongruity, and a certain source of future misunderstandings as grave as any that arise at present between employers and workpeople, in the conception of the universal adjustment of the rewards of work-people to the commercial success of establishments, into the operations of which the element of manual labour enters in degrees so different.

What has been most conspicuous in France has been the failure, in a great majority of instances, of purely operative associations for productive purposes; and the main cause of failure has been pointed out, as we conceive, correctly, by Mr. Fane, in a despatch to Lord Stanley, dated March, 1867. 'It has been a  
great

great mistake,' he says, 'in the procedure of the working-classes in France that they have preferred societies of production to building societies, loan societies, and those which may be termed societies of consumption. The latter should come first; for their tendency is to endow the workman both with the capital and the prudence, without which his participation in the productive form of society is seldom satisfactory.'

While the large majority of the operative associations, which came up like mushrooms in the revolution year 1848, have failed to maintain their ground, those which survive and flourish in general owe their vitality and vigour to original independence of State aid, and adherence to the plain principles, which, under any form of industrial association, are essential to success. Of these principles none is more vital than that which rigidly and unswervingly attributes *suum cuique*; and the most successful operative association in Paris is that which has most stoutly asserted it.

And here we have a crow to pick with Mr. Thornton. At page 428 of his volume on 'Labour' he roundly denounces the Rochdale Co-operative Manufacturing Society (an off-shoot from the far-famed Rochdale Equitable Pioneers) as 'the *Iscariot of the tribe*' of co-operation,—'one that bade fair to be their glory, but has become their shame.' And why? Simply because this manufacturing association divides its *profits* only amongst its *shareholders*, and remunerates the workpeople it employs with *wages* for work done. Now, Mr. Thornton, two pages previously, had described the Paris masons as 'the most considerable of all the French societies,' and all its doings with complacency,—including the 'frock coats' (by the way, an incorrect translation of *frac*, which means a dress-coat) that the shareholders of that society wear on Sundays (just as if their black coats distinguished them from the Sunday dress of our skilled artizans here). But what Mr. Thornton omits to state is that the Paris association which he glorifies adopts precisely the principle of the Rochdale association which he denounces—the principle of dividing *profits* only amongst shareholders, and of remunerating the workmen they employ by *wages*. We humbly submit that neither Rochdale nor Paris working societies should have a Judas-stigma fixed on them merely because they carry out that principle in their practical working. We shall have the revered Leclaire himself next stigmatized as the *Iscariot* of industrial partnership, because in his establishment also the 'associates' alone share profits—the large majority of *employés*, termed 'auxiliaries,' receiving wages only. Mr. Fawcett is too urbane a writer to stigmatize as 'Iscariots' those co-operative associations in this country which call capital from without in aid of the contributions

tions of their working shareholders,—nay worse, *pay wages* to their non-associated workpeople. But, on the other hand, while Mr. Thornton quietly ignores the fact that those foreign associations, which he himself cites as most exemplary for skilful and successful management, are precisely those which have taken the same course on the largest scale, Mr. Fawcett sets fact at direct defiance in his statement of their proceedings. Of course, we do not suppose for a moment that his mis-statements are of his own invention. But we cannot acquit him of ‘crass negligence’ in failing to acquire more accurate information of the true state of facts which inconveniently oppose his theories.

‘It ought to be stated,’ says Mr. Fawcett, ‘that the co-operative masons in Paris *never employed any labourers but those who were shareholders*; the advantage of adopting this rule is very apparent, and unfortunately English Societies have not adopted a similar regulation.’

We beg to state that it is not the English that is here at variance with the French practice; but Mr. Fawcett’s statement respecting the latter that is at variance with facts.

The co-operative society of Paris masons consisted of eighty shareholders (alas! can we speak of any Paris society in the present tense?). That society was so far from cutting all connection with ‘the tyrant capital’ outside its pale (as Messrs. Thornton and Fawcett think essential to purity of principle in all co-operative societies), that it set out by raising a capital of 300,000 francs, and as the associated workers could not subscribe such a capital amongst themselves, they had recourse to *bourgeois* capital seeking commercial investment (one wonders what rational principle was against their doing so). Their able manager, M. Cohadon, has made the following public statement of their proceedings:—

‘In this prosperous association capital exercises its function side by side with labour. In the division of profits 60 per cent. is assigned to labour, 40 per cent. to capital. The working shareholders receive a fixed salary, regulated by the quantity and quality of their work [wages, in short, for piecework] they then share the profits—*just as they would have to share the losses in case of ill success.*’

‘This co-operative society,’ says M. About, in his chapter on ‘Co-operation,’ ‘employs hundreds of workpeople, and pays them fixed rates of wages, which are paid definitively, and nowise as first instalments on account. Nothing can be more contradictory to the pure theoretic principle of co-operation.’ But hear Mr. Cohadon, who takes a practical view of the subject (Mr. Fawcett’s *bête noire*—a practical man, and a man of business):—

‘The reason,’ says M. Cohadon, ‘why it is impossible not to employ *auxiliaries*, is that you cannot turn back large orders—if you do, you lose your customers. In theory an association should employ its members only: in practice this is impossible. It is equally impossible to award to auxiliaries a share of profits. In the first place, how can you always be sure to *make* profits? And if there are losses, how can the auxiliaries be expected to take their share of these? It is inadmissible in principle that those who take no share in losses should take shares in profits.’

‘If workpeople themselves,’ says M. About, ‘the moment they have to handle capital, adopt the received principles of social economy, it is because those principles are *true*.’ No stricter enforcers of orthodox economical principles than associated workpeople, when their visual orbs are purged with the euphrasy and rue of self interest in enforcing them! M. Blaise, another practical man of the manufacturing region of the Vosges observes on this point:—

‘In the legal point of view, the rules which govern co-operative productive associations are identical with those which govern other employers of labour; in a moral point of view, they proceed pretty much in the same manner. Like those, they employ wage-paid workpeople under the name of *auxiliaries*; they pay them no more than others do, and no more guarantee them permanent employment. Nay, the workpeople complain of being more hardly dealt with by operative associations than by other employers. These societies, when their members possess those rare qualities, commercial, technical, and governmental, which secure success, are doubtless profitable to those who form them, or are admitted into them; but they constitute an addition to the previous body of employers; and even if their numbers multiplied to the utmost supposable extent, as they never can comprise more than a comparatively small fraction of the labouring class, they do not appear destined to exercise any considerable influence on the economic condition of the masses.’

If the contemplated industrial Utopia of the economical school at present in the ascendant might be comprised in the formula of ‘every operative his own capitalist,’ their contemplated agricultural Utopia might be formulated in like manner as ‘every labourer his own landlord.’ Now that something may be done in the way of approximation to both these Utopias—that shares may be allotted to the savings of operatives in industrial establishments, and allowance made in extra pay for their extra exertions beyond the exigible day’s tale of labour—that the agricultural labourer ought to be restored to the contact he has too generally in this country lost with the soil he cultivates, and supplied with a plot of ground sufficient to occupy his hours of leisure, and supplement his wages of labour at slack seasons—

none will deny who have duly noted the effects of what has been already done in these directions. By all means encourage the upward struggles of industry, exceeding in its efforts and energies the mere day-labour sufficiently remunerated by day-wages. But don't imagine that you can elevate all labourers into proprietors, whether of commercial or manufacturing establishments or landed estates. Don't imagine that if you can cut all Ireland up into cottier-crofts to-morrow (since merely to convert her half million tenant-farmers, according to Mr. Mill's recipe, into (mis-called) peasant-proprietors would be discovered the day after to be a measure not half revolutionary enough in the interest of the outlying majority of non-tenant labourers), you could *ipso facto* invest Irishmen with the indefatigable industry and skill for small culture transmitted from age to age among the Lilliputian landowners and still more Lilliputian tenant-farmers of East Flanders. It may further be affirmed that such enthusiastic English and Irish champions of peasant-proprietorship as Mr. Mill, Mr. Thornton, and Mr. Cliffe Leslie, have greatly exaggerated the agricultural regimen of Belgium as the paradise of peasant-proprietors. Their chief authority, M. de Laveleye, in his treatise on Belgium in the Cobden Club volume, by no means recommends the land system of Flanders to foreign imitation. On the contrary, he says expressly, the system of tenure of land in Flanders (the pet province of our exclusive enthusiasts of peasant-proprietorship) is anything but worthy of imitation. There are too many tenant-farmers, and too few peasant-proprietors; the leases are excessively short, and the rents exceedingly high.

Just the state of things Lord Dufferin had predicted that Mr. Mill's project for investing Irish tenantry with proprietary rights and powers over their present holdings infallibly would produce in Ireland:—

'It is probable,' says Lord Dufferin, 'that within a very brief period of the new land settlement a considerable proportion of the original occupiers will have found it convenient to *devolve their interest on others*, under the conditions proposed by Mr. Mill. The community will then be divided into two important classes—*peasant-landlords and peasant-tenants*.

'In what respect would the then condition of affairs be an improvement on the present? You would not have got rid of "landlordism;" you would only have substituted an innumerable crowd of needy landlords for the present more affluent proprietors. Evictions for non-payment of rent would be as rife as ever, for the necessities of those to whom the rent was due would preclude them from exercising the indulgence now extended to their tenants by the present proprietors; while dispossession for other causes, such as waste, extravagance,

gance, and bad management, would be multiplied in excess of the small proportion of those which are now effected in Ireland on such accounts.'

English and Irish landlords,' says M. de Laveleye, 'do not put on the screw of a continual increase of rent with anything like the harshness habitual with Belgian landowners. . . . The peasants of Flanders unfortunately will not leave their own province, and their intense competition for farms raises the rents in a manner ruinous to themselves. . . . In consequence of excessive competition, the Flemish farmer is much more ground down by his landlord than the Irish tenant.'

There certainly was a curious felicity in the selection of Belgium by Messrs. Mill, Thornton, and Leslie, as exhibiting in the excellence of its culture and the wellbeing of its cultivators a Labour Utopia, to which legislation should seek to assimilate England and Ireland. Not one of the conditions which they affirm to be indispensable to good cultivation and the good condition of the cultivators can be affirmed with truth to prevail generally in Belgium; every one of the characters of absolute proprietorship, facilities for summary eviction, and agrarian outrage (only that in Belgium agrarian outrage is suppressed, instead of being made political capital of), which they denounce as evidences of landlord law in Ireland, are equally to be found in Belgium. We find it stated in the Reports from our Ministers abroad, compiled from official documents, that in East and West Flanders, the provinces specially selected by our peasant-proprietary-fanciers, as exemplifying the agrarian regimen they would introduce at home, 'the land is almost entirely worked by tenants,' whereas in Luxemburg, where much of the land is poor and of but comparatively little value, it is mostly cultivated by proprietors. Taking the whole of the little kingdom, not half the land is retained in the hands of its proprietors, and it is further stated that 'the bulk of the land in the hands of owners consists of wood, wastes, &c.' Those parts of Belgium specially selected as illustrating by their skilled and careful cultivation the 'magic of property' triumphing over all disadvantages of soil and climate, are precisely those parts which are neither owned by their cultivators, nor held on a tenure described as absolutely indispensable to encourage culture by its security. The 'peasant-proprietor is unknown in the Pays de Waes,' and very whimsical are the varieties of 'the truck system' inflicted on the farmers in that favoured district, where 'written leases do not exist,' and where one farmer very generally holds of several landlords, who are for the most part tradesmen in the neighbouring towns:—

'The small as well as the large farmer is liable to have as landlords,  
at

at one and the same time, a brewer, a grocer, a haberdasher, a manufacturer, a clockmaker, a publichouse keeper, a farmer, a doctor, a lawyer, a parish-priest (rarely owner of land), a Liberal, a Catholic. The brewer expects him to drink his beer—if he objects, he evicts him from the plot of land he holds of him, and lets it to a more profitable tenant: the grocer expects him to buy his coffee at his shop; his wife and daughters must dress well in order to please the haberdasher; he must purchase a watch and change it occasionally to please the watchmaker; he must assist his farmer-landlord in getting in his crops before he attends to his own; if he or his family do not require the doctor's attendance two or three times a year, the doctor seeks for a less healthy tenant.'

'About two-thirds of the arable lands of Belgium,' says Consul Grattan, 'are cultivated by tenants.' A former Belgian Minister stated some years back, in a Report on the subject, that 'it is in the poorer and more thinly inhabited districts that proprietors are the most apt to cultivate their own land,' and that 'in populous districts proprietors farming their own lands become comparatively rare.'

If, in most parts of Belgium, 'farming is carried on upon traditional principles,' and has become a sort of unimproving routine, the petty farmer has become an equally unimproving and equally rooted human vegetable. 'In certain localities,' says Consul Grattan, 'taking as an example the province of East Flanders, where an excess of population brings with it increased rent and diminished wages, the remedy would seem to be in emigration; yet strong local attachments, added perhaps in some degree to jealousy of race, appear to prevent the Flemish peasant from removing even as far as the neighbouring Walloon province of Hainault, where the want of agricultural labourers forms a source of complaint, and is looked upon as a serious inconvenience.'

'Although the rights of property,' says Mr. Wyndham, 'are in some parts of Belgium (Pays de Waes, and in the immediate vicinity of Brussels, for instance,) exercised with little if any consideration for the tenant, the Government have hitherto abstained, and I have been assured always would abstain, from legislating upon the relations of landlords with their tenants, as to the granting of leases, raising rents, &c., considering that such action would be interfering with the individual rights of property. . . . No attempts have been made by Government to create or increase the number of freeholders in Belgium (beyond the endeavour which I have stated, to colonize the Campine, and which failed). Such a scheme is looked upon as impracticable, and as one which would only lead to forming a class of persons who would always be looking to Government for assistance.'

Let Mr. Mill ponder well this *avertissement* to administrative philanthropy, and take note of the details (which we have not space for here) of the failure of the Belgian Government in its Campine project of colonization, before he next proposes that the English Government should buy with public money, on public account, land coming into the market, to cut up into small holdings on the East Flanders model, or lease in larger portions to co-operative associations of labourers. 'The Campine tenants,' says Mr. Wyndham, 'according to my informant, who was on the spot in charge of the works for irrigating the country, from the first considered themselves as Government pensioners; considered further that it was to the Government rather than to their own industry that they were thenceforth to look for a living; and moreover they turned to other purposes the subsidies which the Government gave to enable them to buy stock.'

After ten years' 'experiment' the Belgian Government had enough of it, put up the land and buildings to auction, and recovered about a sixth-part of what they had cost them. The purchaser at once evicted all the idle tenants he found upon the estate, granted six years' leases to other tenants (rather a long lease for Belgium), and converted the administrative failure into an improving private property.\*

The exclusive partisans of peasant-proprietorship always conclude by citing the Channel Islands as the palmary instance of high prosperity produced by small culture. Mr. Mill says, 'Of the efficiency and productiveness of agriculture on the small properties of the Channel Islands Mr. Thornton's "Plea for Peasant Proprietors, &c.," produces ample evidence, the result of which he sums up as follows:—

"Thus it appears that in the two principal Channel Islands the agricultural population is in the one twice, and in the other three times as dense as in Britain; there being in the latter country only

---

\* The Hon. T. J. Hovell Thurlow, in his volume entitled 'Trades' Unions Abroad,' &c., gives the following account of the final results of the establishment by the Dutch Government of the four pauper colonies of Fredericks-oord, Willems-oord, Veenhuizen and Ommerschans:—

'Notwithstanding all the advantages these poor colonists have possessed, in having the idle eliminated from their ranks, and all their wants at the commencement supplied, the scheme has not succeeded as a self-supporting institution. An item of charge in support of these pauper colonies (established in 1818, and meant to be self-supporting) is now of annual occurrence in the Budget of the Dutch Minister for the Home Department, and amounted in the Estimate for 1869 to 322,000 florins. As a means of reforming mendicancy, and of raising the condition of the small occupiers, the result has not been more successful than from a mere financial point of view. Barely five per cent. of the small occupiers are stated to have cleared themselves from the debt they incurred (on entering the colony) to the Commune they came from, and to the Society, and have been able after the first sixteen years to pay a moderate rent. By some the failure of this laudable attempt is attributed to too much being done for the Colonists—their not indeed being allowed to starve. . . . The sudden creation of means of permanent relief, be they *ateliers nationaux* or pauper colonies, is the planting of a cancer in the body corporate of society—an institution of artificial origin, requiring artificial support, and representing ultimately purely artificial charity.'

one cultivator to twenty-two acres of cultivated land, while in Jersey there is one to eleven, and in Guernsey one to seven acres. *Yet the agriculture of these islands maintains besides cultivators, non-agricultural populations, respectively, four and five times as dense as that of Britain.*

British readers (farming readers at least) must be 'four or five times as dense' as philo-peasant-proprietary writers have any right to expect to find them, to be capable of taking statements such as these for facts. The late Earl of Rosse, in his pamphlet on Ireland, published in 1867,\* gave the Statistical Returns of the Agricultural Stock and Produce imported into, and exported from, Jersey and Guernsey, from which it appears that the great bulk of the first necessities of life consumed in those islands is procured, not from their petty culture, but by importation. Prosperous as they are—and still more *have been*—from maritime and commercial sources, they have no pretension to be self-supporting agricultural communities at all. Guernsey, with a population of 29,733, imports 34,330 quarters of wheat, and exports *none*—imports 1297 oxen, exports 41—imports 4980 sheep, exports 40. 'With these imports,' says Lord Rosse, 'Guernsey cannot stand much in need of corn raised at home; and although the peasantry require very little animal food, the wealthy inhabitants of St. Peter's Port and neighbourhood consume the usual quantity. Therefore a supply of meat has to be provided, in addition to the oxen and sheep imported, and, consequently, meadow, clover, and turnips, are the principal crops. In Jersey it is very much the same. So soon are fables dissipated by a little statistics. *The peasant-proprietor is often employed as a lever by those who seek to turn society upside down; we see how weak that lever is when the truth is known.*'

All the exclusive enthusiasts of peasant-proprietorship seem predestined to shipwreck on these same rocks of the Channel Islands. Mr. Cliffe Leslie, in his recently-published volume on 'Land Systems,' British and foreign, contrasts the Isle of Wight as having 'scarcely any commerce or shipping' with the Island of Jersey, 'carrying on trade with every quarter of the world.' He attributes the difference to the Island of Jersey being owned by small proprietors, and the Isle of Wight by large ones. Now, waiving the topographical circumstance that it might have been rather difficult to make trading ports of creeks like Brading Harbour, accessible only at high water—and only then to small craft—might it not have occurred to any one less in quest of agrarian arguments than our Irish professor, that 'every quarter

---

\* 'A Few Words on the Relation of Landlord and Tenant in Ireland,' &c. By the Earl of Rosse.

of the world' could more conveniently bring its trade to the mainland of Hampshire than to an outlying section of it insulated by a narrow channel? The Solent, to any one looking out from Ryde, shows no scarcity of commercial shipping; and the docks of Southampton might seem to dispense sufficiently with any necessity for cutting up little Vectis into big basins for ocean steamers. But if it is nothing but the lack of peasant-proprietors that diverts the trade of all the world from the direct access it would otherwise seek to the Isle of Wight, how is it that a like 'effect defective' does not extend to the rest of Great Britain? Here is England, on the one side, scant of peasant-proprietors, France, on the other side, swarming with them. Why does not England contrast as shabbily with France in international commerce, as Mr. Leslie laments that the Isle of Wight does with the Channel Islands? But really it is waste of time to combat what we should call such sheer puerilities if they proceeded from any source less officially respectable than the pen of a 'Professor of Political Economy' in a Queen's College and two Queen's Universities.

It may, however, be worth while to indicate for the benefit of those who need the information, how it has come to pass that the two principal Channel Islands have long maintained a population so much larger than their own agriculture had food for, and have long enjoyed an extent of commerce so much more than proportioned to the place their little rocky cluster fills on the map. The answer may be made in few words—because they have always had the privilege of carrying on a commerce entirely free from fiscal restrictions—on the one hand with the neighbouring ports of the Continent, and on the other with the shipping and colonies of this country. Jersey and Guernsey had free ports and free trade, while Great Britain and Ireland still submitted themselves to the self-imposed fetters of anti-commercial Corn Laws and Navigation Laws. 'By means of this privilege,' wrote the late Mr. Inglis in his book on the Channel Islands (published before the era of Free Trade had arrived in England), 'vessels are built (in Jersey) with foreign timber, are rigged with foreign cordage, yet have the advantage of British registers, and consequently enjoy all the advantages to trade secured to British-built vessels.' Again, while the protective Corn Laws obstructed the importation of grain and flour into this country, the Channel Islands could import foreign wheat for their own consumption at free-trade prices, and export to England what wheat they themselves grew, to benefit by protective prices. More than this, they could grind foreign grain, and sell the flour as a native *manufacture* to British shipping and British

British colonies. Under such circumstances it required surely the blindness of enthusiasm for exclusive peasant-proprietorship to assign to that source the growth of the shipping and trading prosperity of the Channel Islands, just as it had required the intrepidity of that enthusiasm (to give it no harsher name), to describe those islands as terrestrial paradises of a dense population, entirely fed by a self-supporting agriculture on the system of *la petite culture*.

We cannot close our present remarks without some brief reference to continental views and proceedings on the subject of operative associations, and labour-regulations and theories. Those have been interrupted in their calm and regular development by the great war between France and Germany; but a portentous phenomenon which has followed in the train of that war—the insurgent apparition of the INTERNATIONAL, with its myriad incendiary hands, and tongues, and pens—terribly demonstrates how the speculative delusions palmed on popular ignorance may blaze out in more than metaphorical conflagrations kindled by popular fanaticism. Some years before proletarian absolutism fired its own funeral-pile in Paris, a rather remarkable instance was reported of that *esprit prime-sautier* in the French workpeople, which has rendered Parisian proletarianism, from the first outbreak of the French Revolution to the present day, the ever ready and ever formidable instrument of political and social perturbations, unwillingly endured in their too frequent recurrence by the French nation at large, and now at length suppressed with a strong hand by the national armed force. A few years back, the English operative ‘Internationals’ tried to get their Parisian brethren to join in a grand combined strike. ‘Why should we give ourselves any trouble about raising the rate of wages?’—was the reply of the latter to their comparatively practical English industrial co-revolutionists—‘when we are just on the eve of *suppressing wages altogether*, and becoming our own employers—(*nos propres patrons*.)’

It may be regarded as a somewhat noticeable sign of the times, that a recently reigning Emperor, and two rival pretenders to, or rival candidates for, the throne he so lately filled, should, within the last few years, have emulously exhibited in action or speculation their sympathies with the working classes, as their best title to sovereign power. Each, of course, exhibited those sympathies ‘with a difference,’ according to their respective positions and antecedents. The Ex-Emperor of the French laid claim to every grand idea of operative elevation in the social scale of the future, as an *idée Napoléonienne*. The Comte de Chambord, in a manifesto dated from Venice, 20th April, 1865, traced all the ills

ills that afflict the working classes to the 'individualism' engendered by the French Revolution, which, in his royal view, has been the parent of industrial monopoly and the abuse of competition. (To logicians of a less august order, monopoly and competition might seem contradictory terms.) The Comte de Paris, in his recent *opuscule*, entitled '*Les Associations Ouvrières en Angleterre*,' kept in view, throughout, his political object of contrasting the liberties of England with the half-liberties of France under the Second Empire, and the illusory compensation for the substantial benefits of self-government held out by ostentatious official patronage of industrial interests.

The most remarkable fact of the present epoch, as regards this subject, is the abolition of the system of legal penalties against operative combinations, which is in course of being effected in Continental States—a system which in principle was abandoned in England nearly half a century back, at the epoch of the repeal of the old Combination Laws in 1824. Nothing remained to do in this country but what is just being done by Parliament—nothing but the 'crowning of the edifice' of operative emancipation. No objection is now opposed to the legislative recognition of the corporate existence and corporate rights of Trades' Unions, except their adherence to regulations adverse to the freedom and safety of the larger unorganized union of peaceful citizens and workers outside their pale. It is near half a century since legislation in this country abandoned its old untenable position, of proscribing all operative combinations as criminal. And the only limit the law now seeks to impose on the freedom of Trades' Unions is that of enforcing respect on their part for the equal freedom of the great majority of their non-unionist fellow-workpeople, who may continue to think fit, as hitherto they have thought fit, to stay out of the unions.

The Continent now stands just at the turning-point of industrial legislation at which we stood in 1824—it being also remembered that the liberty of meeting for any purpose is as new a concession, generally speaking, on the Continent, to every other class of citizens as to the working class. In 1842, when M. Leclaire—the Paris house-painter, since celebrated—first adopted in his own establishment the principle which is now assumed in high economical quarters to be universally applicable, of conceding a share of profits in his concern to a select portion of his workpeople—the government of Louis Philippe thwarted his project by refusing him the permission requisite to assemble his workpeople for the purpose of laying his plan before them. In Prussia and Austria, the law has hitherto punished, as formerly in England, with fine and imprisonment, any workman who combined

combined with his fellows for the purpose of obtaining concessions from their employer by striking work. Similar legislation has been in force in Belgium and the other smaller states. Operative emancipation is achieving itself almost suddenly in continental Europe, and is producing phenomena if not of lawlessness in action equal to some of our unions, yet of far more Utopian extravagance in speculation—as witness the doctrines promulgated at the International Labour-Congresses of late years. Wages have been indignantly characterized as an humiliation to labour—capital as a hostile power, when in any other than Labour's hands. It has been loudly proclaimed to be the foremost duty of the State to set operative productive associations on their legs by lavish subsidies at the public charge; and the doctrines of the late Ferdinand Lassalle, the apostle of State-support to co-operative societies, are articles of economic faith among large numbers of the working population in Northern and Southern Germany. In short it is clear that continental proletarianism, breaking from its old fetters, will wage an internecine war against property and social order.

'Lorsque le faible devient fort,' impressively writes M. Edmond About,\* 'lorsque l'opprimé devient libre, son premier mouvement n'est pas d'user, mais d'abuser. Déliez les mains d'un brave homme enchaîné sans cause légitime: il ne jettera pas la chaîne, il la ramassera avec soin pour l'attacher aux mains de celui qui la lui a donnée. S'il agissait autrement, il ne serait pas un homme, mais un ange.'

---

---

ART. IX.—1. *The Elementary Education Act, 1870.*

2. *Minute of the Right Honourable the Lords of the Committee of Privy Council on Education, establishing a new Code of Regulations, 1871.*

3. *The School Board Chronicle, Nos. I.—XX. February to July, 1871.*

4. *The Sixtieth Report of the National Society, 1871.*

THE period which has elapsed since we last called attention to the elementary education of the people,† has been one of unexampled educational activity. The Education Act had then just been introduced into the House of Commons; now, after passing through an ordeal of fierce discussion and emerging with

---

\* 'A, B, C, du Travailleur,' p. 151.

† In April, 1870.  
considerable

considerable modifications, it has become law, and has thus inaugurated the first scheme of education in England which can in the strict sense be called 'National,' as really providing for the elementary instruction of every child in the country. As a necessary corollary to it has followed the New Code, reversing in many important respects the 'Revised Code,' of which we have heard so much in measured praise and unmeasured censure, and certainly indicating very distinctly a resolution on the part of the Education Department to deal with the great cause entrusted to its care in a more generous spirit, in respect not only of larger pecuniary supply but of greater liberality of idea. As a consequence of the same legislation, School Boards have been created in the metropolis, in all the largest towns, and in many even of the smaller towns and hamlets, wielding large powers under the Act, and evidently prepared to exercise them with energy and ability. Last, but not wholly least, the influence of the time has spread to the existing school system. There has been an extraordinary creation of new voluntary schools; the Education Department, we hear, stood fairly aghast at the number of applications for building grants—the last which the state is ever to make to voluntary agencies—and as the close of 1870 approached, its experience showed a state of things not unlike the bustle and excitement of the last day on which railway schemes can be deposited for the consideration of Parliamentary Committees. The Church of England has been stirred to new efforts to preserve and complete the system which has done such noble work during the last thirty years; \* the Roman Catholic body, occupying here, as on all other questions, an exceptional position, has shown extraordinary munificence in the creation of new schools for its own people. If the voluntary system is to die, as its opponents prophesy, it is certainly resolved to die hard; if, as we hope, it is to live, it is taking the right means to secure a new power of vitality and a new lease of life.

All these movements mark an educational crisis. The public mind is roused to the importance of the subject, and, in spite of all the disturbing influences of party or sectarian jealousy, is resolutely bent on doing the work set before the country in a practical and uncontroversial spirit. It is, of course, inevitable that thorough consideration of the problem should disclose its enormous magnitude, its bewildering intricacy, and its ineradicable difficulties; nor are there wanting the men who, from sheer timidity, cry out that there are 'lions in the path,' or with per-

\* The National Society has made grants to no less than 1411 schools (which, of course, are Church schools only) to be erected at an outlay of 848,000*l.*, and to contain 195,000 children.

verse ingenuity seek to exaggerate and even to create perplexities. But we do not believe that at the present time they have much power over public opinion. Englishmen have a strong belief in the *solvitur ambulando* principle; they have over and over again done what theorists pronounced to be impossible; and, if their work does show some abstract imperfections, they are always ready to consider such imperfections abundantly compensated by solidity and practical energy: they prefer an irregular reality to a 'faultless monster that the world ne'er saw.' Accordingly at this moment they are more ready to listen to the practical educationists, who declare that the thing has been already done in great part and shall be done completely, than to the alarmists, who cry out that the attempt is hopeless, or the revolutionists, who would use this cry as an excuse for making a clean sweep of all former erections, and building up a new fabric on the vacant space, perhaps with the ruins of the old. The time may come when the cold fit will return; then, we fear, timidity and economy, party spirit and revolutionism, will gain a hearing. Meanwhile it is earnestly to be desired that the great impulse given may carry us well over the dead point, and that the creative enthusiasm of the present moment may have done what it will be in great degree impossible to undo.

Progress then, and great progress there will undoubtedly be. But we are of the number—which we hope in England is still considerable—of those who are not content to be going fast, without knowing whither we are going; we would welcome all necessary change, but both theory and experience teach us that those changes are most orderly and healthy which are real developments of what has grown up by a gradual and natural growth, and which preserve at every step the link of an organic continuity with the past. Rejoicing in the present educational enthusiasm, sympathizing to the utmost with the various movements thus combining to secure the triumph of the good cause, we yet think it natural that men should ask, What are really our present educational prospects? Shall we secure a real improvement and growth? Can we hope, even approximately, to attain our great ideal, the education—elementary, indeed, but substantial—of every English child?

These questions assume various forms, and are asked in various tones of feeling and opinion. But, speaking generally, the real points of interest to the country are these three: First, What will be the effect of the new system of rate-supported schools, backed by the compulsory power of the law, upon the voluntary system, which has hitherto been thought to be congenial to our national character, and which has certainly done considerable work?

Must

Must the law, stepping down from its position of mere control and impartiality into the arena of practical work, necessarily absorb all other agencies into itself? Next comes the question, which gives this last its chief vividness of actual interest, What will be the attitude of future education towards the religious principle, which up to this time has been the chief motive force in the educational work, and which in any case must, at least, claim to be represented in all systems of elementary instruction? Thirdly, we ask, Is there any chance of really extending our education, at once in area and in quality, so as to remedy the many defects which have always been acknowledged as marring and obstructing its work? Some answers to these three questions we shall endeavour now to suggest.

I. In considering the relation of the new state of things to the previously existing system, it is important to remember that the Education Act, as passed, has been materially altered from the Bill originally introduced by Mr. Forster, and sketched out in our last article on this subject. It has had to submit to the fate which attends on almost all measures adopted by a popular assembly; much of its theoretical symmetry and simplicity of principle has been sacrificed to the necessity of making it so far correspond to the various opinions of political and ecclesiastical parties, that it might pass, and having passed, be a really workable measure.

In the first instance it made the creation of School Boards a distinctly supplemental and (so to speak) a remedial measure. There was first to be a public inquiry into the 'sufficiency, efficiency, and suitability' of the existing school machinery. If it was found defective, there was next to be a notice addressed by the Education Department to the authorities of the locality, calling upon them to supply schools in any way they chose; and only if such notice produced no adequate result, was a School Board to be formed after a given time, to supply by legal compulsion the resources which were not otherwise forthcoming. This provision was greatly modified in Parliament. It was taken for granted that there would be deficiency in the metropolis, and accordingly a London School Board, itself a new conception, inasmuch as it was to have jurisdiction over a population of some four millions, to dispense immense revenues, and to exercise most extensive influence, was to be created at once. Then power was given to the authorities of any locality to apply for a School Board immediately; and, in consequence, already more than a hundred School Boards are existent and at work. In fact, the general result is (allowing for exceptions on both sides), that in rural districts and small towns the voluntary system

system will for the present cover the whole area and supply all educational requirements, while in the larger towns the rate-supported schools will, with as little delay as possible, be established. In some cases, indeed—we think only a few—the creation of Boards does not imply this, the only object contemplated being the acquisition of power to compel attendance. But the general result is pretty nearly as we have stated it, and the inevitable rivalry of the two sets of schools will begin forthwith.

Another change introduced into the Bill during its passage through Parliament tends to make the separation between the two systems more rigid and to produce a more distinct antagonism. It was originally intended (as we pointed out) that School Boards might assist existing public elementary schools, on certain conditions of impartiality, and under the control of the Education Department. This provision was struck out; and we think its omission singularly unfortunate. It might certainly have saved expenditure and promoted efficiency of education, by bringing the powers of School Boards more extensively into play. But what is of more consequence is, that it would have provided a link between the purely voluntary and purely legal systems. There would have been the schools independent of the Board, and the schools supported by rates, as now; but between them would have been interposed an intermediate class of 'rate-aided' schools, which might have linked them together, and supplied a ready means of passing from one extreme to the other. If the two systems are to be hostile, this is well; some, indeed, of the adherents of the voluntary system rejoice in it accordingly. But if their rivalry is to wear the friendly aspect of co-operation, this alteration is decidedly an alteration for the worse.

In relation to this rivalry the Bill preserves, generally speaking, the most complete impartiality. The conditions of aid and the amount of aid from the State are to be precisely the same for both classes of public elementary schools; and even schools which do not fall under that category, if efficient, although they cannot be aided, are to be counted, nevertheless, in estimating the educational resources of a district. The principle of the Education Department is still as before. Let the work be done thoroughly by any local machinery whatever; it is our business simply to test and to reward it, in the name of the Nation which it benefits. There is, however, one marked exception to this impartiality, in respect of that most important power—the power of compelling attendance. As things now stand, one district, having a School Board, will have this power, and may fill its schools thereby; another close at hand, just because its resources are already sufficient, will have no Board, and therefore no power

to

to compel the use of those resources. This is obviously a fatal blot on the measure ; and that it was so, was pointed out during the discussion of the Bill. It is no answer to say that the power to compel is only permissive, and the whole provision tentative ; because, if the matter is one of privilege, equal privilege ought to be conceded to all, and if an experiment is to be tried, it ought to be tried fairly. It was proposed, if we mistake not, that, where no School Board existed, some body representing the ratepayers should have the power to compel attendance (which power, indeed, the Poor-Law Guardians have, virtually, at this moment, in respect of the children of out-door paupers) ; but to all such proposals the Government turned a deaf ear. Their object was, we presume, to give a premium on the creation of School Boards, and it may have been obtained. But this consideration cannot outweigh the unfairness and inexpediency of the present arrangement ; and we gather, from an answer of Mr. Forster to a deputation from the National Education Union, that in some way it is intended to rectify it. However, wherever a School Board exists, the Act distinctly suggests perfect impartiality of action. If compulsory attendance is enforced, the parent may send his child to any efficient school that he pleases ; and (to touch now upon a point of sore controversy) wherever the Board sees it right to meet cases of absolute poverty by giving a free education to any child, the Act evidently contemplates remission of fees in its own schools and payment of fees in other elementary schools as co-ordinate processes,\* equally admissible and equally desirable. The general idea, therefore, of the Act, is to give fair play to both classes of schools. It is (to refer to much-abused words) neither ‘denominational’ nor ‘undenominational’ in its tendencies. Its whole aim is to be impartial, at once conservative of all that is worth conserving, and creative of that which is still needed. Just because it is so, it has received the support of all who are not misguided by party spirit or sectarian jealousy, and—the malcontents at Bradford notwithstanding—has immeasurably raised Mr. Forster’s reputation as a statesman.

It would have been well if this same spirit of impartiality

---

\* The point is so important that we print the actual clauses :—

XVII. Every child attending a school provided by any School Board shall pay such weekly fee as may be prescribed by the School Board, with the consent of the Education Department, but the School Board may from time to time, for a renewable period not exceeding six months, remit the whole or any part of such fee in the case of any child when they are of opinion that the parent of such child is unable from poverty to pay the same, but such remission shall not be deemed to be parochial relief given to such parent.

XXV. The School Board may if they think fit, from time to time, for a renewable period not exceeding six months, pay the whole or any part of the school fees payable at any public elementary school by any child resident in their district whose parent is in their opinion unable from poverty to pay the same ; but no such payment shall be made or refused on condition of the child attending any public elementary school other than such as may be selected by the parent ; and such payment shall not be deemed to be parochial relief given to such parent.

had

had been allowed to prevail in the various School Boards. But, unhappily, it has not been so ; under the names of Liberality and Unsectarianism, what we must call an illiberal and sectarian dislike of the denominational schools has shown itself, in a vehement and almost furious protest against carrying out the principle of the Act. In Birmingham, in Liverpool, and in London, this has been the one question which has split the Boards asunder ; at Liverpool, the malcontents, defeated on the Board, assailed the Education Department, and received, as they deserved, a decided, although courteous, rebuff. Mr. Forster was not called upon to pronounce on the wisdom or folly of the decision of the Board ; but it was really absurd to ask him to interfere with it, against the spirit of his own Act, not only in this section, but throughout its whole tenor. In the London Board, on a similar defeat, the minority, represented by Professor Huxley, seem to have lost their tempers, and, for the first time, to have threatened the factious opposition, which is too well known in the House of Commons, and to which every popular assembly is liable whenever an angry party chooses to abuse the forms, which are meant simply to ensure a fair debate, and so to weary out a majority. The Act is, we see, given up by these gentlemen ; it was hard to conceive, even from the beginning, how any fair reading of it could be pressed into their service, and Mr. Forster's honest interpretation of it, in the name of the Department, renders their case quite hopeless in this quarter. They are reduced, therefore, to argue the question on its own merits. Evidently the Act suggests only, it cannot enforce any course of action in the matter. The School Boards are free to act as they will, and the real question is, what is the just and expedient course.

The true nucleus of the opposition is formed of the men who would have carried out the revolutionary policy of the League, who hate all denominational schools, and look with repugnance on the impartial attitude of the Education Act towards them. Their principle is intelligible enough ; they would have no aid whatever given from any public source to any school connected with this or that denomination. If they could have a secular system they would choose it as the best ; if they cannot have this, they will at least have an 'unsectarian' scheme. Whatever tends to keep up the existing schools they oppose at every step ; beaten in respect of support from the Imperial exchequer, they renew the fight in respect of aid from local rates ; precisely the old arguments are brought out with a new face, and a renewal of the Church-rate agitation, with all the virulence which local party spirit can infuse into it, is loudly threatened. But if this section

stood

stood alone, its inherent weakness would soon be shown, in the Boards as in the public generally; on this and other points of its programme it would be beaten by an overwhelming majority. In fact, however, it has drawn to itself a considerable amount of support from those who cannot see the real merits of the question, and are blinded by the mere dazzle of the word 'unsectarian.'

There is a great confusion of ideas in this matter. In the first place, the word 'denominational' is used with a convenient ambiguity. It really means on this question 'connected with a certain religious body;' and those who talk of the 'denominations and the people,' 'the denominational and the unsectarian parties,' and the like, should remember that, after all, the 'denominations' in this sense actually include the large mass of all the education, wealth, and power of the country; and the residuum, except where its numbers are swelled by mere ignorance or carelessness, comprehends a comparatively small party or sect—the sect of secularists or 'unattached Christians.' But the name is used as though it implied a really sectarian spirit of narrowness and an enthusiasm of proselytism in these schools; and, so used, it is utterly inconsistent with facts testified to over and over again from all quarters, and still more inconsistent with the provisions laid down for the future. With a Time-table Conscience Clause, an ignoring of all religious instruction by the Inspectors, and a vigilant School Board, including that party which has as keen a nose for sectarianism as ever the Holy Office had for heresy, what intolerance or narrowness of action would be possible? Yet if it is not possible, why make all this ado? If a school is good, and if only secular instruction is enforced, what can it matter whether it be a Board school or a Denominational school? The fact is, although it can hardly be avowed, that the real jealousy is of the Church schools. The Church has worked in the cause, while the Nonconformists have been comparatively inactive, and content to use her schools; and therefore the mass of the existing schools belong to her. The natural results of her energy are now grudged to her; and if her schools cannot be taken away, they shall, it seems, at least not be fed. But this would not make a good cry; the vaguer denunciation of denominationalism serves the purpose better.

Then, again, there is a confusion between the different functions of the Board itself. It is, first of all, an educating body, providing and maintaining schools; and here the Act emphatically proclaims that it shall be 'undenominational,' that is, that its schools shall be quite unconnected with any religious or irreligious body. On this point no difference of opinion exists. But then it has two other powers—the power to compel parents

to

to send their children to school, and the power to meet all cases in which poverty might rightly be pleaded as an excuse. These powers are correlative to and co-extensive with each other; and both are clearly far wider than the Board's educatory action. The Act in each case protects the freedom of the parents. If they are compelled to send their children to school, they may choose a Church school, or a Board school (which will generally be a school of Bible-teaching), or a secular school, where they can find one. This, again, is allowed on all hands. But if they cannot pay their fees, the Board is, after due inquiry, to supply the defect in some way or other. In this respect it is merely to do what the Guardians may do, and ought always to do, under Evelyn Denison's Act, by making the payment of school pence a part of out-door relief. The operation of the Board is here so simply that of relieving officers, that it is seen to have nothing whatever to do with education; and, in fact, the best solution of the question may perhaps be to set aside the kindly desire of the Act to avoid inflicting the stigma of pauperism in this matter, and transfer all relieving functions whatever to the Guardians. Now the real question, stripped of all the rhetorical ornaments and collateral issues with which it has been encumbered, is simply this,—Shall the Board take advantage of a parent's poverty to interfere with his liberty, and not only compel him to send his children to school, but practically dictate the school to which he shall send them? It may be contended that paupers have no rights, and that, if they ask for relief, they must take it on any conditions assigned. But it is strange to hear this plea put forward by the friends of 'the masses,' and the tried supporters of 'liberality.'

And this brings us to another confusion of ideas on this subject. It is supposed that the proposal to pay the fees in existing schools is made in the interests of these schools exclusively. Certainly it is contended that they shall have fair play, and that the crime of orthodoxy—the one unpardonable crime in the eyes of 'advanced Liberals'—shall not absolutely outlaw them. But as far as their interests are concerned, it will be a double-edged measure. In some cases it may do them good by aiding their finances and filling their benches; in other cases—thanks to the strong class-feeling which exists in the section of the people supplying scholars to the elementary schools, and the jealous tenacity with which social distinctions are cherished, wherever they are undefined by any visible mark of rank—it may do harm; and we hear that managers are anxiously inquiring whether they can be forced to receive children, whether they like it or not. The picture of a 'gigantic system of out-door relief'

relief' which has been so vividly drawn and so skilfully displayed, is coloured mainly by imagination, and will be found to be very imperfectly correspondent with fact. The real interests involved are those of the rate-payers and those of the parents. The rate-payers will have a right to complain, if, where Board schools are not wanted, they are built to supply the needs of the poorest class, when these needs might be met far more economically by payment to existing schools. The parents will have a still greater right to complain, if the mere fact of poverty is made to disqualify them from exercising that freedom of choice and that direction of their children which are conceded to all others. The question to be answered is, What cause has been shown why these manifest rights should be calmly set aside? And in spite of all the eloquence which has been lavished on the subject, we have never seen any sufficient answer.\*

Most of the Boards seem to have deferred action till they have schools of their own at work, and can see exactly to what extent their relieving or eleemosynary action is likely to go. This is probably wise. If the principle adopted in London prevails generally, and Board schools become really schools of religious teaching and tone, we fancy that the operation of the proposed payment will be very circumscribed. If secular schools be set up to any great extent by the Boards it will be otherwise; for the grievance of forcing children to them will be deeply and extensively felt. But in either case the merits of the question remain exactly the same, and sooner or later it must be settled.

Supposing, then, that both classes of schools receive strict impartiality from the Legislature, from the Department, and from the Guardians and School Boards, it still remains to ask—and the answer is one of great importance and difficulty—whether the existing schools will be able to maintain themselves in the face of the rivalry which they must undergo, and of the fact that their supporters will be doubly burdened, by the payment of the rate and the contribution of subscriptions. The answer must be, in some degree, conjectural, for there has been as yet no experience of such a state of things in England. But two things are quite certain: first, that their maintenance will require very considerable effort; and next, that the effort is well worth making.

---

\* We are sorry to see that prejudice has been introduced into the discussion in relation to the Roman Catholics, who are thought likely to be chiefly benefited by this payment of fees. Surely the question is simply one of justice: possibly, although we protest against the Roman Catholic practice of making their position exceptional, and this making use of its exceptionality, some little indulgence might be not unreasonably conceded to them, considering the great mass of poverty with which they have to deal.

As to the first of these points, it is, we fear, no matter of theory, but already, by anticipation, a matter of experience, that the payment or expectation of a rate materially diminishes the subscription-list. No one can wonder at this who considers how that list has hitherto been filled. There are found in it (to take the instance of a Church school) the names first of those who look upon education as a spiritual work, and believe that the Church, as such, ought to work in it as one of her regular functions. These will, no doubt, in great measure, continue staunch; and, even under the additional burden, their support will probably not greatly diminish. But there are many who have supported the elementary schools simply as a public duty to the community, not caring much how they were supplied and looking chiefly to their secular results; these will certainly be likely to diminish, if not to withdraw, their subscriptions, unless it can be proved to them that the voluntary schools will still be needed as a valuable element in the new system. And the third class of persons, who give just because others give, will follow the other two; but if the examples set are discordant, they will be pretty sure to choose for imitation the one which excuses them from putting their hands into their pockets. Clearly, therefore, there will be increased difficulty: not so much in the rural districts—for there the fear of a rate may induce an effort to keep it out—but in the towns, and especially in London, where School Boards already exist and rule over large areas, each considered as a whole; so that a parish or locality which has provided itself abundantly with schools will, nevertheless, have to help in making up by rates for the neglect or the poverty of its neighbours. Therefore, even if the calls on existing schools in the future were likely to be no heavier than in the past, there would be difficulty. But they must be heavier. The Boards, we hear, have wisely resolved to arrange and officer their schools on a scale of completeness and liberality much above that average which elementary schools have hitherto attained. The effect of this will necessarily be to force other schools to do the same—at least wherever the rivalry of the two systems is an accomplished fact. This effect will be most valuable educationally: in fact, we believe it to be absolutely necessary. But it will make a serious call on the resources of voluntary schools, and increase the difficulty of their struggle for existence. Either they must increase their subscriptions, or increase their school-fees. The greater liberality of the ‘New Code’ will help them, but it will equally help their rivals; and it must be remembered that the grant can in no case exceed the revenue derived from the subscription and school-fees. We cannot, there-

fore, wonder that the adherents of the old system look on the present state of things with alarm and even despondency, and that some of the supporters of the League quietly rejoice in anticipation of the 'painless extinction' which they were good enough to propose for the existing schools.

But we do not believe that such a result need follow, and we are sure that it would be a great evil if it did follow. There will be some counteracting influences of a secondary nature. It is quite possible that old associations, social prejudices, the notion that all rates are much alike, and that a rate school is something like a workhouse school, may tend to fill our voluntary schools, and even make it possible for them to charge higher fees, so as to compensate for diminished subscriptions. The effect would be—and we have heard it anticipated by many whose opinion is valuable—that the Board schools would gravitate towards the lower stratum (speaking socially) of the classes needing elementary education, while the other schools assumed a comparatively aristocratic character. If the Boards should incline rather to remit fees in their own schools for those unable to pay, than actually to pay fees in other schools, this tendency would, no doubt, be enhanced. But, after all, such causes as these are at best merely secondary, and are apt to be exceedingly capricious in their operation. No one can well reckon upon them. They may be very powerful, or all but ineffective; they may work as men expect, or turn round, like elephants in a battle, and destroy the ranks for which they were intended to clear the way,

If the voluntary schools are to exist, they must prove that they have a right to exist—that they can do work valuable enough to stimulate and to reward the effort which their maintenance will need. Now we are strongly convinced that the success of our first attempt at a true national education largely depends on the co-existence of the two classes of schools, and their action, direct and indirect, upon each other. The rate-supported schools will improve the old by the simple fact of their present rivalry, and the readiness of the new system to absorb the old, if the old should fail. Many, we suppose, especially of the private adventure schools, will be 'improved off the face of the earth;' and, speaking generally, we shall not regret them, for they will be those which are shams, or, at any rate, are starved and ineffective. But those which are good in various degrees—and most of the public schools are good in capacity, if not in performance—will be forced to be better. They will be obliged to become 'Public Elementary Schools' in the meaning of the Act, *i. e.*; to maintain a proper teaching staff, to submit to Govern-

ment

ment inspection, and to provide strictly for the rights of conscience. All those changes, whether welcome or unwelcome, will really be benefits, received from the co-existence of the new rate-supported schools.

But they will do more than repay those benefits. There is a great value in the voluntary principle itself; in the greater freedom and variety of which it admits; in the union of various classes as fellow-workers in a labour which is one of love, or, at any rate, of duty, and not of compulsion; in the unpaid and often priceless service which it can command; in the absence of that hard compulsory tone and jealous watchfulness which belong to all merely legal functionaries. Every one knows the difference between a voluntary hospital and a workhouse, or even a workhouse infirmary. The law can at best be just; it has no power and no right to be generous. We believe that, if the rate-supported schools were allowed to cover the whole educational area, they would be liable to sink to a lower level of conception, and to assume a more perfunctory tone in work, especially when the heavy burden of their maintenance began to be felt, and when colder reasoning succeeded to the present heat of enthusiasm. The existence of the voluntary schools will keep them up to the mark of vigour and spirit, just as they preserve their rivals from fitfulness and want of steadiness in work. The two will be just like a party of riders and a carriage pursuing the same road; the riders alternately start on and fall behind the carriage, and so produce spirit and variety; while the steady roll of the wheels keeps the whole together, and secures a good average of pace. The want of such friendly rivalry appears to be sadly felt in the American system.

Then again (to anticipate in some degree what will be said hereafter), the religious character of education will depend very much still on the voluntary schools. It is true—we rejoice that it is true—that Bible teaching and religious influence are to be the rule in Board schools; and indeed this very fact, while it tends to sustain the Christianity of the country, will, in some degree, militate against the prosperity of voluntary schools. If the Board schools had been mainly secular, we feel convinced that, under all disadvantages, the religious schools would have beaten them; as it is, the contest is more doubtful. But the religious teaching of the new schools is encumbered with much difficulty, because of the condition of ‘undenominationalism,’ which is held to be implied in the Cowper-Temple Clause. There is an active and intelligent party, who will watch for such difficulties, eagerly endeavouring to exaggerate them where they exist, to create them where they do not. At present the majority of

the Boards and the school-managers whom they appoint, will be honestly anxious to work the system efficiently, and may expect to find many difficulties vanish as they grapple with them. If the old schools shall exist, preserving a religious tone, and offering an easy refuge from actual or virtual secularism, then, we believe, their attempt will succeed. Even for the sake of self-preservation, to say nothing of the contagion of a noble example, the new schools will preserve, under all difficulties, a substantially religious character. Let the voluntary schools decay and vanish, and we do not feel so sure of this result. The example of the United States is not encouraging. It is generally known that the common schools have there become virtually secular; in ordinary cases nothing is left except the reading of a passage of Scripture, and the use of some very general prayer at the opening of school. But it is not so well known, that originally the system was intended to 'provide religious instruction for all children,' and that it has gradually faded into what it is, because it is provided that this religious instruction shall not 'favour the tenets of any particular sect of Christians.' We trust that such might not be the case in England, if the new schools were left in undisputed possession of the field; but we cannot feel sure that the same causes would not operate to produce the same results. Doubly then we believe that the old schools are of paramount value here. They can work most effectively for religious instruction themselves. Most of them are connected with the Church, and all the prestige and influence of the Church is brought to bear upon their religious tone, while the absence of all fetters on the religious teaching should help it to greater definiteness and vigour. But, besides this, their reflex action on the new schools is of at least equal importance. To lose it would be, in our view, nothing short of a calamity to the Christianity of England.

Connected with both these considerations is the fact that, in our old schools the influence of the clergy and other ministers of religion will always be felt, while from the Board schools, it is, at least in London, to be jealously excluded. It is acknowledged on all hands, a few rabid fanatics excepted, that the past education of the country owes more to them than to any other class—we had almost said, than to all other classes put together. Their service has this especial value, that it is wholly voluntary, for a clergyman has, legally speaking, no obligation whatever to aid a day-school; it is from the nature of the case, the service of men of higher education and character, than any who are likely otherwise to take part in the work; it must, even if it be occasionally spoiled by a narrowness and intolerance, be

a distinctly spiritual influence, tending to enforce the highest view of education, and—last, not least—it will be so long as the Church is established, the most universal and the most unfailing service. It is impossible that it should not tell very powerfully and very beneficially upon the education of the people. At the present moment the Boards will probably sacrifice it, as the London Board has already done, in simple fear of sectarianism, either in the clerical teachers, or in the anti-clericals who exclude them. It is possible that they may hereafter get over this jealousy, and feel that they have made a very needless and ruinous sacrifice at its shrine. But this is still doubtful; and, while it is so, we must regard the old schools as specially valuable, in the fact that they preserve for us this influence, which, whatever may have been its defects, has certainly been as yet the leading influence in the great work.

The general result to which we come, for these reasons and others which might be adduced, is that the voluntary schools will be, to a great extent, our security for what may be called ‘the spiritual element’ in our education, by which we mean, not only religious instruction and influence, although these are its highest form, but all that tends to give to education, in its subjects and in its tone, the really noble aspect of a process, which as developing man’s faculties is its own reward, and which it is incumbent on the community to give, simply for the sake of duty, and in obedience to a great law of God’s Providence. The schools created and sustained by the compulsory power of law, will give body to our education, greatly enhance its strength, extend its area, improve its organization; but, if they are left alone, there will be a danger of their directing it to lower objects, and conducting it on lower motives. Unite the two, and keep them both in vigour, and the system will approach a perfection, which neither element, even if indefinitely extended and strengthened, could secure.

If these views are in any degree correct, and if their correctness is recognised, then we believe that the old schools will continue and even flourish. A great effort was made in the ‘time of grace’ allowed (up to Dec. 31st, 1870) to occupy all possible ground with them. The various religious bodies of the country are energetically endeavouring to sustain and invigorate them. Perhaps the Church of England, the Roman Catholics, and the Wesleyans, are most alive to the necessity; other religious communities are content with an ‘undenominational’ system, and have not sufficiently reflected, although on their own principles they are most of all bound to reflect, that it may become a different thing, if it be a State system having  
a monopoly

a monopoly, from that which it is at present in the hands of the British and Foreign Society, existing side by side with 'denominational' societies. We wish all success to this action, proceeding as it does on purely religious grounds; but we feel convinced that the duty of keeping up the voluntary schools rests on a wider basis, that it should come home to many of those who delight most in the introduction of the new system, and that it may appeal even to some who regard education in its higher aspects, although they may not be inclined to give supremacy to religion. We do not venture to prophesy what the future may bring forth; we listen, with suspension of belief, to the gloomy forebodings of the men of the old school, who still doubt whether the new Act was needed, in the face of plain and terrible facts; nor do we give more credence to the exulting prophecies of those on the other side, whose wish is father to their thought, when they picture to themselves the paradise of State education, which, by the way, has in America been found to have thorns in the midst of its roses, and a serpent under the grass. We think that the principle of voluntary action is dear to the hearts, and familiar to the practice of Englishmen; we believe that still the religious bodies, as such, have a strong hold over public opinion, and an almost irresistible influence in action. But we have yet greater confidence in the conviction that the voluntary schools have still a *raison d'être*, and that, while this is the case, they will not be allowed to pine away. They may be destroyed; but, if so, it will be by their own fault, because they show themselves inefficient, or because they misuse their special opportunities. Those who fought so hard and so successfully to resist the destructive energies of the League, and to carry the Bill, just because it was a supplemental and not a revolutionary measure, will surely not allow the life, which they have secured from direct violence, to die out of sheer inanition.

II. We pass on to the next question, which after all is the one nearest to the hearts of Englishmen generally, and inquire, How will Religion fare under the new system?

We do not think it necessary here to lay elaborately the foundation of first principles, by insisting on the paramount importance of the question, and the utter impossibility of shelving it. Religious education does not consist merely in giving a certain amount of theological or religious instruction; it implies, in the first place, the starting from a certain basis, by treating the child, not merely as an individual being, not merely as the member of a family and of a state, but as a child of God—that is, a being created by God to have communion with Him, and to

do

do His will. Then, in the process of education, it adds to the facts of nature and of humanity, which all education must endeavour to teach, the facts of a relation to God, which in a Christian system involve the facts of the work and the nature of Christ, and the office of the Holy Spirit. Lastly, in the object which it proposes to the child as the reward of education, it is not content with aiming at his own development and happiness, with training him to do his duty in this life to his family, to his country and to mankind at large—it proposes to lead him to have an object, to ‘do all to the glory of God,’ which from the nature of the case looks beyond all visible relations, and refuses to confine its operations within the limits of this life. Now this may be true, and, if so, it is the greatest truth; it may be false, and, if so, it is the deadliest falsehood. But in no case can it be treated as a secondary matter over which men may agree to differ. The old words ‘religious’ and ‘irreligious’ imply a certain fundamental antagonism; the newly-coined phrase ‘non-religious,’ attempts an impossible neutrality. If religion be excluded, it is more than ignored; the effect on teacher and on pupil must be equivalent to a denial. There can be no wonder, therefore, that the attempt to send it into banishment, however honourable, stirred all English society to its very depths.

Nor is it necessary to show that if religious influence is to touch the great mass of the children who will crowd our new schools, it must be brought to bear on them in the school itself. Those who talk of relegating it to the influence of home, must either be ignorant of what the homes (so called) of the children are, or else must be speaking in a mocking and cruel irony. The proposal to trust to the distinctly religious teaching of various bodies, through their ministers or their laity, in churches and chapels, Sunday schools and cottage lectures, is more plausible and more really hopeful; but it ignores two very serious difficulties—the impossibility of getting hold of the children in a large majority of cases, and the great difficulty of finding places for them and sufficient teaching machinery to bear upon them, if they do come. These pleas have been pretty well ‘threshed out,’ and the small quantity of wheat in them effectually separated from the large quantity of chaff. It is agreed, with tolerable unanimity, that the proposal to exclude religion from the schools is virtually a proposal to exclude it in very great measure from the theory and process of education.

The great question, therefore, has had fairly to be faced. We always thought that its decision would not be doubtful. As Prim declared that there could not be a Republic in Spain without Republicans, so, with more unquestionable truth, we

believed

believed that there could not be a secular system in England without secularists. But we are inclined to think that neither party in the educational strife anticipated the decisiveness and vigour with which the answer of public opinion has been given on this point. Let us glance for a moment at the history of the struggle, as it has been carried on during the last two years.

It was assuredly the agitation of the League to which we may, at least, give the credit of awakening men to the importance of the educational crisis, and making inaction a thing impossible. The agitation was skilfully conducted, and its directors knew their business too well to inscribe on their banners anything except the vague word 'unsectarian;' but the real backbone of the League was in the secularist party, and the energy which they showed and the noise which they contrived to make gave an idea of far greater strength than they really possessed, and probably did much to affect future legislation. The Education Union, which rose up to oppose them, was originally too merely Conservative, refusing to acknowledge the necessity of any large and decisive measure; and this fact, in the first instance, told in favour of the League, and gave colour to the notion that the secularists were the real leaders of the large body of those who were resolved not to be content with the system and the results of the past. It was only just before the meeting of Parliament that the Union saw the necessity of a more decided course, and put out a programme, anticipating (as it proved) several important features of Mr. Forster's original Bill. That measure, as at first introduced, so far recognised the claims of the secularist party, that it preserved for the central authority an attitude of rigid neutrality. It admitted secular schools to the same privileges and aid hitherto given only to schools of some religious character; it left the inspection in religious subjects an open question, giving to the schools which desired it liberty to ask for it, and to the Education Department discretion to grant or refuse the request; it enforced on all schools receiving grants a general 'Conscience clause,' enabling parents to withdraw their children if they pleased from all religious instruction and observance. This was a course which hitherto had never been followed in England. The old theory of an exclusive recognition of the Church had long been surrendered; now the State took a further step and recognised the possibility and the claims of a non-religious system of education. The step was important, in itself and in its significance. But it was generally accepted as inevitable; the adherents of religious education had little fear of secularism, if only 'a free field and no favour' was allowed to all systems. This the original Bill decidedly did. It left the character of the schools entirely

to

to the ratepayers and their representatives: they might erect denominational, undenominational, or secular schools: the State simply insisted that in all the secular instruction should be satisfactory, and that religious liberty should be protected from infringement. Its principle was simple and intelligible, and at first sight it seemed likely to secure general acceptance.

But very soon the battle of agitation began to rage. All over the country the League and the Union held rival meetings; and the superior organization and larger expenditure of the former gave it an apparent equality or even preponderance, especially in the reports of the daily press, which, for some strange reason, reported its meetings and partially ignored those of its rival. But the first remarkable indication of public opinion was shown in the petitions presented to the House of Commons. In June, 1870, when the discussions in Parliament were almost approaching a conclusion, the Union published an abstract of the petitions, drawn from the official Report of the Committee on Public Petitions, and therefore of no doubtful authenticity, by which it appeared that the number of petitioners in favour of the general provisions of the Bill was about twelve times the number of those opposed to it, and the number petitioning for religious education, in some form, was no less than 381,214, as against 23,642 petitioning on the other side. Allowing for all the inaccuracies and fallacies of statistics of this kind, the result was unmistakeable, and, we believe, astonishing to both sides in the struggle. It might have been expected to be decisive of the issue. But the course of the discussion was disturbed in the House by party influences, ecclesiastical and political. The Nonconformist bodies began to show jealousy of the power which the strict impartiality of Mr. Forster's measure would inevitably give to the Church, not as the Church, but as the body which had done the greatest work and achieved the foremost position in the educational field. The 'advanced Liberals' began to grumble at a measure which was likely to secure Conservative support, and which was, most untruly, said to require no sacrifices from the adherents of the old system. We have always fancied that Mr. Forster, although he was far too loyal to hint at any separation in opinion from his colleagues, would probably have stood firm against these influences, and certainly could have carried his Bill intact, if he had stood firm. But—human nature and party necessities being what they are—it was too much to expect a Liberal Government to disregard them. And, accordingly, the Bill received, on several points, modifications which it was hard to defend theoretically, while still adhering to its main principles, and which certainly greatly interfered with its simplicity and consistency.

sistency. In the first place, while the people were petitioning that religious education should be preserved and recognised, the Government resolved that all religious instruction should be ignored, both in respect of inspection and in respect of all grants of public money. In the next place, what has been called the 'Time-table Conscience Clause' was introduced, interfering with the arrangements of religious instruction in schools, and forcing on all alike a stereotyped regulation as to the time of giving it. Most important of all was the well-known 'Cowper-Temple Clause,' brought forward, strangely enough, by the chairman of the Union, which had all along been protesting against the principle\* enunciated therein, and accepted by the Government. This clause, prohibiting all 'religious catechisms and religious formularies distinctive of any particular denomination,' restricted the liberty previously allowed to the ratepayers, and prevented them from founding any schools connected with a religious body, or accepting the transfer of any such schools to themselves. The effect of all these changes was serious. The first certainly tends to discourage religious instruction, and to support the notion of the separation of the religious and the secular elements in education. The second is not very defensible, either in justice or in policy, but probably will not, in practice, do any great good or harm. The third will very materially affect the future of the existing denominational schools, which otherwise might eventually have passed into the hands of the School Boards without losing their original character, provided that the Boards (as they often might and would have done) had seen that there were circumstances under which such preservation was desirable. What its immediate effect will be on the religious character of the Board schools we cannot, as yet, determine; but there can be no doubt that it gives great argumentative advantage to the advocates of a purely secular education, and the opponents, present and future, of any Government grants to denominational schools. It is, in fact, one of these compromises which cannot be maintained on principle, and which, therefore, while it certainly ends strife for the present, may sow the seeds of a future strife, greater in itself and absolutely uncertain in its results. However, with these modifications, the Bill was passed, and has been on the whole readily accepted, although it has departed from the impartiality towards religion and secularism originally contemplated—in some points tending to discourage religious

---

\* It is true that it was brought forward by Mr. Cowper-Temple as an individual. But the chairman of a great public body, so long as he retains his chairmanship, must, in great degree, sink his individuality. Certainly the Union, in allowing him still to occupy the chair, seemed to condone his action.

instruction altogether, and in others to undermine the old denominational schools. It is curious to observe, that the League party is the party most discontented with it; the other side, although every one of the principles which are new in it calls for concession on their part, have felt so conscious of their strength that, rightly or wrongly, they have ignored these drawbacks, and resolved to work the Bill thoroughly and honestly.

Then followed the elections for School Boards all over England, and here it was that the strength of the desire for religious education in the country came out most distinctly and even signally. The secularists were literally nowhere. The League put out its placards, recommending the few secularist candidates; the Liberal papers raised the cry of 'Sectarianism,' professed to regard the contest as one between progress and retrogression, and in some places sought to enforce a practical disqualification against the clergy. But it was all in vain; their favourites were rejected everywhere. It was significant (for example) that in London hardly a single candidate ventured to come forward on a purely secularist platform, and the practical desires and resolutions of the successful candidates were abundantly evinced. The decision of the country was most unmistakably pronounced; in fact, so unmistakably that the most honest and clear-sighted of the opponents of the decision have now accepted it as an accomplished fact. Nor was this all. It is remarkable that, in a great number of cases, the men chosen to administer the new system are those who have worked under the old, and who avow their desire to see the existing schools maintained. The Church, as usual, was hardly conscious of her strength. No doubt, Churchmen might have carried more candidates, had they known it;\* but, even as it is, her representation is very considerable in numbers, and perhaps even more so in respect of influence. The clergy, who were at first ordered by foes, and even advised by friends, not to risk candidature, have been elected freely; and simply from greater knowledge and higher education have gained in many cases a leading position on the Boards. Everything confirms the indications already noticed of public opinion on the matter. We might, perhaps, have anticipated the decision; but we did not anticipate the exceeding clearness and even enthusiasm with which it has been pronounced.

Nor have the proceedings of the Boards so elected been in any way inconsistent with the public feeling which determined

---

\* The use of the ballot and the cumulative vote introduced unknown and unprecedented elements into the contest, which defied all calculations, and produced the grandest possible results.

their constitution. The resolution to maintain religious education substantially and effectively, and to put to flight all the theoretical difficulties by determined practical attempts, has been repeatedly shown. Take the case only of the London School Board. The proposal that 'the Bible shall be read, and there shall be given therefrom such explanations and such instructions in the principles of religion and morality as are suitable to the capacities of children'—allowing for cases of exception, but throwing in such cases the *onus probandi* on the managers, parents, or ratepayers of the district—was brought forward as soon as the Board settled down to its work. It led to a singularly interesting debate, conducted with hardly a trace of animosity, and opening up all the various aspects of the subject; but the result never was doubtful, even for a moment. An amendment of the Rev. W. Rogers, urging the Board 'not to commit itself to any resolution' on the subject, found no seconder. The next, by Mr. Chatfield Clarke, proposing to leave all religious instruction to voluntary zeal and effort, although it brandished the flag of religious equality and conscientious conviction, and invoked the hatred of denominationalism, was defeated by 37 votes to 4. The proposal of the Rev. B. Waugh, to 'read the Bible without religious note or comment,' fared even worse, and only mustered 3 votes against 41. And at last the original motion was carried by 38 votes against 3, and would have secured a larger majority, had not the rejection of an amendment for granting special privileges to Roman Catholicism led the Roman Catholic members to abstain from voting. It is hardly necessary to add anything to the eloquence of these figures; but the debate itself was singularly instructive, and especially so in respect of a speech by Professor Huxley, who, although somewhat patronizing in his tone towards established creeds, was very emphatic in his conviction that some form of religion and morality was essential to true education, and honest (and even generous) in his acknowledgment of what religious influence had already done in the great work. The above is but a specimen of the general tone of proceeding. There can be no question that the School Boards generally will seriously and earnestly endeavour to imbue their educational system with a really religious spirit. There may, perhaps, be a few secular schools, as there are a few now (*e. g.*, those on the Birkbeck system); but they will be few and far between, unless there should occur any fatal difficulty in the working of an 'undenominational' scheme.

This historical retrospect is full both of interest and instruction. It seems to us conclusively to prove two things: first, that

that religious education, and consequently religion itself, are about to pass into a new phase, bringing with it great trials and fraught with very important consequences ; and next, that, even under these circumstances, the vitality of the religious spirit has shown itself most signally and most hopefully.

The novelty of the position is undoubted, and it forms a new era in the relation of Church and State, considered in its widest sense. It is, we suppose, an almost undoubted truth that this relation has, since Church Establishment became an accomplished fact, passed—at least in this country—through three stages. The first is that in which the Church and State are considered as identical in composition ; the former including all the inhabitants of the country in their spiritual character, and the latter the same persons in their temporal relations. The next is that in which the State is considered as distinct from the Church, but yet acknowledges the Church alone as the representative of all religious powers and privileges in the country. The third is that which recognises many religious bodies, each having its own organization and rights, conceding only a primacy, more or less defined, to the Established Church. With all these aspects the education of the country had, at different times, been connected ; and recently it had passed into the last phase, giving a very shadowy primacy, if any, to the Establishment, and beginning also to introduce the principle of acknowledging a religious teaching distinct from all special religious bodies, although practically the working out of that principle was somewhat exceptional.\* Now, it will be observed, by the enactment of the Cowper-Temple clause, the State has established as a general rule what before it did but recognise exceptionally. It has inaugurated a national system of religious teaching, wholly dissociated in theory from any special religious body and its distinctive formularies. The Act implies the belief, to which the country has assented, that such a system of religious teaching is possible. It is clear that, if this belief be realized, it will exercise a most important influence over the status of religious bodies, and so on the great relation of the State to the Church or to the Church and the Sects. But into this we do not intend to enter. We confine ourselves to the strictly educational aspect of the question ; and in respect to this we wish to point out the entirely new circumstances under which the religious principle will have to work.

Its teaching and its teachers will be, to a great degree, deprived of the support and the authority which a Church, as an

---

\* Every one knows the immense preponderance of denominational (*i.e.*, generally Church) schools under the old system.

organized religious body, can always give. So far as they are commissioned they will be the officials of the State, or of the rate-paying community, considered as a portion of the State; and the State, as such, is being led, perhaps being forced, to assume more and more of a secular basis. The central authority does this absolutely by refusing even to recognise religious instruction in the schools;\* the local communities may at any time take the same course, although they refuse to do so now, without any inconsistency or absurdity. It follows, therefore, that the religious teachers of our new schools will be forced to rely simply on their own individual Christianity; every man will have to 'fight for his own hand' in the spiritual warfare; and the great masses, hitherto more or less closely organized and disciplined, will be broken up into a cloud of isolated combatants. Nor will the loss be limited to this. There is a great influence by which a Church tells from without upon a school connected with it, not only by its authority, but also by the sympathy, aid, and direction, which the very fact of its connexion brings out, and which, in country districts especially, have done so much to invigorate and exalt the character of our existing schools. All this will be lost, and we see nothing to supply its place; it will be hard to get up any enthusiasm for a school, which is created and maintained by the unattractive and unsympathizing power of mere law.

But, of course, these difficulties are but slight compared with the difficulty introduced by the attempt to be 'undenominational,' an attempt jealously watched by a small but acute party, who are most anxious to make it fail as a religious system, and glide down the smooth incline into the lower depth of secularism. The very principle is conceived of in two wholly different lights. One class interprets it as an undertaking to teach nothing of which any denomination can disapprove, giving practically to the most insignificant minority a power of veto, which a large acquiescing majority would be wholly unable to overrule. Remembering the marvellous diversity of bodies even calling themselves Christians, from the Ultramontane Romanist to the broadest Unitarian, remembering also that Jews or Mahometans are a denomination in the view of the Act, remembering that it might be the policy of secularists to water down the religious teaching by captious objections, instead of refusing it

---

\* It is not even allowed to count as school-attendance under the New Code, although even to music and drill that privilege is conceded. Considering even the intellectual difficulty and value of such instruction, so jealous an exclusion of it from the cognisance of the Government savours a little of that working a principle to death, of which only mere *doctrinaires* are usually guilty.

under the Conscience Clause, it is not difficult to show (and it has been shown repeatedly), that by the application of the process of exhaustion, such interpretation is gradually destructive of all religious instruction whatever. Now nothing is more certain than that the inventor of the Cowper-Temple Clause, and the Prime Minister, who accepted it and so gave it a chance of becoming law, utterly refused this interpretation. Their intention was simply to provide that the schools should not be 'ticketed' as belonging to this denomination or that. They believed that, although it is impossible to draw out an undenominational creed, which even all Christians would accept, yet that there is a vast amount of common belief and teaching in the various systems, which include the great mass of the community, and acknowledge a common Bible, and that by a process of 'Natural Selection' this will hold the leading place in all religious instruction which is not avowedly designed for proselytism or controversy. Extreme opinions, they thought, must be left to the protection of the Conscience Clause and its power of withdrawal; and so the right at once of the minority and the (often forgotten) majority would be preserved. This is really the view which has been accepted by the country and the School Board generally. But a moment's thought will show that, like most of our English institutions, stamped with the marks of legislative compromise, it is a rough common-sense way of treating the question, which is easily open to attack from the adherents of more rigidly logical systems, and which depends wholly for its continued existence on the support of public opinion. We trust and we believe that it will be made to work. But it is obvious that under it religious teaching must be carried on under certain restraints; its shackles may be heavy or light according to circumstances, but in no case can they be wholly unfelt.

We have not dwelt upon these new conditions and new difficulties of religious instruction, because we think them likely to be fatal. On the contrary, we fully believe that the strong and almost vehement energy of the religious spirit so signally manifested through the whole of the Education question, will prove itself able to do what as yet it has always done—to adapt itself to new institutions, or adapt those institutions to itself, to gain even freshness and originality from the imposition of novel conditions, and perhaps to learn some of the lessons which those conditions imply. Is it too much to hope that if the experiment of a common religious teaching succeeds in our schools, it may do something to draw together elsewhere, to unity of feeling, if not unity of Church constitution, those who are now far too

much

much divided in the face of a common enemy? All who have had to maintain the principle of religious teaching must have felt how infinitely greater and deeper than all 'denominational' doctrines is the ground of a common Christianity. But it is very important that those who care for religious education should understand that, if the main battle is won, success has not been gained without much sacrifice, and that on their watchfulness, their sympathy, and their self-devotion at the present time, the extent and value of the victory will depend. We have already said that very much will turn upon the continued existence of the old schools, in which religious teaching has a larger and a more unfettered opportunity; yet to sustain these will be specially difficult; rates and subscriptions are not naturally co-existent, and from mere ignorance many may fancy that all can be thrown on the new system. It must be the business of the leaders of religious opinion to show that there is a special call for liberality and self-sacrifice here. Then again, it is certain that some means must be taken to supply that inspection in religious knowledge, which the Education Department relinquishes, but for which the Act leaves room. (Section lxxvi.) The injury done by this deliberate ignoring of the subject by the central authority and its separation from all others cannot be undone, but it may be compensated for by more thorough inspection, perhaps by greater reverence and earnestness of tone therein. We are glad to see that all religious bodies, and the Church of England especially, are alive to this need. Again, it is obvious that every exertion should be made to supply teachers, who shall be men and women of religious spirit and conviction. The Training Colleges, especially since they have been injured by the short-sighted economy of the old Revised Code, may probably be insufficient in number. It would be better to spend money in creating one new training college of religious education, than in erecting a score of new elementary schools. But, over and above these things, what is to be desired is that all who care for religious education should bring to bear on the future those subtle and powerful influences of sympathy and of opinion which give life to all practical agencies. So alone can School Boards, managers, and teachers be at once encouraged and restrained; so alone can the Education Department, now both liberally and honestly guided, be kept from reverting to some of the evil traditions of the past. The religious fortress has defied all attempts to storm it; let its defenders beware lest it be undermined in detail, and keep a bold and united front to the enemy, *'ne dum singuli pugnent, universi vincantur.'*

III. The last, and in some sense the most interesting, question,

tion, still remains. What are the prospects of really pushing on National Education under our new circumstances, so that in a few years it shall deserve its high title, and make the advance which is so urgently needed both in quality and quantity? We think that there is a most hopeful prospect, chiefly because the system to be followed is accordant with English traditions in refusing to break continuity, in the determination which it shows to utilize, to reinvigorate, and to supplement all that is good in the old.

Let us briefly glance at the various directions, in which we may hope for improvement.

In the first place the new system must soon cover all the neglected spots and succour all the neglected classes of the community. We have always done full justice to the marvellous power which the voluntary action of duty and charity has shown in this matter. Where the population is comparatively thin, where classes are really known to one another, where there are still such things as local feelings and attachments, where the exertions of the Church and other religious bodies have been able to keep pace with the necessities of the times, it has been generally sufficient, and it would have been far more sufficient, if it had received more support and encouragement at head-quarters. But in the large towns it has been outstripped and overwhelmed by the vast increase of population, and the growth of large masses of people, vagabond and pauperized, separated from society by a broad gulf, which law and charity alike have sought in vain to bridge over. Let us confine ourselves once more to the case of London. The School Board has made diligent inquiry into the present supply of educational resources; it has catalogued every school, public and private, good, bad, and indifferent, where the fee paid is under ninepence a week. What is the result? The estimated population of the Metropolitan area is 3,258,469; the estimated number of children between three and thirteen, is 684,284; and of these it is calculated that about four-fifths, some 547,428, should be in elementary schools. The whole accommodation (at eight square feet per child, which the Act lays down as the minimum) provides for 400,352. If therefore all these schools were full and were efficient, there would still be about 150,000 children to provide for in London. But of the 3177 schools, which provide this accommodation, 1916 are 'private adventure schools;' it is all but certain that many of these will be pronounced inefficient and so left out of calculation, and some of the larger schools will share the same fate. Evidently therefore the area, which the new schools must cover is very large; the necessity of covering it, even if it stood

alone, would have fully justified the introduction of a new State agency to supply these inevitable but fatal defects in the old. The London School Board, we are glad to see, is already, in anticipation of the inquiries going on, selecting certain neglected spots, on which it may erect the first of its many schools.

The case of London is probably the strongest. But there can be no reasonable doubt that the same urgent need exists in the larger towns. Everyone knows how rapidly towns spring up in manufacturing or mining districts. In such towns no other agency than that of the law can meet the swiftly growing necessity. Probably there are at least some rural districts, where similar, the less urgent, need is felt.

Now the machinery of the Act is thoroughly efficient here. In the name of true economy and justice to existing interests it requires certain preliminaries, which will take some; little time; and it is amusing to see how the new-born educational enthusiasm of the public chafes at the delay of even a few weeks or months. But in a short time, certainly before the three years of the first School Boards come to an end, the whole face of the country will be covered with schools, all rising to a certain standard of efficiency, and accessible to every individual of the classes which need them. This is the first step; we rejoice in the prospect of it; we feel, perhaps, a little ashamed that we have been so long in taking it.

Next we hope and believe that the standard of education will be raised. In saying that it needs to be raised, we are not reflecting upon the existing schools. Many of them are excellent; in all, considering their various difficulties and discouragements, the only wonder is that results so good have been already secured. But it has not been, it could not be, either in itself or in its results, what such a country as England needs and ought to have. We see the beginnings of a brighter day.

It is satisfactory to notice that the New Code of Regulations reverses in many material points that system of the 'Revised Code,' on which so much has been said, in vehement censure, in rather faint and perfunctory praise. We are far from thinking that the Revised Code did no good, and eradicated no evils, but by the consent of all who care for education, it is acknowledged that it did this service in a very 'rough and ready way,' and at a ruinous cost. The first object really seemed to be economy; a certain efficiency of education, by 'payment for results' and by rigid enforcement of the 'Three R's,' was contemplated, but only as a secondary matter. But whatever was the object, the effect is certain. It has been seriously to discourage elementary schoolmasters, causing many to leave and fewer to enter the profession,

profession, to diminish the supply of pupil-teachers, to close some of the training schools, and decidedly to lower the standard of education, and grind out its loveliness and spirit. At last, in this, as in other cases, the Government has come to see that the economy effected was a wretchedly false economy, which will have to be made up for at far greater cost than it saved; that the passing large numbers of children in the elementary subjects, however good in itself, may be dearly purchased by the sacrifice of the higher elements of education; and that it is hardly a wise policy on the part of the Education Department to discourage and snub the schoolmanagers and teachers, on whose willingness and enthusiasm so much depends. The New Code of 1871 is evidently designed to retrace some of these steps. It promises more liberal grants, in fulfilment of a promise made by Mr. Gladstone in the House; it wisely offers under certain circumstances certificates to teachers of known experience and excellence without examination; and it desires to give a premium for the study of higher subjects. It is perhaps doubtful whether the arrangements of the Code are so contrived as to effect this last most desirable purpose; some authorities contend that the maximum of grant will be reached in efficient schools without touching the higher subjects at all. But the recognition of this principle is the all important matter; if there is the will to encourage larger views of instruction, the way will soon be found. We hail this change as a cheering indication that a more really liberal and enlightened spirit pervades in the Department.

The School Boards also seem inclined to do their part in the same spirit. As before, we will take the London Board and its operations as types of the rest. The first report of the Education Committee has just been presented by Professor Huxley, the Chairman, and there is no doubt that it will be substantially accepted by the Board. Its programme certainly does not err on the side of scantiness. It contemplates in the schools for children from seven upwards the following subjects:—

- a. Religion and Morality.
- b. Reading, writing, and arithmetic; English Grammar and Composition, and the principles of book-keeping in Senior Schools; and mensuration in Senior Boys' Schools.
- c. Systematized object lessons, embracing in the course of the six school years, instruction in all the elementary conceptions of physical science, and serving as an introduction to the science examinations which are conducted by the Science and Art Department.
- d. The History of England.

e. Elementary Geography.

f. Elementary Social Economy.

g. Elementary drawing, leading up to the examinations in mechanical drawing and to the art teaching of the Science and Art Department.

h. In Girls' School, plain needlework and cutting out.

And it even allows aspiring managers to add at their discretion (which we hope will be tempered by prudence)—

a. Algebra and Geometry.

b. The rudiments of Latin or a Modern Language.

It will be observed that the programme laid down recognises not only the ordinary training in language, writing, and arithmetic, but the rudiments of Physical Science and Art. And so including, however simply, the chief elements of education, it shows a distinct and determinate desire to make it something more than the mere mechanical grinding to which many have been inclined to confine it. It proposes, we should add, also to make physical exercise and drill a regular part of the work of its schools, so at least to sanction physical training, possibly to prepare for the military exigences of the future.

We anticipate, of course, that certain people will hold up their hands in amazement, lament over the burden to be laid on the ratepayers, and declaim about over-education or smattering. Undoubtedly the programme must be worked carefully, and it will require good teachers to work it; all these subjects will not be taught to all children in a school, nor, we presume, is the recommendation to be made a law of the Medes and Persians without any dispensing power. But these considerations will not escape the Board; with due prudence and discrimination we believe that their general scheme can be carried out; and remembering that their action must evidently affect that of other Boards, and even of the voluntary schools, we think its adoption will mark an era in the educational history of the country.

There will be then a very decided and earnest attempt to raise our educational standard. Why should it not succeed? The capacity of the English mind is at least not inferior to those of our continental neighbours. Can we not rival the results which, for instance, Switzerland or Germany has attained? All evidence seems to show that the answer rests on two conditions—the provision of a proper supply of teachers, and the power to ensure regular attendance.

There can be no doubt that, speaking generally, our schools have not been sufficiently officered, either as to quantity or quality of teachers. The only wonder is that so insufficient a staff has often achieved so many excellent results. The new system

system will, we imagine, attempt to increase the number of teachers, which poverty has generally kept down. We refer once more to the Report of the London School Board's Educational Committee. They say—'We are of opinion that the minimum number of teachers for a school of 500 children should be 16—namely, 1 head teacher, 4 assistant teachers, and 11 pupil teachers; and that the teaching staff should be increased by 1 assistant teacher and 3 pupil teachers for additional 120 children.'

It is understood that this is but an opinion, not so necessarily binding as to determine the future action of the Board; but it has been arrived at after careful consideration; it represents the opinion of the most influential members; and it will probably be accepted in substance. No one who knows anything of ordinary elementary schools will be slow to perceive that such a staff is far above the average. But, if education is to be intelligent, if it is to bring the mind of the teacher to bear on the mind of the pupil, if it is to dispense with those merely mechanical processes under which knowledge lightly comes and lightly goes, some such provision of teachers is not excessive. It will (as we have said) be very difficult for the existing schools to rival it, and yet rival it they must, if they are to hold their own. But that its necessity is recognised, and that there is a resolution to supply it, are hopeful signs for the education of the future.

But there is need, also, of some advance in quality as well as in quantity. It is probably well-known to our readers that hitherto a large number of the existing public schools have not been brought under Government inspection, mainly because they have not had certificated teachers; in those cases there is no security whatever that the teachers are efficient, and, as a matter of fact, we believe that, with some distinguished exceptions, they fall decidedly below the proper standard. What is the character of the teachers of very many 'private adventure schools' it is needless, and would be painful, to state in detail. The task of teaching is still too often looked upon as the one task which needs neither training nor special preparation of knowledge, as the refuge, in fact, of the broken down and the destitute. All this must be swept away. The Board schools will be universally 'public elementary schools,' that is, under Government inspection and its conditions; all the existing schools, virtually public, will have also to become 'public' in this technical sense; nor can we suppose that the time is far distant when something like 'Scholastic registration' will be required, to weed out from the profession the teachers who cannot teach, and the rulers who cannot rule. All these things point, as we have said, to an improvement in the quality

quality of teachers. The only difficulty is—and it is one of the most serious of all—where are these teachers to come from? In time we have little doubt that they will be forthcoming. The position, and perhaps the average stipend, will be raised; the supply will correspond to the demand. But at the first start there will be very great difficulty. The Education Department has apparently provided for this by the enactment to which we have already alluded;\* probably, if necessity is shown, it may see its way to relax a little more the stringency of its regulations, provided that real efficiency be secured. In fact, its requirement of certificates is an inconsistency, though, we think, a wise and noble inconsistency, with the bare principle of ‘payment by results,’ which the introducers of the Revised Code so loudly professed; and, under these circumstances, it ought to feel free to construe it somewhat liberally. In any case, as we have said, there will be trouble enough in starting. Probably in three years the number of certificated teachers in England must be nearly trebled; and even afterwards the supply needed will be greatly in excess of what has been hitherto required. How is it to be furnished?

All who are acquainted with the subject will be aware that any competent teacher has long been able to gain a certificate by examination, without going to a training college, and now (as we have already seen) is allowed to receive one on proof of experience, without examination. These provisions will, we hope, do much towards the needful supply. If only the position and prospects of the school teachers can be improved, many will enter or come back to this special form of educational work; and we would suggest that perhaps more use might be made (as is done in America) of female teachers, even in boys’ schools, so that here some of the 600,000 overplus of females, of which the last Census informs us, may be taken up and utilized. But the real backbone of the teaching body will be found in the trained teachers. We cannot too strongly urge upon all who care for education, what we have already urged in the interests of religion, that the great want is likely to be the want of more training colleges. The Boards have under the Act no power to found them; there

\* New Code—

69. *During the three years ending 31st December, 1873, certificates of the third class may be granted, without examination, upon the report of an Inspector, to acting teachers who satisfy the following conditions:—*

- (1.) *They must, at the date of the Inspector’s report,—*
  - (a.) *Be above 36 years of age;*
  - (b.) *Have been teachers of elementary schools for at least 10 years; and*
  - (c.) *Present certificates of good character from the managers of their schools.*
- (2.) *The Inspector must report,—*
  - (a.) *That they are efficient teachers;*
  - (b.) *That not less than 30 children, who had been under instruction in their schools, during the preceding six months, were individually examined (Article 28); and*
  - (c.) *That at least 20 of the ‘passes’ of these scholars in reading, writing, or arithmetic, were made in the second, or some higher, Standard.*

will be great difficulty, especially in the present attitude of the Government towards religion, in creating them through the Education Department. It will be far better for the future of Christian Education, if the Church and other religious bodies will devote their special energies to this important work. One training college, as we have said, will be worth very many elementary schools; the present colleges may be enlarged, even if no new ones are built; possibly some colleges of a higher class might be induced to form departments for this special work. This matter is really one of the most important, and perhaps perplexing, of all. For want of success here all other exertions may be baffled, and the largest and most costly organization half paralysed.

But there is still one other condition which must be fulfilled, if the educational progress we hope for is to be realized. All competent teachers cry with one voice, 'Give us the children in regular attendance for a sufficient time, and we will teach them anything which in reason you can demand.' It has been in this, far more than in any other difficulty, that the weakness of our educational system has hitherto been manifest. There are crowds of children who do not come to school at all; there are still larger numbers whose attendance is so short and irregular that anything beyond the merest smattering is a thing impossible. Take again the statistics of this very division of Westminster, in which we are writing. There are schools which at the authorized allowance of 8 square feet per child\* could take in 28,292 children. Now only 23,680 are on the rolls. There is room, therefore, for some 5000 more, out of the 20,000, or thereabouts, who still fail to come. But this is not all; at the time of enumeration there were but 16,657 in actual attendance—that is, unless the day was especially unfortunate, there are no less than 7000 children in irregular attendance, coming one day or one week and absent the next. And this is a far more serious defect even than the other, for this irregularity really mars the teaching of the school, and produces a mere illusory shadow of education in the children. Here is, after all, the crying evil. There are thousands of children in London who have, actually or virtually, no parents; who scramble on as they can by their own earnings or beggings or stealings, hanging loose on the outskirts of society. These never enter our schools at all; their school of low and precocious cunning is found in the streets, and their teachers are misery and crime. Then there are

---

\* By the way, is it necessary to insist rigidly on this area in all schools, and that without any regard to the height of the building and the consequent variation in the number of cubic feet corresponding to a given area on the floor?

thousands of parents too poor, or too idle, or too dissolute, to do without the little earnings of their children, or, perhaps, too ignorant and too careless to know the value of education for them. Their little ones are the absentees or the irregular comers. Something must be done to remedy these crying evils. What is it to be?

The Education Act suggests compulsion, and arms the Boards with compulsory powers. These powers were but permissive, but one Board after another has accepted the responsibility, and affirmed the absolute necessity of exercising them; and the districts which have no School Boards are crying out for some compulsory machinery which shall extend to them. Public opinion has on the whole supported these views and these resolutions. Even our national dislike of compulsion in any shape, and our jealous anxiety for individual liberty of parent or child, have given way. We are beginning to find, in this as in other matters, that we must have some government, some coercion of licence and selfishness, when they clothe themselves in the sacred garb of Liberty. Another great experiment is to be made: we rejoice that it is to be attempted, and wish it all success. But the task will certainly be one of extreme delicacy and difficulty. It must be so carried out as to retain the support of public opinion, especially in the classes chiefly concerned; and this it will not do, unless it carefully avoids undue precipitation, and uses discrimination and even tenderness to avoid infliction of real hardship.

The experience of the compulsory system in America (although authorities vary respecting it) is on the whole somewhat discouraging. Laws stringent in theory, and a dead letter in practice, are worse than useless; they simply demoralize a people. And what can we say of the working of such compulsory Acts as we have in England? Look at the results of the Vaccination Act. In the face of the most decisive medical statistics known, under the terror of what we fondly deemed an almost extinct species of epidemic in London, still the law is defied, and the authorities, it seems, dare not enforce it. Yet smallpox is more easily recognised as an evil than ignorance, and the sending a child to school is a greater sacrifice than allowing it to be vaccinated. Evidently we are on dangerous ground. We must not on that account stop or hesitate; but we must look to our feet.

The worst difficulty will not be with the vagabond classes, the children who are neither at school nor at work, but who are haunting the streets, living on waifs and strays, and forming the nursery of our criminal classes. It will be expensive, and in

some

some points difficult, to lay hold of these children, and to settle how they shall be fed and clothed while they are being taught. But the object is so desirable, so free from all drawback, so manifestly expedient in the long run, that there will be no hesitation about it on the part of the public; and when this is the case, the work is half done. The Industrial Schools Act must be worked and perhaps extended; the 'Ragged School' system must be taken up by authority. Something perhaps may be done (as the experiment of the 'Chichester' shows) to solve by this means the problem of a nursery for our Army and Navy. It is not expense or difficulty of detail which will baffle or even naturally impede such a work as this.

The true perplexity lies in dealing with the children who are at work, and whose earnings are, or are supposed to be, necessary for the subsistence of themselves and their parents. No doubt, in the long run, it will be good even for their families to carry them off. Their labour will become more valuable when they are educated, and their withdrawal from the labour market must eventually give more employment to their elders. But in the meanwhile there may be wide-spread hardship, and, unless great prudence be shown, the process will break down, because magistrates will hesitate to convict and imprison defaulters, and public opinion will be apt to rise up against them if they prove to be made of sterner stuff. Much will have to be done by night-schools and variations of the half-time system to meet the needs of other employments, agricultural or commercial, than those in which its present form works so well. Of course, in cases of real poverty, fees must be remitted or paid; and (reverting to a subject already noticed) we would warn the Boards to confine their compulsion within as narrow limits as may be, and leave the widest liberty of choice as to the particular school or kind of school. But whatever may be done, we feel convinced that direct compulsion must be supplemented by indirect. If the Factory and Workshops Acts be made thoroughly effective, and modified with a view to extend as widely as possible the principle of making the employer responsible for seeing that children earning wages from him are either sufficiently instructed already or are attending school, the compulsory powers of the Boards will be in great degree relieved of strain at the only point at which they are in danger of breaking down. And they will be also greatly helped if a little of the task of compulsion be taken off them by forcing the Guardians to carry out those excellent provisions of Evelyn Denison's Act, which make the sending the children of outdoor paupers to school a part of parochial relief. At present this Act, now simply permissive, is disgracefully neglected.

neglected. It appeared by a recent return, that out of 38,577 children of outdoor paupers in London, only 3125 were paid for at school by the Guardians. At St. Pancras there are 2136 such children, and not a single one is paid for: in the Strand Union the Guardians actually have the face to answer, 'Nothing known about such an Act.' Evidently such a state of things ought not to be allowed: the Guardians have had a fair trial under a permissive system, and now we hope that the screw will be put on at once. All this belongs to the Home Office; we wish that our experience of its energies were more satisfactory. But Mr. Bruce would find an easier field here, and might actually wipe out the remembrance of his cab legislation and his Licensing Bill.

These and other similar precautions must be taken, and the fervour of new-born converts to compulsion must be tempered by the remembrance that it is our last resource—that, like the rod, it may often be most effective by being kept simply *in terrorem*—that its failure would leave us in a far worse plight than at present, while it is still untried. But it must be attempted; on its success more depends than even on the other points on which we have already dwelt. If we are really discriminating and make allowance for the difficulties which society imposes on the individual, then we may 'be just and fear not.' The work will succeed, and it will be one which our children and our childrens' children will bless.

In these ways we hope that a real improvement may take place in the work of our Elementary Schools; and we look forward, lastly, to another influence acting in the same direction, to stimulate and to test such improvement. The Government inspection must be in some way extended, so as to reach at least all Elementary Schools. Probably almost all the large schools will come into the present system, simply making themselves 'Public Elementary Schools' in the meaning of the Act. But a beginning has been made, which will hardly be allowed to remain fruitless, towards a larger and more varied system. All the existing schools not already under regular inspection are to be now called upon to submit to be inspected by the Education Department, in order to test their efficiency in teaching, under pain of being ignored in estimating the educational resources of the various localities. We understand that the inspection (as indeed is necessary) is to be conducted by rather freer and less technical methods than usual, looking to tolerable efficiency of any kind, rather than to efficiency after a particular type and pattern. We cannot but hope that the experiment will not be altogether dropped, when it has done its immediate duty.

The

The 'Public Elementary Schools' will be our regular forces, and we care not how strictly they are drilled and disciplined: but there may well be an outside fringe of valuable but irregular combatants against ignorance, who may be all the more useful for being somewhat more loosely ordered. So, we think, shall we best secure that general inspection, without which no regularity and universality of educational work can be for any length of time ensured.

These are some of the directions in which, confidently, almost certainly, we expect to see true progress. But independently of these special forces and modes of action, we rely on the great and thorough awakening of public interest in education, the evidences of which actually crowd upon our view. Nothing is more remarkable than the deep interest shown in the School Board elections, and the high class of men who have become candidates and have been elected. That they should have been willing to undertake a task which is full of labour and difficulty, of doubt and responsibility, and which brings with it no compensating advantages of remuneration and position, shows at once the amount of interest felt, and the strong public spirit, which is ready, now as always, for public duty. That they should have been so generally elected, that the ratepayers should have chosen men who put education first and economy second, and who desire to do their work in a liberal and uncompromising spirit, is a proof that the country at large is leavened with that same interest in the subject which hitherto has been confined to certain classes. The proceedings of the Boards themselves have shown a desire, not only to make Elementary Education thorough, but to remember that National Education must be looked upon as a whole, and that no system is good which does not weld together the various classes of schools, and therefore the various classes of the community, so that not only shall a good average of knowledge be obtainable by all, but there shall be, for those who are capable of higher things, a means of climbing the ladder, which has (to use a phrase now famous) 'its foot in the gutter and its top in the University.' In all these things we rejoice: they may last in full vigour only for a time, but in that time they will give an impulse which will never be lost. If a reactionary feeling should come over us, and a stationary period succeed the present, still a vastly higher level will have been reached, and in these matters there can be no steps backward.

It is not (as we have said) on mere legal obligation or a sense of expediency that we rely. 'Fill our schools that you may empty our workhouses and our gaols,' is a good common-sense cry,

cry, but such cries never reach the depths : they may support, but cannot create enthusiasm. The intellectual zeal for the discovery and the spread of truth, the sense of our moral duty to our fellow citizens and of the need of morality for their own culture and happiness, the warm spirit of sympathy which shrinks from seeing the misery of ignorance in others, as it would from the misery of poverty and starvation—all these elements must act upon the spirit of the nation, to make it rise to its high duty. And we are stating no matter of theory, but a matter of sober historical fact, when we say that hitherto in the annals of the world no movement has united and harmonized these various elements in its service, unless it has been able to invoke the spirit of religious belief and religious enthusiasm, and to regard not only a citizenship of this world, but also ‘a citizenship in heaven.’

NOTE TO THE ARTICLE on ‘The Chronology of the Gospels,’ in No. 260, p. 507. The name of one of the Governors of Syria, Volusius Saturninus, has been inadvertently omitted. It should stand thus on the list :—

C. Marcius Censorinus	..	..	..	2 after Christ.
L. Volusius Saturninus	..	..	..	4     ”
P. Sulpicius Quirinus	..	..	..	6     ”

# THE QUARTERLY REVIEW.

---

- ART. I.—1. *Experimental Investigation of the Spirit Manifestations, demonstrating the Existence of Spirits and their Communion with Mortals.* By Robert Hare, M.D., Professor of Chemistry in the University of Pennsylvania. New York, 1858.
2. *Quarterly Journal of Science.* London, July, 1871.
3. *The Spiritualist.* London, July 15, 1871.
4. *Table-Turning.* A Lecture by the Rev. R. W. Dibdin, M.A. London, 1853.
5. *Robert Houdin, Ambassador, Author, and Conjuror.* Written by himself. Paris, 1858.

**A** BELIEF in occasional direct communications between the disembodied spirits of the dead and the souls of the living, as well as in the possession of 'occult' powers of various kinds, derived from this intercourse with the nether world, by the individuals to whom such communications are vouchsafed, seems to have prevailed, under some form or other, from the earliest historic period. And at the present time it not merely lingers as a superstition among races that have made but slight advance on their primitive rudeness, but is extensively and seriously entertained in the very heart of nations that claim to lead the van of modern civilisation; being professed not only by the ignorant but by the well-instructed, and alike by those who avowedly trust—as to all that relates to the unseen—in Faith rather than in Reason, and by such as glory in their entire freedom from antiquated prejudices of every description.

For a time, indeed, the mental tendencies which lie at the foundation of this belief developed themselves in a different direction. The Witch Mania that had given occasion to frightful persecutions, under the influence of the most bigoted form of Roman Catholicism, in various parts of Continental Europe, and under that of a gloomy and fanatical Calvinism in Scotland and New England, had passed away by the middle of the last century. A more healthy Rationalism was beginning to grow up; the theory of Evidence was beginning to be better understood,

and its rules more strictly applied; and sober-minded people had come to be ashamed of the credulity which had subjected so many harmless victims to the most terrible tortures, and had caused the sacrifice of so many innocent lives. The ultra-Rationalism which, in the form of a sceptical and materialistic philosophy, held almost undisputed sway in France during the latter half of the eighteenth century, and was embraced elsewhere by many who welcomed it as releasing them from the trammels of slavish superstition, tended still further to throw discredit upon the narratives of spiritual visitations which had been previously received with a childlike trust. And the great scientific discoveries in which that epoch was so fruitful made its *savans* look to an increased acquaintance with Nature, rather than to supernatural agencies, for the explanation of phenomena that seemed beyond the scope of ordinary knowledge. Thus, shortly before the outbreak of the first French Revolution, we had Mesmer and his followers claiming to be the vehicles of a new force, allied to electricity in its potent action on the living body, and derived, not from communication with the spirits of the dead, but from their own intense vitality. The tremendous cataclysm which occurred soon afterwards, and the gigantic struggles which followed it, absorbed the attention of Europe for the next quarter of a century; but so soon as the general peace left the public free to think of other than great political and social questions, Mesmerism cropped up again, and soon underwent a development so remarkable as to gain for it a very decided hold upon the minds not merely of the credulous vulgar, but of men distinguished in various departments of science. In fact, there were few who had witnessed its phenomena who were not inclined to admit that there must be 'something in it,' though there was an entire want of accordance as to what that 'something' might be; until the researches of the late Mr. Braid, a surgeon of Manchester, on a form of artificial somnambulism which he found himself able to induce in a large number of subjects by a very simple process, gave a clue to the mystery. Of these researches, and of other enquiries in the same direction we gave an account in the pages of this 'Review,' exactly eighteen years ago;\* essaying to guide our readers as to 'what to believe' in regard to Mesmerism, Electro-Biology, Odyllism, Table-turning, and (we were 'almost ashamed to be obliged to add') Spirit-rapping and Table-talking. We have the satisfaction of knowing that our exposition was regarded as satisfactory, not merely by the highly intelligent class to whom it

---

\* Vol. xciii. p. 501, seqq., October, 1853.

was immediately addressed, but by the ablest of our physiologists and psychologists who had given special attention to the subject. We were not sanguine enough to expect that it would exert the like influence over minds specially predisposed to a belief in 'occult' agencies; their want of scientific culture preventing them from appreciating the force of scientific reasoning, while their deficiency in practical good sense renders them liable to become the slaves of *dominant ideas*. 'Such persons,' we remarked, 'are no more to be argued with than are insane patients. They cannot assent to any proposition which they fancy to be in the least inconsistent with their prepossessions; and the evidence of their own feelings is to them the highest attainable truth. It is not to these that we address ourselves:—"Ephraim is joined to idols; let him alone."'

The eighteen years that have elapsed since we penned these words have given them a melancholy significance. Under the designation 'Spiritualists,' a great and increasing sect has arisen both in the United States and in our own country, which numbers among its members not only a large aggregate that may be considered as representing the average intelligence of our social community, but some of the most cultivated men and women of our time; whilst distinguished representatives of various departments of science have attested the reality of some of the most extraordinary manifestations of the occult power exerted through the chiefs of the sect, though without committing themselves to any hypothesis as to its source.

The fundamental tenet of the Spiritualists is the old doctrine of communication between the spirits of the departed and the souls of the living; but it now rests not upon vague accounts of ghostly visitations witnessed by a few individuals on rare and solemn occasions—as when a murder was to be discovered, or a hidden treasure revealed,—but upon the familiar converse held with departed relatives and friends by 'circles' sitting round a friendly table. For it was discovered, shortly after the publication of our former article, that the 'Table-talking' therein described, instead of being the work of *evil* spirits (as maintained by the Evangelical clergymen who first investigated it) furnished a means of ready communication with spirits of a more harmless and benignant character, who are always waiting about us for a little cheerful talk, and who, after signifying their presence by causing the table to move round or to tilt over, or by rapping sonorously beneath it, obligingly follow the directions of the individual who leads the conversation, and return answers according to any system of spiritual telegraphy which he may dictate to them. The following are the directions given to

family parties desiring to profit by this method of satisfying themselves as to the reality of a 'spirit world,' and of putting themselves in communication with it:—

'1. Let the room be of a comfortable temperature, but cool rather than warm—let arrangements be made that nobody shall enter it, and that there shall be no interruption for one hour during the sitting of the circle. Wet, damp, and foggy weather is bad for the production of physical phenomena.

'2. Let the circle consist of four, five, or six individuals, about the same number of each sex. Sit round an uncovered wooden table, with all the palms of the hands in contact with its top surface. Whether the hands touch each other or not is usually of no importance. Any table will do, just large enough to conveniently accommodate the sitters. The removal of a hand from the table for a few seconds does no harm, but when one of the sitters breaks the circle by leaving the table it sometimes, but not always, very considerably delays the manifestations.

'3. Before the sitting begins, place some pointed lead-pencils and some sheets of clean writing-paper on the table, to write down any communications that may be obtained.

'4. People who do not like each other should not sit in the same circle, for such a want of harmony tends to prevent manifestations, except with well-developed physical mediums; it is not yet known why. Belief or unbelief has no influence on the manifestations, but an acrid feeling against them is a weakening influence.

'5. Before the manifestations begin, it is well to engage in general conversation or in singing, and it is best that neither should be of a frivolous nature. A prayerful, earnest feeling among the members of the circle is likely to attract a higher and more pleasing class of spirits.

'6. The first symptom of the invisible power at work is often a feeling like a cool wind sweeping over the hands. The first manifestations will probably be table tiltings or raps.

'7. When motions of the table or sounds are produced freely, to avoid confusion, let one person only speak, and talk to the table as to an intelligent being. Let him tell the table that three tilts or raps mean "Yes," one means "No," and two mean "Doubtful," and ask whether the arrangement is understood. If three signals be given in answer, then say, "If I speak the letters of the alphabet slowly, will you signal every time I come to the letter you want, and spell us out a message?" Should three signals be given, set to work on the plan proposed, and from this time an intelligent system of communication is established.

'8. Afterwards the question should be put, "Are we sitting in the right order to get the best manifestations?" Probably some members of the circle will then be told to change seats with each other, and the signals will be afterwards strengthened. Next ask, "Who is the medium?" When spirits come asserting themselves to be related or

known

known to anybody present, well-chosen questions should be put to test the accuracy of the statements, as spirits out of the body have all the virtues and all the failings of spirits in the body.

‘Possibly at the first sitting of a circle symptoms of other forms of mediumship than tilts or raps may make their appearance.’

It is a very common thing, we are assured, for striking manifestations to be obtained in this way at the first sitting of a family ‘circle,’ even when no fully-developed ‘medium’ is present among those who have never obtained manifestations before; but for one successful new ‘circle’ thus started without a ‘medium,’ there are six or seven failures. When once manifestations have been obtained, however, they will gradually increase in power and reliability at successive sittings; and some one of the ‘circle’ will probably come to be selected by the spirits as the favoured ‘medium’ of their higher communications. The gifts possessed by these ‘mediums’ are various in their kind. Some, if they only sit and listen for spirit voices, will scarcely ever fail to hear them; and lively conversations then ensue between themselves and their visitors, who are not always, however, such as a well-regulated household would welcome as its guests, being sometimes found out to be ‘evil spirits’ full of deceit and all manner of wickedness. Others are made aware of the presence of the spirits of their departed friends by the gentle contact of spiritual hands and the fond kisses of spiritual lips; though the rougher handlings of unfriendly spirits sometimes take the place of these pleasant caresses. Then there are ‘writing mediums,’ who, at the dictation of their spiritual instructors, ‘give warnings of a personal and relative character, and inculcate purity of life and prayerfulness of inclination; the person acted on simply consenting to let the hand be used, but being totally unconscious of what is to be produced.’ Sometimes, instead of holding the pencil between their own fingers, the ‘medium’ makes use of a little platform running upon castors, which is called a *planchette*; the pencil is fixed to the under-side of this platform, and moves over a piece of paper placed beneath, the hands of the ‘medium’ being simply laid upon its upper surface, and (as is asserted) communicating to it no motion whatever. Another mode of using the ‘planchette’ is to attach to its farther side an index, which spells out words by pointing downwards to their component letters in succession, upon an alphabet-card placed under its extremity; this method, however, which was the one first devised, is now generally discarded in favour of the more simple and direct *planchette-writing*. Others, again, are ‘drawing mediums;’ sometimes delineating the portraits of departed relatives

tives or friends, even though they have never been known to the medium in life; sometimes manifesting their power in the production of strange many-coloured designs, having no prototypes in anything we know either 'in heaven above, or on the earth beneath, or in the waters under the earth;' but having a spiritual significance which may either be revealed through the individual by whom they are executed, or made known through some other interpreter. Then, again, there are the 'medical mediums,' who may be presumed to be animated by the spirit of departed doctors, possessing a deeper diagnostic insight and greater therapeutic powers than they enjoyed on earth; for they either 'cure the sick by the hand of the medium being floated to the patient by a power felt but not seen, and placed on the diseased part of the body, the medium till then not knowing where the diseased part is,' or they dictate prescriptions for material medicines to be made up by the family druggist, and used 'as directed.'

In all these forms of communication the 'medium,' if not altogether wide-awake, is, at any rate, not asleep; and though the spirits do not always attend when summoned, the receptive powers of the 'medium' do not seem to be ever wanting. In the case of the 'trance-mediums,' however, it is different. They pass into a state which, as regards the outer world, is one of complete unconsciousness; and in this condition they manifest far more extraordinary powers, of which the pouring forth of 'some of the purest and most magnificent poetry the world has ever seen' is one of the least. The spiritual revelations made by these trance-mediums are to serve as the foundation of the 'religion of the future.' A new set of Ten Commandments has already been issued by Mrs. Emma Hardinge; and the two great Christian precepts on which 'hang all the Law and the Prophets,' will, doubtless, be soon superseded by the higher teaching of some yet more enlightened Spiritualist.

But as there are obstinate sceptics, who are prejudiced enough to affirm that all these extraordinary communications represent nothing more than the ordinary workings of the minds and bodies of their supposed recipients, under conditions well understood by physiologists and psychologists, the spirits occasionally vouchsafe to manifest their presence by their direct action on material bodies, inanimate as well as animate. Chairs and tables are lifted into the air, or drawn along the floor, without the contact of human hands; exquisite melodies are given forth by pianos, accordions, and guitars, without the instrumentality of any but invisible performers; and—wonder of wonders!—living men and women are 'caught up' from the ground and borne aloft in the air: sometimes floating between the heads of the

the 'circle' and the ceiling of the apartment in which they were sitting together; sometimes being carried through open windows into another chamber of the same house; but sometimes being transported from one house to another at miles' distance, and entering chambers of which the doors and windows are firmly closed; so that the only mode of accounting for their ingress is to suppose that the ceiling has dissolved itself into its constituent atoms, to allow the fleshly—not the spiritual—visitor to enter, and has then closed together again into its pristine continuity. This, be it observed, is the explanation offered, in sober seriousness, by spiritualists themselves. All these wonders we are gravely called on to believe on 'the testimony of multitudes who *know* them to be true;' and we are assured that their purpose is 'to convince an unbelieving world that the dead still live, and hold direct communication with those whom they have left behind them on earth.'

Now, with regard to a large part of the phenomena which fall under the first and second of the above categories, we are ready to admit, *in limine*, that they may occur independently of any intentional or consciously-exerted agency on the part of the individuals who manifest them, and that they are, *to that extent, genuine*. We are intimately acquainted with 'writing' and 'drawing mediums,' whose honesty we regard as beyond all question, and who assure us most positively that the products of their pencils are not knowingly or designedly executed by them; their hands being guided, not by any will of their own, but by some power altogether independent of it. And we have 'assisted' at spiritual *séances*, at which answers have been given, by the tilting of tables, to questions addressed to the supposed spiritual visitants; and have had reason for accepting, with the fullest confidence, the assurance of our coadjutors that they had no more consciousness of having been in any way parties to the movements than we had ourselves. Of course, there are pretenders to the possession of these as of other 'occult' powers, who, either for gain or for amusement, practise on the credulity of the public. We put such out of the question for the time, and address ourselves to the consideration of the phenomena which have presented themselves within our own experience, under conditions which satisfy us that, although the performers are wrong in assigning them to 'spiritual agency,' they are quite justified in affirming their own unconsciousness of any active participation in their production.

Our position, then, is that the so-called spiritual communications come from *within*, not from *without*, the individuals who suppose themselves to be the recipients of them; that they belong

belong to the class termed 'subjective' by physiologists and psychologists; and that the movements by which they are expressed, whether the tilting of tables or the writing of planchettes, are really produced by their own muscular action, exerted independently of their own wills and quite unconsciously to themselves. And of the truth of this position we hope to be able to satisfy every unprejudiced reader, though we entirely despair of convincing such as have already surrendered their common sense to the delusions of a credulous imagination.

The doctrine of 'unconscious muscular action' is not, as the spiritualists allege, a 'hypothesis' invented for the occasion, but is one of the best established principles of physiology, having its basis in daily and hourly experience, the only question being as to the extent of its applicability. What is the 'beating of the heart' but unconscious muscular action? our consciousness being only affected by the movement when it makes itself felt by undue violence. What is the 'drawing of the breath' but involuntary muscular action, of which we only become conscious when we direct our attention to it? That which is true of these instinctive or *primarily*-automatic movements is no less true—as was shown a hundred years since by Hartley—of many others, which, learned in the first instance by voluntary effort, become '*secondarily*-automatic' by habitual repetition. Has it never occurred to one of these objectors to be carried along by the 'unconscious muscular action' of his legs, whilst either engaged in an interesting conversation with a friend or deeply engrossed in a train of thoughts of his own, so that he finds himself at his destination before he knew that he had done more than set out towards it? Could not almost any of our fair readers remember to have played a piece of music, under circumstances so distracting to her thoughts and feelings that she has come to the end without 'the least idea of how she ever got through it'? And has not the like experience occurred to many a member of the stronger sex, who has been called on, under similar circumstances, to read aloud, or to go through a public recitation? The celebrated *prestidigitateur* Robert Houdin, whose entertaining autobiography affords many valuable lessons in psychology to those who know how to profit by them, tells us that in early life he trained himself to read a book with attention whilst keeping *four* balls in the air; and that he so far retained this power, after an almost entire disuse of it for thirty years, as to be able still to read with ease whilst keeping up *three* balls. He had also trained himself to solve mechanical problems whilst exhibiting conjuring feats that would seem to require the most intense and unremitting attention. We have been assured by an intimate

intimate friend of the late Albert Smith that he frequently went through his performances of 'Mont Blanc' so mechanically as to be quite unconscious of what he was doing, his mind being otherwise occupied throughout. In these and similar cases, the movements depend upon the 'reflex action' of that lower division of the nervous centres which includes the spinal cord and the ganglia of special sense at its summit. It is through the *original* endowments of this nervous tract that those *instinctive* movements are performed, which are either essential to the maintenance of our existence—as is the case with the act of breathing throughout life, and with the act of sucking in infancy—or serve for the protection of important organs from injury, as when the eyelids close at a flash of light or a loud sound.\* And it is through their *acquired* endowments that those *habitual* movements and trains of movement are carried on, without anything more than initiation by the Will, which constitute a much larger part of our daily life than is commonly supposed. Each separate muscular contraction, in this class of movements, may be prompted by a fresh sensory suggestion, immediately received from without; as where the fingers of the piano-forte player or the lips of the reader automatically respond to the sight of the notes or the words on the pages before them. But in such cases as those of Houdin or Albert Smith, it would seem as if the nervous mechanism (in accordance with a well-known law of nutrition) had so shaped itself in accordance with the use habitually made of it as to execute a long series of varied actions without any renewed prompting from without, each contraction being excited by the sensory impression produced by that which preceded it; just as when the lifting of a lever in 'starting' a locomotive or a spinning-mule gives rise to that wonderful succession of diverse movements, for the performance of which its organisation was adapted by the constructive genius of a Stephenson or a Roberts.

It may be said, however, that these and similar facts merely show that movements which have become 'mechanical' by habit may be performed involuntarily and unconsciously, and

---

\* It was by involuntary and unconscious muscular action, that one of our most distinguished chemists a few years ago escaped the loss of his sight, whilst engaged in the investigation of a new compound he had discovered, of tremendously explosive power. He was looking at a small quantity of this liquid in a bottle held up before his eyes, when he saw a flash of light and heard a loud detonation, the bottle being shivered into fragments of extreme minuteness. At the first moment he believed that these fragments had been driven into his eyes, probably blinding him for life; but he presently found to his intense relief that the fragments had all been driven into the skin of his eyelids, which had been closed by the reflex protective action of his sensory ganglia, in a shorter time than that required for the passage of the particles of glass from his hand to his face.

that they afford no ground for affirming that such movements as obviously express *ideas* or other forms of *mental* activity can take place with equal independence of the will or freedom from conscious exertion of the muscles. Here, again, we can meet our objector by showing that such a *modus operandi* has long been one of the admitted verities of physiological science. As far back as the year 1844, a very important memoir was published by Dr. Laycock (now Professor of Medicine in the University of Edinburgh) on the 'Reflex Action of the Brain,' in which he most distinctly showed that involuntary muscular movements take place in response not merely to sensations but to ideas; and not merely at the prompting of ideas actually before the mind, but through the action of the *substrata* left by past mental operations. Thus, for example, the convulsive paroxysm of hydrophobia may be excited not merely by the sight or the sound of water, but by the *idea* of water suggested either by a picture or by the verbal mention of it. But as Dr. Laycock did not at that time recognise the essential distinctness of the *sensory ganglia* from the *cerebrum*, which—being so obscurely marked in the brain of man as to be commonly overlooked—can only be properly appreciated by the student of Comparative Anatomy, he confounded together the two classes of actions of which they are the separate instruments, and his views did not receive the attention they merited. The doctrine of the 'reflex action of the sensory ganglia' having been long previously taught by Dr. Carpenter, under the title of 'Sensori-motor Activity,' he was subsequently led, by Dr. Laycock's reasoning, to see that it might be extended to the cerebrum proper. And on the 12th of March, 1852, some months before the Table-turning epidemic broke out, he delivered a lecture, at the Royal Institution, on what he termed the *Ideo-motor* principle of action; which consists in the involuntary response made by the muscles to ideas with which the mind may be possessed when the directing power of the will is in abeyance. Considered as the 'reflex action' of the cerebrum proper—

"this Ideo-motor principle," said Dr. Carpenter, "finds its appropriate place in the physiological system, which would, indeed, be incomplete without it. And, when it is once recognised, it may be applied to the explanation of numerous phenomena which have been a source of perplexity to many who have been convinced of their genuineness, and who could not see any mode of reconciling them with the known laws of nervous action. These phenomena have been clearly proved to depend upon the state of *expectant attention* on the part of the performer; his will being temporarily withdrawn from the control of his muscles by the state of abstraction to

to which his mind is given up, and the *anticipation* of a given result being the stimulus which directly and involuntarily prompts the muscular movements that produce it.”’

This doctrine was at once accepted by many of our highest physiological authorities ; so that when Professor Faraday was called upon to explain the mystery of Table-turning (which had not then been attributed either to ‘diabolical’ or to ‘spiritual’ agency, but was popularly supposed to be due to electricity), he was able not merely to prove by the ingenious ‘indicator’ he devised, that the movement is really and solely due to the muscular action of the operators, but to refer for a scientific *rationale* of that action to a physiological principle distinctly formularised more than a year previously, and less precisely enunciated nine years before.\* The lesson afforded by the truly scientific method followed by this great master of experimental philosophy, in the investigation of a class of phenomena, presenting what was, to him, an altogether novel character, should not have been lost upon those who profess to be his disciples. But, as we shall presently see, it has been entirely disregarded, not merely by such ‘spiritualists’ as plume themselves upon ‘*not* being fettered by scientific education,’ but by men from whom better things might have been expected. The first point tested by Faraday was whether the interposition of his ‘indicators’ between the hands of the operators and the table in any way interfered with the movements of the latter ; and he found that no such interference was observable, by tying the boards together and taking off the index, the table then going round as before.

---

\* See Professor Faraday’s Letter to the ‘Athenæum’ of July 2, 1853. As we shall have much to say of this indicator, and as Professor Faraday’s account of it is not now generally accessible, we shall here reproduce it for the benefit of those whom it essentially concerns. Nothing could be simpler than its construction, though, like everything he devised, it was perfect in its working. A couple of boards of the size of a quarto sheet of paper, a couple of small rulers or cedar-pencils, a couple of indiarubber bands, a couple of pins, and a strip of light wood or cardboard eight or ten inches long, constituted its materials. The rulers being laid on one of the boards, each at a little distance from one of its sides and parallel to it, the other board was laid upon the rulers, so that it would roll on them from side to side ; and its movements were restrained, without being prevented, by stretching the indiarubber bands over both boards, so as to pass above and beneath the rulers. One of the pins was fixed upright into the lower board close to the middle of its farther edge, the corresponding part of the upper being cut away at that part, so that the pin should not bear against it ; the second pin was fixed into the upper board, about an inch back from the first ; and the strip of wood or cardboard was so fixed on these pins as to constitute a lever of which the pin on the lower board was the fulcrum, while motion was imparted to the short arm of it by the pin on the upper board. Any lateral motion given to the upper board by the hands laid upon it would thus cause the index-point of the long arm of the lever to move through a long arc in the opposite direction ; the amount of that motion being dependent on the ratio between the long and the short arms of the lever.

When

When, however, the upper board was free to move, and each performer fixed his (or her) eyes upon the index, so as to be made cognizant by its movement of the slightest lateral pressure of the hands, any communication of motion to the table was usually kept in check ; but if the table did go round under this condition, its motion was always preceded by a very decided movement of the index in the opposite direction. And the same indication was given when the index was hidden from the operator, but was watched by another person ; any movement shown by the table under that condition being always preceded by a considerable motion of the index in the opposite direction. And thus it may be considered as demonstrated that as the table never went round unless the 'indicator' showed that lateral muscular pressure had been exerted in the direction of its movement, and as it always did go round when the 'indicator' showed that such lateral pressure was adequately exerted, *its motion was solely due to the muscular action of the performers.* Any persons who dispute this conclusion are obviously bound to prove the contrary, by showing that the table *will* go round without any deflection of the index by lateral pressure.

But it was asserted by the two clerical seers of Bath, who made the notable discovery in 1853 that the turning of tables was effected by Satanic agency,—and the assertion is re-echoed by the 'Spiritualists' of the present day, who consider Satan as their great opponent,—\* that Professor Faraday's experiment has not the slightest bearing upon *their* performances ; inasmuch as 'those who tried it in *his* (Professor Faraday's) presence imparted the motion, *which we did not.*' But Professor Faraday's Table-turners were originally as thoroughly convinced as the Revs. Gillson and Godfrey, and their follower Mr. Dibdin, that the table *could* not have derived its motion from themselves : they repudiated the idea, when suggested to them, as utterly opposed to their own consciousness ; and yet the infallible 'indicator' showed them that they were mistaken. We wonder how such objectors *could* be convinced. The only evidence of which they will admit the cogency being that of their own senses, they are of course bound to believe in the motion of the sun round the earth ; in the power of a conjuror to pour any quantity of any number of liquors out of an inexhaustible quart bottle ; and in the possession of their legs by some friendly spirit, when they

---

\* We have been gravely assured by a lady-spiritualist of great general intelligence and considerable poetic gifts, that the medical and scientific opponents of Spiritualism are emissaries of the Devil, who foresees that his dominion on earth is seriously imperilled by the extension of the new faith !

find themselves to have walked on to their destination without any consciousness of exertion.

That the 'tilting' of a table in response to questions put to it—which is described by the Spiritualists as the 'lifting of its leg,' as if the table itself stood still—is due to the downward pressure of the hands laid upon it, may then be assumed as self-evident *until the contrary shall have been proved*. And those who affirm that it is produced, not by muscular, but by 'spiritual' or 'psychic' agency, are bound to demonstrate the fact, by showing that no downward pressure is exerted. Nothing would be easier than to construct an apparatus for detecting *vertical* pressure by the movement of an index, in the same general plan as Faraday's 'indicator' for *lateral* pressure; and yet no one, so far as we are aware, has even attempted thus to show that the verdict of common sense is otherwise than true. We have, indeed, been gravely assured by a lady of unimpeachable veracity, that a table in her own house, with *no person being near it*, on being asked her age, 'lifted up its leg and struck forty-two,' the correct number of years; a result which so appalled her, that she sold the table forthwith. But on our hinting a doubt as to whether she had quite correctly remembered the circumstances of the case, which had happened some years previously, she promised to consult some notes she had made at the time; and a few days afterwards she honestly told us that there was one trifling mistake in her previous account; for that she and her friends, instead of being, as she had thought, on the other side of the room, *had their hands on the table*. The fact that the table had rapped out her age, and that she had parted with a piece of furniture which could not be trusted to keep so important a secret, remained on record.

That the answers obtained through the medium of tables, planchettes, &c., reflect the mental state, either of the questioner, or of some member of the 'circle,' may, we are certain, be assumed as a general fact. We have ourselves witnessed some amusing instances of it. Several years ago we were invited, with two medical friends, to a very select *séance*, to witness the performance of a lady, the Hon. Miss N——, who was described to us as a peculiarly gifted medium; not merely being the vehicle of spiritual revelations of the most elevating character, but being able to convince incredulous philosophers like ourselves of the reality of her 'spiritual' gifts, by 'physical' manifestations of the most unmistakeable kind. Unfortunately, however, the Hon. Miss N—— was not in great force on the occasion of our visit; and nothing would go right. It was suggested that she might be exhausted by a most successful performance which  
had

had taken place on the previous evening; and that the spirits should be asked whether she stood in need of refreshment. The question was put by our host (a wine-merchant, be it observed), who repeated the alphabet *rapidly* until he came to N, and then went on *slowly*; the table tilted at P. The same process was repeated, until the letters successively indicated were P, O, R, T. But this was not enough. The spirits might prescribe either *port* or *porter*; and the alphabet was then repeated *slowly from the beginning*, a prolonged pause being made at E; as the table did *not* tilt, a bumper of port was administered 'as directed.' It did not, however, produce the expected effect; and, with the exception of a 'manifestation' we shall presently notice under another head (p. 329), the *séance* was an entire failure. Happening to meet our host a few days afterwards, however, he assured us that he had discovered the reason of its want of success in 'the atmosphere of incredulity' which we had brought with us; for that no sooner had we taken our departure, than a series of most wonderful phenomena presented themselves, which, if they had occurred in our presence, *must* have convinced us. The like experience, we may here say, has been so frequently repeated, that we have been forced to abandon as useless the attempt to test by personal examination the wonders which have been narrated to us. And thus we are justified in our continued incredulity by the judgment of Spiritualists themselves. For, as one of them honestly says, 'the phenomena seen in spiritual circles are so extraordinary, and so unlike those coming within the ordinary range of human experience, that it is quite right not to accept them on the testimony of others. Each individual should witness and test them personally, and believe nothing until the absolute knowledge is gained that denial is impossible.'

On another occasion, we happened to be on a visit at a house at which two ladies were staying, who worked the *planchette* on the original method, and our long previous knowledge of whom placed them beyond all suspicion of anything but *self-deception*. One of them was a firm believer in the reality of her intercourse with the spirit-world; and her *planchette* was continually at work beneath her hands, its index pointing to successive letters and figures on the card before it, just as if it had been that of a telegraph-dial acted on by galvanic communication. After having watched the operation for some time, and assured ourselves that the answers she obtained to the questions she put to her spiritual visitants were just what her own simple and devout nature would suggest, we addressed her thus:—

"You believe that your replies are dictated to you by your spiritual friends, and that your hands are the passive vehicles of the spiritual

spiritual agency by which the planchette is directed in spelling them out. We believe, on the other hand, that the answers are the products of your own brain, and that the planchette is moved by your own muscles. Now we can test by a very simple experiment whether *your* view or *ours* is the correct one. Will you be kind enough to *shut your eyes* when you ask your question, and to let *us* watch what the planchette spells out? If the spirits guide it there is no reason why they should not do so as well when your eyes are shut as when they are open. If the table is moved by your own hands it will not give definite replies, except under the guidance of your own vision.'"

To this appeal our friend replied that she could not think of making such an experiment, as 'it would show a want of faith;' and all our arguments and persuasions could only bring her to the point of *asking the spirits* whether she *might* comply with our request. The reply was, 'No.' She then, at our continued urgency, asked 'Why not?' The reply was, 'Want of faith.' Putting a still stronger pressure upon her, we induced her to ask, 'Faith in what?' The reply was, 'In God.' Of course, any further appeal in that quarter would have been useless; and we consequently addressed ourselves to our other fair friend, whose high culture and great general intelligence had prepared her for our own rationalistic explanation of marvels which had seriously perplexed her. For having been engaged a short time before in promoting a public movement, which had brought her into contact with a number of persons who had previously been strangers to her, she had asked questions respecting them which elicited replies that were in many instances such as she declared to be quite unexpected by herself,—specially tending to inculcate some of her coadjutors as influenced by unworthy motives. After a little questioning, however, she admitted to us that she had previously entertained lurking suspicions on this point, which she had scarcely even acknowledged to herself, far less made known to others; and was much relieved when we pointed out that the planchette merely revealed what was going on in the substratum of her own mind. Her conversion to our view was complete, when, on her trying the working of the planchette with her eyes shut, its pointers *went astray altogether*.

This test would at once dispose, we feel assured, of all the performances of the 'drawing mediums;' unless, indeed, they have so trained themselves to work under the guidance of their 'muscular sense' as to be more or less independent of vision, especially in states akin to somnambulism. For, as we showed in our former article (vol. xciii. p. 531), the concentration of the attention upon the muscular sense, in such conditions, often renders the subjects of them able to direct the movements by which *writing*

is

is executed, with an exactness which could not have been surpassed if the eyes had been used. There is one application of the test, however, which,—where it can be fairly made,—may be relied on as infallible. Every one who has practised ‘free-hand’ drawing knows how difficult it is to describe any pair of curves (as the two sides of an arch) with perfect ‘bilateral symmetry;’ such symmetry being only obtainable, with any approach to exactness, by repeated touchings-up of one half or the other. Now if the hand of a ‘drawing-medium’ be under spiritual guidance, it ought to be able to delineate such curves, where they form part of the architectural or other design which the medium is directed to trace out, with exact symmetry *in the first instance*. Yet it was candidly admitted to us by a ‘drawing-medium,’ who was showing us her elevations of ‘spiritual temples’—which were in a style that included Moorish arches and Hindoo domes, with other features of the like kind—that she *was* obliged to obtain the required symmetry by continually looking from one side to the other, and gradually bringing her curves into accordance, just as any merely human draughtsman would do.

There is another class of phenomena, the genuineness of which we regard as extremely well-attested, and which is continually adduced by Spiritualists as demonstrating the fallacy of all scientific explanations based on the doctrine of ‘unconscious muscular action.’ ‘How,’ we are triumphantly asked, ‘does that doctrine account for the answers being often correct statements of facts not known either to the questioner or to any one at the table, and, in some instances, even contrary to their belief at the time?’ For example, the question having been put, at one of Mr. Dibdin’s *séances*, ‘How many years is it since Her Majesty came to the throne?’ the table struck a number which was subsequently found by the almanack to be the correct one, though no one present knew the date of her accession; and the question being afterwards put as to the age of the Prince of Wales, the like result was obtained. On the other hand, to the question put on the same occasion, ‘How many men are employed in the shop below?’ the table replied by striking *three* and giving *two* gentle rises; on which the employer, who was one of the party, said—‘There are *four* men and *two* boys, so *three* is a mistake;’ but he afterwards remembered that one of the young men was out of town.

Now, so far are we from regarding these and similar phenomena, of which a very curious variety has been communicated to us by trustworthy witnesses, from supporting the doctrine of spiritual communication, that we are prepared to show them to be no less reducible than the preceding to *known scientific principles*,

*ciples*, of which they afford peculiarly interesting exemplifications. The psychologists of Germany, from the time of Leibnitz, have taught that much of our *mental* work is done *without consciousness*; but this doctrine, though systematically expounded by Sir W. Hamilton under the designation 'Latent Thought,' has only of late attracted the attention of physiologists. Though foreshadowed by Dr. Laycock, in his memoir of 1844 on the 'Reflex Action of the Brain,' it was not expressed with sufficient clearness to obtain recognition on the part of any of those who studied that essay with the care to which its great ability entitles it. Some years afterwards, however, Dr. Carpenter was led, by considering the anatomical relation of the Cerebrum to the Sensorium or centre of consciousness, to the conclusion that *ideational* changes may take place in the cerebrum of which we may be at the time *unconscious* through a want of receptivity on the part of the sensorium, just as it is unconscious during sleep of the impressions made by visual images on the retina; but that the results of such changes may afterwards present themselves to the consciousness as *ideas*, elaborated by an automatic process of which we have no cognizance. This principle of action ~~was~~ expounded by Dr. Carpenter under the designation 'Unconscious Cerebration,' in the fourth edition of his 'Human Physiology,' published early in 1853,—some months before any of the phenomena developed themselves to the explanation of which we now deem it applicable, and it has been of late frequently referred to under that name. The Lectures of Sir William Hamilton not having then been published, none but his own pupils were aware that the doctrine of 'Unconscious Cerebration' is really the same as that which had long previously been expounded by him as 'Latent Thought;' and the two designations may be regarded as based on the same fundamental principle,—one expressing it in terms of Brain, the other in terms of Mind. It happened that just as our former article was going to press, some cases were communicated to us which led us 'to suspect that the automatic movements are not always directed by ideas which are distinctly present to the consciousness at the moment, but that they may proceed from impressions left upon the brain by some past events,—such impressions as often vaguely flit before our thoughts in the waking state, but reproduce themselves most distinctly in dreaming, in delirium, or in those sudden memories which sometimes flash in upon us unbidden, *why* or *whence* we cannot tell. This,' we added, 'is only a hypothesis; but it will be found to be in strict conformity with the physiological views put forth by Dr. Carpenter as to the unconscious action of the cerebrum.'

We have been thus particular in our historical statements, because we deem it essential to prove that the doctrine of 'Latent Thought,' or 'Unconscious Cerebration,' has not been *invented* to account for the phenomena in question, but that it may be legitimately *applied* to explain them; having previously been known and accepted both in Psychological and Physiological Science, and possessing, like that of 'Unconscious Muscular Action,' a firm basis in our daily and hourly experience. For, as Sir W. Hamilton has justly remarked, 'the infinitely greater part of our spiritual treasures lies always beyond the sphere of our consciousness, hid in the obscure recesses of the mind;' so that, if we have *ever* known a thing, the question whether we can be said to know it at any particular time is simply whether we can readily reproduce it from the storehouse of our memory. There are some ideas which, if we may use so material an illustration, are systematically arranged in cupboards to which we have immediate access, so that we generally know exactly where to find what we want; this is the case with the knowledge that we have in constant daily use. And yet to whom has it not occurred to be unable to recollect, on the spur of the moment, a name or a phrase that is generally most familiar to him, just as he often fails to remember where he laid his spectacles, or his pencil-case, only five minutes before? There are other ideas, again, which we know we have got put away *somewhere*, but cannot find without looking for them; as, when we meet an acquaintance whom we have not seen for a long time, and recognise his face without being able to recall his name; or when we go to a foreign country, the language of which we have once thoroughly mastered, and find ourselves in the first instance unable either to speak or to understand it. In all these cases, the lost ideas are pretty certain either to be found, if we look for them, by putting in action that associative train of thought which we term Recollection, or to turn up, spontaneously and unexpectedly, when the effort to recollect has proved a failure and we have abandoned the search as hopeless. There is other knowledge, again, which we are not conscious either of possessing or of ever having possessed, as in the conjugal experience familiar to most of us, in which a husband assures the wife of his bosom (the converse case being perhaps hardly less frequent) that she *never did* tell him of some occurrence which *he should most certainly have remembered* if she had; and yet he may be brought to recollect, days or weeks afterwards, by the accidental shining-in of a light upon some dark corner of his 'chamber of imagery,' that the communication was really made, but was put away without any account being

being taken of it at the time. It is, we believe, the general creed of metaphysicians that no idea once fully apprehended by the mind ever permanently drops out of it; while physiologists are no less strong in the conviction that every mental act records itself in some change in the brain, which may lead to its reproduction before the consciousness at any distance of time, though it has shown no sign whatever of its existence during the interval. Thus an old man, who had left Wales in early boyhood, who had passed his whole life as servant to different members of the same English family, and who had so completely forgotten his native tongue that he was unable either to speak or to understand it when he received the visits of his compatriots, began to talk Welsh fluently in the delirium of fever, after he was seventy, losing all recollection of the language on his recovery. And there are well authenticated cases in which, under the momentary apprehension of drowning or of some other form of sudden death, incidents of early life, which had long been blotted out of the *conscious* memory, have been reproduced, as in a picture, with extraordinary vividness.

Now, whatever may be the nature of the operations by which these lost traces are recovered, it is certain that, being equally removed from our Will and our Consciousness, they must be entirely automatic, or, so to speak, mechanical. And it is quite in accordance with the general analogy of the automatic actions of the other nervous centres, that the automatic actions of the cerebrum, even when they lie beneath the sphere of consciousness, should express themselves in muscular movements; and that tables and planchettes should thus reveal facts, which, once known, had long been forgotten, or should give answers which are in opposition to the questioner's belief at the time, but are found, on subsequent enquiry, to be true. The first case which suggested to us this application of the doctrine of 'Unconscious Cerebration' occurred to an eminent literary man, in whose veracity we have the fullest confidence. The spirit of a friend, whose decease had taken place some months previously, having announced itself in the usual way, and the question having been put—'When did I last see you in life?' the answer given was inconsistent with the recollection of the interrogator. But on his subsequently talking over the matter with his family, it was brought to his remembrance that he *had* seen his deceased friend on the occasion mentioned, and had spoken of it to them at the time, although he had afterwards quite forgotten the circumstance.

The most singular illustration we have met with, however, of this form of cerebral activity is narrated in a lecture delivered in

the Store-street Music Hall, about a month after the appearance of our former article, and apparently in reply to it, by the Rev. R. W. Dibdin, M.A. This lecture is remarkable for the singular mixture it displays of honest candour and benighted prejudice; while its author's implicit confidence in his own conclusions is in amusing contrast with his indiscriminate repudiation of the opposing results of scientific investigation. Like the two clerical seers of Bath, Mr. Dibdin regarded Table-talking as the result of Satanic agency; but he dissented from their supposition—'That the spirits of departed men and women are *really* the parties who answer to their questions. I incline,' he says, 'rather to believe—though of course I would speak with modesty upon so difficult a subject, upon which no man is warranted to dogmatise—that devils alone are the agents in these cases; and, being *lying* spirits, it is quite credible that, for purposes of their own, they might *assume* the names of departed men and women.' But after narrating his own experience, which so closely corresponds with that of the Revs. Gillson and Godfrey as to render it needless for us to cite it, he gives the following account of the experience of a friend whose views were directly opposed to his own, and we think our readers will agree with us that his narrative bears on the face of it a strong impress of genuineness:—

'He said, when we went into the room, "I have heard strange things about this Table-turning; but I have raised a good spirit; all the others have been evil ones." "Oh, indeed," I said, "who is that?" "Edward Young, the poet, the author of 'Night Thoughts.'" And he gave me his experience. He said he was going to write a book, conjointly with a friend; and, if I mistake not, he told me it was to be under the direction of Edward Young. When the spirit came he asked him what was his name. "Edward Young" was the reply. "Are you the poet?" "Yes." "If you are, repeat a line of your poems." He repeated, "Man was not made to question, but adore." "Is that in your 'Night Thoughts'?" "No." "Where is it, then?" The reply was, "J O B." That they could make nothing of. They did not know what he meant by "Job," not being very familiar with his poems. The next day this gentleman bought a copy of Young's poems, and at the end of the 'Night Thoughts' he found a paraphrase of Job, and the last line of that paraphrase is "Man was not made to question, but adore." He was naturally very much astonished at such a thing as that.'

Some little time afterwards, however, Mr. Dibdin saw his friend again, and learned from him that he had come to believe that it was 'all a delusion.' 'I think,' he said, 'you do it yourself unconsciously.' Among other reasons which he gave was this: that a certain word having been written in each of four envelopes, and one of these having been laid on the table, the  
table

table answered wrong on the question being put as to what this envelope contained. And he further went on to mention, that when his sister-in-law was sitting with him at the table, 'we tried the table, and had the most funny answers. We said, "What sort of eyes has so and so?" "Laughing eyes." "What sort of eyes has so and so?" "Roguish eyes." "What sort of eyes has so and so?" "Yankee eyes." And then my sister said to the table, "Do you love me?" The reply was, "I adore you." And one in the room said, "If you do, kiss her;" and the table rose to her lips.' When asked by Mr. Dibdin what he thought of Young, and of his bringing out that line, 'Man was not made to question, but adore,' his friend replied:—'Well, the fact is, I must tell you, that *I had Young's poems in my house all the time*, although I bought another copy; and *I found that I had read it before*. My opinion is that it was a *latent idea*, and that the table brought it out.'

Mr. Dibdin, however, was very far from sharing the heretical opinion of his friend, and considered it his duty to administer to the young lady who had allowed the table to commit such an impropriety a very serious warning. 'I had heard,' he said, 'of persons being paralyzed, and even struck dead; so that I did not wish any one to try it again.' 'Oh,' said the gentleman, 'I am not afraid.' His sister-in-law, however, was rather frightened, and said she had rather not. 'You had better,' he said; 'you have been doing it all the evening before you came here.' At last she consented; they sat down to the table, and it moved immediately. At first Mr. Dibdin asked a few questions, for the purpose of satisfying his coadjutors that the table would answer things which they knew nothing about. But he then applied what he obviously considered an infallible test for the discovery of the Satanic agency concerned in misleading those engaged in this dangerous pastime; this test being a certain set of questions, which he always put for reasons of his own:—

'Are we justified by works?—Yes.

'By faith alone?—No.

'Is the whole Bible true?—No.

'Were the miracles of the New Testament wrought by supernatural power?—No.

'By some hidden law of Nature?—Yes.

'Was Oliver Cromwell good?—No.

'Was Charles I. a good man?—Yes.

'Is it right to pray to the Virgin?—Yes.

'Is Christ God?—No.

'Is he a man?—No.

'Is he something between God and man, a sort of angel?—Yes.

‘Is he in heaven?—No.

‘Where is he?—It spelt slowly H E L L.

‘As the last letter was indicated the girl drew her hands quickly off the table, much as a person would do who was drawing them off a hot iron. Her brother-in-law turned very pale, and took his hands off the table also.’

This appalling *dénouement* served to ‘point the moral’ of Mr. Dibdin’s exhortations to his friends, to abstain from Table-moving on the peril of their souls. The sister-in-law declared that she would never touch a table again, but her stronger minded brother seemed to recover his common-sense view of the matter; whereupon Mr. Dibdin candidly told him his fears, lest he had been so ‘giving place to the Devil’ as to have fallen under the blinding influence of the ‘God of this world’ in the matter.

To us this narrative seems to exhibit a typical example of the mental influence exercised on the table, in each case, through the ‘unconscious muscular action’ of the principal performers. The gentleman who received the visit of the spirit of Edward Young had been *consciously* thinking much about him, and had *unconsciously* stored up the impression left by a former perusal of his poems, which reproduced itself in the citation (through the unconscious action of his brain on his muscular system) of a line that was likely to have particularly struck him. The innocent gaiety of his sister-in-law expressed itself in the ‘funny answers’ and the basial salutation. While the gloomy Calvinism of Mr. Dibdin, which had led him to a foregone conclusion as to the diabolical character of the manifestation, made the table rap out its own condemnation by the detestable heresies it gave forth.

Now, the doctrine of Mr. Dibdin and his predecessors upon this fundamental point has exactly the same basis as that since put forth by the Spiritualists. ‘Here, then,’ he says, ‘are the facts on which I rest my argument, that it is of supernatural agency. If any one doubts my veracity, or questions the possibility of my senses being correct witnesses, in such a case I have nothing to reply to that person. Such an one puts himself out of the reach of all argument; and by such incredulity makes it impossible to prove anything to him.’ And he thus disposes of Faraday’s investigations:—‘No doubt Professor Faraday understands his own department of science. What personal knowledge he has of the working of spirits, good or evil, it is not for me to say. But, in general, it seems necessary that men should be taught of the Holy Spirit, before they are competent to give any trustworthy opinion of the doings of Satan, or of evil spirits generally. Whether that ingenious Professor’s spiritual attain-

ments are such as enable him to pass judgment with such contempt upon the belief of pious and wise men, I am unable to decide.'

Who *shall* decide, when *such* doctors disagree? Mr. Dibdin, like his predecessors, is so firmly convinced that Table-moving is Satanic agency, as to feel himself called on to threaten all who practise this diabolical art with the gravest ecclesiastical censures, to say nothing of the terrors of paralysis or sudden death. The Spiritualists, on the other hand, affirm that nothing can be more conducive to their highest welfare, than to receive the visits of their departed relatives and friends, who impart to them spiritual guidance in their difficulties, and spiritual sympathy in their trials, and encourage them in the cultivation of 'purity of life and prayerfulness of inclination.' For ourselves, if we had to choose between the two creeds, we should prefer the latter. But it seems to us that Mr. Dibdin and the Spiritualists are equally right and equally wrong. Each is right in disbelieving the other's doctrine, while each is wrong in maintaining his own. Both are 'possessed' neither by 'spirits of health' nor 'goblins damned,' but by DOMINANT IDEAS, which act after their wont in converting what measure of common sense they may have ever possessed, and in bringing under their subjection that intelligent will which is man's most distinctive attribute.

On the curative powers said to be exerted through spiritual "mediums," it cannot be needful for us to dwell, the fact being notorious that the *confident anticipation* of a cure is in many cases sufficient of itself to bring it about. Any system of treatment, however absurd, that can be 'puffed' into public notoriety for efficacy—any individual who, by accident or design, obtains a reputation for the possession of a special gift of healing—is certain to attract a multitude of sufferers, among whom will be several who are capable of being *really* benefited by a strong assurance of relief, whilst others, for a time, *believe* themselves to have experienced it. And there is, for the same reason, no religious system that has attained powerful hold on the minds of its votaries, which cannot boast its "miracles" of this order. Nothing, for example, can be more complete than the attestation of a very remarkable cure which took place in the nunnery of Port Royal, in the person of one of the young scholars who was affected with an aggravated *fistula lachrymalis*, at a time when the hostility of the Jesuits and the Jansenists was at its height. The poor girl had been threatened with the "actual cautery" by the eminent surgeon Petit, under whose care she was, as the only way of getting rid of the disease of the bones of the nose, which manifested itself in intolerable fœtor; and the day was

fixed for its application. Two days previously, however, the patient walked in procession at the Fête de la Vierge, which was being celebrated with great pomp in the chapel of the convent, and was recommended by the nuns, as she passed the image of the Virgin, to prostrate herself before it and implore the Mother of God to relieve her from the dreaded infliction. This she did, no doubt, with the most childlike confidence and heartfelt sincerity, and her faith was rewarded by the favourable change which took place within a few hours, and which had so far advanced by the time of Petit's next visit, that he wisely did not interfere, the cure in a short time becoming complete. Of course, this 'miracle' was vaunted by the Jansenist party as indicating the special favour of the Virgin, whilst the Jesuits could not bring themselves to believe in its reality. A most careful enquiry was made by direction of the Court; the testimony of Petit and of other surgeons who knew the exact condition of the patient both before and after the 'miracle' (that condition being patent to their observation) was conclusive; and the reality of the cure could no longer be denied, though it remained inconceivable to the Jesuits that the Virgin should have worked a miracle in favour of their opponents.\* No fact of this kind rests on a wider basis of testimony than the efficacy of the royal touch in the 'king's evil.' The readers of 'Macaulay's History' will remember that when the honest good sense of William the Third made him refuse to exercise the power with which he was undoubtedly credited by the great mass of his subjects, an overwhelming mass of evidence was brought together as to the 'balsamic virtues of the royal hand.' Not only theologians of eminent learning, ability, and virtue, gave the sanction of their authority to this belief; but some of the principal surgeons of the day certified that the cures were so numerous and rapid that they could not be attributed to any natural cause, and that the failures were to be ascribed to want of faith on the part of the patients. Charles the Second, in the course of his reign, had 'touched' near a hundred thousand persons; and James, in one of his progresses, 'touched' eight hundred persons in Chester Cathedral. William's refusal to continue the practice brought upon him the outcries of the parents of scrofulous children against his cruelty; whilst bigots lifted up their hands and eyes in horror at his impiety. Jacobites sarcastically praised him for not presuming to arrogate to himself a power which belonged only to legitimate sovereigns; and even some Whigs thought that he acted unwisely in treating with such

\* Full details of this remarkable incident are given in Mrs. Schimmelpenninck's 'History of the Port Royalists.'

marked contempt a superstition which had so strong a hold on the vulgar mind. There are, probably, persons yet living who remember the reputed efficacy of 'Perkins's Metallic Tractors,' which was made the subject of a very careful investigation by Dr. Haygarth, an eminent physician of Bath, and Mr. Richard Smith, a distinguished surgeon of Bristol, in the early part of the present century. These gentlemen satisfied themselves that real benefit was often derived from the use of the 'Tractors,' which were supposed to exert the 'galvanic agency' then newly discovered; but that the same benefit was obtainable from the similar manipulation of two pieces of wood painted to resemble them, the *faith* of the patient being the condition required. Within our own recollection, the 'miracles' of Prince Hohenlohe were as well attested as any of the kind that have been worked before or since; these were succeeded by the therapeutic marvels of Mesmerism, which can all be accounted for by the like agency; and within the last few years we have seen the 'spiritual' cures of Dr. Newton at least equalled by those worked by the Zouave Jacob. Each reputation of this kind has its period of growth, maturity, decline, and death; and we should confidently anticipate that before the lapse of many years the 'spiritual' cures will, in like manner, have passed into the limbo of forgotten wonders of the same description, if it were not that the belief in them is only one of the manifestations of a morbid condition of the popular mind, the origin of which unfortunately lies very deep in its constitution.

It should not be lost sight of, in considering the *curative* influence attributable to 'faith,' that a most potent *injurious* influence may be exerted through the same agency. The 'spells' of witch-craft were by no means destitute of power over even princes and nobles in past times; whilst they still often seriously damage the health of persons who are ignorant and credulous enough to believe themselves to be the subjects of them. Every one who has lived among negroes knows that 'Obeah practices' are far more powerful for evil than 'spiritual agency' is for good; for there is no question that they have often produced the death of their victims by terrorism alone; whilst we have not yet heard it claimed by the Spiritualists that they can bring the dead to life. It is perfectly well known to medical men, that nothing more strongly opposes the operation of their best devised remedial measures—whether medical or surgical—than a fixed presentiment of a fatal result on the part of the patient. And very remarkable cases have been communicated to us by trustworthy observers, in which the fixed expectation of a local malady seems to have worked its own fulfilment, just as, within

our own experience, the assured belief that a particular remedy had been administered has produced its characteristic effects.

Those who believe in the curative virtues of 'Spiritualism,' therefore, are equally bound to believe in the malign influence of 'evil spirits'; and should consider it their peculiar mission to neutralise the spells of witches by invoking the assistance of the more benignant familiars, whom the 'healing mediums' have at their call. To us, on the other hand, it seems that the degree of ignorance and credulity of (so-called) educated men and women, which has been brought to light by the doings of the 'Spiritualists,' is not less lamentable than that of which our police reports give evidence when a decrepid old woman is nearly beaten to death by a young farmer for having 'cast a spell' upon him, or when a credulous servant girl is cheated out of her savings by a cunning old pretender to the power of 'ruling the planets.' Perhaps we shall be considered by some of our readers as drawing rather strongly on *their* credulity, when we assure them that a shrewd lawyer of our acquaintance was led, about two years ago, to give a high price for a large policy of insurance, on the life of a gentleman whose death within a twelvemonth was confidently predicted to him by one of these female 'seers'; and that he has since been twice called on to pay an annual premium of several hundred pounds, with the prospect of having to pay it for many future years, to secure the sum of which he expected to come into almost immediate possession. That a silly old woman should be induced by Mr. Home to make over to him sixty thousand pounds, on his representation that the spirit of her deceased husband directed the transfer, is to us far less wonderful than that practical men of the world should risk a large sum on the prediction of a *clairvoyante*; for even Dr. Cumming did not let the expectation of the Millenium interfere with his taking a long lease of a house. Generally speaking, the 'spirits' have judiciously abstained from committing themselves to predictions of which the falsity might soon be made apparent by the result, and have replied to questions as to the issue of impending 'events,' by saying that they do not concern themselves with matters of merely temporary and sublunary interest, their mission being to enlighten mankind as to those eternal verities which engage their own attention in the celestial sphere. Yet it would seem as if they occasionally condescend to minister to human frailties. Thus we have been assured by a lady at Bath, who bears a high character for intelligence and veracity, that having been present at a friend's house when the question was put by a young gentleman whose hands were resting on a planchette, 'Who likes me?' the table immediately wrote the names of

four young ladies known to all the party. The same question having been asked by the same gentleman with his hands on a different planchette in the house of another friend, *the same answer was given*; and this astounding coincidence was actually adduced by our informant as a proof that 'the tables know what each other say.' (The grammar is not ours.) She also assured us that a planchette of her acquaintance, though in the house of a clergyman, was 'never pious, often profane, and abused one of the young ladies of the house so constantly that she would not stay in the same room with it.' This table suffered the appropriate penalty for the crime of lending itself to the dictation of Satan. *It was burned!* Surely this clergyman must be the unconscious agent of the spirit of some arch-inquisitor of the sixteenth century, or of some witch-persecutor of the seventeenth. We are rejoiced, for the sake of humanity as well as for our own security, that he can now only exercise his combusive propensities on an inanimate bit of wood. Such heretics as deny that the tables are animated, either by good spirits or bad, could expect no mercy at his hands, if he were empowered to sit in judgment upon them.

We come, lastly, to those 'Physical manifestations' which have been from time to time adduced by the disciples of 'Spiritualism' as conclusive proofs of the existence of powers unknown to men of science, which (they aver) men of science have been repeatedly but vainly called upon to investigate and invited to witness, and in the reality of which, nevertheless, no man of any scientific reputation, in this country at least, has until recently professed his belief. Such a profession, however, has been recently made by gentlemen whose names and positions must give to it such weight with the general public, that we feel bound to subject their statements to a careful and critical examination. The July number of the 'Quarterly Journal of Science,' edited by Mr. W. Crookes, F.R.S., contains a Paper by the editor, entitled 'An Experimental Investigation of a New Force.' Most of the statements in this Paper are authenticated by letters from Dr. Huggins, V.P.R.S., and Mr. Serjeant Cox; and the Paper is reprinted in the 'Spiritualist' for July 15, under the title of 'An Experimental Investigation of Spiritual Phenomena,' by Mr. W. Crookes, F.R.S., Dr. Huggins, V.P.R.S., and Mr. Serjeant Cox, with 'Further Experiments' by Mr. Crookes. This number of the 'Spiritualist' also contained a Paper by Lord Lindsay, 'On Reichenbach's Magnetic Flames, and the Levitation of the Human Body'; extracts from an 'Experimental Investigation of the Spirit Manifestations,' by the late Dr. Hare, Professor of Chemistry in the University of Pennsylvania; and

a letter from Mr. Varley, a well-known electrician who has been extensively engaged in the laying of telegraph cables. Besides this body of scientific witnesses, we have, in the same number of the 'Spiritualist,' the evidence of a number of other persons with whose names (as we do not move in 'spiritual' circles) we have no acquaintance, but who testify—we have no doubt with full sincerity—to marvels far greater than any of which we had previously heard. In fact, the strongest appetite for 'sensational' writing ought to be satisfied by what we are assured is a sober narrative of real occurrences.

We must begin our examination of these witnesses by a protest against the spirit in which Mr. Crookes gives his evidence. 'It argues ill,' he says, 'for the boasted freedom of opinion among scientific men, that they have so long refused to institute a scientific investigation into the existence and nature of facts asserted by so many competent and credible witnesses, and which they are so freely invited to examine when and where they please. For my own part, I too much value the pursuit of truth, and the discovery of any new fact in Nature, to avoid inquiry because it appears to clash with prevailing opinions.' This is, of course, tantamount to asserting that Mr. Crookes and his coadjutors in this inquiry are the only scientific men whose love of truth makes them superior to vulgar prejudice!

Now we speak advisedly when we say that Mr. Crookes knew nothing whatever of the perseverance with which scientific men with whom he has never had the privilege of associating, qualified by long previous experience in inquiries of the like kind, *had* investigated these phenomena; until they had been forced to the conclusion that, as far as regards the Physical manifestations, there was nothing left to investigate, except the knavery of one set of performers and the self-delusion of others. We also speak advisedly when we say that Mr. Crookes was entirely ignorant of the previous history of the subject, and had not even acquainted himself with the mode in which Professor Faraday had demonstrated the real nature of Table-turning. For ourselves we can say that we took every opportunity within our reach, for more than a dozen years after the publication of the results of our former inquiries, of witnessing these 'higher phenomena' of Spiritualism; considering it to be our duty, having once taken up the inquiry, to follow it out so far as our time would admit and our patience hold out. And it was only after a repetition, on one occasion after another, of results which were entirely unsatisfactory, that we, and the scientific friends associated with us, abandoned the pursuit, as involving a waste of time and power that might be profitably employed upon

worthier

worthier objects of investigation. We may give the following as *samples* of the results we have ourselves encountered : —

1. At an early stage in the development of Spiritualism, we were invited by the eminent literary friend mentioned in p. 319 to 'assist' at a *séance* to be held at his house, in which the performers were a woman and a youth, both professed mediums, who were asserted to possess the power of drawing chairs and tables after them by the mere 'tractive force' of their fingers. The woman, who was also a 'writing medium,' wrote out a sermon, the style of which strongly reminded us of that of the Rev. Mr. Chadband's orations. The woman and the youth sat at a card-table with our friend's wife and ourself; and we observed that the woman, finding the disposition of its legs unfavourable to the action of the downward pressure of her hands, quietly shifted them sideways, so as to get a better leverage. The table, which had previously refused to tilt, then gave such answers to a few questions as any one might have dictated. The youth, on being called on for a specimen of his peculiar powers, leaned over a large loo table supported on a pedestal springing from three spreading feet; and having pressed down one side of the table, so that it rested only on the edges of two of the feet, its surface being steeply inclined, he left the table standing in this position, to the astonishment of every one present, save ourselves. At the end of the *séance*, however, in which nothing else occurred in the least worthy of note, we went over to the table and set it up in precisely the same position;—the secret (which we had observed at the time) being that the edge of the broad claw of each foot, and the edge of its castor, bore on the ground together, so as to afford a base which, though narrow, was sufficient for the table to rest on; its weight happening to be so distributed that the 'line of direction' from its centre of gravity fell within that base. We were cordially thanked by several members of the party for having saved them from going away under the delusion that the table was sustained in its inclined position, contrary to the force of gravity, by the 'spiritual' influence of a cunning cheat.

2. At a *séance* to which we have already had occasion to refer (p. 313), a circumstance occurred which let us somewhat into the secret of the *self*-deception induced by the practice of these 'curious arts,' in persons above all suspicion of chicanery.—After the regular *séance* had broken up, we watched from behind the window-curtain the proceedings of our friendly host and the Hon. Miss N——, who had their hands upon a small, light table that stood in the recess of the window, supported on a pillar springing from three spreading feet. This table rocked about

frantically,

frantically, sometimes resting on two legs, sometimes on one; and we observed that the performers seemed to be enticing it, as it were, by the movements of their hands, to rise into the air. Presently one of them exclaimed, 'It rose;' and soon afterwards the other responded, 'It rose again.' Now, we had been fixing our attention on the *feet* of the table; and were prepared to affirm with perfect certainty that *one* of them, at least, had never left the ground.—On discussing the matter afterwards, and claiming to be entitled on this point to trust to the evidence of our own careful observation, we asked the performers on what evidence *they* relied as to the rising of the table, and received this remarkable reply—'*Because we felt it pressing upwards against our hands.*' It was no longer difficult for us to understand how they could assure us, most truthfully, as regarded their own belief, that the long dining-table at which we were supping had risen a foot high on the previous evening. It was only necessary for them to 'feel it pressing upwards against their hands'!

3. On another occasion we were invited by an eminent naturalist, —who, having been absent from England during the Mesmeric and Odyllic Mania, had not been prepared either for the chicanery or the self-deceptions of 'Spiritualism,'—to accompany him to a private *séance*, at which a very powerful professional 'medium' was to exhibit her 'Physical manifestations.' As in the first case, we were bound over to watch the phenomena without interference; and we faithfully kept our promise. All that we saw, however, was explicable on the hypothesis of intentional deception; while the entirely negative result of some experimental tests to which the 'medium' professed herself quite willing to accept, confirmed the impression of her character which had been made on us by the manner in which she ordered us off when we had availed ourselves of an opportunity of seating ourselves close at her side. 'The circle,' she said, 'would not be favourably constituted unless Miss A—— (a believer) changed places with that gentleman.'

4. Shortly after this occurrence, our scientific friend begged us to give him an opportunity in his own house of convincing us of the reality of these 'Physical manifestations;' a female friend of his sister having recently, quite unexpectedly to herself, found herself possessed of very remarkable powers as a 'medium,' and being quite willing to submit to any test of them that could be fairly imposed by scientific inquirers. This invitation we readily accepted. Our friend had already prepared what he considered effectual safeguards against imposition; and we were consequently spared the necessity of exhibiting any suspicion of a certain lurking roguishness which we fancied we detected in the  
countenance

countenance of the lady. We sat for two hours in a state of solemn expectation; but though the presence of spirits was several times announced by 'raps,' they did not vouchsafe to favour us with any further manifestation of their agency.

5. The next of the experiences we shall narrate took place in connection with Mr. Foster, an American 'medium,' who carried away from London, some years ago, a rich harvest, obtained by the cleverness with which he practised on the credulity of the 'upper ten thousand.' We were requested by the lady mentioned in No. 1, who had known Mr. Foster in America, to accompany her and her son-in-law (an eminent London physician) on a visit to Mr. Foster, who had arrived in London only a few days previously. We were not introduced to him by name, and we do not think that he could have had any opportunity of knowing our person. Nevertheless, he not only answered, in a variety of modes, the questions we put to him respecting the time and cause of the death of several of our departed friends and relatives, whose names we had written down on slips of paper which had been folded up and crumpled into pellets before being placed in his hands, but he brought out names and dates correctly, in large red letters, on his bare arm, the redness being produced by the turgescence of the minute vessels of the skin, and passing away after a few minutes, like a blush. We must own to have been strongly impressed at the time by this performance; but on subsequently thinking it over, we thought we could see that Mr. Foster's divining power was partly derived from his having acquired the faculty of interpreting the movements of the *top* of a pen or pencil, though the *point* and what was written by it was hid from his sight; and partly from a very keen observation of the indications unconsciously given by ourselves of the answer we expected. For though we were fully armed with the knowledge which (as the readers of our former article will remember) had been acquired of the source from which Mrs. Hayden drew her inspiration, and did our utmost to repress every sign of anticipation, we came, on reflection, to an assured conviction that Mr. Foster *had* been keen-sighted enough to detect such signs, notwithstanding our attempt to baffle him. For, having asked him the *month* of the death of a friend, whose name had previously appeared in red letters on his arm, and the *year* of whose death had also been correctly indicated in another way, he desired us to take up the alphabet-card and to point to the successive letters. This we did, *as we believed*, with pendulum-like regularity; nevertheless, distinct raps were heard at the letters J, U. When, however, on the next repetition, we came to L, M, N, Mr. Foster

was

was obviously baffled. He directed us to 'try back' two or three times, and at last confessed that he could not certainly tell whether the month was *June* or *July*. The secret of this was, that *we did not ourselves recollect*. Wishing to clear up the matter further, we called on Mr. Foster, revealed ourselves to him *in propria personâ*, and asked him if he would object to meet a few scientific investigators who should be allowed to subject his powers to fair tests. As he professed his readiness to do so, we brought together such a meeting at our own house; and previously to Mr. Foster's arrival, we explained to our friends the arrangements we proposed. One of these was, that one of the party should sit outside the 'circle,' and should devote himself to observing and recording all that passed, without taking any part whatever in the performance. Another was, that instead of writing down names on slips of paper, whilst sitting at the table within Mr. Foster's view, we should write them at a side-table, with our backs turned to him. On explaining these arrangements to Mr. Foster, he immediately said that the first could not be permitted, for that every person present *must* form part of the circle. To the second he made no objection. After handing him our slips of paper carefully folded up, we took our seats at the table, and waited for the announcement of spiritual visitors. The only one, however, who presented himself during an hour's *séance*, was the spirit of our own old master, whose name Mr. Foster might very readily have learned previously, but about whom he could give no particulars whatever. *Not one of the names written on the papers was revealed.*—The patience of our friends being exhausted, they took their leave; but as Mr. Foster's carriage had been ordered for a later hour, we requested him to sit down again with the members of our own family. 'Now,' we said, 'that these incredulous philosophers are gone, perhaps the spirits will favour us with a visit.' We purposely followed *his* lead, as on our first interview, and everything went on as successfully as on that occasion; until, whilst the name of a relative we had recently lost was being spelled out on our alphabet-card, the raps suddenly ceased on the interposition of a large music-box, which was set up at a preconcerted signal so as to hide the *top* as well as the bottom of our pointer from Mr. Foster's eyes. Nothing could more conclusively prove that Mr. Foster's knowledge was derived from observation of the movements of the pointer, although he could only see the portion of it not hidden by the card, which was so held as to conceal the lower part of it; and nothing could be a better illustration of the principle of 'unconscious ideo-motor action' than the fact that whilst we were most carefully abstaining from any pause or look

look from which he might derive guidance, we had enabled him to divine the answer we expected.\* The trick by which the red letters were produced, was discovered by the inquiries of our medical friends.

\* A most instructive lesson as to the special training to which the professional conjuror subjects himself in preparing his mystifications, and the improvement of the powers of rapid apprehension and intellectual insight under such cultivation, is afforded by the 'Autobiography of Robert Houdin,' which ought to be carefully studied by every one who applies himself to the investigation of any phenomena in the production of which human agency takes an essential share. One of his most remarkable and attractive tricks was that which he appropriately designated 'Second Sight,' consisting in the ability of his son, a lad of twelve years old, whose eyes were covered with a thick bandage, to name and describe any object shown to the father at some distance from him. A plan of secret telegraphy had been arranged between them, by which the father could convey to his son the information he derived from his own inspection of the object; and the success of the son's description of it depended upon the readiness and certainty with which this imperceptible communication could be maintained, and upon the knowledge possessed by both, of the articles which were likely to be offered for description. The power of immediate apprehension was tested and trained in the following way:—In the first instance, Houdin put down a single domino, and required his son to name the total number of points without counting them, which he could readily do. Two dominoes were then tried; and, after a little practice, the total number of points on both was correctly named at the first glance. The next day the lesson was resumed, and they succeeded in naming the points on four dominoes at a single glance; on the following day those of six; and, at length, they found themselves able to give, without counting, the sum of the points on twelve dominoes. This result having been attained, they applied themselves to a far more difficult task, over which they spent a month. The father and son passed rapidly before a toy-shop, or any other displaying a variety of wares; and each cast an attentive glance upon it. A few steps further on, each drew paper and pencil from his pocket, and tried which could enumerate the greater number of the objects momentarily seen in passing. The son surpassed the father in quickness of apprehension, being often able to write down forty objects, whilst his father could scarcely reach thirty; yet, on their returning to verify his statement, he was rarely found to have made a mistake. Still more remarkable was the course of preparation to which both father and son subjected themselves, in order that the latter might be able to give a correct description of the multifarious objects presented to the former by the spectators, who would naturally choose those most likely to cause embarrassment. Among the objects with which they thus acquainted themselves, were the coins of all nations, half-effaced medals, minerals, precious stones, books printed in various languages (both living and dead), coats of arms, surgical and philosophical instruments, and miscellaneous curiosities of various kinds, both ancient and modern. All these they managed to 'get up' sufficiently for the recognition required; not only learning the names and values of all current coins, but familiarising themselves, in the cabinet of a friendly collector, with half-effaced antiques; acquiring a knowledge of the characters of Russian, Turkish, Greek, Hebrew, and even Chinese, so as to be able to read the titles of books in those languages; studying heraldry sufficiently to be able to give a correct technical description of a coat of arms, and so on. Having been brought up as a watchmaker, Houdin could easily open a watch, even with one hand, and could read the maker's name whilst artfully diverting the attention of the spectators; and in like manner he could open boxes, purses, pocket-books, or packets tied by a string, and find out their contents without being noticed, while appearing to be engaged on something quite different. A sealed packet gave him the greatest embarrassment; but this difficulty he managed to evade by making a slit in the paper with the nails of his left hand, which he kept long and sharp for the purpose.

6. It was, we believe, at about the same time, that we were requested to join a Committee for investigating the supposed 'occult powers' possessed by the Davenport Brothers. Being informed that the members of this Committee would be required, like ordinary attendants at the Brothers' performances, to join hands in a 'circle,' and that the essential parts of the performances themselves took place either within a cupboard into which no one was permitted to look, or in a dark room, we replied that we did not consider these performances to be proper subjects of scientific inquiry; for that no scientific man could consent to forego the use of his eyes and his hands, the most valuable of all his instruments for the investigation of objective truth.

This is the only occasion on which we have declined an invitation to investigate the physical manifestations of Spiritualism. We have repeatedly expressed our willingness to inquire into them, if only we were allowed to use ordinary scientific methods of testing their genuineness and scrutinising the conditions under which they occur. What will only take place in a 'dark *séance*,' or when hidden under a table, we do *not* feel called upon to treat as anything else than as a piece either of jugglery or of self-deception. And it is obviously a matter of grave suspicion when these manifestations take place only in presence of persons who are already predisposed to believe in their reality; and when they refuse to present themselves to the observation of honest inquirers, anxious only to arrive at truth and to prevent the dissemination of error, and prejudiced only so far as they may fairly be by their experience of the falsity of the pretensions advanced by numbers of previous claimants to similar 'occult' powers. That 'there are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in *our* philosophy,'—that 'there is no end to the possibilities of Nature,'—is, we feel assured, the honest conviction of every true man of science. But, as was recently pointed out to Mr. Crookes by the distinguished Physical Secretary of the Royal Society, on returning to him the Paper which he had presented to be read before that body, while the Royal Society would by no means refuse to receive a Memoir having for its object to establish the existence of a new force in Nature, it may reasonably expect that the experimental investigation on which the existence of such a force is affirmed, should be of a kind to satisfy the requirements of exact Science. It is by that standard that we shall now scrutinize the testimony of the several witnesses who have presented themselves for examination, in the order in which we have enumerated them.

Lord Lindsay is a gentleman of honourable name, unblemished personal character, and not only highly educated according to the ordinary

ordinary standard, but possessed of considerable scientific attainments: being such a man, in fact, as would be justly accounted a safe witness in regard to any ordinary occurrence. His capacity to investigate phenomena of any extraordinary character, however, is open to very serious question. The following is his own account of the experiment by which he considers himself to have tested Mr. Home's power of seeing a magnet in the dark:—

‘This is an experiment which I believe was made by Reichenbach, and although, like myself, he was never able to distinguish the light, yet he found a number of persons who did see it under test conditions.

‘I asked Mr. Home, and he expressed himself willing to try the experiment. I then took into one of my rooms, which was totally dark, a large permanent magnet, and having removed the armature, I placed it on the floor near the wall, at a considerable distance from the door.

‘Mr. Home was then brought into the room, and remained standing near the door for some moments.

‘He then said that he saw some sort of light on the floor in a corner of the room, and immediately said to me—“Give me your hand, and I will show you exactly where I see it.” He then led me straight across the room, and without the least hesitation stooped down and placed my hand on the magnet.

‘I have been trying for more than two years to get a satisfactory result in this experiment, but hitherto with only doubtful success.

‘The instrument used was a large compound magnet capable of sustaining a weight of about 20 lbs.’

It is evident, from the commencement of the foregoing quotation, that Lord Lindsay had neither read Von Reichenbach's own statement of his inquiries, nor made himself acquainted with the contemporary criticisms which exposed the fallacy of their results. It was clearly shown by the experiments of Mr. Braid, that where ‘sensitives’ were persons on whose honesty reliance could be placed, the results depended upon the induction of a state of semi-reverie (of the same character with that subsequently known as the Biological), in which the ‘subjects’ were ready to see or feel anything that might be suggested to them. But a large part of Von Reichenbach's experiences show him to have been victimised by the intentional deceptions of cunning pretenders. It is quite clear that Lord Lindsay, like his predecessor, had utterly failed to apprehend the peculiar fallacies to which inquiries of this kind are subject; placing the same reliance on Mr. Home's statements that he would in the indications of a well-constructed thermometer, instead of setting himself, in the first instance, to test the value of those statements,

as the maker of a thermometer does the correctness of its graduation. Nothing would have been easier than to do this, in a manner to satisfy the most rigorous requirements of science. Lord Lindsay had only to employ an electro-magnet, instead of a permanent magnet; giving free control over the galvanic battery on which its magnetic force depends to an assistant outside, who should either make or unmake the magnet, or should vary its power, at his own pleasure, recording the time of each change. If, then, Mr. Home's account of the appearance, disappearance, and varying intensity of the light emitted from the magnet should be found to be in uniform correspondence with such a record, and the experiment were to give the same constancy of results when several times repeated,—with such a variation of persons as would exclude all possibility either of intentional collusion or of accidental coincidence,—Mr. Home's possession of the power to see light issuing from a magnet would be entitled to rank as an ascertained scientific fact. But this, after all, would merely prove that magnetic force, acting through Mr. Home's nervous system, could produce the sensation of Light; which would not seem more unlikely to those who know the correlation of those forces than that certain persons should be apprised of a change of wind or the approach of a thunderstorm, by feelings of which ordinary people have no experience.

If, then, Lord Lindsay cannot be trusted as a 'faithful' witness in 'that which is least,' how can we feel assured that he is 'faithful also in much'? And what measure of credit can we attach to the following narrative, doubtless implicitly believed in by himself, which follows immediately upon our previous quotation?

'I may mention that on another occasion I was sitting with Mr. Home and Lord Adare, and a cousin of his. During the sitting Mr. Home went into a trance, and in that state was carried out of the window in the room next to where we were, and was brought in at our window. The distance between the windows was about 7 feet 6 inches, and there was not the slightest foothold between them, nor was there more than a 12-inch projection to each window, which served as a ledge to put flowers on.

'We heard the window in the next room lifted up, and almost immediately after we saw Home floating in the air outside our window.

'The moon was shining full into the room; my back was to the light, and I saw the shadow on the wall of the window-sill, and Home's feet about six inches above it. He remained in this position for a few seconds, then raised the window and glided into the room, feet foremost, and sat down.

'Lord Adare then went into the next room to look at the window

from which he had been carried. It was raised about eighteen inches, and he expressed his wonder how Mr. Home had been taken through so narrow an aperture.

Home said (still in trance), "I will show you;" and then, with his back to the window, he leaned back, and was shot out of the aperture head first with the body rigid, and then returned quite quietly.

'The window is about seventy feet from the ground. I very much doubt whether any skilful tight-rope dancer would like to attempt a feat of this description, where the only means of crossing would be by a perilous leap, or being borne across in such a manner as I have described, placing the question of the light aside.'

Now on this we shall only make three observations:—

1. Though it might have been expected that, in narrating a marvel so astounding, Lord Lindsay would have been careful to state every particular that could be reasonably asked for, and to support his account of it by the testimony of the other gentlemen by whom it was witnessed, he commences as if he were narrating the most ordinary occurrence, which ought to be received on his own testimony alone; thus showing that he had previously surrendered himself unreservedly to the belief in Mr. Home's 'occult' powers, and that his testimony is therefore to be received with the gravest suspicion.

2. He commits the flagrant inconsistency of telling us that whilst he and two other persons were 'sitting with Mr. Home,'—which, if words have any meaning, implies that Mr. Home was in the same room with him,—Mr. Home '*was carried out of the window in the room next to where we were, and was brought in at our window.*'

3. This spiritual transportation took place, not in open day, but *by moonlight*.

If any wicked wag were to characterise Lord Lindsay's statement as 'all moonshine,' would not the common sense of our readers accept the description?

We have next to deal with Dr. Hare, who was an American physicist and chemist of some reputation, but was not, so far as we have been able to learn, remarkable for acuteness of discrimination as to any matters beyond the ordinary sphere of his inquiries; and we shall presently show how the want of such discrimination caused him to fail egregiously in apprehending the most essential conditions of the question to be put to experimental test. He set himself to contrive 'an apparatus, which, if spirits were actually present, would enable them to exercise their physical and intellectual powers independent of the control by any medium;' and this he thought he had realised in the following manner:—A

dial

dial was fixed to the table on which the hands of the 'medium' were to be laid; and round the circumference of this dial the letters of the alphabet were disposed in irregular order. An index-hand was made to rotate on an axle passing through the centre of the dial; and this axle was made to revolve, through the traction of a cord wound round it, by any *tilting* movements given to the table. The dial being hidden by an interposing screen from the eyes of the 'medium,' it was assumed by Dr. Hare that 'no letter could be brought under the index at will;' nevertheless the hand spelled out any name that was called for, and, when directed to do so, pointed successively to the letters in their proper alphabetical order. Now, in the first place, no measure was taken by Dr. Hare to test the downward pressure of the hands of the 'medium' upon the table; and we therefore hold ourselves justified in assuming, in the absence of any proof to the contrary, that its tiltings were due to her muscular agency. But, secondly, as we are not told that the face of Dr. Hare and of every other person who was looking at the dial, was screened from observation of the 'medium,' it is evident that she had ample opportunity of deriving guidance in her manipulation of the table, from watching the indications they would afford her; just as Mrs. Hayden was guided in her 'raps,' and Mr. Foster in his varied modes of communicating spiritual answers, by the like observation of the signs involuntarily dictated by the 'expectant attention' of the questioners. And that this was really the case is evident from Dr. Hare's own account of what took place.

'Although,' he says, 'the requisite letters were ultimately found, there was evidently some difficulty, as if there was some groping for them with an imperfect light. This has been explained since by my father's spirit. He alleges that, preferably, the eyes of the medium would be employed; but that, although with difficulty, he used mine as a substitute.'

Even on the spirit's own showing, therefore, the use of somebody's eyes was necessary for the regulation of the movements of the index; clearly proving that the movement was dependent on *human* agency. Again, he says,—

'Although, with a view to convince the sceptical, spirits will occasionally give manifestations, when the vision or muscular control of the medium is nullified, it is more difficult for the spirits to operate in this way; moreover it is more difficult for some spirits than for others. . . . One who has assisted me with much zeal has communicated that he would work my apparatus when arranged for a test, but that, as it caused much more exertion, and of course retardation, he advised that the test arrangement should not be interposed when it could be avoided.'

Another apparatus was so contrived by Dr. Hare, that the hand was turned by the *horizontal* movement of the table, which rolled on wheels about 5 inches in diameter. A 'medium' having seated herself at the table with her face screened from the alphabet-disk, 'no manifestation took place through the disk, though other indications of the presence of spirits were given. Hence, inducing the medium to sit at an ordinary table, I inquired if any change could be made which would enable them to communicate through my apparatus. The reply through the alphabet-card was, "Let the medium see the letters."—Even this does not seem to have opened Dr. Hare's eyes to the fundamental fallacy of his method of investigation. He caused the 'medium' to place her hands upon a metallic plate having small brass balls interposed between it and the table; by which means, he considered, 'he could neutralise the power of the medium to move the table, so that she could not influence the selection of the letters, though permitted to see them.' Yet it never seems to have occurred to Dr. Hare to ascertain whether or not a pair of hands resting on his metallic plate could give a horizontal motion, through its mediation, to the table beneath, whose large wheels would very easily yield to any such impulse; and, as the contrary was not proved, we are justified in assuming that the table was so moved.

Having thus exposed the sources of error underlying two of the experiments which are regarded by this Professor of Chemistry 'as proving a spirit to have been present and to have actuated the apparatus, affording *thus precise experimental proof of the immortality of the soul*' (!), we should not think it needful to cross-examine him further, were it not that it is obviously on another of his experiments that Messrs. Crookes and Huggins have based their own method of inquiry. A board about 4 feet long was made to rest on a fulcrum at a foot from one of its extremities, and consequently at 3 feet from the other; and the longer end was attached to a weighing-machine that indicated any downward pressure which might be applied to any part of that arm of the lever. A glass vase was fixed, mouth upwards, on the board, having its centre at a distance of 6 inches from the fulcrum, on the same side as the weighing-machine; and, as the distance of the weighing-machine from the fulcrum was six times that of the centre of the vase, any pressure exerted on the latter must have been six times that indicated by the weighing-machine. The vase having been nearly filled with water, a wire-gauze cage was so arranged as to descend into it; a 'medium' was induced to plunge his hands, clasped together, to the bottom of the cage; and Dr. Hare then invoked 'the aid

of his spirit friends.' A downright force, he assures us, was repeatedly exerted upon the end at the board appended to the balance, equal to nearly *three* pounds weight; equivalent, therefore, to *eighteen* pounds at the centre of the vase. Yet it never seems to have occurred to Dr. Hare to test whether he or anyone else could not produce the same depression by the rhythmical action of repeated downward impulses given to the cage, which would be communicated to the vase through the friction of the waters in rising through the pores of the wire-gauze. Knowing what we do of the extraordinary results of the *cumulative* force of very small vibratory impulses rhythmically repeated, we have no difficulty in accounting for the result of Dr. Hare's experiment, without any aid from his 'spirit friends.' Had our own Faraday taken part in such an investigation, he would have considered it his first duty, as a scientific man, to *test the performance of his instruments*; but this seems to have been entirely beneath the consideration of a philosopher who was bent only upon obtaining a 'precise experimental proof of the immortality of the soul.' And yet this is the man whose 'spirit' seems to have been allowed by Messrs. Crookes and Huggins to direct their investigations.

As Mr. Crookes advances no less a claim than to have proved the existence of his New Force by 'the application of crucial tests, with carefully arranged apparatus, and in the presence of irreproachable witnesses,' we are forced to inquire not only how far the tests were really crucial, but how far the witnesses were competent. For, as we have already seen, a man may have acquired a high reputation as an investigator in one department of science, and yet be utterly untrustworthy in regard to another. This is what not merely the general public, but men who claim to guide its judgments, seem unable to understand. Any 'scientific man' is popularly supposed to be a competent authority upon obscure questions, for the elucidation of which are required the nice discrimination and the acute discernment of the sources of fallacy, which can only be gained by a long course of experience, based on special knowledge. And this is particularly the case when the inquiry is psychical rather than physical, and involves a knowledge of the modes in which the Mind of the observer is liable to be misled either by his own proclivities or by the arts of an intentional deceiver. 'If,' it is triumphantly asked, 'we accept Dr. Huggins's testimony to the facts he has discovered by Spectrum-analysis, why should we refuse credence to his testimony as to the manifestations of Psychic Force? And if we do *not* accept his evidence as to the latter class of phenomena, how can we consistently rely upon

it in regard to the former?' This question we shall endeavour to answer in a manner as little offensive as possible to Dr. Huggins, for whose personal as well as for whose scientific character we entertain the sincerest respect. And we must request him, on the one hand, to believe that nothing but what we deem the paramount interests of truth would induce us to utter a word in depreciation of his merit; and, on the other hand, to bear in mind that he has himself challenged such criticism, by having, as we consider, hastily and inconsiderately given the sanction of his high authority and of the distinguished office he at present holds by favour of the President of the Royal Society, to the results of what is—to say the least—a very inadequate investigation.

Dr. Huggins is one of a class of scientific amateurs who hold a most important position in our community, as helping to maintain for British Science that place which would be imperilled by the paucity of its professional defenders: men who, either born to independence, or honourably acquiring it by their own exertions, apply themselves to scientific pursuits with as much earnest devotion as if their livelihood depended on their success. When such amateurs have shown the capacity, as well as the will, to labour for the advancement of Science in any department they may select, they are invariably welcomed by its professors as most valued allies, and receive at their hands the academic distinctions usually accorded only to those who have distinguished themselves in University studies. Like Mr. Whitbread, Mr. Lassell, and other brewers we could name, Dr. Huggins attached himself, in the first instance, to the study of astronomy, and soon after the marvellous application, by Professors Bunsen and Kirchhoff, of the method of Spectrum-analysis to the study of the component elements of the sun, he associated himself with his friend and neighbour, the late Professor W. A. Miller, in the extension of the same method of inquiry to the planets, the fixed stars, and finally to the nebulae. The success of their joint labours in this previously unexplored field was most complete. Questions were definitely resolved which had baffled all the skill of the Herschels and the Rosses; and every extension of their inquiries opened out new and illimitable prospects beyond. Most deservedly, therefore, did they receive the plaudits of the whole scientific world, while learned Societies and Universities vied with each other in the bestowal of their well earned honours. No attestation could be higher to Mr. Huggins's unsurpassed ability as a spectroscopic observer than the resolution of the Council of the Royal Society (at the special instance of Dr. Robinson of Armagh) to devote a sum of 2000*l.*

to the construction of a telescope expressly adapted to enable him to apply this method of analysis in the most efficient manner to the systematic study of the nebulae. This telescope has been recently completed, and placed in the observatory provided by Dr. Huggins for its reception; the exclusive possession of this noble instrument having been given him for a term of years, on his undertaking to devote all his disposable time to its use.

There can be no question, however, that such scientific amateurs labour, as a rule, under a grave disadvantage, in the want of that broad basis of *general* scientific culture, which alone can keep them from the narrowing and perverting influence of a limited *specialism*. And we have no reason to believe that to this rule Dr. Huggins constitutes an exception. Of his acquaintance with any other department of science than the small subdivision of a branch to which he has so meritoriously devoted himself, we are not aware that he has given any evidence whatever. And we believe that his habits of thought were formed and fixed before he entered into that association with a justly distinguished Professor, which unquestionably laid the foundation of his subsequent success. In particular, we believe that his devotion to a branch of research which tasks the keenest powers of *observation*, has prevented him from training himself in the strict methods of *experimental* inquiry; and that the implicit trust he has been rightly led to place in the revelations of his spectroscope has tended rather to weaken, than to strengthen, his power of detecting the fallacies of observation in other matters. To him 'seeing is believing;' but to those who have qualified themselves for the study of 'Psychic Force' by a previous course of investigation into the class of 'occult' phenomena of which this is the latest manifestation, 'seeing' is anything but 'believing.' They know that there are *moral* sources of error, of which Dr. Huggins, with his simple trustingness, would never dream, and that one of the most potent of these is a proclivity to believe in the reality of spiritual communications, which places those who are not constantly on their guard against its influence under the twofold danger of deception—alike from *within* and from *without*.

Our task in dealing with Mr. Crookes is much less difficult; for not merely his incautious use of his position as editor of an important scientific journal, but the *malus animus* he has displayed towards those with whom he claims to be in fraternity, entirely destroys any tenderness we might have otherwise felt for a man who has in his previous career made creditable use of his very limited opportunities. Mr. Crookes acquired his place in

Science

Science by the application of Spectrum-analysis to the detection of the new metal *Thallium*, the properties and chemical relations of which he studied with care and accuracy. For this discovery he was rewarded by the Fellowship of the Royal Society; but we speak advisedly when we say that this distinction was conferred on him with considerable hesitation, the ability he displayed in the investigation being purely *technical*. We are assured, on the highest authority, that he is regarded among chemists as a specialist of specialists, being totally destitute of any knowledge of Chemical Philosophy, and utterly untrustworthy as to any inquiry which requires more than technical knowledge for its successful conduct. He committed himself in the pages of his journal, fifteen months ago, to an expression, 'in the most emphatic manner,' of 'his belief in the occurrence, under certain circumstances, of phenomena inexplicable by any known natural laws;' whilst, at the same time, he admitted that he had not employed the tests which men of science had a right to demand before giving credence to the genuineness of those phenomena. Hence he entered upon the inquiry, of which he now makes public the results, with *an avowed foregone conclusion of his own*, based on evidence which he admitted to be scientifically incomplete; and this obviously deprives his 'conviction of their objective reality' of even that small measure of value to which his scientific character might have given it a claim, if his testimony had been impartial. That he had not prepared himself for the investigation, by making himself acquainted with what had been previously ascertained in regard to the real nature of kindred phenomena, we have already pointed out.\*

Of Mr. Serjeant Cox it will be enough for us to say that, whatever may be his professional ability, he is known to those conversant with the history of Mesmerism as one of the most gullible of the gullible, as to whatever appeals to his organ of Wonder. He was the patron of that youth George Goble, whose pretensions to the *clairvoyant* power were investigated by Drs. Forbes and Sharpey more than twenty-five years ago, and whose fraud was exposed by an ingenious contrivance devised by the latter. Yet Mr. Cox was so persuaded that his *protégé* had played the cheat *on that occasion only*, that he called the next day on Dr. Forbes, assured him of his own continued belief in George's asserted powers, and begged him to resume his investigations! This is the sort of witness whose testimony Mr. Crookes calls upon scientific men to receive, as to the results of what he represents as a purely scientific enquiry; whilst

\* 'Quarterly Review,' vol. xciii. p. 538.

he altogether ignores the painstaking and carefully conducted researches which had led men of the highest scientific eminence to an unquestioning rejection of the whole of those 'higher phenomena' of Mesmerism, which are now presented under other names as the results of 'Spiritual' or 'Psychic' agency.

The test experiment, on which the claim is advanced for Mr. Home that he possesses the power of 'altering the weight of bodies,' is obviously suggested by the last of Dr. Hare's. The apparatus consisted of a mahogany board, 36 inches long,  $9\frac{1}{2}$  inches wide, and 1 inch thick. Under one end was screwed a strip of mahogany  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inch wide, which served as foot or fulcrum, resting on the edge of a firm table. The other end of the board was hung to a spring-balance supported by a substantial tripod stand, and this balance was fitted with a self-registering index, which recorded the maximum weight indicated by the pointer. The apparatus was so adjusted that the mahogany board was horizontal; and in this position its weight depressed the pointer so that it marked 3 lbs. The following is Mr. Crookes's account of what took place:—

'Mr. Home placed the tips of his fingers lightly on the extreme end of the mahogany board which was resting on the support, whilst Dr. Huggins and myself sat, one on each side of it, watching for any effect which might be produced. Almost immediately the pointer of the balance was seen to descend. After a few seconds it rose again. This movement was repeated several times, as if by successive waves of the Psychic Force. The end of the board was observed to oscillate slowly up and down during the time.

'Mr. Home now of his own accord took a small hand-bell and a little card match-box, which happened to be near, and placed one under each hand, to satisfy us, as he said, that he was not producing the downward pressure. The very slow oscillation of the spring-balance became more marked, and Dr. Huggins, on watching the index, said that he saw it descend to  $6\frac{1}{2}$  lbs. The normal weight of the board as so suspended being 3 lbs., the additional downward pull was therefore  $3\frac{1}{2}$  lbs. On looking immediately afterwards at the automatic register, we saw that the index had at one time descended as low as 9 lbs., showing a maximum pull of 6 lbs.

'In order to see whether it was possible to produce much effect on the spring-balance by pressure at the place where Mr. Home's fingers had been I stepped upon the table and stood on one foot at the end of the board. Dr. Huggins, who was observing the index of the balance, said that the whole weight of my body (140 lbs.) so applied only sunk the index  $1\frac{1}{2}$  lb., or 2 lbs. when I jerked up and down. Mr. Home had been sitting in a low easy-chair, and could not, therefore, had he tried his utmost, have exerted any material influence on these results. I need scarcely add that his feet, as well as his hands, were closely watched by all in the room.

'It

'It was particularly noticed that Mr. Home's fingers were not at any time advanced more than  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inch from the extreme end, as shown by a pencil-mark, which, with Dr. Huggins's acquiescence, I made at the time. Now, the wooden foot being also  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inch wide, and resting flat on the table, it is evident that no amount of pressure exerted within this space of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inch could produce any action on the balance. Again, it is also evident that when the end furthest from Mr. Home sank, the board would turn on the further edge of this foot as on a fulcrum. The arrangement was consequently that of a see-saw, 36 inches in length, the fulcrum being  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inch from one end! Were he, therefore, to have exerted a downward pressure, it would have been in opposition to the force which was causing the other end of the board to move down.

'The slight downward pressure shown by the balance when I stood on the board was owing probably to my foot extending beyond this fulcrum.'

Now, on this we have simply to observe that the whole experiment is vitiated by the absence of any determination of the *actual downward pressure* of Mr. Home's fingers: the very point being assumed without any investigation, which ought to have been subjected to the most rigorous tests. Such determination, by a vertical 'indicator,' would have been the very first step in the inquiry if Professor Faraday had been conducting it; and until this test has been applied, in the presence of witnesses to whose trustworthiness and impartiality no exception can be taken, we hold ourselves excused from any call to explain the depression of the index which is affirmed by Mr. Crookes and Dr. Huggins to have taken place. The statement, however, that it took place in 'waves'—or, as Serjeant Cox expresses it, 'in tremulous pulsations, not in the form of steady, continuous pressure, the indicator moving and falling incessantly during the experiment'—strongly suggests that Mr. Home managed to impart a rhythmical vibration to the board by extending the pressure of his fingers a little *off* its support, while the attention of the witnesses was kept fixed upon the index, three feet off.\*

In

---

\* It is well known that a large part of the conjuror's art consists in the *distraction of the spectator's attention* from the critical points of his performance; and Houdin tells us that he found this to be easier with clever men, who go to such representations to enjoy the illusions, than with ordinary men who see in them a challenge offered to their intelligence. The following anecdote of the late Earl of Rosse seems to us not a little instructive in this point of view. Having taken his children to see the performances of Frikell, one of the most dexterous of pure sleight-of-hand *prestidigitateurs*, he entirely surrendered himself at the time to the artist's clever deceptions. But, possessing a good memory, he was afterwards able to retrace every step of the performance; and by setting his reason to work, he succeeded in satisfying himself as to the precise point in each trick at which the sleight of hand *must* have been practised. He then went a second time, with the

determination

In his subsequent communication to the 'Spiritualist,' Mr. Crookes records the results of other experiments with this apparatus, one of them being a variation of that which Dr. Hare had made with the water-vase. These, he asserts, altogether preclude the possibility that Mr. Home, and the lady-medium who was able to produce the like results, should have done so by their own muscular action; and yet it never seems to have occurred to him to test whether the same results could not be produced by throwing the board into rhythmical vibration by an *intentional* exertion of muscular action!

We must class Mr. Crookes's account of Mr. Home's performances with an accordion with Lord Lindsay's narrative of Mr. Home's moonlight sail. For all these performances took place within a cylindrical cage of hoops, laths, string, and wire, which was placed *under a table* in a room lighted with gas; the averment being that the accordion, first held in one of Mr. Home's hands, with its keys downwards, emitted distinct and separate notes in succession, and then played a simple air; whilst afterwards, on Mr. Home withdrawing his hand, the accordion floated inside the cage, without any visible support, and went on playing as before. Mr. Crookes's assistant, who looked under the table when Mr. Home had his hand on the accordion, reported that the accordion was expanding and contracting, but did not say whether or not its keys were moving; and though Mr. Crookes, his assistant, and Serjeant Cox afterwards saw the accordion floating unsupported in the cage (Dr. Huggins does *not* testify to this), they do not give us the slightest information as to whether the keys and the bellows of the accordion were at work whilst the instrument was continuing to utter its dulcet sounds.

It will be quite time for us to consider how this performance is to be explained, when it shall have been repeated *in open daylight* (without any cage), *above* instead of *under* a table, and in the presence of *trustworthy witnesses*, who should carefully record all the particulars in which Mr. Crookes's narrative is deficient. In the meanwhile, it is worthy of remark that it is the *accordion* which is usually selected as the favourite instrument of spirit-mediums; and that the performance on this instrument *with one hand* is a juggling trick often exhibited at country fairs.

It is admitted by Mr. Crookes that there is a great obstacle to the scientific investigation of Mr. Home's asserted powers,

---

determination of limiting his attention to these points, without allowing it to be distracted by the devices of the performer; and he was then able to detect a number of the "passes" which had previously escaped his observation, admirably trained though this was by his astronomical and mechanical pursuits.

'owing

‘owing to our imperfect knowledge of the conditions which favour or oppose the manifestations of this force, to the apparently capricious manner in which it is exerted, and to the fact that Mr. Home himself is subject to unaccountable ebbs and flows of this force;’ so that ‘it has but seldom happened that a result obtained on one occasion could be subsequently confirmed and tested with apparatus specially contrived for the purpose.’ Now, to us there is no mystery whatever. We have constantly found that when we have gone simply as spectators,—when our sceptical disposition was not known,—when no indications of incredulity or even of doubt was given, either on our own part, or on that of others, by word, look, or sign,—when (in fact) the performers had it all their own way, like conjurors at a public performance, at which the spectators are prepared to be taken in,—the conditions are all favourable to the flow of the peculiar force—Mesmeric, Psychic, or Spiritual, as its advocates may choose to designate it. When, on the other hand, the performers are aware that their proceedings are being scrutinised by critical and intelligent eyes; when they know that it would be fatal to their pretensions were they to be detected in deceptions which they can safely practise on the credulous; and when (to save appearances) they have accepted tests which they know must prevent them from even attempting these deceptions, the ‘unaccountable’ *ebb* takes place, and the results are entirely negative. This is what happened to a committee of scientific men, which met Mr. Home some months ago at St. Petersburg. Mr. Home’s force being at a minimum, no manifestations were vouchsafed. ‘The same thing,’ says Mr. Crookes, ‘has frequently happened within my own experience. A party of scientific men met Mr. Home at my house, and the results were as negative as those at St. Petersburg. Instead, however, of throwing up the inquiry, we patiently repeated the trial a second and a third time, when we met with results which were positive.’ We doubt not that during these *séances* Mr. Home was taking the measure of those who had met to take his; and that when he found them sufficiently impressed with the reality of his Psychic force to attribute to it the rippling of the surface of water in a basin, which was really produced by the tremor occasioned in Mr. Crookes’s house by the passage of a railway-train close to it,\* he considered them ripe for its further manifestation.

Having frequently heard the testimony of Mr. C. E. Varley to the physical marvels of Spiritualism cited as that of ‘an

---

\* This is not an invention of our own, but a fact communicated to us by a highly intelligent witness, who was admitted to one of Mr. Crookes’s *séances*.

eminent scientific man,' we have made some inquiry into his qualifications as a witness on such matters, and find that they are certainly not superior to those of Mr. Crookes's. Though possessing considerable *technical* knowledge of electric telegraphy, his *scientific* attainments are so cheaply estimated by those who are best qualified to judge of them that he has never been admitted to the Royal Society, although he has more than once been a candidate for that honour. We quote the following merely as an example of the manner in which minds of this limited order are apt to become the dupes of their own imaginings:—

'I have in broad daylight seen a small table with no one near it but myself, and not even touched by me or any visible person, raised off the floor and carried horizontally 10 feet through the air; and I have repeatedly seen a large dining-table lifted bodily off the floor, and when so supported in the air the table has moved in the direction that I mentally requested it to take. In this experiment, not only was the "new force" well developed, but in addition it obeyed my *unspoken mental request*, to convince me that there was present an "intelligence" that could, and did, read my thoughts.

'I have on a few occasions been able to see the *Spirits themselves*, sometimes to *talk* with them. They have frequently foretold things that were about to happen, and in most instances the events have occurred as predicted.'

We are now arrived at the climax—or, as some may perhaps think, the anti-climax—of the marvels, which we are gravely called on to accept as well-authenticated facts. On the 20th of May last, Mr. Herne, of 61, Lamb's Conduit Street, was 'caught away' whilst walking in the neighbourhood of Islington, in open day, and conveyed, by invisible agency, into a room in the house of Mr. Guppy, No. 1, Morland Villas, Highbury Hill Park, its doors and windows being all closed. A fortnight afterwards, a return visit was paid by Mrs. Guppy to Mr. Herne; the lady being brought by invisible agency into a room measuring twelve feet by ten, of which the doors and windows were closed and fastened, and coming 'plump down,' in a standing position, upon the centre of a table round which eleven persons were sitting, shoulder to shoulder, in a dark *séance*. Mrs. Guppy was evidently not a consenting party to this transportation, for she was in a state of complete unconsciousness and of partial *déshabille*, having neither bonnet, shawl, nor shoes; and she seems to have been rudely interrupted by her spiritual captors whilst making up her household accounts, as she held an account-book in one hand, and a pen with the ink still wet in the other. These astounding phenomena are calmly narrated by  
a Mr.

a Mr. Benjamin Coleman, who is very severe upon scientific men for their incredulity, but seems to consider it rather their misfortune than their fault, since he says, 'Had I been fettered by scientific education, I could not have allowed so "preposterous" and "impossible" an event to enter my brain.' Being himself perfectly unfettered, however, by any absurd prejudices, he had been led to anticipate and even to predict that these wonders would culminate in Mrs. Guppy—one of the largest and heaviest women of his acquaintance—being carried away; and we cannot but suspect that his prediction had something to do in bringing about its fulfilment. It is obvious that the party of eleven persons, who were sitting *in the dark* in Mr. Herne's apartments, were in that state of 'expectant attention' which is well known to physiologists to be productive of 'subjective sensations' as well as of movements; and just as, in a 'circle' of Table-turners, when one leads off all the others follow suit, so any one who heard or felt anything (*seeing* being out of the question) which could be fancied to indicate Mrs. Guppy's presence on the table would readily excite the same belief in the minds of the rest; just as Theodore Hook, in his celebrated experiment on popular credulity, persuaded a London crowd not merely that *he*, but that *they*, could see the lion on the top of Northumberland House wag his tail. How, in a dark *séance*, it was ascertained not merely that Mrs. Guppy was present, but that she was in a state of *déshabille*, and that the ink was still wet in her pen, we are not informed. The following incident, recorded in another part of the same number of the 'Spiritualist,' seems to afford some clue to the mystery:—

'Last Friday week at a dark *séance* at the residence of Mr. Guppy, two live lobsters were placed on the hands of one of the sitters. It was then made known that Miss Thom, of Pendleton, near Manchester, whispered to her mother that she wished the spirits would bring a live lobster instead of flowers. Mrs. Thom, who attended the circle merely as an inquirer, did not think it proper to repeat the request aloud, so neither the medium nor anybody else at the circle knew that a desire for a lobster had been expressed.'

Can any rational person doubt that these 'two live lobsters' existed only in the imagination of Miss Thom and her associates? She could not *see* them in the dark; and if they had made their presence *felt* by pinching her fingers, she would have most assuredly screamed. In the state of 'expectant attention,' she doubtless experienced, in unusual strength, the 'creepy-crawly' sensations familiar to many of us in strange beds, and attributed these to the presence of the lobsters she had been wishing for. If she will assure us that they were boiled for supper

after the *séance*, and proved to be substantial, not spiritual, food, we will retract our hypothetical explanation.

We might fill another page or two with Mr. Coleman's accounts of Mrs. Guppy's 'mediumistic' endowments, which, as regards her power of bringing in any quantity of fruits and flowers, are only paralleled by those of a Houdin or a Friekell; whilst she goes beyond these accomplished *prestidigitateurs* in dashing down large quantities of snow, so clear and sparkling that it could not have been touched by human hands, and pieces of ice, as large as the fist, in such quantity as to require the services of a man-servant to take it away. This last occurrence is vouched for not only by Mr. Coleman but by the editor of the 'Spiritualist,' who further informs us that Mrs. Guppy and her friends had been sitting before a large fire for half-an-hour before the *séance* began.

There is one trifling inconsistency we should like explained before we can accept these narratives as veracious. The invisible spirits at Mrs. Guppy's command can obviously do as much for her as did the obedient Jins for the heroes and heroines of the immortal tales that charm the youth of successive generations. If they can bring in any quantity of fruits, flowers, and ices for a dessert, they must surely be able to furnish forth her breakfast and her dinner-tables. When she wishes to travel, they save her not merely the fatigue of the journey, but the cost of cabs and railway fares. What on earth, then, has Mrs. Guppy got to do with 'household accounts'?

None can be more ready than ourselves to admit that 'ridicule is not the test of truth;' but there are some subjects—and we believe this to be one of them—as to which ridicule has a wholesome power of checking the spread of pernicious error. We have gravely discussed many of the phenomena which are adduced as evidences of 'spiritual' agency, for the purpose of showing that, like others which had previously presented themselves under different names, they are really produced by the unconscious agency of the individuals through whose 'mediumship' they are exhibited; and that their occurrence affords new and interesting exemplifications of physiological and psychological principles previously known and accepted. But when we are called on to believe in the 'levitation' of the human body, and in the power of incorporeal spirits to move heavy masses of matter without any ostensible agency, to make an accordion play tunes without the working of its bellows or its keys, and to evolve fruits and flowers, snow and ice, live lobsters and the hands of departed friends, out of the depths of their own consciousness, the question is one to be decided, not by an elaborate

elaborate discussion, but by direct appeal to *educated common sense*. Is it more likely that these marvels actually occurred as narrated, or that the witnesses to them were deceived by their own imaginings?

The history of Epidemic Delusions affords such abundant evidence as to the former prevalence of what are now universally regarded as the most absurd beliefs, that those who have 'no more than a general acquaintance with it can have no difficulty in finding parallels to that on which we have now been commenting. Not more than two centuries ago, for example, the transportation of witches through the air, that they might take part in the unholy orgies of their creed, and hold sexual commerce with evil Spirits, was not only testified in courts of justice by multitudes of witnesses, but was admitted by the culprits themselves, many of whom went to the stake with the heroism of martyrs 'witnessing a good confession' to what they honestly believed to be true. If we once begin to try such affirmations by the test of *reason*, we should perchance find ourselves obliged to acquiesce in the *dictum* of Dr. Johnson, that nothing proves the *non-existence* of witches; or, in the conclusion of one of our greatest modern logicians—who had devoted himself so exclusively to the science of Reasoning as to be unfitted for that practical appreciation of the value of Evidence, on which we depend in the judgments of every-day life—that the Spiritualist doctrine has a better claim to acceptance than any of the other thousand-and-one explanations that might be given of the phenomena.

The insight we have gained in the course of this inquiry into the gullibility, not merely of the average public, but of many of those who command its respect, either as teachers of religion or as successful scientific investigators, has made us reflect seriously as to what it is in our present system of education which constitutes the chief 'predisposing cause' of the Spiritualist epidemic. And after the best comparison we have been able to make between the mental condition of the classes who have *most* severely suffered from it, and that of the classes who have been *least* affected, we have come to the conclusion that part, at least, of this predisposition depends on *the deficiency of early scientific training*. Such training ought to include—(1), the acquirement of habits of correct *observation* of the phenomena daily taking place around us; (2), the cultivation of the power of *reasoning* upon these phenomena, so as to arrive at *general principles* by the *inductive* process; (3), the study of the method of testing the validity of such inductions by *experiment*; and (4), the *deductive* application of principles thus acquired to the *prediction*

of phenomena which can be verified by observation. We speak with knowledge when we say that a tenth of the time which is devoted, in an ordinary school curriculum, to the study of *abstractions*, will suffice for the culture (if judiciously directed) of the power of *bringing the reasoning faculties to bear on objective realities*, not only without disadvantage to his other studies, but with a manifest improvement in the pupil's power of apprehending the real meaning of abstractions which had previously perplexed him. Now it is among purely *literary* men, whose minds have seldom been exercised upon anything but abstractions, that we have witnessed most ready surrender to the seductions of Spiritualism; the distinction between objective realities and the creations of their own imaginations being often extremely ill-defined; and the testimony borne by Science to the want of trustworthiness of what they assume to be the evidence of their own senses, being scornfully repudiated. On the other hand, those who have either gone through the discipline of such an early scientific training as we have advocated, or have (like Faraday) conscientiously imposed it upon themselves at a later period, are usually the last persons to become 'possessed' by the delusions of this pseudo-science; or, if they should have perchance been attracted by them for a time, they speedily come to discern their fallacy.

Our belief that the early education of the scientific witnesses who have come forward to testify to the reality of the Physical manifestations of Spiritualism, was not such as to develop the power of *scientific discrimination*, is fully justified, as we have shown, by the thoroughly unscientific manner in which they have conducted their investigations, and reported their results. Let any who may accuse us of underrating the competency of these witnesses, merely because we have ourselves come to a foregone conclusion as to the incredibility of their statements, compare the narratives of Dr. Hare and Mr. Crookes with Professor Faraday's 'Letters on Table-turning,' and Professor Chevreul's treatise on the 'Baguette Divinatoire.\*' The latter are models of scientific inquiry on a subject rendered peculiarly difficult by the interposition of the *human* element; the former, as we have shown, are conspicuous for the absence of true scientific method.

But there is a positive as well as a negative defect in the prevailing mental organisation of our time, which shows itself in the unhealthy craving for some 'sign' that shall testify to the

\* This admirable treatise, which was not published until after the appearance of our former article, entirely confirms, by a most elaborate and conclusive series of investigations, the views we had ourselves expressed in regard to the 'Divining Rod.'

reality of the existence of disembodied spirits, while the legitimate influence of the noble lives and pregnant sayings of the great and good who have gone before us is proportionately ignored. Putting aside, as beyond the scope of our present inquiry, those questions of high Philosophy, which arise out of modern ideas of the relation between Matter and Force, Body and Spirit, we would fearlessly leave it to the good sense of any right-minded person, whether he would surrender the enduring and inspiring memories impressed on his inner soul by the counsels and example of a wise father, by the affectionate sympathy of a tender and judicious mother, by the cordial unselfishness of a generous-hearted brother, by the self-sacrificing devotion of a loving sister, or by the guileless simplicity of an innocent child, for any communications they could send him by rappings or table-tiltings. Or, to turn from these to influences of a wider scope, who that early felt his intellect expanded and his aspirations elevated by the noble thoughts put forth in the 'Discourse on the Study of Natural Philosophy,' and has endeavoured, however imperfectly, to make them the guide of his own scientific life; who that recently joined with the most eminent representatives of every department of British science in attending to their last resting-place in the national mausoleum the honoured remains of one whom all acknowledged to be their master, could wish that the spirit of a Herschel should be asked to give evidence of its continued existence by playing a tune on an accordion or rapping out a line of his 'Astronomy'?

It happened to us, within a few weeks after that mournful ceremony, to follow to the same resting-place the not less honoured remains of one whom we had come to regard with no inferior veneration, not so much for his great erudition and varied intellectual ability, as for his rare—we might almost say unprecedented—combination of unswerving justice tempered by the most gracious kindliness, of perfect unselfishness, animated by the most enlarged philanthropy. Of all the memories in our spiritual Valhalla, that of George Grote stands pre-eminent for those qualities which have commanded our respect and inspired our personal attachment. Who that has had the privilege of not only observing the public course of our modern Aristides, but of sharing in the amenities of his private life, could wish anything better for himself, than that the spirit of his departed friend should be his own constant and life-long guide; so that whenever its close may arrive, he too may be deemed worthy of the eulogy so appropriately bestowed on our great historian from the grand old words—'The just shall be held in everlasting remembrance.'

ART. II.—*Lord Byron*. Von Karl Elze. Berlin, 1870.

THE book before us, of which an English translation is in hand, is a biographical and critical essay on the noble poet and his works, containing a conscientiously accurate summary of his life and an impartial estimate of his genius. It will help to correct many erroneous notions, and it offers the opportunity which we have long coveted of analysing and (if possible) fixing the existing state of opinion regarding him, in especial relation to the living poet whose name is most frequently pronounced in rivalry.

‘Byron, indisputably the greatest poetical genius that England has produced since Shakespeare and Milton.’ Such is the commencement of the notice of Byron in the last edition of the ‘Conversations-Lexicon,’ and we have ascertained by careful inquiry that it may be accepted as the exact representative of enlightened Germany upon this as upon most other subjects of thought, speculation, or philosophy. Herr Elze says, ‘In the four head-divisions of poetry, English literature has produced four unapproached men of genius: Shakespeare in the dramatic: Milton in the reflecting, so far as this can be regarded as a peculiar species: Scott in the epic; and Byron in the lyrical—the lyrical understood in the widest sense as subjective poetry.’ The intended supremacy is clear, although the lines of demarcation are not so well defined as could be wished. Turning to the rest of the continent, whether north or south—to Russia and Poland, to France, Italy, and Spain—and consulting the highest authorities dead and living, printed and oral, we arrive at a similar conclusion. The result of our persevering researches and persistent interrogatories is everywhere throughout Europe, that Byron is deemed the greatest poet that England has produced for two centuries; and although the same unanimity may not be found across the Atlantic as to the amount of his pre-eminence, although he does not there rise so high above his competing predecessors or contemporaries as to dwarf or overshadow them, he takes precedence by common consent of all.

‘Tennyson, one of the most distinguished modern English lyrical poets.’ Such is the commencement of the notice of Mr. Tennyson in the Lexicon; and that it will startle his English admirers, we infer from its first effect upon ourselves. But tame and depreciatory as this description may sound to ears ringing with the music of his verse, it is one which would be deemed just and adequate by the bulk of the reading public of Germany, or the reading public of any country that knew him chiefly by translation. It would not satisfy the reading public

public of the United States, where his popularity is little inferior to that which he enjoys in England, but with this material difference. It is not an exclusive popularity. It coexists with the popularity of other poets whose influence is deemed antagonistic to him amongst us, especially with that of Byron; and the main object of this article is to bring the English mind into better agreement with the Anglo-American mind on this subject, or, in other words, to reclaim a befitting and appropriate pedestal for Byron without disturbing Mr. Tennyson or his school. It is the comparative, not the positive, reputation of the author of the 'Idylls' that we dispute. Let him be read and applauded as much as ever, by all means; let due meed of praise be ungrudgingly continued to those of his immediate contemporaries who cluster round him as their chief, or have adopted him as their model, or, essentially unlike as they are, have repaired to the same altar for their fire; but let the fitting honour be also vindicated and reserved for those whom they have temporarily superseded in popular estimation, far more by an accidental concurrence of opinions and events than by merits which will stand the test of time and command the judgment of posterity.

Foreign nations, in their independence of local influences, resemble and represent posterity: foreign nations have already given their verdict in the cause which we propose to bring before the home tribunal; and before appealing from that verdict on the ground that foreign nations mostly know the productions of the contrasted poets by translation, it would be well to meditate on this passage of Goethe:—

'I honour both rhythm and rhyme, by which poetry first becomes poetry, but the properly deep and radically operative—the truly developing and quickening, is that which remains of the poet, when he is translated into prose. The inward substance then remains in its purity and fullness; which, when it is absent, a dazzling exterior often deludes with the semblance of, and, when it is present, conceals.'\*

Whether a poet is translated into verse or prose, he will be appreciated in his new form in proportion to the amount of thought, reflection, palpable imagery, or, what Goethe calls 'inward substance,' embodied in the original. Grace or felicity

---

\* 'Aus meinem Leben: Dichtung und Wahrheit,' Th. 3, B. 11. 'It would be a most easy task to prove that not only the language of a large portion of every good poem, even of the most elevated character, must necessarily, except with reference to the metre, in no respect differ from that of good prose, but likewise that some of the most interesting parts of the best poems will be found to be strictly the language of prose when prose is well written.' (*Wordsworth*, Preface to the 'Lyrical Ballads.') The obvious inference is that the best poems are those which—*ceteris paribus*—will best bear literal or prose translation.

of expression, idiomatic ease, and rhythm, must almost necessarily be lost; or, if replaced, should be set down to the credit of the translator, whose language is his own. Dryden said of Shakespeare, that if his embroideries were burnt down, there would be silver at the bottom of the melting-pot. If Mr. Tennyson were submitted to such a process, the residuum would be comparatively small. His greatest beauties are confessedly untranslatable; they are too delicate, too evanescent, too bloomlike, and too slight. Speaking of the female characters in the 'Poems,' M. Taine says: 'I have translated many ideas and many styles. I will never try to translate a single one of these portraits. Every word is like a tint, curiously heightened or softened by the neighbouring tint, with all the hardihood and the success of the happiest refinement. The least alteration would spoil all.' \*

Is, then, Mr. Tennyson's English fame enough? Is his title to rank as the first English poet of his epoch conclusively established by the fact that a majority of the rising generation of both sexes within this realm insist on so regarding him? We make bold to think not. It rests on divine authority that no man is a prophet in his own country. Many a man has been a poet in his own country whose poetry had no exchangeable value, and could only live in a particular atmosphere; but that these were first-class poets, we deny. We will endeavour to illustrate this proposition before proceeding further, for all sound criticism depends upon the principles involved in it.

Our estimate of books and men are far more frequently subjective than objective. We judge them rather by our own feelings, prejudices, and passions, than by their inherent or individual qualities; and no man is a fair judge of either who does not habitually analyse his impressions as they are caught up or imbibed. Approval and disapproval are too frequently confounded with liking and disliking, with being pleased or displeased. The most cultivated intellects are not exempt from this liability to error, and should be equally on their guard against it. We once heard an eminent scholar and statesman maintain that Gray was the first of modern English poets; and in the course of the ensuing discussion it was made clear that his admiration was mainly owing to the rush of youthful associations which a recent perusal of the 'Ode to Eton College' had brought back. We strongly suspect that an analogous solution might be given of what we have heard cited as a proof of Mr. Tennyson's pathos, namely, that an ex-ambassador, of resolute will and masculine understanding, by no means given

---

\* 'Histoire de la Litterature Anglaise,' vol. iv. 434.

to the melting mood, burst into tears during the reading of 'Elaine' aloud to a party at a country house. A word, a phrase, may have loosened the floodgate of association:

'And as a fort to which beleaguers win  
Unhop'd for entrance through some friend within,  
One clear idea, center'd in the breast,  
By memory's magic lets in all the rest.'

It is one of Chamfort's aphorisms that 'what makes the success of numerous works, is the affinity between the mediocrity of the ideas of the author and the mediocrity of the ideas of the public.' Literary history so abounds with instances of adventitious and ill-deserved popularity, that Wordsworth, discontented with the limited circulation of his own poems and deriving cold comfort from (what he called) the parallel case of Milton, was wont to contend that popularity, far from being a proof of merit, implied that unworthy sacrifices must have been made and solid fame bartered for it. He forgot that most of the great writers who have now taken rank amongst the classics of their respective countries, attained their proud pre-eminence at starting or early enough to enjoy it to the full, and that genius, tremulous with the glowing and agitated atmosphere around and about it, may shine with as bright and sustained a light as if it had shrunk away from the haunts of crowded life to draw inspiration from the grotto or the lake. All we maintain is that local or temporary popularity is unsatisfactory and inconclusive as a test: that it may prove the forerunner of permanent and world-wide reputation, or it may not.

Fancy has been amused by conjecturing 'with what temper Milton surveyed the silent progress of his work, and marked its reputation stealing its way in a kind of subterranean current through fear and silence.' Its reputation did not burst forth in full brilliancy till he had been forty years in his grave, and shows what invaluable services may occasionally be rendered by retrospective criticism in compelling the complete recognition of genius. Addison devoted eighteen papers of the 'Spectator,' interspersed with numerous extracts, to 'Paradise Lost,' and thereby (in Johnson's words) 'has made Milton an universal favourite, with whom readers of every class think it necessary to be pleased.\*' With Byron the progress of fame has been reversed. He rose in splendour, and his meridian is obscured by clouds. He states that the morning after the publication of the first and

\* 'Life of Addison,' Johnson's Works, vol. vii. p. 142. In the 'Life of Milton,' vol. vi. p. 173, he had said: "'Paradise Lost' is one of the books which the reader admires and lays down, and forgets to take up again. None ever wished it longer than it is. Its perusal is a duty rather than a pleasure.'

second cantos of 'Childe Harold,' he awoke and found himself famous. These cantos would have made a name at any time, but their effect was undeniably enhanced by the choice of topics and the state of the public mind. 'The Comedy of the *Visionnaires*,' wrote Madame de Sevigné, 'delighted us much: we found it the representation of everybody; each of us has his or her visions shadowed out.' 'Childe Harold,' on his first appearance had thus much in common with this forgotten Comedy. He had a word for everything and everybody that was uppermost in men's thoughts: theories of government for the political speculator, of social progress for the moralist, classical reminiscences for the scholar, and never ending sentiment for the fair. He dealt swashing blows right and left at Whigs and Tories, aristocracy and democracy. He described the scenes on which all English eyes and interests were fixed. He lingered on the battle-fields where English laurels had been won. He sang of the Tagus and the Guadalquivir, of Talavera and Albuera. He denounced the devastating ambition of Napoleon, and mingled the denunciation with a sneer at the fools who were pouring out their blood like water to maintain their own domestic despots on their thrones. War is thus grandly personified:—

'Lo! where the Giant on the mountain stands,  
His blood-red tresses deep'ning in the sun,  
With death-shot glowing in his fiery hands,  
And eye that scorcheth all it glares upon;  
Restless it rolls, now fix'd, and now anon  
Flashing afar,—and at his iron feet  
Destruction cowers, to mark what deeds are done;  
For on this morn three potent nations meet,  
To shed before his shrine the blood he deems most sweet.

\* \* \* \* \*

'There shall they rot—Ambition's honour'd fools!  
Yes, Honour decks the turf that wraps their clay!  
Vain Sophistry! in these behold the tools,  
The broken tools, that tyrants cast away  
By myriads, when they dare to pave their way  
With human hearts—to what?—a dream alone.  
Can despots compass aught that hails their sway?  
Or call with truth one span of earth their own,  
Save that wherein at last they crumble bone by bone?'

Or take the glowing sketch of the Maid of Saragossa, in her contrasted moods of tenderness and heroism:—

'Ye who shall marvel when you hear her tale,  
Oh! had you known her in her softer hour,  
Mark'd her black eye that mocks her coal-black veil,  
Heard her light, lively tones in Lady's bower,

Seen her long locks that foil the painter's power,  
 Her fairy form, with more than female grace,  
 Scarce would you deem that Saragoza's tower  
 Beheld her smile in Danger's Gorgon face,  
 Thin the closed ranks, and lead in Glory's fearful chase.

'Her lover sinks—she sheds no ill-timed tear;  
 Her chief is slain—she fills his fatal post;  
 Her fellows flee—she checks their base career;  
 The foe retires—she heads the sallying host;  
 Who can appease like her a lover's ghost?  
 Who can avenge so well a leader's fall?  
 What maid retrieve when man's flush'd hope is lost?  
 Who hang so fiercely on the flying Gaul,  
 Foil'd by a woman's hand, before a batter'd wall?'

To idealise modern warfare, or invest it with an air of chivalry in verse, is no common feat. Addison's 'Campaign' is barely redeemed by a single image (the angel), and the author of 'Marmion,' whose Flodden Field stirs the blood like a trumpet-tone, became tame and prosaic at Waterloo. Byron makes the dragoon's sabre glitter like Arthur's sword Excalibur, and by mere dint of imagination gives to a modern fortification, bristling with cannon, the picturesqueness of a mountain side or valley crowned with rocks. This is Cintra, the natural object to be described:—

'The horrid crags, by toppling convent crown'd,  
 The cork-trees hoar that clothe the shaggy steep,  
 The mountain-moss by scorching skies imbrown'd,  
 The sunken glen, whose sunless shrubs must weep,  
 The tender azure of the unruffled deep,  
 The orange tints that gild the greenest bough,  
 The torrents that from cliff to valley leap,  
 The vine on high, the willow branch below,  
 Mix'd in one mighty scene, with varied beauty glow.'

This is Morena, the material and mechanical:—

'At every turn Morena's dusky height  
 Sustains aloft the battery's iron load;  
 And, far as mortal eye can compass sight,  
 The mountain-howitzer, the broken road,  
 The bristling palisade, the fosse o'erflow'd,  
 The station'd bands, the never-vacant watch,  
 The magazine in rocky durance stow'd,  
 The holster'd steed beneath the shed of thatch,  
 The ball-piled pyramid, the ever-blazing match.'

We shall come to descriptive passages of far higher grasp and richer colouring; but those we have just quoted illustrate a quality

in which no modern poet has rivalled the noble author. Not the least of the attractions of 'Childe Harold,' especially to the young, lay in the self-revealings, the avowal of over-indulged and yet unsuppressed passions, the premature feeling of satiety, and the deep all-pervading despondency :—

'To sit on rocks, to muse o'er flood and fell,  
To slowly trace the forest's shady scene,  
Where things that own not man's dominion dwell,  
And mortal foot hath ne'er or rarely been ;  
To climb the trackless mountain all unseen,  
With the wild flock that never needs a fold ;  
Alone o'er steeps and foaming falls to lean ;  
This is not solitude ; 'tis but to hold  
Converse with Nature's charms, and view her stores unroll'd.

'But midst the crowd, the hum, the shock of men,  
To hear, to see, to feel, and to possess,  
And roam along, the world's tired denizen,  
With none who bless us, none whom we can bless ;  
Minions of splendour shrinking from distress !  
None that, with kindred consciousness endued,  
If we were not, would seem to smile the less  
Of all that flatter'd, follow'd, sought, and sued ;  
This is to be alone ; this, this is solitude !'

When it is remembered that the writer was young, noble, and handsome—that his career, short as it had been, was involved in mystery—that the keen-edged falchion which he had unsheathed in his satire was ready at any moment to leap from the scabbard—no wonder that he speedily became the idol, in due course the spoiled child, of the fashionable world, and was by common consent enrolled amongst—

'the few  
Or many, for the number's sometimes such,  
Whom a good mien, especially if new,  
Or fame, or name, for wit, war, sense, or nonsense,  
Permits whate'er they please, or did not long since.'

Intoxicating as all this was, and intensely as it was for a time enjoyed by him despite of his morbid melancholy, he seems to have had an instinctive consciousness that he could not depend on these two cantos of 'Childe Harold' any more than on 'Hours of Idleness,' or 'English Bards and Scotch Reviewers,' for permanent reputation, and that he had in him something better that must come out. Admiration is catching and imitative. When a book has once attracted marked attention, people buy and read in self-defence, whether they derive pleasure from it or not. The odds are, that the mass of readers did not derive much

much pleasure from 'Childe Harold,' which has no story, and is mainly discursive on themes which it requires reading and reflection to follow out. But the case was widely different when he entered upon that series of tales which includes 'The Giaour,' 'The Bride of Abydos,' 'The Corsair,' 'Lara,' 'The Siege of Corinth,' and 'Parisina.' Then he was read with rapt interest throughout the length and breadth of the land; then he was scrambled for at the circulating libraries; then his applauding public comprised the indiscriminating many as well as the select and discriminating few. They concurred in this instance, and they were right in concurring. Their delight in a story and a plot was simply a return to the wholesome taste of the olden times, the golden ages of poetry, the days of Homer and the Homeridæ, the Troubadours, the Minnesingers, the Bards, who were neither more nor less than story-tellers in verse, and bound, like the lady in the 'Arabian Nights,' to be provided with an inexhaustible supply. The only wonder is, that the reign of the didactic, speculative, and descriptive poets was prolonged till it was interrupted by Scott and terminated by Byron. The taste for exciting or sensational fiction may be meretricious or carried to excess; both mental and bodily stimulants must be used with caution; but to inspire breathless and sustained interest is one of the rarest and most enviable faculties of inventive genius, and it is hard on a poet to be denied credit for the beauties he scatters by the way because we are lured along too fast and in too satisfied a state to dwell upon them; because we first read for the story, and then re-read for the imagery and thought. Nor, on re-reading either Scott's or Byron's rhymed romances, is it always to the episodes that we turn for genuine poetry. To blend passion and sentiment with rushing events and action is their charm. In 'The Giaour,' for example:—

'On—on he hasten'd, and he drew  
My gaze of wonder as he flew:  
Though like a demon of the night  
He pass'd, and vanish'd from my sight,  
His aspect and his air impress'd  
A troubled memory on my breast,  
And long upon my startled ear  
Rung his dark courser's hoofs of fear.  
He spurs his steed; he nears the steep,  
That, jutting, shadows o'er the deep;  
He winds around; he hurries by;  
The rock relieves him from mine eye;  
For well I ween unwelcome he  
Whose glance is fix'd on those that flee;

And

And not a star but shines too bright  
 On him who takes such timeless flight.  
 He wound along ; but ere he pass'd  
 One glance he snatch'd, as if his last,  
 A moment check'd his wheeling speed,  
 A moment breathed him from his steed,  
 A moment on his stirrup stood—  
 Why looks he o'er the olive wood ?

'He stood—some dread was on his face,  
 Soon Hatred settled in its place :  
 It rose not with the reddening flush  
 Of transient Anger's hasty blush,  
 But pale as marble o'er the tomb,  
 Whose ghastly whiteness aids its gloom.  
 His brow was bent, his eye was glazed ;  
 He raised his arm, and fiercely raised,  
 And sternly shook his hand on high,  
 As doubting to return or fly ;  
 Impatient of his flight delayed,  
 Here loud his raven charger neigh'd—  
 Down glanced that hand, and grasped his blade ;  
 That sound had burst his waking dream,  
 As Slumber starts at owl's scream.  
 The spur hath lanced his courser's sides ;  
 Away, away, for life he rides.  
 'Twas but an instant he restrain'd  
 That fiery barb so sternly rein'd ;  
 'Twas but a moment that he stood,  
 Then sped as if by death pursued ;  
 But in that instant o'er his soul  
 Winters of Memory seem'd to roll,  
 And gather in that drop of time  
 A life of pain, an age of crime.  
 O'er him who loves, or hates, or fears,  
 Such moment pours the grief of years :  
 What felt *he* then, at once oppress'd  
 By all that most distracts the breast ?  
 That pause, which ponder'd o'er his fate,  
 Oh, who its dreary length shall date !  
 Though in Time's record nearly nought,  
 It was Eternity to Thought !'

Although we write principally for those who are not familiar with Byron, we will give them credit for having fallen in, at some time or other in their lives, with the renowned episodes of 'He who hath bent him o'er the dead,' and 'Know'st thou the land,' but there is another (in the 'Giaour') which we have reason to believe is less known and unappreciated :—

'As

' As rising on its purple wing  
 The insect-queen of eastern spring,  
 O'er emerald meadows of Kashmeer  
 Invites the young pursuer near,  
 And leads him on from flower to flower  
 A weary chase and wasted hour,  
 Then leaves him, as it soars on high,  
 With panting heart and tearful eye :  
 So Beauty lures the full-grown child,  
 With hue as bright, and wing as wild ;  
 A chase of idle hopes and fears,  
 Begun in folly, closed in tears.  
 If won, to equal ills betray'd,  
 Woe waits the insect and the maid ;  
 A life of pain, the loss of peace,  
 From infant's play, and man's caprice :  
 The lovely toy so fiercely sought  
 Hath lost its charm by being caught,  
 For every touch that woo'd its stay  
 Hath brush'd its brightest hues away,  
 Till charm, and hue, and beauty gone,  
 'Tis left to fly or fall alone,  
 With wounded wing, or bleeding breast,  
 Ah ! where shall either victim rest ?  
 Can this with faded pinion soar  
 From rose to tulip as before ?  
 Or Beauty, blighted in an hour,  
 Find joy within her broken bower ?  
 No : gayer insects fluttering by  
 Ne'er droop the wing o'er those that die,  
 And lovelier things have mercy shown  
 To every failing but their own,  
 And every woe a tear can claim  
 Except an erring sister's shame.'

The four concluding lines are nearly as familiar as Scott's 'Oh woman in our hours of ease,' as Moore's 'Oh ever thus from childhood's hour.' But a short time since, on their being quoted in a numerous group, a lady, not long past her meridian, turned round to a friend of her own standing with the remark, 'You and I are the only persons present who know where those lines come from.' She proved right. The analogy between beauties and butterflies as objects of chase is obvious enough ; and (it may be said) the incident which gave rise to the 'Rape of the Lock' was only a piece of not over-refined gallantry. It is the exquisite workmanship and the delicate handling which give choice works of fancy their value and their charm.

What ineffably enhances the effect of Byron's narratives and

and descriptions, however rapid and condensed or however replete with thought and feeling, is the idiomatic ease of the language, its lucid clearness, and the utter absence of inversion, affectation, or obscurity. You are never obliged to dig for his meaning, never obliged to construe or translate his sentences; whilst there are modern poets who make you work as hard as if you were solving a problem or discovering an acrostic, not unfrequently reminding you of the Irishman's horse, which (he said) was very difficult to catch and when caught not worth having. Mr. Browning is one of the most incorrigible offenders in this line; and this is the more provoking, because he is a man of truly original genius. A patient diver into the depths of his rich and capacious mind has always a fair chance of bringing up pearls. Certainly the most extensively popular of Mr. Tennyson's minor poems is 'Locksley Hall,' and we can hardly err in attributing the marked preference given to it by the uninitiated, to the spirit, vivacity, and simplicity of the language, and the natural unbroken flood of thought. It reads as if it had been thrown off spontaneously and impulsively, unlike so many of his most admired poems, where the *limæ labor* may almost invariably be traced.

Byron's command of language is equally observable in every variety of metre which he attempted, and on the appearance of 'The Corsair,' critics of all parties hastened to recognise and applaud the flexibility of the heroic couplet in his hands. This poem abounds in passages of beauty and force, the only puzzle being what range of feelings is most strikingly expressed. The parting scene with Medora is replete with the pathos of tenderness:—

'She rose—she sprung—she clung to his embrace,  
Till his heart heaved beneath her hidden face,  
He dared not raise to his that deep-blue eye,  
Which downcast droop'd in tearless agony.  
Her long fair hair lay floating o'er his arms,  
In all the wildness of dishevell'd charms;  
Scarce beat that bosom where his image dwelt  
So full—that feeling seem'd almost unfelt!  
Hark—peals the thunder of the signal-gun!  
It told 'twas sunset—and he cursed that sun.  
Again—again—that form he madly press'd,  
Which mutely clasp'd, imploringly caress'd!  
And tottering to the couch his bride he bore,  
One moment gazed—as if to gaze no more:  
Felt—that for him earth held but her alone,  
Kiss'd her cold forehead—turn'd—is Conrad gone?'

What

What a startling picture of Remorse is presented by Conrad imprisoned, chained, and destined to the stake:—

‘There is a war, a chaos of the mind,  
When all its elements convulsed—combined—  
Lie dark and jarring with perturbed force,  
And gnashing with impenitent Remorse;  
That juggling fiend—who never spake before—  
But cries “I warn’d thee!” when the deed is o’er.  
No single passion, and no ruling thought  
That leaves the rest as once unseen, unsought;  
But the wild prospect when the soul reviews—  
All rushing through their thousand avenues.  
Ambition’s dreams expiring, love’s regret,  
Endanger’d glory, life itself beset;  
The joy untasted, the contempt or hate  
’Gainst those who fain would triumph in our fate;  
The hopeless past, the hasting future driven  
Too quickly on to guess if hell or heaven;  
Deeds, thoughts, and words, perhaps remember’d not  
So keenly till that hour, but ne’er forgot;  
Things light or lovely in their acted time,  
But now to stern reflection each a crime;  
The withering sense of evil unreveal’d,  
Not cankering less because the more conceal’d—  
All, in a word, from which all eyes must start,  
That opening sepulchre—the naked heart  
Bares with its buried woes, till Pride awake,  
To snatch the mirror from the soul—and break.’

The scene in which Conrad throws off his disguise is instinct with fire:—

‘Up rose the Dervise with that burst of light,  
Nor less his change of form appall’d the sight:  
Up rose that Dervise—not in saintly garb,  
But like a warrior bounding on his barb,  
Dash’d his high cap, and tore his robe away—  
Shone his mail’d breast, and flash’d his sabre’s ray!  
His close but glittering casque, and sable plume,  
More glittering eye, and black brow’s sabler gloom,  
Glared on the Moslems’ eyes some Afrit sprite,  
Whose demon death-blow left no hope for fight.  
The wild confusion, and the swarthy glow  
Of flames on high, and torches from below;  
The shriek of terror, and the mingling yell—  
For swords began to clash, and shouts to swell—  
Flung o’er that spot of earth the air of hell!

\* \* \* \* \*  
He saw their terror—from his baldric drew  
His bugle—brief the blast—but shrilly blew;

'Tis answer'd—" Well ye speed, my gallant crew !  
 Why did I doubt their quickness of career ?  
 And deem design had left me single here ?"  
 Sweeps his long arm—that sabre's whirling sway  
 Sheds fast atonement for its first delay ;  
 Completes his fury, what their fear begun,  
 And makes the many basely quail to one.  
 The cloven turbans o'er the chamber spread,  
 And scarce an arm dare rise to guard its head :  
 Even Seyd, convulsed, o'erwhelm'd with rage, surprise,  
 Retreats before him, though he still defies.  
 No craven he—and yet he dreads the blow,  
 So much Confusion magnifies his foe !'

How many a chilled, crushed, ill-mated heart will beat in  
 unison with Gulnare's, when she indignantly exclaims—

' My love stern Seyd's ! Oh—No—No—not my love—  
 Yet much this heart, that strives no more, once strove  
 To meet his passion—but it would not be.  
 I felt—I feel—love dwells with—with the free.

\* \* \* \*

Oh ! hard it is that fondness to sustain,  
 And struggle not to feel averse in vain ;  
 But harder still the heart's recoil to bear,  
 And hide from one—perhaps another there.  
 He takes the hand I give not—nor withhold—  
 Its pulse nor check'd—nor quicken'd—calmly cold :  
 And when resign'd, it drops a lifeless weight  
 From one I never loved enough to hate.  
 No warmth these lips return by his imprest,  
 And chill'd remembrance shudders o'er the rest.'

In the dedication of this poem to Moore (dated January 7th, 1814), Byron speaks of it as the last production with which he shall trespass on public patience for some years. On the 9th of April he writes : ' No more rhyme for—or rather *from*—me. I have taken my leave of that stage, and henceforth will mountebank it no longer.' That very evening a Gazette Extraordinary announced the abdication of Fontainebleau, and in the diary for the 10th we find : ' To-day I have boxed one hour—written an Ode to Napoleon Buonaparte, copied it—eaten six biscuits—drunk four bottles of soda-water, and idled away the rest of my time.' The ode was a decided failure, and although published anonymously was made the occasion of some bitter criticisms and personalities, depreciatory of both genius and character, which cut him to the quick, and on the 29th of the same month he came to the determination not only to write no more, but to purchase back the whole of his copyrights, and suppress every line he had ever written. ' For all this,' he said in the letter to

Mr. Murray enclosing a draft for the purchase-money, 'it might be as well to assign some reason. I have none to give except my own caprice, and I do not consider the circumstance of consequence enough to require explanation.' This outburst of pique and pettishness did not last longer than forty-eight hours, at the end of which he requests Mr. Murray to tear the draft and go on as usual. In the May following he set to work on 'Lara,' which was published in August, 1814, in the same volume with Rogers' 'Jacqueline.' This union of Larry and Jacquey (as he christened them) caused a good deal of merriment and surprise at the indiscretion of the graver poet in trusting his innocent heroine in the company of a returned pirate and his paramour, Kaled, a lady who did not stand upon trifles and wore small clothes. Continuations rarely answer when a work has been accepted as complete; and 'Lara,' a continuation of the 'Corsair,' formed no exception to the rule. Neither the conception nor execution can be commended; but that the rich vein which had been worked so prodigally remained unexhausted, was proved by 'The Siege of Corinth' and 'Parisina,' composed in 1815, and published, the first in January, and the second in February, 1816. The opening of 'Parisina' may be taken as a specimen of the graceful versification of the poem:—

'It is the hour when from the boughs  
 The nightingale's high note is heard;  
 It is the hour when lovers' vows  
 Seem sweet in every whisper'd word;  
 And gentle winds, and waters near,  
 Make music to the lonely ear.  
 Each flower the dews have lightly wet,  
 And in the sky the stars are met,  
 And on the wave is deeper blue,  
 And on the leaf a browner hue,  
 And in the heaven that clear obscure,  
 So softly dark, and darkly pure,  
 Which follows the decline of day,  
 As twilight melts beneath the moon away.'

The subject of this poem—an incestuous passion—would have been forgiven him, as many an admitted error or offence against propriety had been condoned in consideration of youth and genius, in the hey-day of his popularity. Then, his countrymen and countrywomen could see nothing wrong, where now they saw nothing right. The crisis had arrived: a terrible reaction had set in, and it was not the less terrible because it was irrational and indefensible. What had the literary or fashionable world to do with a domestic quarrel? What could they possibly

know about the merits of one that was only whispered about in a one-sided shape by the friends of the wife? When an attempt was made to drive Kean from the stage for a breach of the Seventh Commandment, there were law proceedings to testify against him; but where were the *pièces justificatives* when the cry was raised against Byron? The most brilliant of our essayists and historians has declared that he knew no spectacle so ridiculous as the British public in one of its periodical fits of morality. 'In general, elopements, divorces, and family quarrels pass with little notice. We read the scandal, talk about it for a day, and forget it. But once in six or seven years our virtue becomes outrageous. We cannot suffer the laws of religion and decency to be violated. We must make a stand against vice. Accordingly, some unfortunate man, in no respect more depraved than hundreds whose offences have been treated with lenity, is singled out as an expiatory sacrifice.' Byron was so singled out; and, it so happened, was singled out at a time when he was undergoing the utmost extent of humiliation to which a haughty spirit could be exposed by pecuniary embarrassment. The letters from his wife to his sister (first published in this Journal) prove that the presence of bailiffs in his house maddened him, and that he was on the verge of downright insanity for some weeks. It is astonishing that he passed unscathed (intellectually, we mean) through the fiery furnace. He not only passed through it with his genius unimpaired, but (we think) refreshed, renewed, and re-invigorated by the shock. The life he led prior to this violent disruption of all the social and domestic ties which bound him to England, was distracting and enervating; and the half-formed resolution to write no more may have been prompted by an inward consciousness that his mind wanted rest or change.

In the remarkable novel of 'Gerfaut,' the hero, a dramatic author and poet in the flood-tide of fame, suddenly finds his creative powers giving way. The brain has been overworked, and will no longer answer to the call. He is advised to try either counter-irritation or repose. He prefers counter-irritation, and fortune so far favours him that he gets involved in an intrigue with a married woman, which ends in a frightful catastrophe. The husband falls by his hand in an abnormal kind of duel, and the wife commits suicide. His share in the catastrophe, attributed to an unforeseen casualty, is unsuspected, and he departs for the East under a flourish of trumpets from the journalists, who hope that 'the glowing climes of Asia will prove a mine of new inspirations for the celebrated poet who has gloriously marked out his place at the head of our literature.' Their hopes are realised. He returns improved, though saddened; with

genius heightened and enriched, but clad in mourning garb. 'He is daily congratulated on this black chord recently added to his lyre, the vibrations of which surpass in mortal sadness the sighs of Renè and the reveries of Obermann. None are aware that his bitterly-passionate pages are written under the inspiration of a funereal vision; and that this melancholy and sombre colour, which they take for the phantasy of imagination, has been tempered with blood and brayed in the heart.' Byron's lyre was similarly re-strung, the chief difference being that the source of his renewed inspiration was patent to the world. It is impossible not to see and feel the changed and deepened hue of the despondency with which all his writings are imbued. His tone, after leaving England for the last time, is no longer that of the satiated epicure, the sufferer from fancied sorrows, but the expression of genuine sadness, of hopeless despondency, welling up from the depths of the heart; and his despairing or reproachful communings with Nature often remind us, by their sublime intensity, of Lear:—

'I tax not you, you elements, with unkindness,  
I never gave you kingdom, call'd you children,  
You owe me no subscription.'

Manfred's apostrophe is pitched in the same exalted key:—

'Ye toppling crags of ice!  
Ye avalanches, whom a breath draws down  
In mountainous o'erwhelming, come and crush me!  
I hear ye momentarily above, beneath,  
Crash with a frequent conflict; but ye pass,  
And only fall on things that still would live;  
On the young flourishing forest, or the hut  
And hamlet of the harmless villager.'

The Third and Fourth Cantos of 'Childe Harold,' immeasurably superior to the First and Second, abound in instances:—

'Thy sky is changed!—and such a change! Oh night,  
And storm, and darkness, ye are wondrous strong,  
Yet lovely in your strength, as is the light  
Of a dark eye in woman! Far along,  
From peak to peak, the rattling crags among  
Leaps the live thunder! Not from one lone cloud,  
But every mountain now hath found a tongue,  
And Jura answers, through her misty shroud,  
Back to the joyous Alps, who call to her aloud!

'And this is in the night:—Most glorious night!  
Thou wert not sent for slumber! let me be  
A sharer in thy fierce and far delight,—  
A portion of the tempest and of thee!

How the lit lake shines, a phosphoric sea,  
 And the big rain comes dancing to the earth !  
 And now again 'tis black,—and now, the glee  
 Of the loud hills shakes with its mountain-mirth,  
 As if they did rejoice o'er a young earthquake's birth.

'The "fierce and far delight" of a thunder-storm,' wrote Scott, 'is here described in verse almost as vivid as its lightnings. The live thunder "leaping among the rattling crags"—the voice of mountains, as if shouting to each other—the plashing of the big rain—the gleaming of the wide lake, lighted like a phosphoric sea—present a picture of sublime terror, yet of enjoyment, often attempted, but never so well, certainly never better, brought out in poetry.'

'Byron,' says Herr Elze, 'reaches the highest pinnacle when he succeeds in blending his individual woe with the universal ; when he pours himself out into Nature, and finds in her the occasion for recollections of and reflexions on the world's history. For this reason, the two last Cantos of "Childe Harold" belong to his richest and greatest productions.'

The fine stanzas on the 'Ocean' should be read in connection with the Storm in 'Don Juan':—

'Roll on, thou deep and dark blue Ocean—roll,  
 Ten thousand fleets sweep over thee in vain ;  
 Man marks the earth with ruin—his control  
 Stops with the shore ; upon the watery plain  
 The wrecks are all thy deed, nor doth remain  
 A shadow of man's ravage, save his own,  
 When, for a moment, like a drop of rain,  
 He sinks into thy depths with bubbling groan,  
 Without a grave, unknell'd, uncoffin'd, and unknown.

\* \* \* \* \*

'Thy shores are empires, changed in all save thee—  
 Assyria, Greece, Rome, Carthage, what are they ?  
 Thy waters wash'd them power while they were free,\*  
 And many a tyrant since ; their shores obey  
 The stranger, slave, or savage ; their decay  
 Has dried up realms to deserts :—not so thou ;—  
 Unchangeable, save to thy wild waves' play,  
 Time writes no wrinkle on thine azure brow ;  
 Such as creation's dawn beheld, thou rollest now.

\* \* \* \* \*

---

\* This is the correct reading. The older editions have—

'Thy waters wasted them while they were free,'

but upon reference to the poet's MS., we find that he wrote the line as printed in the text.

'And

‘And I have loved thee, Ocean! and my joy  
 Of youthful sports was on thy breast to be  
 Borne, like thy bubbles, onward : from a boy  
 I wanton’d with thy breakers—they to me  
 Were a delight; and if the freshening sea  
 Made them a terror—’twas a pleasing fear,  
 For I was as it were a child of thee,  
 And trusted to thy billows far and near,  
 And laid my hand upon thy mane—as I do here.’

It is from an instinctive yearning for natural grandeur and beauty, that, after an admirable comparative sketch of Voltaire and Rousseau, he breaks off:—

‘But let me quit man’s works, again to read  
 His Maker’s, spread around me.’

And no mortal man ever read them more reverently, or penetrated more deeply into their recondite meanings, or drew from them a finer moral, or breathed round them an atmosphere so charged with the electricity of thought. It is here that he may defy comparison with any writer since Wordsworth; and yet it is with Nature’s works that the Tennysonians claim to be most conversant. They disclaim the mechanical and artificial. The description of natural objects—of hills, dales, trees, flowers, meadows, and rivulets—is their *forte*; and their master’s use of these materials in his own manner is irreproachable: whether it be the Gardener’s daughter, with the shadow of the roses trembling on her waist; or the Miller’s daughter, leaning over her ‘long green box of mignonette’; or the Lady of Shalott, with ‘the leaves upon her falling light’; or the silvery cloud that lost its way in Cenone’s glen; or the hollow ocean-ridges, as seen from Locksley Hall. Nothing, generally speaking, can be more appropriately selected, or more artistically employed, than these gems of rural scenery. When they are not a picture in themselves, they form an admirable setting to one: they are always fresh and sweet, always redolent of innocence and simplicity; and it is the reader’s, not the poet’s fault, if the wicked reflection will occasionally arise:—

‘Oh, Mirth and Innocence, oh, Milk and Water,  
 Ye happy mixtures of these happy days.’

Mr. Tennyson’s Nature differs from Byron’s as a flower-piece by Van Huysum or an English landscape by Creswick differs from a Salvator Rosa or a Gaspar Poussin. In the elaborate minuteness of his finish, he may be compared to the painters of the pre-Raphaelite school, who (by a perverse abuse of power) convert their backgrounds into foregrounds, and make you look

more at the roses and apple-blossoms than at the damsels who are embowered in them. Minute details are ruinous to great effects, and the poet who rises to sublimity must always rank above the one who simply attains to prettiness. The quality of the aspiration must cast the balance, assuming the execution to be equal. When Mr. Tennyson is moralising on a bending lily or describing the ripple of the rivulet, Byron is apostrophising a crashing forest or an avalanche, or pouring out his whole mind and soul in unison with the roar of the cataract and the mountain capped with snow. He rises far the highest, and he continues longest on the wing.

We know from long experience that it is useless to refer. To produce the desired impression, or maintain the given argument, we must quote; and we shall quote three of the stanzas on Rome and the Coliseum as a specimen of the poet's power of enveloping the wrecks of vanished empires, the emblems of human vanity, with the halo which he flings around the rocks and valleys of the Alps:—

‘Oh Rome! my country! city of the soul!  
The orphans of the heart must turn to thee,  
Lone mother of dead empires! and control  
In their shut breasts their petty misery.  
What are our woes and sufferance? Come and see  
The cypress, hear the owl, and plod your way  
O'er steps of broken thrones and temples, Ye!  
Whose agonies are evils of a day—  
A world is at our feet as fragile as our clay.

\* \* \* \*

‘Arches on arches! as it were that Rome,  
Collecting the chief trophies of her line,  
Would build up all her triumphs in one dome,  
Her Coliseum stands; the moonbeams shine  
As 'twere its natural torches, for divine  
Should be the light which streams here, to illumine  
This long-explored but still exhaustless mine  
Of contemplation; and the azure gloom  
Of an Italian night, where the deep skies assume

‘Hues which have words, and speak to ye of heaven,  
Float o'er this vast and wondrous monument,  
And shadow forth its glory. There is given  
Unto the things of earth, which Time hath bent,  
A spirit's feeling, and where he hath leant  
His hand, but broke his scythe, there is a power  
And magic in the ruin'd battlement,  
For which the palace of the present hour  
Must yield its pomp, and wait till ages are its dower’

The

The Pantheon, St. Peter's, the Venus de' Medici, the Laocoon, the Gladiator—all the finest creations of architecture and sculpture that Italy can boast—are similarly invested with the brightest or deepest hues of poetry. But we can only find room for the Apollo:—

'Or view the Lord of the unerring bow,  
The God of life, and poesy, and light—  
The sun in human limbs arrayed, and brow  
All radiant from his triumph in the fight;  
The shaft hath just been shot—the arrow bright  
With an immortal's vengeance; in his eye  
And nostril beautiful disdain, and might  
And majesty, flash their full lightnings by  
Developing in that one glance the Deity.

'But in his delicate form—a dream of Love,  
Shaped by some solitary nymph, whose breast  
Long'd for a deathless lover from above,  
And madden'd in that vision—are exprest  
All that ideal beauty ever bless'd  
The mind with in its most unearthly mood,  
When each conception was a heavenly guest—  
A ray of immortality—and stood,  
Starlike, around, until they gather'd to a god!'

There is hardly any variety of poetic power that may not be illustrated from 'Don Juan.' In the opinion of all competent judges, it forms the keystone of Byron's fame. But it confirmed the worst charges that had been levelled against the spirit, tone, and tendency of his writings, and thereby strengthened the bigoted opposition against which we are at this moment struggling, to the full recognition of his genius by his countrymen. The epithet 'meanest,' attached to the name of a great philosopher, has been merged and forgotten in 'wisest,' 'brightest.' The recent attempt of an accomplished scholar and critic to gauge a great poet by his personal weaknesses has fortunately failed; but the spirit which denied Byron a place in Westminster Abbey is abroad and stirring; and it is melancholy to reflect what an amount of narrow-minded sectarian hostility was brought into mischievous activity by Mrs. Stowe. Hardly an American or foreign journal of note took her part, whilst a majority of the most influential English journals sided with her.

The run against Byron cleared the course for the new comers, but an unusually long interval elapsed before any fresh poet arose to replace him, although several candidates were started or pretenders set up.

'Sir Walter reigned before me, Moore and Campbell  
Before and after; but now grown more holy,  
The Muses upon Sion's hill must ramble  
With poets almost Clergymen, or wholly.

\* \* \* \*

Then there's my gentle Euphues; \* who they say  
Sets up for being a sort of *moral me*;  
He'll find it rather difficult some day  
To turn out both, or either, it may be.  
Some persons think that Coleridge hath the sway;  
And Wordsworth hath supporters, two or three.'

Then came Keats, the alleged victim of a critique in this  
'Review':—

'Tis strange the mind that very fiery particle  
Should let itself be snuffed out by an article.'

It was the 'literary lower empire' when (1830) Tennyson  
made his first appearance, diffident and sensitive, in the arena:—

'First Fear his hand, its skill to try,  
Amid the chords bewilder'd laid,  
And back recoil'd, he knew not why,  
Ev'n at the sound himself had made.'

His reception was not encouraging, despite of an applauding circle of young friends; and his earliest poems, if not actually withdrawn, were suffered to remain out of print for some years, by way of testing the patience of the general public, or to punish them. It was not till after the collected edition of 1842 that he began to be looked upon as the poet of the epoch, or was talked of for the laureate throne.† Except amongst the older race of critics, who remained obdurate and unappreciating, the finer qualities of his genius were then frankly recognised at once. With an inexhaustible fancy, an exquisite perception of moral and natural beauty, a well stored and highly cultivated mind, a trained eye for observation, a rich vocabulary, and a familiarity with rythmical composition acquired in a long apprenticeship to the craft, what more was wanting to entitle him to the throne?

\* Barry Cornwall (Procter).

† 'When Tennyson published his first poems, the critics spoke ill of them. He was silent: during ten years no one saw his name in a review, nor even in a catalogue. But when he appeared again before the public, his books had made their way alone and underground, and at the first bound he passed for the greatest poet of his country and his time.'—(Taine, vol. iv. p. 432.) Mr. Tennyson's first publication was in 1830; his second in 1832; his third in 1842. As the first and second comprised many of the minor poems most distinctive of his genius, it would be curious to inquire to what change in the public mind it was owing that what was coldly or slightly received in 1830 and 1832 elicited such enthusiastic applause in 1842.

He wanted spontaneity and continuity; his productions were laboured and disconnected; little interest was felt beyond that of picking out the abounding pearls and rubies at random strung; the incidents were commonplace; the reflections lay upon the surface; the groundwork was too thin for the embroidery; the foundations were not broad or strong enough for the superstructure; there was no linked sweetness long drawn out; no sustained rush or flow, although we were met at every turn by fountains or jets that sparkled in the moonlight or flashed in the sun. Why did he not carry out the fine conception of 'The Poet':—

'Dower'd with the hate of hate, the scorn of scorn,  
The love of love.

\* \* \* \* \*

And bravely furnished all abroad to fling  
The winged shafts of truth,  
To throng with stately blooms the breathing spring  
Of Hope and Youth.'

To realise a noble dream like this there must be a set purpose, an appointed goal, a comprehensive plan, an intense earnestness, a pride of genius which will not consent to be frittered away, which will not complacently accept exaggerated congratulations and applause even for the production of such charming specimens of the poetic art as 'Cenone,' 'The Miller's Daughter,' 'A Dream of Fair Women,' 'Locksley Hall,' or (a formidable rival to 'Christabel') 'The Lady of Shalott.'

Most of Byron's poems were the result of a sudden inspiration, eagerly followed out: he struck, and continued striking, whilst the iron was hot. He never, like Pope, stopped waiting for his imagination for weeks; and he compared himself to the tiger, which, when the first spring fails, withdraws into the jungle with a growl. Mr. Tennyson leaves the impression of a diametrically opposite habit. We can conceive him working doggedly against the grain, and overlaying a description, a narrative, or a train of thought, which he had better have left as it originally suggested itself or left alone altogether. 'The Palace of Art' is overdone; 'The Two Voices' is weakened by dilution: the best of the 'May Queen' is 'The Conclusion'; and there are verses in 'The Miller's Daughter' which, diffusely sentimental, ill-harmonise with such as these:—

'I loved the brimming wave that swam  
Thro' quiet meadows round the mill,  
The sleepy pool above the dam,  
The pool beneath it never still,

The

‘The meal-sacks on the whiten’d floor,  
 The dark round of the dripping wheel,  
 The very air about the door  
 Made misty with the floating meal.’

Amongst Byron’s memoranda, we find: ‘What is Poetry? The feeling of a Former world and Future.’ This is inconsistent with his general theory. In one of his letters, he says, in allusion to Wordsworth, Coleridge, and Barry Cornwall, ‘The pity of these men is that they never lived in high life nor in solitude: there is no medium for their knowledge of the busy or the still world.’ In another, after declaring a strong passion to be the poetry of life, he asks: ‘What should I have known or written, had I been a quiet, mercantile politician or a lord in waiting?’ The highest quality of the highest genius is to dispense with exact knowledge of what it paints or shadows forth, to grasp distant ages by intuition like Shakespeare, or to pierce the empyrean with the mind’s eye like Milton. But when a poet habitually mixes up his individuality with external objects, or draws largely on his own impressions and reminiscences, the tone of his poetry will necessarily be much influenced by his commerce with the world; and as Mr. Tennyson is fond of appearing in his own person in his works, he certainly lies under some disadvantage in this respect. He has never undergone the hard schooling of adversity: he has never stood with his household gods shattered round him: he has never been the mark of the public contumely. His bitterest complaint against the world is that the tourists have driven him from the Isle of Wight to Surrey: he has never (we are persuaded) been the slave of guilty passion, nor (we would fain hope) the heart-broken victim of female inconstancy. It is fortunate for him that he has not: but what his domestic life has gained in sobriety, his poetry has lost in intensity; and his voice is mild as the sucking dove’s when he communes with Nature or rails against mankind. In ‘Locksley Hall,’ for example, the desperate resolution to retire to some island in the ‘shining Orient,’ partakes a little of the bathos:—

‘There methinks would be enjoyment more than in this march of  
 mind,  
 In the steamship, in the railway, in the thoughts that shake  
 mankind.  
 There the passions cramp’d no longer shall have scope and  
 breathing-space;  
 I will take some savage woman, she shall rear my dusky race.  
 Iron-jointed, supple-sinew’d, they shall dive, and they shall run,  
 Catch the wild goat by the hair, and hurl their lances in the sun;  
Whistle

Whistle back the parrot's call, and leap the rainbows of the brooks,  
Not with blinded eyesight poring over miserable books.'

The parody is really little more than an imitation:—

'There the passions, cramp'd no longer, shall have space to breathe,  
my cousin;  
I will take some savage woman—nay, I'll take at least a dozen.  
There I'll rear my young Mulattoes, as the bondslave brats are  
reared;  
They shall dive for alligators, catch the wild goats by the beard,  
Whistle to the cockatoos, and mock the hairy-faced baboon,  
Worship mighty Mumbo Jumbo in the Mountains of the Moon.'\*

Labour'd writing is liable to incongruities which are rarely,  
if ever, found in the impulsive and spontaneous. We raise no  
ornithological objections to 'The Dying Swan'; but, assuming  
the poem to be allegorical, surely the comparison to a mighty  
people rejoicing is out of keeping and overstrained:—

'The wild swan's death-hymn took the soul  
Of that waste place with joy  
Hidden in sorrow: at first to the ear  
The warble was low, and full and clear;  
And floating about the under-sky,  
Prevailing in weakness, the coronach stole  
Sometimes afar, and sometimes anear;  
But anon her awful jubilant voice,  
With a music strange and manifold,  
Flow'd forth on a carol free and bold:  
*As when a mighty people rejoice  
With shawms, and with cymbals, and harps of gold,  
And the tumult of their acclaim is roll'd  
Through the open gates of the city afar,  
To the shepherd who watched the evening star.*  
And the creeping mosses and clambering weeds,  
And the willow-branches hoar and dank,  
And the wavy swell of the songing reeds,  
And the wave-worn horns of the echoing bank,  
And the silvery marish-flowers that throng  
The desolate creeks and pools among,  
Were flooded over with eddying song.'

In one of the fine stanzas on Waterloo and the associated  
events in the Third Canto of 'Childe Harold,' as originally  
written, were these lines:—

'Here his last flight the haughty eagle flew,  
Then tore with bloody beak the fatal plain.'

---

\* 'The Book of Ballads,' edited by Bon Gualtier,—'The Lay of the Lovelorn.'  
Reinagle  
Digitized by Google

Reinagle sketched a chained eagle grasping the earth with his talons. On hearing this, Byron wrote to a friend, 'Reinagle is a better poet and a better ornithologist than I am: eagles, and all birds of prey, attack with their talons, and not with their beaks, and I have altered the line thus:—

"Then tore with bloody talon the rent plain."

'This is, I think, a better line, besides its poetical justice.' Would Mr. Tennyson, on being assured, on the high authority of Mr. Gould, that swans never sing, be prepared to pay a similar tribute to poetical justice and truth?—or would he abide by the popular and time-honoured error?

When Byron (in 'Don Juan') describes the career of a young noble and the life of May Fair, he writes *con amore* from personal knowledge of his subject, but when Mr. Tennyson takes us, in Will Waterproof's 'Lyrical Monologue,' to the 'Cock' in Fleet Street, it is obvious that he has no acquaintance with the old waiter, and no real sympathy with the frequenters of the place. He is more at home in the drawing-room than the tavern, and the high-born coquette is admirably hit off:—

'I know you, Clara Vere de Vere,  
 You pine among your halls and towers;  
 The languid light of your proud eyes  
 Is wearied of the rolling hours.  
 In glowing health, with boundless wealth,  
 But sickening of a vague disease,  
 You know so ill to deal with Time,  
 You needs must play such pranks as these.

'Clara, Clara Vere de Vere,  
 If Time be heavy on your hands,  
 Are there no beggars at your gate,  
 Nor any poor about your lands?  
 Oh! teach the orphan-boy to read,  
 Or teach the orphan-girl to sew,  
 Pray Heaven for a human heart,  
 And let the foolish yeoman go.'

In graceful play and redundancy of fancy, Mr. Tennyson's 'Mermen' and 'Mermaid' rival Mercutio's 'Queen Mab':—

'I would be a merman bold:  
 I would sit and sing the whole of the day;  
 I would fill the sea-shells with a voice of power,  
 But at night I would roam abroad and play  
 With the mermaids in and out of the rocks,  
 Dressing their hair with the white sea-flower,  
 And holding them back by their flowing locks;

I would

I would kiss them often under the sea,  
And kiss them again till they kiss'd me—  
Laughingly, laughingly.  
And then we would wander away, away,  
To the pale-green sea-groves straight and high,  
Chasing each other merrily.'

We see no harm in these submarine gambols ; but exception might be taken, without an excess of prudishness, to 'The Sisters,' in which sensual passion is coarsely blended with the sense of injured honour and revenge :—

‘ I kiss’d his eyelids into rest :  
His ruddy cheek upon my breast.  
The wind is raging in turret and tree.  
I hated him with the hate of hell,  
But I loved his beauty passing well—  
O the earl was fair to see ! ’

We shall not differ much with Mr. Tennyson's discriminating admirers when we say that his fame might rest on 'In Memoriam,' like that of Petrarch on his 'Sonnets.' It is wonderful;—the variety of shapes in which the living and breathing spirit blends with the departed; in how many moods and tones they hold colloquy beyond the grave; what wealth of imagery is brought to gild the thronging memories; how we are made to taste the full luxury of woe! The Muse evoked by 'Il Penseroso' appears and reappears in her 'sweetest, saddest plight'; different, yet the same. There is no iteration; and the surprise of novelty enhances the melancholy pleasure till the last. Compare, for example, the manner in which the individual grief is illustrated in No. VIII., beginning 'A happy lover who has come,' with the swelling tide of feeling and lofty prophetic spirit of CV. on Christmas Eve:—

‘ Ring out the grief that saps the mind,  
For those that here we see no more ;  
Ring out the feud of rich and poor,  
Ring in redress to all mankind.

‘ Ring out a slowly dying cause,  
And ancient forms of party strife ;  
Ring in the nobler modes of life,  
With sweeter manners, purer laws.

‘ Ring out the want, the care, the sin,  
The faithless coldness of the times ;  
Ring out, ring out my mournful rhymes,  
But ring the fuller minstrel in.’

**Petrarch's 'Sonnets' do not raise him to the level of Dante,  
Tasso,**

Tasso, or Ariosto: the highest place in every branch of creative genius must be reserved for those who combine breadth and comprehensiveness of design with felicity of execution; who, in short, idealise on a grand scale; and Mr. Tennyson's historic or pre-historic fragments (like the 'Morte d'Arthur' and 'Sir Lancelot and Queen Guinevere') were compared to the studies of a painter like Leonardi da Vinci or Raphael preparing for the 'Last Supper' or 'The Transfiguration.' It was probably to justify this hopeful and flattering comparison that he chose a larger canvas, concentrated his powers, and produced his more ambitious poems, 'The Princess,' 'The Idylls of the King,' and 'The Holy Grail.'

The Princess is entitled 'A Medley'; and a medley it is of the most heterogeneous sort; in which poetry and prose, fact and fiction, science and romance, ancient and modern customs and modes of thinking, are flung together without blending; so as to resemble a Paris masquerade in which a crusader waltzes with a grisette, Henry the Fourth flirts with Marie Antoinette, and a Psyche who has lost her Cupid requests an animated milestone to escort her to the supper-room.

A beautiful Princess, betrothed to a beautiful Prince, is prematurely smitten with the now growing doctrine of woman's rights; and forswearing all thoughts of marriage, she founds a university, with female professors and 600 pupils, within whose pure precincts no male creature is to set foot under pain of death. The Prince, having obtained her royal father's permission to try his fortune in bringing her to reason, sets out with two friends, and arrives one fine evening at a rustic town close to the boundary of the liberties:—

‘There enter’d an old hostel, call’d mine host  
To council, plied him with his richest wines,  
And show’d the late-writ letters of the king.’

The host looked rather blank at first, but when, like the Governor in the 'Critic,' he was tempted with a pecuniary bribe—'A thousand pounds, there thou hast touched me nearly,'—he began to thaw:—

‘“If the king,” he said,  
“Had given us letters, was he bound to speak?  
The king would bear him out;” and at the last—  
The summer of the vine in all his veins—  
“No doubt that we might make it worth his while.  
She once had past that way; he heard her speak;  
She scared him; life! he never saw the like;  
She look’d as grand as doomsday and as grave;  
And he, he reverenced his liege-lady there;

He always made a point to post with mares ;  
 His daughter and his housemaid were the boys :  
 The land he understood for miles about  
 Was till'd by women ; all the swine were sows,  
 And all the dogs"—

But while he jested thus,  
 A thought flash'd thro' me which I clothed in act,  
 Remembering how we three presented Maid  
 Or Nymph, or Goddess, at high tide of feast,  
 In masque or pageant at my father's court,  
 We sent mine host to purchase female gear ;  
 He brought it, and himself, a sight to shake  
 The midriff of despair with laughter, help  
 To lace us up, till, each, in maiden plumes  
 We rustled : him we gave a costly bribe  
 To guerdon silence, mounted our good steeds,  
 And boldly ventured on the liberties.'

This is the plot, which is carried out in a poem of 183 pages, and which in refinement and delicacy is quite in keeping with the old host's facetiousness. Three young gentlemen—one of whom is described as 'of temper amorous, as the first of May'—are to be domesticated for an indefinite period in a female college, like Achilles in the court of Lycomedes ; and—*honi soit qui mal y pense*—let no one, remembering his adventure with Deodamia, entertain or hint a suspicion of the consequences, or the Tennysonians will set him down for a Philistine. The trio are received with an appropriate address by the Princess :

'At those high words, we conscious of ourselves,  
 Perused the matting ; then an officer  
 Rose up, and read the statutes, such as these :  
 Not for three years to correspond with home ;  
 Not for three years to cross the liberties ;  
 Not for three years to speak with any men ;  
 And many more, which hastily subscribed,  
 We enter'd on the boards : and "Now," she cried,  
 "Ye are green wood, see ye warp not. Look, our hall !  
 Our statues ! *not of those that men desire,*  
*Sleek Odalisques, or oracles of mode,*  
 Nor stunted squaws of West or East ; but she  
 That taught the Sabine how to rule, and she  
 The foundress of the Babylonian wall,  
 The Carian Artemisia strong in war,  
 The Rhodope, that built the pyramid,  
 Clelia, Cornelia, with the Palmyrene  
 That fought Aurelian, and the Roman brows  
 Of Agrippina.'

We remember the time when it was considered the depth of  
 Vol. 131.—No. 262. 2 C ill-breeding

ill-breeding and bad taste to allude to Odaliskues or Anonymas in good society, it being assumed that matrons and damsels of high degree were not aware of the existence of such a class. It is rather strange, therefore, that the Princess should be so familiar with male objects of desire. There is one line in the Princess's speech which does not sound or look like a verse :—

✓ 'Ye are green wood, see ye warp not. Look, our hall'

We have marked other lines in other places which we are equally unable to reconcile to either eye or ear as verses, *e. g.* :—

'For when the blood ran lustier in him again.'

\* \* \* \* \*

'His eyes glisten'd : she fancied, is it for me?'

\* \* \* \* \*

'Would she had drowned me in it, where'er it be.'

\* \* \* \* \*

'For agony, who was yet a living soul.'

The undergraduates (including the new arrivals) attend lectures and listen to a discourse such as Mr. John Stuart Mill might deliver on his favourite subject ; to another that smacks of Darwin and Tyndall ; to a third worthy of Lyall or Murchison. Between the lectures they converse with their fellow collegians on the topics that puzzled Milton's angels ; and one of their pleasantest evening rambles ends thus :—

'And then we turn'd, we wound  
About the cliffs, the copses, out and in,  
Hammering and clinking, chattering stony names  
Of shale and hornblende, rag and trap and tuff,  
Amygdaloid and trachyte, till the Sun  
Grew broader toward his death and fell, and all  
The rosy heights came out above the lawns.'

They transgress the boundary, and become aware that the University police includes Proctors and their attendant (in college phrase) Bulldogs.

'Scarce had I ceased when from a tamarisk near  
Two Proctors leapt upon us, crying, "Names."

\* \* \* \* \*

They haled us to the Princess where she sat  
High in the hall : above her droop'd a lamp,  
And made the single jewel on her brow  
Burn like the mystic fire on a mast-head,  
Prophet of storm : a handmaid on each side  
Bow'd toward her, combing out her long black hair  
Damp from the river ; and close behind her stood  
Eight daughters of the plough, stronger than men,

Huge

Huge women blowzed with health, and wind, and rain,  
 And labour. Each was like a Druid rock ;  
*Or like a spire of land that stands apart*  
*Cleft from the main, and wait'd about with news.'*

The avowal of the intruder's sex leads to a scene of confusion—

'And so she would have spoken, but there rose  
 A hubbub in the court of half the maids  
 Gather'd together : from the illumined hall  
 Long lanes of splendour slanted o'er a press  
 Of snowy shoulders, thick as herded ewes,  
 And rainbow robes, and gems and gemlike eyes,  
 And gold and golden heads ; they to and fro  
 Fluctuated, as flowers in storm, some red, some pale,  
 All open-mouth'd, all gazing to the light,  
 Some crying there was an army in the land,  
 And some that men were in the very walls,  
 And some they cared not ; till a clamour grew  
 As of a new-world Babel, woman-built,  
 And worse-confounded : high above them stood  
 The placid marble Muses, looking peace.'

A companion picture to this has been painted by Byron in his description of the group of young ladies amongst whom Don Juan, disguised like the Prince, was unexpectedly introduced :—

'Many and beautiful lay those around,  
 Like flowers of different hue, and clime, and root,  
 In some exotic garden sometimes found,  
 With cost, and care, and warmth induced to shoot.  
 One with her auburn tresses lightly bound,  
 And fair brows gently drooping, as the fruit  
 Nods from the tree, was slumbering with soft breath,  
 And lips apart, which show'd the pearls beneath.  
 'One with her flush'd cheek laid on her white arm,  
 And raven ringlets gather'd in dark crowd  
 Above her brow, lay dreaming soft and warm ;  
 And smiling through her dream, as through a cloud  
 The moon breaks, half unveil'd each further charm,  
 As, slightly stirring in her snowy shroud,  
 Her beauties seized the unconscious hour of night  
 All bashfully to struggle into light.  
 'This is no bull, although it sounds so ; for  
 'T was night, but there were lamps, as hath been said.  
 A third's all pallid aspect offer'd more  
 The traits of sleeping sorrow, and betray'd  
 Through the heaved breast the dream of some far shore  
 Beloved and deplored ; while slowly stray'd  
 (As night-dew, on a cypress glittering, tinges  
 The black bough) tear-drops through her eyes' dark fringes.

'A fourth as marble, statue-like and still,  
 Lay in a breathless, hush'd, and stony sleep;  
 White, cold, and pure, as looks a frozen rill,  
 Or the snow minaret on an Alpine steep.

In grouping, colouring, and expression, Byron's picture strikes us to be decidedly the finer of the two. We need hardly say that there are many graceful flights of fancy, many pleasing bits of description, many happy epithets, many fine thoughts, scattered over 'The Princess'; but the prosaic so predominates over the poetic element, that it fairly passes our comprehension how it ever passed muster as a whole. Byron certainly contrived to mix up an extraordinary variety of heterogeneous subjects in 'Don Juan'; but 'Don Juan' was composed in a mocking, laughing spirit: it runs over with wit and humour; and we should feel much obliged to any one who would point out either wit or humour in 'The Princess.'

These faults of subject and construction were carefully eschewed in 'The Idylls of the King,' published in 1859, which raised the author to the seventh heaven of popular favour. He was reported to have realised seven or eight thousand pounds by this small volume in a year. It was literally one which no library, drawing-room, or boudoir, could be without. It was the common topic of conversation amongst the higher classes; and the votaries of the dainty artificial style in composition raised shouts of triumph at its undeniable success. The malcontents were obliged to hold their tongues, or murmured aside with Old King Gama in 'The Princess':—

'These the women sang;  
 And they that know such things—I sought but peace;  
 No critic I—would call them masterpieces:  
 They mastered me.'

Fashion, we repeat, must always have a great deal to do with the popularity of any work of art that appeals to an acquired taste and affects independence of the ordinary sources of interest. Canning said that whoever pretended to prefer dry champagne to sweet, lied. This was going a little too far; but the preference is confined to a limited circle of connoisseurs with educated palates; and those who honestly prefer blank verse to rhyme are not more numerous than those who honestly prefer dry champagne to sweet. Then, again, Mr. Tennyson's tales of chivalry had none of the attractiveness of Scott's. The main narrative in each would merely have formed an episode in the genuine epic or regular romance. Although drawn from the same repository of traditional lore, and steeped in the same  
 carefully-prepared

carefully-prepared dye, 'The Idylls,' four in number, look like so many pieces of rich tapestry, worked after a pattern for separate panels. The more we study them, the more forcibly are we impressed with the fertility of the author's fancy, the purity and elevation of his general tone of mind, his insight into the best parts of human nature, his comparative ignorance of the worst, and the poverty of his inventive faculty in constructing or embellishing a fictitious narrative. Surely the adventures that befell Geraint and Enid, when she is undergoing her trials, might have been varied with advantage. Her first transgression of his strict command to precede him without speaking, is caused by the discovery of three knights in ambush. These, duly warned by her, he slays, strips of their armour binds it on their horses, each on each,

'And tied the bridle-reins of all the three  
Together, and said to her, "Drive them on  
Before you;" and she drove them thro' the waste.'

Her second transgression occurs exactly in the same manner. She gives timely notice of three lurking robbers, and identically the same action is repeated. He kills them all, binds their armour on their horses, and issues exactly the same order to the uncomplaining wife:—

'He follow'd nearer still : the pain she had  
To keep them in the wild ways of the wood,  
Two sets of three laden with jingling arms,  
Together, served a little to disedge  
The sharpness of that pain about her heart.'

He has a third encounter with an entire troop, whom he disperses with equal ease, after unhorsing their leader; and when he is supposed dying from his wounds, with his head in Enid's lap, he is suddenly roused by her sharp and bitter cry against an insult offered her by his enemy:—

'This heard Geraint, and grasping at his sword,  
(It lay beside him in the hollow shield),  
Made but a single bound, and with a sweep of it  
Shore thro' the swarthy neck, and like a ball  
The russet-bearded head roll'd on the floor.  
So died Earl Doorm by him he counted dead.'

We are content to read tales of chivalry in the same spirit as 'Don Quixote.' A knight of the Round Table (or the Table Round, as the exigencies of verse require it to be called throughout) would not be worth his salt if he could not demolish any number of assailants by his single arm, or cut off a giant's head at a sweep; but we cannot help thinking that 'Enid's' task

was beyond her strength, and that more appropriate and more original machinery might have been hit upon to place in broad relief the depth, purity, humility, and devotedness of a true woman's love, which we take to be the intended moral of 'Enid.' There is hardly an incident in the combats which may not have been suggested by 'Ivanhoe.' The lances of the assailants splinter against the breast of Geraint, as they splintered against the breast of Richard in Sherwood Forest; and Geraint sinks down, from the effects of a concealed wound, like Ivanhoe.

This is repeated in 'Elaine,' where Lancelot is similarly wounded in the *melée*, and leaves the field (like the Black Knight) without claiming the prize. But in the development of fine feeling, relieved by natural weakness, 'Elaine' is unsurpassed. It was a difficult and delicate subject,—the unresisted sway of an unrequited passion over a pure-minded girl, the slave of her imagination and her heart, who falls in love with Lancelot, as Desdemona fell in love with Othello, for the deeds he had done and the soul that beamed in his face:—

'He spoke and ceased the lily maid Elaine,  
Won by the mellow voice before she look'd,  
Lifted her eyes, and read his lineaments.  
The great and guilty love he bare the Queen,  
In battle with the love he bare his lord,  
Had marr'd his face, and mark'd it ere his time.  
Another sinning on such heights with one,  
The flower of all the west and all the world,  
Had been the sleeker for it: but in him  
His mood was often like a fiend, and rose  
And drove him into wastes and solitudes  
For agony, who was yet a living soul.  
Marr'd as he was, he seem'd the goodliest man,  
That ever among ladies ate in Hall,  
And noblest, when she lifted up her eyes.  
However marr'd, of more than twice her years,  
Seam'd with an ancient swordcut on the cheek,  
And bruised and bronzed, she lifted up her eyes  
And loved him, with that love which was her doom.'

It is the conventional thing for a damsel never to tell her love, but 'let concealment, like a worm i' the bud, feed on her damask cheek.' Elaine does tell her love, and no sullyng thought or suspicion is awakened by her burst of uncontrollable self-sacrificing tenderness:—

'Then suddenly and passionately she spoke:  
"I have gone mad. I love you: let me die."  
"Ah, sister," answer'd Lancelot, "what is this?"  
And innocently extending her white arms,

"Your love," she said, "your love—to be your wife."  
 And Lancelot answer'd, "Had I chos'n to wed,  
 I had been wedded earlier, sweet Elaine :  
 But now there never will be wife of mine."  
 "No, no," she cried, "I care not to be wife,  
 But to be with you still, to see your face,  
 To serve you, and to follow you thro' the world."

Lancelot's gentle words, soothing and flattering, but chilling and withering, prove her death-blow. She dies, after lingering through some touching pages, of that rare and (some think) apocryphal disease, a broken heart ; and her image on her bier has taken permanent rank, in painting and poetry, with that of Ophelia floating down the brook :—

'In her right hand the lily, in her left  
 The letter—all her bright hair streaming down—  
 And all the coverlid was cloth of gold  
 Drawn to her waist, and she herself in white  
 All but her face, and that clear-featured face  
 Was lovely, for she did not seem as dead  
 But fast asleep, and lay as tho' she smiled.'

The mixed emotions of Lancelot, and the Queen's jealous forebodings, equally exhibit the poet's mastery of the springs of thought and action ; and we are almost tempted to ask why is not 'Elaine' a chapter of a great drama or epic, with unity of action, a beginning, a middle, and an end ? in which all the incidents should have a bearing on the plot, and all the characters should co-operate towards one common object of interest. Why are we eternally tantalised with specimens or fragments of a never-to-be-completed whole ? Is it the power that is wanting, or the will ? or is the will ever wanting where there consciously and indisputably exists the power ?

The absence of creative genius in Mr. Tennyson is thus mentioned by M. Taine :—

'He is born a poet, that is, a builder of aerial palaces and imaginary castles. But the personal passion, and the absorbing pre-occupations which ordinarily master the hand of his peers, have failed him : he has not formed the plan of a new edifice in himself : he has built after all the others : he has simply chosen amongst the most elegant forms, the most ornate, the most exquisite. The utmost that can be said is that he has amused himself in arranging some cottage, thoroughly English and modern. If, in this recovered or renewed architecture, we look for the trace of him, we shall find it here and there in some frieze more finely sculptured, in some more delicate and graceful rosette ; but we shall not find it marked and clear, except in the purity and elevation of the moral emotion that we shall carry away on leaving his museum.'

The chronological succession of Mr. Tennyson's Arthurian poems, or parts of poems, proves that he never conceived or comprehended the Arthurian period as a whole. The 'Morte d'Arthur' was amongst his earlier productions; 'The Coming of Arthur' (including the birth and marriage) amongst his last. He seems to have picked out a legend here and there as he wanted one for a subject, without regarding its connection with the rest.

'Guinevere' is not even a short act of a drama. It consists of two scenes: one, in which the guilty Queen gives utterance to grief and repentance, mingled with bitter anger at those whose evil tongues and malice had brought her to shame; a second, in which the blameless King pardons and utters a parting blessing over her. Both are replete with pathos and tenderness, with noble thoughts, with the purest essence of Christian charity and love; and the morality that breathes through them is in parts etherealised and sublimated till it becomes poetry. Thus, in the institution of the Round Table:—

'I made them lay their hands in mine and swear  
To reverence the King, as if he were  
Their conscience, and their conscience as their King,  
To break the heathen and uphold the Christ,  
To ride abroad redressing human wrongs,  
To speak no slander, no, nor listen to it,  
To lead sweet lives in purest chastity,  
To love one maiden only, cleave to her,  
And worship her by years of noble deeds,  
Until they won her; for indeed I knew  
Of no more subtle master under heaven  
Than is the maiden passion for a maid,  
Not only to keep down the base in man,  
But teach high thought, and amiable words  
And courtliness, and the desire of fame,  
And love of truth, and all that makes a man.'

The figure of the King is Miltonic in its shadowy awe-inspiring outline as he moves off:—

'And more and more  
The moony vapour rolling round the King  
Who seem'd the phantom of a Giant in it,  
Enwound him fold by fold, and made him gray  
And grayer, till himself became as mist  
Before her, moving ghost-like to his doom.'

Poor Guinevere's best excuse for her infidelity to the blameless King was that he was too good for her:—

'I thought I could not breathe in that pure air,  
That pure serenity of perfect light,

I wanted

I wanted warmth and colour which I found  
In Lancelot.'

It is to be feared that many readers have felt like Guinevere ; and (we speak from actual observation) when dame or damsel was seen deep in 'The Idylls,' a peep over the shoulder too frequently betrayed the fact that it was 'Vivien' on whom the absorbing interest was fixed—the lissome, wanton 'Vivien,' who exerts all her pretty tricks and cajoleries to make a fool of old Merlin, and learn his charm 'of woven paces and of waving hands:—

"O Merlin, do you love me?" and again,  
"O Merlin, do you love me?" and once more,  
"Great Master, do you love me?" he was mute.  
And lissome Vivien, holding by his heel,  
Writhed toward him, slid up his knee and sat,  
Behind his ankle twined her hollow feet  
Together, curved an arm about his neck,  
Clung like a snake ; and letting her left hand  
Droop from his mighty shoulder, as a leaf,  
Made with her right a comb of pearl to part  
The lists of such a beard as youth gone out  
Had left in ashes.'

On her offering to swear that she would never use the charm against himself, he suggests—

'You might perhaps  
Essay it on some one of the Table Round,  
And all because you dream they babble of you.'

Then the vixen flares out :—

'And Vivien, frowning in true anger, said :  
"What dare the full-fed liars say of me?  
They ride abroad redressing human wrongs!  
They sit with knife in meat and wine in horn.  
They bound to holy vows of chastity!  
Were I not woman, I could tell a tale.  
But you are man, you well can understand  
The shame that cannot be explain'd for shame.  
Not one of all the drove should touch me : swine!"'

On his challenging her for proof, she retails an amount of current scandal, touching the knights and their ladye loves, confirmatory of Byron's theory that they were no better than they should be, and leading to the conclusion that the blameless King's Court had points in common with that of Charles II. :—

'And Vivien answer'd frowning wrathfully.  
"O ay, what say ye to Sir Valence, him

Whose kinsman left him watcher o'er his wife  
 And two fair babes, and went to distant lands ;  
 Was one year gone, and on returning found  
 Not two but three : there lay the reckling, one  
 But one hour old ! What said the happy sire ?  
 A seven months' babe had been a truer gift.  
 Those twelve sweet moons confused his fatherhood."

On Merlin's endeavouring to explain this away :—

"O ay," said Vivien, "overtrue a tale.  
 What say ye then to sweet Sir Sagamore,  
 That ardent man ? "to pluck the flower in season,"  
 So says the song, "I trow it is no treason."  
 O Master, shall we call him overquick  
 To crop his own sweet rose before the hour?"

Then there is a story of Sir Percivale :—

'What say ye then to fair Sir Percivale  
 And of the horrid foulness that he wrought ;  
 The saintly youth, the spotless lamb of Christ,  
 Or some black wether of St. Satan's fold ?  
 What in the precincts of the chapel yard,  
 Among the knightly brasses of the graves,  
 And by the cold Hic Jacets of the dead !'

Well chosen topics for a maid-of-honour's mouth ! She crowns  
 all by the affair of Lancelot with the Queen, which sets Merlin  
 meditating :—

'But Vivien deeming Merlin overborne  
 By instance, recommenced, and let her tongue  
 Rage like a fire among the noblest names,  
 Polluting, and imputing her whole self,  
 Defaming and defacing, till she left  
 Not even Lancelot brave, nor Galahad clean.'

She triumphs in a scene resembling that between Dido and  
 Æneas in the cave :—

'Then crying, I have made his glory mine,  
 And shrieking out, "O fool !" the harlot leapt  
 Adown the forest, and the thicket closed  
 Behind her, and the forest echo'd "fool."'

Taken all in all, it strikes us that this poem is quite as objectionable as 'Don Juan,' and that Vivien's conversation is not more edifying than Julia's letter, whilst in point of feminine delicacy she is decidedly inferior to Haidee.

There is a once popular novel, entitled 'Ellen Wareham,' by Mrs. Sullivan, in which a woman, believing her first husband (forced on her by her parents) to have died abroad, marries the

man of her heart, has a family by him, and is living happily, when the first husband unexpectedly presents himself to insist upon his conjugal rights. There is a more remarkable novel, entitled '*André*,' by Georges Sand, in which the hero, finding that his young wife, to whom he is devotedly attached, would rather be the wife of a friend, quietly starts for Switzerland and tumbles into a glacier in a way to exclude all suspicion of his having committed suicide to set her free. Mr. Tennyson's '*Enoch Arden*' is a husband of an intermediate quality between these two. On finding, on his return after a ten years' absence, that his wife has committed bigamy, he neither interferes with her domestic arrangements, nor sets her free till he dies a natural death; when, by way of consolation, she receives a deathbed message to tell her what he has suffered through her fault. His story is made the vehicle for fifty pages of blank verse. There is a fine passage (p. 32) on the island in which Enoch passes a Robinson Crusoe kind of life; there are touches of pathos and bits of poetical description interspersed; but these do not occur often enough to animate the whole, nor to smother the intrinsic doubt whether a story, which could be better told in prose, is to take rank as a standard poem on the strength of that manipulation and inversion of language which are now held to constitute blank verse.

We pass over '*Maude*,' '*The Holy Grail*,' &c., &c., as we have passed over '*Mazeppa*,' '*Cain*,' '*Marino Faliero*,' '*Sardanapalus*,' '*Werner*,' and the whole of Byron's minor poems, which would make the reputation of half-a-dozen minor poets of our time, and to spare. We call attention to salient points, to grand features. Strike, but hear; pronounce, but read. Let any real lover of fine poetry, who does not freshly remember them, read once again the Third and Fourth Cantos of '*Childe Harold*,' and then say in what class or category the author is to be placed. It is in the ordinary course of things that the popular taste should veer about: that reputation should follow reputation as star chases star across the sky; and a name with innate buoyancy, if accidentally submerged, may commonly be trusted to rise unaided to the surface and float on with the rest. But it will rise the sooner, if relieved from any adventitious weight; and the weight of prejudice by which Byron's is kept down, has grown with foreign critics into a set topic of national reproach. Goethe pointedly contrasted the dirt and rubbish flung at the noble poet with the glory he had reflected on his country, 'boundless in its splendour and incalculable in its consequences.' 'Having now,' concludes Herr Elze, 'traced the literary and political influence of Byron from the southern extremity

extremity of the earth to its north-eastern boundary, we come back to his native land, where his influence has hitherto been least, where moral and religious illiberality still stands in the way of an unprejudiced estimation.' He thinks that this 'blinding bigotry' cannot go further without producing a reaction, and he discerns, or fancies he discerns, a turning-point. There is at all events a standing-point, from which the lever which will restore the balance may be worked. There is a compact body of sound, ripe, critical opinion in this country that has never wavered, and on its sure, if slow, expansion we confidently rely.

ART. III.—1. *Report of the Commissioners of Inland Revenue on the Duties under their Management, for the Years 1856 to 1869 inclusive, with some retrospective History and complete Tables of Accounts of the Duties from their first Imposition.* Vols. I. and II. Presented to both Houses of Parliament by command of Her Majesty. 1870.

2. *The Liquor Trades. A Report to M. T. Bass, Esq., M.P., on the Capital Invested and the number of Persons employed therein.* By Professor Leone Levi, F.S.A., F.S.S. London, 1871.

3. *Intoxicating Liquors (Licensing) Bill.* 1871.

IN the year 1869 nearly nineteen millions sterling\* were raised by duties on spirits, on malt, and on that class of licences which has to do with the sale of exciseable liquors. This sum is a contribution to the public exchequer equal to nine shillings in the pound of the whole inland revenue of the country.

So enormous an amount, raised by indefinitely small driblets from every pint of beer and glass of spirits consumed, is necessarily connected with vast money interests. Maltsters, brewers, distillers, rectifiers, publicans, to say nothing of landowners and farmers and of the various ramifications of the corn trade, are all affected by this vast system of taxation—some looking upon it as an injury, some as an advantage.

Many have been the battles fought over this great field of finance. Malt Tax, Beer Duties, Hop Duties, Brewing Licences, Spirit Duties have one or other of them been from time to time attacked, defended, modified, abolished, or reimposed. Perhaps, however, no direct attack on these duties and imposts has caused so much excitement and roused so much angry feeling as the indirect attacks of which some of them were the objects in the last

\* 18,992,797*l.*, out of 42,907,050*l.*, gross Inland Revenue. The year ends in March.

session of Parliament; for there can be no doubt that Mr. Bruce's Licensing Bill was an attack on the funds of the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and if that bill had passed into law Mr. Lowe would have had to light his lucifer match and look about him for some means of supplying a deficit caused by his colleague's enactment.

It may, then, be worth while to enquire what are the interests involved in the production and consumption of fermented liquors, to sketch very briefly the processes of manufacture, and to consider, not in a partisan spirit, Mr. Bruce's plan for regulating the trade. With reference to this last division of our subject, we propose to make a few suggestions of a practical nature.

In the year 1870 there were about 2,600,000 acres of land under barley in the United Kingdom, which, if taken together, would form a block about one-sixth larger than the two counties of Norfolk and Suffolk.\* Taking the average yield at 32 bushels per acre, the total produce amounts to 83,000,000 bushels, or more than 10,000,000 quarters. In the same year, nearly 50,000,000 bushels of barley must have been converted into malt; and, although some portion was imported, we shall not be far wrong if we assume that one half, and of course far the more valuable half, of the home barley crop was used for brewing, besides what was converted into spirits by the distillers, which will amount to some 4,000,000 bushels more.†

These figures are sufficient to show that a very large proportion of the occupiers of land are interested, as growers of barley, in those manufactures which give to barley its exceptional value.‡ But if Malting, Brewing, and Distilling are subjects of interest to the farmer, far more are they so to the numerous classes actually engaged in those pursuits or deriving employment from the trades therewith connected. In a Report prepared at the instance of Mr. Bass, M.P., who is, we believe, the largest brewer in the world, Professor Leone Levi has entered very fully into the questions of the capital invested and of the number of persons employed in what are generally termed the Liquor trades. From some of his conclusions we differ; but there can be no doubt of the general accuracy of his statements, and we think that in some particulars these statements are below the truth. Statistics, even having reference to liquids, are too apt to be dry; but as the whole question has of late excited much interest, we trust that

\* 'Statistical Abstract for the United Kingdom, No. 18,' and 'Agricultural Returns of Great Britain,' presented to Parliament, 1870.

† 'Inland Revenue Report,' vol. ii. p. 11.

‡ We omit from consideration the additional fact that some 60,000 acres of hops are grown in England, the total produce of which goes to the manufacture of beer.

our readers will excuse a sparing use of them, and not consider the present an inappropriate time for a review of the whole Licensing System.

Professor Levi (p. 3) tells us, what is tolerably apparent, that 'The capital employed in any industry consists partly of what is called fixed capital, viz., land, buildings, machinery, and instruments, and partly of circulating or floating capital, viz., raw materials, wages, interest of capital, &c.'

And he estimates the total fixed capital invested in breweries at 2l. per quarter brewed, which accordingly he puts at 12,400,000l. He forgets, however, that not all the malt converted into beer was so converted for purposes of sale; that is, he rather exaggerates his quantities, not taking into account the item of home-brewed beer, and he also takes the amount actually consumed at too high a figure. This leads us to consider a curious result of improved manufacture.

There are many of us old enough to remember a solemnity which occurred periodically, in spring and in autumn, in the households of our fathers,—the great Dionysiac festival of an English home. If that home was a small and modest one, the high priest of the festival came from without. He was stout, inflammatory, red about the eyes from much watching and frequent beer, husky in the voice, and of a solemn demeanour. If in a town, he lived in the next street, was probably a cooper by trade, and was supposed to understand a deep mystery which ended in the concoction of a liquid of which the household usually expressed the unanimous hope that the next brewing might be better. If the scene of the festival was at a country house, it took place in a sanctuary called the brewhouse, with a butler for pontiff and helpers in the stable as acolytes. There the result was doubtful; sometimes, we are bound to confess, most successful, but always financially disastrous. We have heard a brewer of our acquaintance say that he would wish no more profitable trade than to be allowed to supply the squires with beer identical in quantity and quality with their own, being allowed their own materials as his only payment. But when the result was failure, no professional brewer, however unskilful, could rival the extent of that failure,—mustiness of cask,—the rank bitter produced by the yeast having sunk through the beer in the process of fermentation,—flatness, muddiness: we shrink from the description as we shudder at the retrospect. The consequence of these failures has been curious, as our readers will see. Between 1828 and 1869, a period of forty-one years, and nearly corresponding with the time during which the manufacture of beer has developed

loped from rule-of-thumb practice into science, the yearly amount of malt used in brewing for sale has increased in round numbers from 26 to 49 millions of bushels. But between the same dates, the annual amount of malt used in home brewing has decreased from  $3\frac{1}{2}$  millions to less than one million of bushels; whereas, if home brewing had held its own, nearly seven times that quantity ought to have found its way into the domestic mash-tun.

But though the learned Professor may have to some extent exaggerated the fixed capital employed in the actual manufacture, he has certainly understated the value (or what was the value till Mr. Bruce affected the market) of public and beer houses in town and country. He values country public and beer houses at 300*l.* apiece. Including leases, goodwill, fixtures, and book-debts, we believe that 500*l.* would be nearer the mark than 300*l.*; while 1500*l.*, at which he puts their value in London, is certainly not excessive. But, at his own estimate, there being about 140,000 public and beer houses in the kingdom, of which 10,000 are in the metropolis, their value would amount to 54,000,000*l.*, but, at our estimate, to eighty millions of money. To this he adds the value of distilleries, bottle factories, cork-cutters' shops, cooperages, and the minor trades attached to them, and he comes to the conclusion that the total amount of capital fixed in these trades is about 75 millions of money.

It is not our object to go into detail on this part of our subject, and we therefore confine ourselves to stating that, in Professor Levi's opinion, about half as much more has to be added for floating capital, including stocks of malt, hops, sugar, beer, wine, spirits, casks, bottles, corks, &c., the value of licenses, and the sums expended in wages; simply observing that he makes no mention of book-debts, which in these trades is usually a very heavy item of charge. We may then conclude that the sum of money invested in the various branches of the Liquor trade is not less than 120 millions sterling.

It will reasonably be asked, What are the processes on which all this vast industry is founded? to which it may be replied that they are all adaptations of natural results either of vegetable growth or of chemical combination. Few persons, except those whose business it is, know practically what malting, brewing, distilling, and rectifying mean, and we accordingly propose to give a very short and popular account of these processes.

Years ago, we accompanied an aged and somewhat credulous female through a country brewery. There were a good many dark passages and steep flights of steps, beginning and ending as such affairs generally do, just where one does not expect them.

There

There were puffs of steam and flavours of sweet-wort and gales of hop odours, and men in white aprons and red faces, and all the usual concomitants of a brewery. The visitor took everything with great composure; but as she turned to depart, a look of disappointment overspread her countenance, and she said, 'But you have not shown me where they put in the poison!' We trust our readers will not expect similar disclosures. Even in the trade of a rectifier there are, we believe, no secrets except such as yield to the analysis of the chemist; and certainly in malting, brewing, and distilling there is nothing required except skill, care, the use of two instruments—the thermometer and hydrometer, or saccharometer as brewers call it, good materials, and good water.

The first thing to be done in the process of malting is to follow Mrs. Glasse's recipe and 'buy your barley.' In this matter considerable skill and experience are required, and in some markets, knowledge of your customer as well. Some farmers habitually 'put up' their barley better than others, both in measure and in quality, and part of the maltster's business is to compare the bulk when delivered with the sample, in order that the load, if found not to be 'up to sample,' may be pitched in its sacks and not shot out upon the heap in the barley chamber. A good barley buyer will by his use of a skilful hand estimate very nearly the weight of the bulk per bushel from the small sample, generally about two handfuls, which is offered to him. His eye will tell him whether it has been cut before perfect ripeness, in which case there will be a variety in the colour of the 'pickles' or barleycorns, some being a bright, and some a dead and greyish yellow.\* He will also have to judge whether it has been heated or 'mow-burnt' while lying in the field after being cut, or in the stack after harvest. This is apt to take place when the weather is showery and when the crop of clover, which is usually sown with or after the barley, is luxuriant. In these cases the barley is apt to sprout, and as the process of malting is a process of vegetation which once done cannot be repeated, barley which has already sprouted is useless to the maltster. This tendency, common to all grain, to sprout under conditions of heat and damp, makes it a matter of risk to use foreign barley for malting, as it is liable to heat on the voyage. This risk, however, is constantly run, particularly by the bitter-beer brewers, as the very finest foreign barley is superior to almost all English

---

\* Barley, of all grain, is the most liable to ripen in a patchy manner. Being sown in the spring, and not undergoing the equalising tendency of a lowering temperature as wheat does, it is apt to grow in distinct crops, and so to come to perfection not simultaneously.

grain in bright pale yellowness, a quality essential to secure the light colour so much admired in bitter beer.

We need hardly observe that when the sample shows brown or dark grey discoloration it is evident that it has had much rain upon it either before or after cutting, and the experienced buyer will either discard it or use it at a reduced price for porter and such ale as does not require great paleness of colour.

The barley, once deposited in the chamber, and having been screened or passed over an ingeniously-devised sieve, by which all stones, lumps of clay, seeds of charlock and other weeds, very thin kernels of the grain itself, and other extraneous substances are got rid of, is ready to undergo the process of malting. As the malt duty is charged in respect of the *bulk* of the malt, it is the maltster's, or rather the brewer's interest, that as little extraneous matter and as few husky kernels as possible should come under the exciseman's measuring rod; hence great care is taken to get rid of all useless bulk before any Excise measurements take place, that is, before malting begins. Now what is malting?

Malting is a process by which grain, usually barley, has the starch of which its flour is composed converted into sugar; the object being to apply that sugar, which is nearly, but not quite, identical with cane sugar, to the manufacture of beer and spirits. This process is carried on under rules laid down by the Excise authorities; but it is only fair to observe that these rules, which admit of considerable divergence in practice, cannot be said in any way to affect injuriously the manufacture of malt. This is carried on in a building called a malt-house or malting, consisting of four parts,—the steep or cistern, the couch, the floor, and the kiln. The barley, being housed in a chamber above, is let down by a shoot into the cistern, which is rectangular in form, and made to hold a certain number of bushels. In the cistern it is mixed with water, and soaks or steeps for a given number of hours. The next step is, after drawing off the water, to throw the wet barley out of this cistern into a frame called the couch, constructed so as to admit of its sides being taken out at pleasure, by which the barley contained in it, having been further drained of its moisture, sinks down into a heap on the cement-covered floor of the malt-house. The couch, like the cistern, is rectangular, having a side of the cistern for one of its sides, the other three sides being formed by boards fitted against moveable uprights so as to be easily shifted. The grain is now fairly set a-growing; each cisternful of barley, or 'piece,' as it is called, is kept by itself, laid out on the malt-house floor in a rectangular shape, about a foot thick to begin with, and moved from time to

time lengthwise of the floor, which is somewhat in shape like the main-deck of a man-of-war, long in proportion to its breadth, and capable of holding four or five separate steepings. These steepings, arranged like asparagus-beds in a garden, are gradually moved to the other end of the malt-house, where the kiln is placed, the place of each steeping being successively taken by that which follows it, an interval of four or five days usually intervening between each time of filling the cistern with dry barley. All this time the process of vegetation has been going on, the roots chipping the husk and appearing as small white prominences at one end of the kernel. Before the sprouting barley has made its journey from one end of the floor to the other, these roots, which are constantly being distributed and prevented from interlacing by the shovel which from time to time shifts and turns the pieces of malt, attain a length of about half-an-inch, while the future stem, starting from the same end of the kernel as the roots, but in an opposite direction, makes its way under the husk towards the other end, where, were it not for the heat of the kiln, it would show a green point and develop into a blade. The maltster likes to see this rudimentary shoot proceed as far as possible along the back of the kernel; or, as he terms it, likes his malt to be 'well up in the backs,' as this is a proof that the chemical process going on within is attaining to perfection. When the growing barley has been some fourteen or fifteen days on the floor, and has gradually travelled from one end to the other, it is cast up by shovels on to a wire net-work fine enough to prevent the kernels from passing through, and dried by a fire of anthracite coal, coke, or, in some cases, charcoal, the heat of which passes through the wires. This process kills and dries the rootlets, stops the vegetation, and completes the manufacture. The malt has then only to be screened to get rid of the rootlet which is sold to feed cattle, and it is ready for use.

From malting we turn to brewing. In a previous page we observed that all the processes we are describing are adaptations of natural results; some of vegetable growth, some of chemical change. The process of malting combines both these results. In the course of germination the substance of which the barley-corn is composed has been converted into sugar. The process of brewing is strictly chemical. This sugar is dissolved in water. The solution is first boiled with hops, for flavour and in order to make it 'keep;' it is then fermented, and becomes beer. To make an account of this process intelligible, we must give a short description of the place in which it is carried on—a Brewery. As in most other manufactures, so in brewing, diverse methods are pursued

pursued in different establishments ; but we shall simply describe the leading features of an ordinary brewery, as they are to be seen in hundreds of such structures all over the country.

It is said that no dairy can be profitably conducted without the pump, 'the cow with the iron tail.' Certainly in a brewery even the first step cannot be taken without water. Water for brewing, water for cask-washing, water for refrigerating, water for the steam-engine, water for general purposes of extreme cleanliness, water everywhere is required. It is long since Thames water, except as supplied by the Water Companies, was used in the great London breweries. In most cases these gigantic establishments have, we believe, supplied themselves by means of artesian wells, which tap the underground lake which lies beneath London. In the country, such expedients are not uncommon. Sometimes unlucky accidents occur in the search for water. We remember a case where an enterprising brewer, finding his supply run short, determined on deepening his well dug in a solid rock. He bored and bored until he bored through the rock into some stratum which absorbed and did not give, or into some subterranean cavern ; the result being that all the water ran out at the bottom of his well, a misfortune which he only succeeded in averting by plugging up the hole he had spent much good coin in creating. On the quality of the water depends very much the character of the beer. We have been told by the owner of two breweries in parts of the country far distant from one another that, pursuing exactly the same process in every respect, he finds the beer brewed in one place distinctly different from the beer brewed in the other. We have met with a similar instance where the breweries are only a few miles apart. So much for the water. Now for the brewery itself and the method of brewing.

The first step in the manufacture is to prepare the malt (which we left in the malt-house) for being most efficiently and conveniently mixed with water, or, as in brewery language it is termed, 'liquor.' By such mixture its saccharine properties are disengaged, dissolved, and converted into wort. This is done by crushing the malt between steel rollers so as not entirely to disintegrate each kernel, but to break them up just enough to allow their contents to be thoroughly searched out by the hot (not boiling) water with which they are to be mixed. The malt so crushed falls into a hopper or close vessel placed above the mash-tun, and communicating with it by a closed trough or spout, so arranged that while the malt slides down this spout it meets a gush of hot water conveyed by another pipe into a common channel, in which channel the malt and hot water are made to pass through sets of revolving brushes which mix them together before they fall into the mash-

tun. This is a cylindrical vessel, proportionate to the size of the plant, that is, to the quantity of malt which the brewery uses at once. It has a false bottom perforated with small holes, and is usually fitted with an instrument called a mashing-machine, consisting of a set of revolving rakes so arranged as to stir up the whole contents of the mash-tun in the most perfect manner possible, and thus to extract from the malt, now called 'goods,' the largest possible amount of saccharine. In this mash-tun the mixture is allowed to stand for a certain time, just as tea does in a tea-pot, and the liquid part is then strained off by means of the false bottom, leaving the husks of the malt and any insoluble part of the kernel behind. This liquid extract is called a wort. The process is repeated, and any remaining saccharine is washed out of the 'goods' by fresh infusions of hot water. The grains or refuse of the malt are then thrown out of the mash-tun, to be sold to cowkeepers and farmers or otherwise disposed of as manure.

The worts being now concocted, are pumped from the under-back or vessel into which they were conducted after being strained out of the mash-tun, up into the copper, there to be mixed with the hops and boiled. Here we must leave our brewing to take care of itself while we say a word or two about hops.

There have been no small contests as to the part which hops play in the manufacture of beer. Some have been bold enough to contend that they possess no preservative qualities whatever, and only contribute flavour. The balance of opinion, however, is clearly on the side of hops being preservative; and whichever view be right, it is quite certain that their pleasant flavour has done more than anything else to make the beverage of which they are an ingredient so universally popular.

Hops, as is well known, are largely grown in the south-east of England, and even so far north as Worcestershire. Our climate, however, is *just* too cold and damp to produce the finest qualities; and although the best Farnham Town hops are equal to any foreign growth, they are exceptionally good for England, while Austria and Bavaria can supply large quantities not inferior to our most superior examples. We understand that Herr Dreher and the great Bohemian and Bavarian brewers keep their hops unpressed, loose in bins like corn, not tightly packed in bags or pockets, as we do, and that the fact of the hops never having been pressed or artificially dried adds greatly to the delicacy of their aroma. Be this as it may, the repeal of the excise on hops, bringing with it that of the Customs' duty on foreign hops, has largely increased the facilities for using hops from America, from Belgium, from Alsace, and from other parts of Germany, while the acreage of English hops does not appear to be on the decline.

The

The pleasant aromatic bitter of the hop is chiefly contained in a glutinous powder found between the scales of which the hop-blossom is composed. Hops are 'dioecious' plants, having the male and female blossoms on different plants. The hop of commerce is the female blossom, slightly dried in a kiln or hop-oast, and packed in bags or pockets for sale.

When the wort has been long enough boiled with the hops it is let down from the copper into a vessel, called a hop-back, having a perforated bottom to retain the hops now called hop-dreg and useless except for manure, the wort being strained off into an open and shallow cooler. In this vessel the old practice was to allow the wort to lie till it had been reduced from boiling-point to something not far from 55° Fahr. At present, however, an ingenious contrivance shortens this process, and nearly or altogether does away with the necessity for coolers. The wort is passed over tubes filled with cold water, and thus that which constituted the great difficulty of summer brewing, the cooling of the wort, is reduced to a certainty. As soon as the wort is sufficiently cool, it is run off into a vessel, called a fermenting tun or square; a quantity of yeast is then mixed with it, it begins to ferment, and is called a 'gyle.'

In modern breweries there are all sorts of appliances unknown to the Thrales and Whitbreads of the last century, and many of them introduced within the last few years. By these the process of fermentation is regulated from its commencement to its completion. The brewer has perfect command of his 'gyle,' so far as temperature is concerned, and by a use of cold or warm water supplied in coils of pipe running round the interior of the fermenting tun, he can check or hasten the fermentation. In foreign breweries ice is liberally used. There are also methods of removing the 'head' or creamy surface of yeast which rises to the top of the 'gyle' when fermenting. By the appearance of this 'head' the brewer knows whether his fermentation is going on well or not. Towards the end of the process the yeast has a tendency to collapse, becomes heavy, and sinks through the 'gyle.' If this happens the beer contracts a peculiar flavour, and is known to the brewer as 'yeast-bitten.' This is an event not unfrequent in small and ill-managed brewings.

There are many varieties of management while fermentation is going on, as well as after its completion—a period which depends on temperature, goodness of yeast, strength of 'gyle,' weather, and other circumstances. There are yet other variations in the manner in which the beer itself is managed. Some is vatted for weeks or months, some is sent out in the casks in which the fermentation has been completed. Bitter beer generally has

a certain quantity of fresh hops put into each cask. These act as finings and improve the flavour.

In this short and cursory statement of the processes of malting and brewing we have omitted from view the varieties of the material and the varieties of the manufactured product. Beer is either pale or dark, the dark variety being called porter or stout. The dark colour is obtained by the use—first, of a proportionate part of high-dried malt, contributing strength also, although it is usually not so productive of saccharine as paler malt; and secondly, of a small quantity of roasted malt, which is dark as coffee, and simply used to give colour and flavour. It may here be observed that from its darkness of colour porter is far more easy to adulterate than any description of pale ale.

Perhaps there is no more remarkable example of a rapid increase in demand produced by improvement in manufacture than the increase which has taken place in the demand for bitter beer. Forty years ago bitter beer was hardly known, its manufacture being almost if not wholly limited to one firm in London, and its consumption being confined to India. Now, in the town of Burton alone there are not less than twelve breweries of bitter beer, two of which are among the largest in the world, one of these two being, we believe, the very largest establishment to be found anywhere.\* The consumption of malt at Burton now amounts to something like half-a-million quarters per annum.

Nor are the London breweries less remarkable, producing annually, as one at least of them does, upwards of 500,000 barrels of beer—the barrel being 36 gallons—and using more than 3000 quarters of malt every week, or the barley produce of a couple of average parishes.

Years ago the consumption of the twelve largest London breweries used to be annually published in a broad-sheet almanac. That practice has for some reason or other been discontinued; but, if our memory serves us right, the first six firms used to show a consumption of upwards of half a million of quarters, and no doubt they could now show a consumption larger still.

These vast amounts imply vast capital and large profits. We believe, however, that there is nothing exceptional in the percentage, and that the money invested in breweries does not produce a larger return than that invested in wholesale business generally.

The processes of distilling and rectifying, employed as they are in the production of gin for England, and the single process of distilling for the whisky of Scotland and Ireland, are in their

---

\* This brewery consumed 189,000 quarters of malt last year.

outset not dissimilar from the process of brewing, though they speedily vary from it and ultimately attain a very different result.

As in brewing so in distillation, the first step is that of malting ; but while in brewing it is neither legal nor advisable to use an admixture of unmalted grain, in distilling, malt is used only in the proportion of about one part in eight. The remainder of the grain used is either barley or maize, maize having this great advantage, that distillers' 'grains,' made from a mixture of malt and maize, are worth three times as much as grains made from a mixture of malt and barley. The distiller reckons on obtaining about 150 gallons of wort or 'wash,' as he calls it, from every quarter of grain ; and this quantity, after distillation, ought to yield somewhat more than 12 gallons of proof spirit. When the grain has been thoroughly washed, fermentation begins, produced, as in beer, by the use of yeast, but continued far longer than in beer ; in fact, till the head subsides and till the yeast sinks through, after which, in a few hours, the liquid becomes clear and is drawn off for distillation. In this subsequent process the spirit which fermentation has produced is volatilized by heat, then condensed, and by ingenious methods purified from the vegetable oils with which it was mixed. In the case of gin, as we have before observed, the spirit undergoes a further process, termed rectifying, during which it is still more perfectly purified, and has a certain flavour given to it by orange-peel, raisins, juniper berries, and other aromatic substances. There is a difference in flavour between Irish and Scotch whisky, and various parts of England have their distinctive tastes as to the flavouring of gin.

We have traced the history of the principal English exciseable commodities—malt, beer, and spirits—from the raw material to the point where they leave the manufacturer's hands to go into consumption. We must now inquire how that consumption has been and is regulated. In this enquiry, as well as in much which we have already stated, we are guided by a most interesting and exhaustive Report of the Commissioners of Excise, the full title of which stands at the head of this article.

The consumption of all exciseable commodities is regulated by the imposition of licences and by Police control. The earliest licences on which a duty was imposed date from the reign of Queen Anne,\* and were stamp duties of small amount ;

---

\* The statute 5 and 6 Edw. VI., c. 25, after reciting 'the intolerable hurts and troubles to the commonwealth of this realm that daily grew and increased through the abuses and disorders had and used in common ale-houses and other houses called tippling-houses,' provided that none should keep an ale-house without a licence by two Justices of the Peace.—'Exc. R.' p. 54.

but it was not until the ninth year of George II. (1736) that a special licence was imposed on the retailers of spirits. From its amount (50*l.*) we might be led to believe that it was not an annual but a single charge; at all events it appears to have been imposed rather in the interests of sobriety than of revenue. In the next year this Act was amended, with a provision for non-payment of one of the penalties imposed, of a nature well suited to the brutality of the time. The offence being the non-payment of 10*l.*, the criminal is to be committed to the House of Correction for two months, and at 'his or her' discharge to be 'stript naked from the middle upwards, and whipt until his or her body be bloody.'

These duties appear to have existed till 1744; but from that year till after the close of the American War, public-house licences were levied varying from 2*l.* to 2*l.* 6*s.* per annum. The whole revenue from these payments never reached 90,000*l.*: they were 636,000*l.* in 1869. In 1784 a licence duty was imposed varying with the value of the premises, and that principle has been adhered to ever since.

At present the duties in England and Ireland vary from 2*l.* 4*s.* 1*d.*, if the value of the premises is under 10*l.* a year, to 11*l.* 6*d.*, if that value is 50*l.* or upwards. To this is to be added a beer retailer's licence of 1*l.* 2*s.* 0½*d.*, under 20*l.* value, and 3*l.* 6*s.* 1½*d.* above that value, and a wine licence of 2*l.* 4*s.* 1*d.* where the publican sells spirits, and 4*l.* 8*s.* 2½*d.* where he does not. In Scotland the rates are slightly higher.\* The total possible licence payment is therefore 16*l.* 10*s.* 8½*d.*, an enormous addition to the rent and rates of a publican, levied equally on the country trader who sells a barrel of beer a week, a gallon of gin a month, and a dozen of wine at the tithe feast once a year, and on the London gin-shop keeper who turns his 500*l.* a month, and makes a yearly profit of thousands.

The whole question of the imposition of licence duties on trades, whether those trades be under the Excise or otherwise, is, perhaps, rather a dull question to discuss; but it is really deserving of consideration, and we shall ask our readers to bestow a few moments upon it. There is no reason, we submit, why the trade of a publican should be almost the only trade amenable to a licence duty, and there is only an insufficient reason why that licence duty should be regulated in amount by the rent of the premises where the trade is carried on. To deal with the latter question first. The value of the premises, we shall be told, is a test of the trader's profits, and consequently of

---

\* 'Inland Revenue Report,' vol. i. pp. 58-60.

his ability to pay. In that case, the licence duty is defended as being a rough form of income-tax; but why should a publican pay a supplementary income-tax, when a haberdasher or a grocer pays none? Moreover, if this licence duty be a form, of income-tax, it is most unjust and unequal. Many publicans in the country pay the full licence duty, not clearing one hundred pounds a year. Many in London and the principal towns clear ten and twenty times as much, paying, of course, not more than their country neighbours. In the case of the country trader the licence duty may constitute an income-tax of sixteen pounds per cent. In the case of the London trader it may not be more than sixteen shillings. But even supposing the tax to be a fair one between one publican and another, it may be asked why one trade should be singled out from all others, and made to pay for permission to exist, whilst other trades are exempt. Might it not be better to impose on all traders a small amount of licence duty, rather than to single out one trade for the operations of the tax-gatherer? And would not this be a means of diminishing, if not of altogether obviating, the objections, on the score of public morality, which must always attach to the operation of Schedule D of the Income-Tax? There is a passage in the Report to which we have before referred, which is so striking that we crave leave to quote it. After stating a case where a large demolition of houses had given rise to a great number of claims for compensation, and where it was in consequence discovered that taxable incomes returned at 73,642*l.* should have been returned at 171,370*l.*, the Commissioners assert that a large deficiency in income-tax returns exists, and proceed as follows (vol. i. p. 131):—

‘Moreover, this is not confined to any particular class, trade, or profession; we find the same practice prevailing among legal practitioners, when on the abolition of their exclusive privileges in some particular court they have to make good their claims to your Lordship; we find it on all occasions of large demolition of shops and warehouses for public purposes, in every variety of trade; and we find it in great public companies and in firms whose business is almost a national concern, from its magnitude and world-wide reputation: we therefore think that we may venture to generalize upon the facts which the most recent occasion of compensation cases has furnished.

‘Those facts are, that 40 per cent. of the persons assessed had understated their incomes to such an extent that a true return would give an addition of 130 per cent. . . . Taking the account of the year 1864-5 as the most convenient for our purpose, we find that the total number of persons assessed under D was 350,512; 40 per cent. of which is 140,204. This then is the number of deficient returns or assessments . . . taking them at the average assessment of the whole kingdom,

kingdom, that is at 40 per cent. of 110,105,766*l.*, which was the sum charged under D in 1864-5 . . . . we may assume 44,042,306*l.* as the income returned in assessment 101,297,303*l.* (130 per cent. more), the income which should have been returned, and the difference 57,254,997*l.*, the sum on which duty was evaded. At the present rate of 6*d.* in the pound this would add to the revenue 1,431,374*l.*, about the produce of a penny on the whole income-tax.'

The inference of the Commissioners is,—‘ If Schedule D gave its due quota to the revenue, we might be relieved of many an unpleasant impost.’ Our inference would be, that a method of taxation in which such evasions are possible is a most objectionable method, and ought to be dispensed with on the earliest opportunity. This is not the place to do more than allude to the subject; but there seem some grounds for question whether a licence-tax imposed on all professions and trades might not be made to produce as much, at no cost of public morality, as the wonderfully prolific, but yet most demoralizing, Schedule D.

To return to our subject. Licences to sell spirits, wine and beer, are granted to publicans year by year at the discretion of the magistrates, who hold what are called Brewster Sessions in the autumn of each year for that purpose. The granting of a licence is at their complete discretion, with an appeal to Quarter Sessions. It rarely, if ever, happens that the renewal of a licence is refused to any trader except for misconduct.

Up to the year 1830 this system of licences had remained the only means by which the sale of beer by retail was permitted; but in that year a remarkable change took place. It was alleged that the sale of beer had become a monopoly in the hands of a few wealthy capitalists, and that it was most important to break down this monopoly by allowing any occupier to obtain a licence for the sale of beer by retail on premises specified in the licence, with one restriction only—that the applicant should enter into a bond, with sureties to the amount of twenty pounds, as a provision for the payment of penalties under the Act which authorised this new description of public-houses. The duty imposed on this licence was two guineas.

In 1834, the evil arising from this almost unlimited free trade in beer was such, that it was found necessary to restrict the operation of the Act of 1830. This was done by dividing these new houses into two classes, according as drinking was allowed or not allowed on the premises. For the first class of licences the applicant had to produce a certificate of good character signed by six of his neighbours, if in the country, or to prove that his house was worth ten pounds per annum if in a town. For the second class no new regulations were imposed. These restric-

tions

tions were further extended in 1840 by adding a rateable qualification for both classes; fifteen pounds per annum in London and large towns, eleven pounds per annum in smaller towns, and eight pounds per annum in the country generally.

Now we believe that by thus establishing a second description of house for the sale of fermented liquors, at least for the sale of beer, the Legislature made a most unfortunate mistake, a mistake which has had a most demoralizing effect on the people. Under the old system, all over the country, there was but one class of public-houses. Most of these houses had their regular customers, who dropped into the bar-parlour to read the country paper and hear the gossip of the village, paying their footing, and contributing to the good fellowship of the evening, but not indulging in over much drink, or giving way to disorder. Any of the younger and looser sort who wanted to drink were accommodated in the tap-room. No doubt there was merriment not too refined, no doubt there was drinking not too moderate; but there was a little check upon Hodge in the tap-room when he knew his master, Farmer Styles, was in the bar-parlour. No sooner were beer-houses established than this check ceased. The riotous boor who wanted to indulge in drink and debauchery deserted the Rose and Crown and the Blue Pig, kept by steady-going wheezy publicans who went to church on Sunday and had a reputable standing in the parish, and betook himself to the Hit-or-Miss up Squash Lane, where there was a market for unconsidered trifles, and a house of call for poachers, cadgers, and thieves; where the landlord was not too squeamish, or his daughters too retiring. The respectable ceased to act as a check on the dissolute, and irregularities which were only winked at, or not even permitted, in public houses, were encouraged and stimulated in the beer-house.

Every one who knows the country, knows that it is at the beer-house, not at the village inn, that the morals of the neighbourhood are sapped and the crimes of the district contrived. Still, beguiled by the specious notions of Free Trade, the Legislature encouraged this system for the lifetime of a generation—from 1830 till 1869.\*

In that year Sir Selwin Ibbotson carried a Bill through the House of Commons which became law in the same session, the effect of which, in the words of the Report (vol. i. p. 64), is

---

\* Mr. Calcraft, Chairman of the Select Committee on the Beer Trade in 1830, observed with reference to the Beer House Act, 'the principle of the Bill is that of free trade in beer, a principle which the Committee understood that the House had adopted, and considered it was necessary to carry to its fullest extent, in order to give full effect to the repeal of the beer duties.'

‘to give to the magistrates the same discretion’ in beer-houses as in the case of publicans, as to allowing the sale of beer or wine to be consumed on the premises; and only limiting that absolute discretion, in the case of licences for consumption off the premises, by requiring them to assign as the grounds of refusal the bad character of the applicant or of the house.’ This year a further step has been taken, and the grant of new licences and certificates is for the present suspended.

We owe our readers some apology for so detailed a history of the licensing laws; but any one who is cognizant of the battle which raged last spring between Bacchus in the country and Aquarius at the Home Office, will not be slow to admit that the matter is one of considerable public interest. The fact is that Mr. Bruce’s Bill—which, with a pettiness of spite which we do not credit to him, but to some clerk in the Home Office who copied out the draft of the Bill and put the heading, was called ‘*The Intoxicating Liquor (Licensing) Bill*’—Mr. Bruce’s Bill had the peculiar merit of rousing the publicans, to say nothing of the sinners, to a pitch of fury which nothing but alcohol in some form or other could have suggested; while the peculiar people who call themselves Total Abstiners, by no means abstained from an indulgence in that sort of aguish irritation which is produced by too intimate relations with water. For the last ten years a Liberal Government, when in office, has always promised a Bill on the subject of Public House Licences, and for the last ten years that Bill, or probably more than one Bill, has reposed in what are called the pigeon-holes of the Home Office. At length, in an evil hour, stimulated by an insane desire of notoriety, or pricked by furies in the shape of Welsh Teetotallers, the unfortunate Home Secretary, taking counsel, as is said, with some agent of a London Brewery, and with some Abstiners in his own office, put forth the ‘*Intoxicating Liquors (Licensing) Bill*.’\*

The principal provisions of this Bill are to be found in a document issued by the Home Office so soon as they heard the first mutterings of the alcoholic storm which raged round White-

---

\* So keen is the Home Office to parade this title, opprobrious in the eyes of those connected with the trade in question, that they have absolutely introduced an Interpretation Clause into the Suspensory Act to which we referred above, for the purpose of giving a bad name to an Act of Parliament which for forty-three years has maintained an unblemished reputation as the English Licensing Act, its full title being ‘An Act to regulate the granting of Licences to Keepers of Inns, Ale-houses, and Victualling-houses in England.’ This Act is now to figure as ‘*The Intoxicating Liquors (Licensing) Act, 1828.*’ We may observe that what is licensed is the man, in respect of certain premises, not the liquor, intoxicating or otherwise. The liquors in question have usually been known as ‘exciseable.’—*Report*, vol. ii. p. 53.

hall and the House of Commons for a good month last spring. It did not propose to alter in any remarkable degree the powers or jurisdiction of the magistrates, or in any way the licensing districts in which that jurisdiction was to be exercised. Licences were only to be issued by the Excise on magistrates' certificates, and to the issue of these certificates a most elaborate plan was attached; a plan which roused every brewer, distiller, publican, and beer-retailer in fierce hostility against the Bill. This plan was, shortly, as follows. There were to be two descriptions of certificates issued:—

1st. A general certificate *to the publican*, corresponding to the three licences he now takes for spirits, wine, and beer respectively.

2nd. A limited certificate, *to the beer-house keeper*, corresponding to the licence he now takes for the sale of beer, and conferring the additional privilege of retailing wine on or off the premises.

At the first licensing session after the passing of the Bill, all existing publicans and beer-house keepers were to obtain at their option one or other of these certificates, with a title to renewal, subject to good conduct, for a term of ten years from the passing of the Act, at the end of which term they were to expire.

If the magistrates at each licensing sessions decided that there were enough licences already in existence in the district for which they were asked, no new ones would be issued; if they thought new ones required, they could issue them on their own authority where there was not already more than one licence to 1500 of the population up to 3000, and one for every subsequent 1000, in towns; and where, in other districts, there was not already more than one licence for 600 inhabitants. Where the proportion of existing licences was greater in either case than this, a majority of three-fifths of the rate-payers voting could veto the licence. The licence duty, payable under the new arrangement, was nearly the same as at present; but an additional tax was to be imposed on existing houses, to be called a licence-rent, varying from 1*l.* to 6*l.*, as the rental varied from 50*l.* to 300*l.* All new certificates (or licences) were to be put up to public tender, such tender being an offer of a licence-rent of not less than 5 per cent. on the value of the premises up to 300*l.*, but not in any case less than 50*s.*, the magistrates having the power of raising this percentage at discretion. Separate tenders to be made for each certificate. All these certificates to be determinable at the end of ten years from the passing of the Bill, and so of all fresh certificates thereafter issued.

Five other kinds of certificates were to be granted, at the discretion of the magistrates, not determinable at the end of ten years.

1. Inn certificates,—for the sale of exciseable liquors to hawkers and persons taking meals in the house *only*.

2. Eating-house certificates,—like the former, but only for beer.

3. Railway refreshment-room certificates—like No. 1.

4. Refreshment-house wine certificates.

5. Theatre certificates.

The two first involved fixed licence-rents as well as excise duties. There were also regulations as to rating, as to closing hours, and as to penalties. A special force of police was to be constituted for the purpose of detecting adulteration; this force to be paid out of the licence-rents, and the balance of the licence-rents, if any, to be applied in reduction of the local rates.

No sooner had this Bill been printed, than it was evident that it had succeeded in trampling upon the moral toes of about as many active and energetic partisans as did any Bill ever presented to the country. First of all, the title was offensive; ‘Intoxicating Liquors (Licensing) Bill.’ 138,577 persons in the United Kingdom pursue the trades of publicans and beer-sellers. Why go out of the way to call the articles in which they deal by an opprobrious name? Chemists sell poisons, but a Bill which regulates their trade is not called a ‘Poisonous Compounds (Regulation) Bill.’ Call it ‘Pharmacy Bill,’ and no one is offended. The Sliding Scale enhanced the price of corn; but when Sir Robert Peel introduced his Free Trade measures, he did not give his Bill a calumnious ‘short title,’ and call it ‘Unjust Profits (Farmers’) Abolition Bill.’ But the watery influence at work in the Home Office could omit no opportunity of making the sale of beer and spirits an opprobrium and an offence. This was not prudent, nor was the Bill itself more so. First of all, it stirred up the brewers. Our readers should understand that it is the practice of country brewers to buy up public-houses and beer-houses, which they let to tenants at short notice to quit, and under agreement to deal exclusively with their landlords for beer, and usually also for spirits and wine. In London, the practice of the brewers is to advance money, often in very large sums, to the publican on the security of his lease; the spirit merchant coming next as a creditor on loan for a smaller amount; and the wine merchant doing as well as he can as a third mortgagee. There is usually no express compact to deal, and the publican is at liberty to shift the loan at his option from one

one firm to another. Practically, however, this is seldom done. It is impossible to calculate the sums advanced in this way ; but when we say that one firm of spirit dealers has half a million of money on loan in London at this moment, our readers may easily see how vast are the pecuniary interests involved. All these interests have grown up on the faith of the secure perpetuity of licences. There are millions upon millions invested by trustees and mortgagees all over the country, not as traders, but as mere lenders, which would have been swept entirely away if Mr. Bruce's Bill had passed. Nor had there been any reason to doubt but that these vested interests would in any future legislation be respected.\*

The policy of Parliament had, in past times, been far more in favour of an extension than of a contraction of the licensing system ; so that when it was announced that seven out of ten of existing public-houses and beer-houses would be closed in ten years' time, the alarm and indignation of those interested, was, as may be imagined, violent in the extreme. The value of public-house property fell one-half or two-thirds, and for purposes of sale vanished altogether. Many brewing firms which had extended their business by buying public-houses, with even very probably borrowed capital, saw ruin staring them in the face ; and the wretched publican, who had invested his all in his trade, was no better off than his landlord. Many, moreover, of the minor regulations of the Bill were distasteful in the extreme. It was felt that every advantage was to be taken, by keeping up penalties and organising a system of espionage, in order as quickly as possible to 'regulate' the publican off the face of the earth. The additional licence-rents were looked upon as extortions. But the ninth clause,—abolishing all existing licences at the end of ten years, and throwing the whole of the licences then to be granted into a sort of hotchpot of spoliation where everyone was to scramble for a privilege which, after all, would be so burdened with restrictions as hardly to be worth scrambling for,—the ninth clause was the active occasion of as wide-spread and genuine an agitation as we ever recollect. The London brewers, to a certain extent, temporized. They were better off than their country neighbours, for, at all events, they were mortgagees with a considerable margin. But the country brewers acted. They did not content themselves with letters

---

\* 'It would be very unjust to deprive those engaged in that trade of their right to sell, without giving compensation. . . . The publicans were encouraged by Parliament to make those investments, and they should not be deprived of the value of those investments.'—Speech of Mr. Secretary Bruce, in the debate on the Permissive Bill, July 13, 1870.

and petitions; but they came up to London in the flesh, and made the lives of Members of Parliament a burden to them during several weeks.

One of the peculiarities of that vast Italian palace with Gothic ornamentation, which stands between Westminster Abbey and the Thames, is this,—that it is absolutely unfitted for the minor but still practical and necessary uses for which it was designed. There is a House of Commons, but it will hold only a little more than half its members. There are Committee-rooms, but they are so constructed that it is almost impossible to hear either counsel or witnesses; and these rooms, although actually within a few yards of the House, are approached by corridors and staircases which wander deviously about the enormous building and lead to a gallery itself nearly a quarter of a mile long. Hence, unfortunate members when on Committee, if summoned to a division—as often takes place during morning sittings—have to run, weighed down by years and duties, a distance not far shorter than two sides of St. James's Square. But until the last year there was absolutely no room, even of the most modest description, in which members of Parliament could hold intercourse with their constituents. All that could be done was to sit in a row on a cold stone bench in the outer lobby—the Member in the middle place—and discuss longitudinally the question which had brought them together. Mr. Ayrton, however, whose love of torturing seems perfectly Oriental, and who, on the principle of incongruities, has been entrusted with the charge of a building constructed, to a certain extent, according to the rules of architecture which he grudges, and of art which he despises, bethought himself that he might make up for the good deed of constructing Refreshment-rooms and a News-room by providing a Chamber of Horrors for infuriated constituents to worry their representatives. Far worse for these representatives than the cold stone bench is the Deputation Room, which carries double, admitting two deputations at a time; and here, last Session, successive cohorts of country brewers, day after day and week after week, trooping up to London, dinned into the ears of their Members—the more pertinaciously when any *misfeasance* was suspected—the real and fancied grievances and losses to be entailed upon them by Home Office legislation. Nor were the publicans idle; they swarmed in Whitehall, and buzzed irritably and pertinaciously in the lobby. And they did more than this. In every public-house they placarded Mr. Bruce's evil deeds, and made it perfectly clear that no previous political pledge or prepossession would secure their votes for any candidate who was rash enough to support

support the measure they so detested. They had opportunities of putting their threats in practice. There was a contested election for Norfolk. The Liberal candidate was the eldest son of a landed gentleman who had himself represented the county. He was influential and popular. Nay, he had not pledged himself to anything more than a general support of the Government. His chances of success were good, although his predecessor had been a Conservative. But the publicans were active, and he lost his election. The case of Durham was still more remarkable. There the vacancy was caused by the sudden and premature decease of a man against whom his political opponents had not a word, and whom his many personal friends held not only in regard but affection—the late Judge-Advocate, Mr. Davison. Many reasons existed to mitigate party feeling. But the cry at Durham—a cry fatal to the Liberal candidate—was a cry of ‘Down with the Licensing Bill!’ We do not hesitate to affirm that a General Election during last spring would have made a difference of fifty seats ‘to the bad’ for a Liberal Government from this cause alone. And judging from the result of the East Surrey election, where the publicans were most unwisely challenged from the hustings by the proposer of the Liberal candidate, this cause has by no means ceased to operate.

Our readers will see that we entertain strong opinions as to the unfairness, the injustice—nay, we will say the cruelty—of Mr. Bruce’s bill. But does it follow, therefore, that nothing should be done, or do we mean to assert that the Licensing system is absolutely perfect? We say nothing of the kind. We say that owing, in great measure, to the evil working of the Beerhouse Acts, facilities for intoxication have been multiplied, and the number of licences has been increased far beyond the requirements of the population. But it is remarkable that the measure to which we have so often referred provides in no way, except indirectly, for any speedy diminution of this admitted and acknowledged evil. For ten years to come every public-house and beer-house in the kingdom would have a vested interest in its licence, and could only be closed in consequence of the misconduct of its holder. And yet the owners of public-houses, nay, and the occupiers also, are aware of this evil and ready to assist in the remedy. Nor is this remedy far to seek: in fact, the machinery of Mr. Bruce’s bill itself suggests a means of attaining it. The licence-rent therein proposed supplies that means. Let any police regulations which are necessary be enacted for the purpose of securing good order in public-houses and of detecting adulteration. But let the expenses of such police-arrangements be paid in the case of supervision of public-houses,

as it is paid in all other cases, out of the rates of the district; then take the licence-rent, and use it as a sinking fund to buy up existing interests. As proposed in the bill, it was to vary between 1*l.* and 6*l.* As there are more than 120,000 public and beer-houses in England alone, a licence-rent of 2*l.* would produce nearly 250,000*l.* a year. If this were applied in the purchase of licences, as those first offered would, of course, be in general the least valuable, it is probable that at least 5000 might be extinguished in the very first year; so that by the end of ten years, when Mr. Bruce's plan was to begin, some 30,000 licences would have been in this way put an end to. Be it also remembered that many licences lapse from various causes, and that owners of public-houses would in many cases close superfluous premises when once they were satisfied that there was no chance of fresh licences being granted in the neighbourhood. Arrangements also might easily be made for the transfer of licences to new neighbourhoods. When we consider that London increases by the size of a town not much smaller than Brighton, and larger than Southampton, every year of its existence, and has within the last ten years added 60,000 to its houses and 600,000 to its population, we may easily see that in London alone, to say nothing of other towns where the same process is going on, there would be great room for the immediate transfer of licences. At the rate, for instance, of one public-house to 500 of the population—which is only double Mr. Bruce's evidently inadequate calculation—120 licences would have to be transferred to new London districts in every year, or one every three days; so that by the end of Mr. Bruce's ten years the existing 10,000 public-houses of London would be spread over an area considerably larger and applied to a population about one-fifth more numerous. And if we assume, which we may well do, that a considerable number of licences lapse or are forfeited every year, taking these at only 5 per cent., in ten years' time we should have 6000 licences left for London with a population of some 4,000,000.

It must, however, be remembered that, short of absolute prohibition of all dealing in fermented liquors, it by no means follows that paucity of public-houses implies sobriety. Cases will be quoted, like that of Liverpool, where unlimited licensing is said to have been followed by drunkenness and disorder unequalled even in that sink of marine debauchery, and it will be argued, that when there were fewer public-houses there was less intoxication. Still, if statistics prove anything, they prove that drunkenness is partially, at all events, attributable to other causes than this. Liverpool, by a return of 1869, had one public-house or beer-house to every 166 of the population; 32·55 per

thousand

thousand were proceeded against for drunkenness. Sunderland had 1 to 149, and only 7·32 per thousand were so proceeded against. Salford had 1 to 156, with 6·21 per thousand proceeded against, and Sheffield 1 to 132, with only 5·51 per thousand proceeded against. These startling differences may be ascribed in part to differences of police activity; but when we find Manchester and Sheffield with an equal proportion of public-houses to population, and more than five times as many police cases for drunkenness in Manchester as in Sheffield (28·19 against 5·51 per thousand), it is hardly possible to believe that this is the sole reason. A story is told of an anxious wife, who wished for fewer public-houses because, as she said, there were five which her husband had to pass, and after piloting him safely by four of them he was always sure to go into the fifth. If there had been only one, it is by no means evident that he would have been coaxed past that one, for the desire of indulgence varies but to a small extent with the means of satisfying it. Craving for drink, moreover, goes hand-in-hand with misery. It is not altogether because there are so many gin-shops in St. Giles's or the New Cut that there is so much drunkenness there. Give the inhabitants fresh air, water in constant supply, less crowded lodgings, a healthier life, and much of the craving for drink will disappear. This, alas! is only partially possible. But to shut up even a large proportion of the gin-shops, while the other conditions of life remained the same, would mainly result in additional prosperity for the gin-shops which were left.

It is not, however, by any means clear that any such arrangements as we have indicated above will be necessary, in order to correct with considerable rapidity the existing superfluity of public-houses. There is a constant 'struggle for life' going on in all trades. If no new grocer's shops, no new haberdashers were allowed, and the old ones left to die out, how rapid would be the diminution, no police regulations here coming into play. By the Bank Charter Act of 1844, new Banks of Issue were for the future prohibited, leaving to all such existing banks their permission to issue notes. Since 1844 how many Banks of Issue have disappeared or become absorbed in Joint-Stock Banks? Here was a valuable privilege—that of issuing notes—confined to certain establishments, just as a valuable privilege, that of selling exciseable liquors by retail, is confined to certain other establishments. There is every inducement to keep these establishments open; but time and chance work unexpected changes, and the same causes which have decimated the old County Banks will act, with other very important special causes,

in diminishing, and that very rapidly, the number of public-houses and beer-houses.

Our limits will not allow us to discuss a question which is yearly assuming greater prominence, the question which is known by the black-white name of Permissive Prohibition—the English form of the Maine Liquor Law. Whether such an enactment would ever stand a year's trial, or whether, if standing such trial, it would not create more evils than it abolished, is matter for argument. It is said, we know not how truly, that as soon as the necessities of the United States Exchequer compelled an excise of fermented liquors, the Maine Liquor Law ceased to act. At all events, from some cause or other, it appears at present to be to a great extent inoperative. Be this as it may, it is hardly possible to suppose that any English market-town, for example, would submit to the enormous inconvenience of being unable to supply its inhabitants and its visitors with exciseable commodities, because a small proportion of the ratepayers happened to club together at a vestry meeting and prohibit the traffic. Nothing, however, would so much discredit this somewhat grotesque crusade against liquors as a prudent and well-considered measure for the regulation of public-houses. Such a measure we cannot expect from the Home Office as at present constituted. There are, however, private members on both sides of the House (we may specify Sir Selwin Ibbetson on the one side and Mr. Whitbread on the other), who are perfectly well able to devise such a measure, and we trust that the promise already held out to us by the former may be fulfilled either by himself or by some one in his place, and that next Session may not pass without a determined and a successful effort to grapple with the evils of the present Licensing Laws.

ART. IV.—*Opere Inedite di Francesco Guicciardini Illustrate da Giuseppe Canestrini, e Publicate per cura dei Conti Piero e Luigi Guicciardini. Volume Primo, Ricordi Politici e Civili. —Volume Decimo, Ricordi di Famiglia, Ricordi Autobiografici. Firenze, 1857-1867.*

THE family and autobiographical 'Ricordi' of Guicciardini vividly reproduce in some of the last living examples that singular type of merchant statesmanship which formed so important and predominant an element in mediæval Italian republican politics. They afford us the same sort of vivid conception

ception of that type as the 'Lives of the Norths' do of the race of political lawyers and men of business who rose into eminence in the perturbed politics of the last Stuart reigns in England. The alternately conflicting and mingling aristocratical and commercial elements in Italian public life had produced between them something of the like sort of mixed character as they afterwards did in England. Even in the iron age of the Sforzas and Borgias, eminently respectable private and public characters were often the growth of the mingled influences which affected public life, so long as public life was not yet stamped out in Italy. What was much more rare was anything approaching the *heroic* type in Italian public men. That type is rare indeed in all ages, but in the age and country of Machiavelli and Guicciardini, as in the succeeding age of Lord Keeper Guilford and Sir Dudley North in England, all aspirations after it, as well as all approach to it, seemed to have in a manner ceased.

Mediæval Italy, to borrow a well-abused phrase of the late Prince Metternich, had been little more than 'a geographical expression,' inferring no universal Italian rights or duties. Its several states had stood towards each other pretty much in Hobbes' state of nature, with fear, force, and fraud for sole effective regulators. The ordinary habitual relations of the mediæval Italian States to each other had been those of wavering alliance, or of covert or overt hostility. All the unbridled excesses of outrageous violence and of shameless perfidy which larger and more powerful realms permitted themselves, whenever interest prompted, against each other, were multiplied on the narrow area of the city commonwealths and petty principalities of mediæval Italy. Consequently the aggregate of revolting outrages against all laws of peace and war appear to affix a deeper stigma on Italian than on any other politics in those ages. It may be doubted how far that deeper stigma is relatively merited; it is at all events certain that Italian individual and social life and morals cannot fairly be judged of from the public or private crimes of the Visconti, Sforzas, or Borgias.

The sixteenth century in Italy was an age of transition from spirited if ill-organised autonomy to a dull level of spiritual and secular despotism. It presents the spectacle of a country foremost in the opening of the march of modern civilisation suddenly finding itself the helpless object of rival rapacity to ruder but stronger states—its leading men, whose minds and characters had been formed in the liberal school of world-wide commerce and uncontrolled self-government—suddenly compelled to transfer their political activity, if they were still bent on exerting it, from the

councils of their country to the courts and cabinets of overbearing native or foreign princes.

The habit of writing 'Ricordi'—for which the English word 'Records' is not an exact equivalent—of noting down, not for immediate nor even ultimate publication, whatever, from day to day, seemed noteworthy in private or public, domestic or foreign transactions, was practised more methodically and systematically by the Italian public men of the fourteenth, fifteenth, and the first half of the sixteenth century than perhaps it has been by those of any other age or country. It was a habit which came, as it were, naturally to those merchant-statesmen. These so-called 'Ricordi' had no more literary design or pretension about them than any of the other business entries in their day-books or ledgers, amongst which, indeed, they were very commonly interspersed and intercalated, being made, like the rest, for use and not for show, and forming, in fact, as observed by the editor of the volumes before us, a civil and domestic autobiographic chronicle, often begemmed with moral maxims and sentences, and Scripture texts. Some of these 'Ricordi,' including those of Lorenzo the Magnificent, and including, in their integrity, those before us, have first seen the light in these or in recent times. We are well disposed to believe the averment of the present editor that none of them approach those of Guicciardini for depth of intellectual insight not only into public affairs, but equally into the inmost recesses of the human heart, which is, after all, the prime mover of every earthly event and issue.

'The Italian historians,' says Disraeli the Elder, in his 'Curiosities of Literature,' 'have proved themselves to be an extraordinary race, for they have devoted their days to the composition of historical works, which they were certain could not see the light during their lives.'

If that indefatigable literary chiffonier had had before him these ten volumes of remains of the most eminent of Italian historians, he might have found additional reason for ascribing an extraordinary character to that race of men which had in Guicciardini its most memorable representative. No part of the biographical or autobiographical matter contained in these volumes was designed, in the ordinary sense of this publishing age, to see the light at all, but simply to be preserved in the family archives of the Casa Guicciardini for the private instruction of the descendants of that house. 'As I shall in these family memorials,' says their author, 'tell the truth, I pray our descendants, into whose hands they will come, not to show them to any one out of the family, but keep them for their own use, since I have written them solely for that end, as one

who desires two things more than any other things in the world, —first, the perpetual exaltation of this city [Florence] and of its liberty; secondly, the glory of our house, not during my own life only, but in perpetuity. May it please God to preserve and increase both one and the other!’

The present representatives of the house of Guicciardini, by whom these volumes are published, slightly apologise for revealing family secrets which had been kept for three centuries. Truly we know not any party in this nineteenth century, unless that of the Temporal Papacy, likely to feel scandalized at the publication of these *imperii arcana* of a bygone age. There is, indeed, enough in this long-deferred posthumous publication of the confidential communications of the favoured civil and military minister of two successive Popes to claim a place in the papal index, if the present conductors of that organ of ecclesiastical criticism can summon up courage to put it there. If they do, they will only give additional prominence to the fact that one of the most trusted and trustworthy servants of the Papacy, at the greatest ecclesiastical crisis, till that of our own times, confessed that, but for his personal position, he should have heartily wished Martin Luther all success against the ‘*scellerati preti*.’

Guicciardini opens his ‘*Ricordi di Famiglia*’ by saying that he had been able to acquire no certain knowledge as to the origin of his family, but that the first notice he finds of it in Florence is as taking part in the exercise of the magistracy called the *priorato* about A.D. 1300. ‘Our house,’ he says, ‘remained for a good while, that is to say, about eighty years afterwards, in a middling condition, and might be described, according to the common way of speaking, as *buoni popolani*. From that time it has grown so much in wealth and station, that it has become, and still continues at this day, one of the first families of the city, and has shared abundantly in all its honours and dignities.’

The first of his ancestors named by Guicciardini, Piero, assumed the rank of knighthood—by whom or on what account conferred his descendant could not tell. He acquired wealth in the management of large estates of a Neapolitan noble in Tuscany, and acquired, moreover, in the sharp eyes of the Church the character of an usurer, since his son Luigi, on the death of his father, was compelled, for fear his body should be seized at the suit of the bishop, to come to a composition with that holy inquisitor, and to tax himself on a conjectural estimate of the so-called usurious gains of the deceased; which done, he was fully assured by an Augustinian friar—a *grandis-*

*simo teologo*—that the satisfaction thus given was sufficient *etiam in foro conscientie*. Luigi became afterwards a very rich man, arrived at high dignities, and was several times employed in important embassies to the Pope, to Giovanni Galeazzo Duke of Milan, and to Louis Duke of Anjou, when he entered Italy to contest the crown of Naples with King Charles of Arragon. He was three times Gonfalonere of Justice, and in that capacity would seem to have cut rather a poor figure, on occasion of a serious popular tumult, in the course of which the Gonfalonere got driven from the palace or Town Hall—the seat of municipal administration—ousted from his office, and his house demolished—the invariable accompaniment of popular triumph over parties in power in Italy of the olden time—(revived under citizen Assi's Italianizing auspices against the house of M. Thiers) as torture was the invariable accompaniment of the first proceedings against any one accused of political crimes or misdemeanours. Besides being bullied (and afterwards *invested with knighthood*) by the populace and their leaders, he was continually getting surcharged in his taxes by the popular magistrates, and the greatest and most constant trouble of his life was in seeking redress from these fiscal surcharges. He died, says his descendant, to the great concern of the people, who seem to have found him a good easy executive functionary, a diplomatist disposed for peace at all price, and fiscally a good milch cow; a man of good property, on whom the municipal democracy found it convenient to throw more than his share of the public burthens.

It is a noticeable fact of family character or fortune that, wise or foolish, magnanimous or pusillanimous, well or less well governed in life and conversation, the Guicciardini family seem to have possessed the feline faculty of always falling upon their feet, and always adding something to that advance in substance and station which their famous descendant states them to have continued making down to his own time. Piero, second son of the last-named ancestor, had been, from his youth till the death of his father, disobedient and devious in his courses to such a degree that his father always prophesied he would end badly, and, having been robbed of certain sums of money and articles of value in his house, never could be persuaded, while the culprit remained undetected, that the culprit was not his son Piero. This scapegrace of the family was nearly becoming its scapegoat; since Piero, having set out against his father's will, in the suite of some embassy, was captured on his route by the free company of a certain Otto Buonterzo of Parma, and, while the others were suffered to proceed on their journey, was alone detained for

ransom, on the strength of his father's reputation for riches. The ransom of Piero was set at so high a rate that his father delayed paying it, hoping that, in course of time, a less sum would be exacted. However, in his last illness he could think of no one but his son Piero, and gave orders that he should be redeemed from captivity forthwith, at the cost of three thousand ducats. Returning to Florence, Piero's next achievement within the year was a mercantile failure, mainly owing, says our historian, to his being a 'magnificent man,' and never looking into his accounts. Adversity, however, brought out the bright side of his nature, for, in his arrangements with his creditors, he stuck firmly to paying twenty shillings in the pound [*solidi venti per lira*], only asking for time, and at the time agreed upon actually paid up the full amount by means of sales of his property. This high and generous nature of his recommended him to the friendship of men of rank and distinction, and he attained all the public honours and dignities his city had to give.

'Thus aft a ragged cowto's been known  
To mak' a noble aiver.'

The formerly suspected domestic thief was notably free from all taint of pecuniary rapacity or corruption; and if he had not 'put off the old man' altogether, his failings were in a different direction. He was rather high and rather short-tempered, and even in his old age, when he got angry with any one, was quite capable of proceeding from words to blows. Even in his old age he was *vecchio lussurioso e feminacciolo forte*, leaving lots of love letters, exchanged with the last mistress of his mature affections.

Another hereditary quality in the Guicciardini family may be considered as connected with that feline faculty, already noticed in them, of always falling upon their feet; the quality, namely, which we find, modified by individual differences, in our historian's paternal grandfather, his father, and himself, of marked aversion from extreme counsels and extreme courses. In the grandfather, Jacopo Guicciardini, born in 1422, this quality shows itself in very amiable as well as statesmanlike shape.

'Among his other properties,' says his grandson, the historian, 'he had that of saying freely what he thought; for which Lorenzo (de' Medici) sometimes manifested anger towards him, but most times bore with him, as knowing that it proceeded from goodness of nature. One of the public functions in Florence — of which he held many in succession, was that of Gonfaloniere of Justice, in the earlier period of Lorenzo's real though

dissembled

dissembled sovereignty. In that capacity he had to lend his formal and ministerial offices to carry through the new law regarding testaments, passed at the instance of Lorenzo de' Medici,—a law which was in effect in the nature of a *privilegium*, solely designed to repress the ambition by crippling the means of his formidable rivals the Pazzi family. Jacopo Guicciardini, says his grandson, acted in this matter much against his own will, and had strongly dissuaded the passing of any such law, 'not only as a friend of the Pazzi family, but because the process seemed to him dishonest in itself, and likely to sow the seeds of mischief—as the event proved.' After the explosion of the conspiracy of the Pazzi, and the tragical fate of all who had taken part in it and some who had taken no part in it, Lorenzo, says our historian, being mercilessly disposed against the whole family, either from natural temper or exasperation at the violent death of his brother, the wound he had himself received, and the narrow escape he had himself made from destruction, had thrown into prison the innocent sons of the Pazzi, who had no complicity in the plot; and had decreed that their daughters, who were left with small dowries, should form no matrimonial connections in Florence. Jacopo Guicciardini was incessant in his solicitations to Lorenzo to release these innocent youths, and at the utmost to 'confine' them, as it was called, from entering Florentine territory, and to relieve the daughters from the prohibition of marrying in their own country. After some years he finally persuaded Lorenzo to yield on both points.

The singular combination of mercantile with public business which occupied the active life of most of the statesmen of the Italian republics was remarkably exemplified in Jacopo Guicciardini, of whom his grandson says that, though he started on a small patrimony, he received a considerable dowry with his wife, which he turned to good account as commercial capital, as appears from a book kept by him, in which the net results of all his commercial transactions are briefly noted, as well as of all legitimate emoluments derived from his diplomatic and other public appointments, which, with his gains from commerce, made up, says his grandson, 'to a quattrino' the amount of property which he left behind him at his death, and made it manifest that he had abused none of his official opportunities to usurp the property of others or procure for himself exemptions from public taxation. He acted as captain of a commercial galley of his own in a voyage to the Levant, and as military commander, at a pinch, in the little wars of the Florentine Republic. It is added that he always applied his best efforts

to disperse ill-humours in the commonwealth, and never chose to play the part of public informer or State inquisitor. His descendant adds, for the edification of the Guicciardini family of the future, that he was exceedingly well endowed by nature, being tall, fair, and handsome—as fine a man as any of his time in Florence. The only drawbacks from his natural and acquired good gifts were that he was totally illiterate—we must understand our historian to mean in the ‘humane letters’ of universities, since Jacopo Guicciardini must have had work-day letters enough at least to keep his ledgers and carry on correspondence with his employers in his various missions. His good natural capacity, his courageous, liberal, friendly, and serviceable spirit, seem to have fully compensated with his contemporaries for his lack of polite literature; and his freedom from all malignant vices made them wink hard at certain *dulcia vitia* which did attach to him. According to his grandson’s unreserved testimony, he was somewhat more licentious in his amours, and, moreover, somewhat more studious of his eating and drinking, than might have been expected of a man of his otherwise distinguished qualities.

Piero, the father of our historian, sustained the character of the Guicciardini family, though rather in a negative than positive manner, for sagacity and sound judgment in affairs private or public, and avoidance of all extreme parts, which led him to the other extreme of taking no part at all. Whether, says his son, he was so formed by nature, or whether the course of events, which indeed was violent and extraordinary in the times he lived in, seemed to require corresponding caution and circumspection,—so it was that he proceeded in his affairs with little spirit and much suspiciousness, undertaking few enterprises, acting in affairs of State with great slowness and deliberation, and never, except when constrained by conscience or necessity, distinctly declaring his sentiments on matters of importance. Hence it happened that, never putting himself forward as the head of a party or any new movement, he did not keep himself so currently as he might have done in the mouths of the many. His son, however, admits that this mode of action or inaction served one purpose at least: that through all the turbulent movements which took place in his time he preserved his dignity and tranquillity, more fortunate in that respect than any other man of his standing and eminence, all of whom incurred in those times dangers either of life or property.

Our historian says for himself that he wished to enter the Church, not to participate, ‘like most other priests,’ in its fat slumbers, but because he calculated, with great colour of reason,

that a young man like himself, well grounded by study and practice in jurisprudence (a species of lore then much more in request at the Court of Rome than theology), had a fair foundation for rising high in the Church, and might very well hope to be one day a Cardinal. His father, however, was conscientiously indisposed to see any of his sons in the priesthood, 'though,' says our historian, with a touch of pathos, 'he had five sons'—'considering the disordered condition of the Church in those times'—and preferred to sacrifice the present profit of rich benefices, as well as the future prospect of seeing a son of his in high rank in the Church, rather than soil his conscience by making that son a priest from motives of cupidity or ambition. 'Such,' says our historian, 'was the real cause which decided him; and I had to content myself the best I could with his decision.'

It may be thought that our historian here makes posterity as much the confidants of the character of his own ambition as of his father's conscience. His youth had no dreams—or rather the one dream of his youth was advancement in public life, under whatever auspices—an advancement which he attained in early manhood, and lost, when public life itself was lost in Italy. Guicciardini's practical political motto, throughout his public career, was 'I serve.' His best apology is that the sword in his day in Italy no longer gave place to the gown, and that independent public action had ceased to be possible in Italian public affairs. To have any hand in the administration of those affairs it had become necessary to have some footing in the Courts of Popes or Princes. It is curious to observe how, in a different form and by a circuitous course, Guicciardini's young ambition to mix himself with ecclesiastical politics was at length gratified. If he had dutifully submitted to exclusion by paternal authority from the prospect of himself becoming one day a Cardinal—perhaps a Pope—he did the next best thing for himself, in his keen pursuit of the main chance in politics, by attaching himself to the political service of Popes and Cardinals.

To the young Guicciardini—who seems, in the sense of romance or sentiment, never to have been young—his choice of a consort was as mere a selection of a stepping-stone for ambition as had been his choice of a profession. Any consideration of personal preference seems to have had as little weight with him in that matter as with his father. In this instance, however, as concerned money at least, the son had more elevated views than the father. His ambition was that of eminence, not mere wealth, and he did not allow paternal authority to dissuade him from fixing his choice on a family (the lady seems to have

been a quite immaterial element in the transaction), whose head was a personage of political importance in the Florentine commonwealth, and might be able to push forward his son-in-law in the path of promotion. This consideration was paramount with him over his father's prudential suggestions that a *larger dowry* would be desirable, and could be had with other damsels of good houses. Perhaps such suggestions might have had more weight with the son, if he could have foreseen the disappointment, by the premature death of his father-in-law, of the hopes he had formed of getting a start in public life by the connection. Our historian concludes his ingenuous narrative of his matrimonial doings in the following strain of evidently sincere if not refined piety: 'Please God the affair may have been for the health of my soul and body, and God pardon me if I have used too much importunity with Piero [his father] in the matter, since though as yet I am satisfied with having made the connection, I cannot help some scruple and doubt whether I may not have offended God, especially considering the qualities of a father such as mine is.'

Guicciardini's '*Ricordi Politici e Civili*' are now for the first time published, as the present editor states, in their original integrity, free from additions or mutilations. Alloyed and clipped as they had been by the timidity or ill-taste of previous editors, Guicciardini's civil and political *γνώμαι*, first published about the middle of the sixteenth century, under the title of '*Avvertimenti di Messer Francesco Guicciardini*,' had won the epithet '*aurei*' from subsequent Italian writers. Signor Canestrini, the present editor, says of them 'that these '*Ricordi*' appear truly marvellous, whether by the incomparable acuteness of the sentences on men and things, the vast learning, or the *elegantissima* simplicity, and natural spontaneity of the style.' Without echoing Italian superlatives, we may be able to show by our extracts that the praise of simplicity and spontaneity is well deserved by the style of Guicciardini *in undress*, and that the natural acuteness and acquired knowledge exhibited in his estimates of events and persons deserve no less ungrudging, if less enthusiastic, recognition than that accorded them by the editor of the volumes before us.

The first of these '*Ricordi*' which occurs for citation has reference to those earlier years of their author, some characteristic traits of which have already been placed before our readers, and curiously completes our idea of that very marked trait of character, the constant aim at advancement, rather than at any sort of pleasure or acquirement for its own sake. There is a remark recorded in Lady Minto's '*Memoirs of Hugh Elliot*,' that, while continental

nations

nations (the writer of the remark had been conversant mostly with Germans and Italians) seek social intercourse chiefly for the pleasure it affords, the English cultivate society chiefly with a view to advantage in one shape or other. Exactly in a like spirit we find Guicciardini, the man, regretting that Guicciardini, the youth, had not bestowed more attention on the amusing and social accomplishments of his age:—

‘I made light when I was young of knowing how to play, dance, sing, and other like levities—or of writing well, riding well, dressing well, and all such things which seem to give men more of ornament than substance. I have since, however, wished it had been otherwise, since if indeed it is inconvenient that youths should lose too much time on such things, I have seen nevertheless by experience that these ornaments, and the knowing how to do everything well, add dignity and reputation to men even otherwise well qualified, so that it may be said that he who lacks them lacks something. Besides which, abounding in all such accomplishments opens the way to favour with princes, and is sometimes the principle or source of great profit and exaltation—the world and princes not being constituted as they should be, but as they are.’

Guicciardini's first important public employment was his embassy to Spain from the Florentine Republic in 1512, when he had only attained the age of twenty-eight, that is, two years short of the age prescribed by law in that republic for diplomatic appointments. This embassy was not the first inevitably fruitless mission of the tottering Florentine democracy to that astute monarch Ferdinand the Catholic, whose character the young diplomatist appreciated with equal astuteness, and has placed vividly on record. Two ‘orators’ from Florence had been commissioned to Ferdinand and Isabella in 1498 to justify their Government for not having entered into the league formed three years previously between the Pope, the Venetians, and the Emperor Maximilian against Charles VIII. of France, and to defend it from the charge of espousing the cause of France in Italy against Spain. At both epochs the defence was necessarily a lame one, since at both the charge was so far well-founded, that the Florentine democracy, at first under the influence of the fervid and enthusiastic eloquence of Savonarola, and afterwards under the feebly popular administration of Soderini, clung persistently to the French alliance in preference to that of Spain, Venice, and the Pope, and refused to join the so-called *santissima lega* formed under their auspices. The Florentine democracy played its cards so badly as never to oblige France sufficiently by its adhesion to obtain any equivalent support from that power, while it disobliged the Italian powers in league with Spain sufficiently  
to

to incur their more than probable hostility. This hostility it was Guicciardini's Spanish mission to avert 'by art and prudence;' but as he came empty-handed of powers to conclude any convention whatever with King Ferdinand, he could naturally expect nothing but good words in exchange for those he brought. The following passage from Guicciardini's '*Ricordi*' has pointed reference to the fatal policy of the Florentine Government in this respect at the time when it sent him on his first fruitless diplomatic mission:—

'Neutrality in the wars of others is good for him who is powerful in such a degree that he has nothing to fear from the one who remains superior, since he preserves himself without trouble, and may hope for gain from the disorders of others. Otherwise it is inconsiderate and injurious, since he remains the prey of the conqueror or the conquered. And worst of all is that which is preserved not by judgment but by irresolution—that is to say, when, without coming to a resolution whether you will be neutral or no, you conduct yourself in such a manner that you do not satisfy even that party who would be content at the time if you would assure him that you would be neutral. And into this last species of neutrality republics are more apt to fall than princes, since it often proceeds from those being divided who have to deliberate; so that, one counselling this, another that, enough of them never agree together to effect a decision for one opinion any more than another—and this was just the case with the Florentine Government of 1512.'

The following remarks, which Guicciardini was led to make by his observation of Ferdinand's character, bequeathed at least one result, for the instruction of after ages, of his otherwise resultless mission to that reputed paragon of kingcraft:—

'Even if one has the name of a dissembler and deceiver, it is seen nevertheless that sometimes his deceits find dupes. It seems strange to say so, and yet it is very true and within my own memory, that the Catholic King Ferdinand of Spain was beyond all other men of that reputed character, and yet in his artifices he never wanted those who believed him more than he deserved, and it needs must be that this proceeds either from men's simplicity or cupidity—some being duped by easily believing what they desire, others by lack of knowledge.

'I observed when I was ambassador in Spain to King Ferdinand of Arragon, a wise and glorious prince, that, whenever he desired to engage in a new enterprise, or other affair of importance, he did not first publish and then justify his intention, but he governed himself just contrariwise, artfully contriving in such a manner that, before it was understood publicly what he had in his mind, it was published that the king ought to do such a thing for such or such reasons, and therefore when it was afterwards published that he intended to do that which had first been made to appear to every one to be just and  
necessary,

necessary, it is incredible with what favour and what praise his decisions were received.'

We make the following citation from Guicciardini's editor and apologist:—

'The prudence and ability of which Guicciardini had given proof in his Spanish legation, opened the way for him to higher posts of trust and honour. He was appointed, shortly after, a councillor and minister of Pope Leo X., and afterwards of Clement VII., who entrusted to him affairs and offices of the highest importance—such as the governments of Modena and Reggio, and afterwards of Parma, the presidency of Romagna, and the vice-papal administration of Bologna. During this period the free government of Florence fell; and that republic having been subjected by the conventions between Charles V. and Clement VII. to the tyranny of Alexander de' Medici, Guicciardini, with the hope and intent—continues his apologist—of mitigating the ills of his country, accepted the office of councillor, not only of Alexander, but of his successor Duke Cosmo, a tyrant not indeed milder, but more cautious and more dexterous. And it must be supposed [we are still citing Signor Canestrini] that he served and supported each in succession with the view of preserving the nominal autonomy at least of Florence under native princes at a time when the agents, ministers, and general of Charles V. were aiming at nothing short of occupying and governing in the name of the emperor all the hitherto independent states and cities of Italy.'

There was a less elevated and more matter-of-fact reason why Guicciardini took service under the restored Medici, now finally rendered avowedly absolute over his native city Florence. In the total eclipse of Medicean power and prestige at its papal headquarters ensuing upon the capture and sack of Rome in 1527, the Florentines, who seized the opportunity to re-establish democracy, not only would neither trust nor employ Guicciardini, whom two successive Popes had employed and trusted, but pursued him with the most palpably groundless charges of pecuniary malversation. This fact, if it was known to Sismondi, might have mitigated the severity of the terms in which he took notice of Guicciardini's desertion to the opposite camp,\* and may qualify, on the other hand, our credence of his purely patriotic inducements for attaching himself to the only one of the two contending parties who would accept his adhesion. 'The vulgar,' says Signor Canestrini, 'ever exaggerating, and never discriminating in its judgments, when a once powerful administrator of public affairs falls into disgrace or loses office, is wont with one voice to accuse him, not of his real sins of commission or omission, but of public

\* 'Histoire des Républiques Italiennes,' vol. xvi., p. 105.

robberies,

robberies, rapines, and malversations, from which his known character stands high above all suspicion.' There is the strongest evidence in Guicciardini's writings, official and autobiographical, that here, at least, was not the weak point in his panoply. We may cite, as bearing on it, the following passage which occurs in the 'Ricordi':—

'It is not possible to take such precautions as that ministers shall not plunder: I have myself been perfectly pure, and have had governors and other ministers under me, and with all the diligence I have used and all the example I have given them, I have never been able to provide sufficiently against this. The reason is that money serves for everything, and that, in the present mode of living a rich man is more esteemed than a good one. What still more causes it, is the ignorance or ingratitude of princes, who bear with the bad, and give no better treatment to him who has served well than to him who has done just the contrary.'

We have already cited the unreserved expression of Guicciardini's intimate sentiment respecting the service, to which nevertheless he devoted the entire prime of his public life. That expression recurs again and again in his 'Ricordi':—

'I desire,' he says, 'to see three things before my death, but I doubt, however long I live, if I shall see any one of them—a well-ordered republican regimen in our city—Italy liberated from all the Barbarians—and the world liberated from the wicked tyranny of priests.'

Of the duty of good citizens in States which have lost their liberties, we find written, not without self-reference, as follows:—

'I believe it to be the duty of good citizens, when their country falls into the hands of tyrants, to seek to have influence with them, in order to persuade them to good and against evil. And certainly it cannot but be the interest of a city that at all times good men should have authority; and although the ignorant and passionate people in Florence have always understood it otherwise, even they must perceive how pestiferous would be the government of the Medici, if they had nobody about them but fools and knaves.'

Guicciardini was no whit more favourable to popular than to priestly or monarchical tyranny. He writes of it, as usual, from experience—that of Florentine democracy in its intolerance of all superiorities whatsoever:—

'Who names a people names truly a fool, a monster full of confusions and errors, and whose vain opinions are as far remote from the truth of things as, according to Ptolemy, Spain is from the Indies. . . ! He who would live at Florence with the favour of the people must avoid the reputation of ambition, and every indication of wishing to

appear even in the smallest details of daily life greater, more splendid, or more delicate than others. For in a polity which is wholly founded on equality and full of envy, it follows of necessity that every one becomes odious who falls under the suspicion of not willing to be on a footing of equality with others, or who seeks to distinguish himself from the common mode of living.'

Guicciardini's wisdom, it must be admitted, was of that sort which sounds the depths rather than soars to the heights of moral and social existence. His apology must be that in his age were more depths to sound than heights to soar to. How keen his insight into the weaknesses and vices of men, the following lines may testify :—

'It is observed that old men are more avaricious than young ones, whereas it should be the contrary, because having less time to live, less will suffice them. The reason is said to be because they are more timid. I do not believe that this is the true reason, because I see many of them much more cruel, more licentious, if not in act, in desire, more abhorrent from death than young men. The reason I believe to be that the longer one lives, the more one gets a habit of living, and the more men attach themselves to the things of the world—the more affection they have for them, and the more they are moved by them.'

The following is no new precept of worldly wisdom, but has a somewhat shrewd codicil annexed to it :—

'Observe carefully in your conversation never without necessity to say things which reported may displease others, since often, in times and modes which are not thought of, these greatly hurt yourselves: observe this I say carefully, since many even prudent men err in it, and it is difficult to abstain from so erring; but if the difficulty is great, much greater is the fruit which results from thence to him who knows how to do it. If, however, necessity or anger induce you to speak injuriously to another take care at least to say things offensive only to him; for example, if you wish to injure an individual, do not speak evil of his country, family, or parentage; since it is great folly, when you only wish to offend one, to speak injuriously of many.'

The following passage occurs in Lord Campbell's 'Life of Brougham,' which may serve as a negative illustration of the above politic precept :—

'He had always great delight in laughing at briefless barristers, a class to which at some periods of his life he was himself in great danger of belonging. He was very incautious in attacking bodies of men, and thus sometimes excited more ill-will than by a personal quarrel which might be soon appeased. Having flattered some of the bishops by asking them to name incumbents for small livings in his gift, he offended them all by saying in their absence, when they had left the house to go to dinner, that "their god was their belly."'

The

The following excellent rule of life for those in responsible functions is applicable to all times and all stations:—

‘Do not make more account of having favour than of having reputation; since, reputation being lost, the benevolence of others is lost with it, in place of which succeeds slight esteem; but he who maintains his reputation finds no want of friends, favour and benevolence.’

To the like effect:—

‘You cannot have a greater virtue than to keep account of honour, since he who does so fears no dangers, and does no base actions. Hold this point fast therefore, and it will be almost impossible that everything should not succeed well with you.—*Expertus loquor.*’

It is only fair to suppose that in his more elevated, as in his less elevated utterances, Guicciardini set down for his descendants the real results, as he himself viewed them, of his own personal experience. These he sets forth more specifically as follows:—

‘I have been for eleven successive years employed in governments of the Church, and have enjoyed so much favour with my superiors and the people as well, that I was likely to have remained long in those employments, but for the events which happened in 1527 in Rome and Florence. And I found nothing which established me in them more firmly than proceeding as if I did not care to keep them, since resting on this foundation I did without respect or submission whatever properly belonged to the charge I held, which gave me a reputation that favoured me more, and with more dignity, than any insinuation, interest, or industry I could have used.’

All the evidence derivable from the official correspondence, which forms a large part of the publication before us, goes to verify the character Guicciardini here claims for himself of having carried into servitude itself the spirit of an honourable, if not exalted freedom. In his several and successive vicegerencies for the Vicegerent of Heaven he stoutly contested the abusive privileges and exemptions of ecclesiastics from lay jurisdiction. And he always addressed the popes he successively served in the language of independent counsel.

The following more general political observations bear the stamp of experience, and, like many of our author's, are true for all time:—

‘Things doomed to fall not by force but exhaustion, go on much longer than would have been believed at first, as well because the motions are slower than is supposed, as because men, when they are obstinately resolved to endure the worst, do and suffer much more than would have been believed possible. Thus we have seen that a war which was calculated to come to an end by famine, by hardship,

by want of money, and the like, has lasted longer than would have been believed beforehand. Thus the life of a consumptive patient always prolongs itself beyond the opinion doctors and bystanders have had of it; and a merchant, before he fails by being eaten up with usury, keeps moving longer than was expected.'

*Things probable probably false.*

'I am slow in believing, till I have sure authority, news which are in themselves probable; because, being already in men's conjecture, some one is easily found to forge them; and therefore when I receive any such without a certain author, I suspend belief of them, more than of others of an opposite kind.'

*Things universally desired seldom accomplished.*

'The Marquis of Pescara said to me on the election of Pope Clement VII., that the things which were universally desired were hardly ever accomplished. The reason of this may be that it is the few and not the many that commonly pull the wires which set in motion the affairs of this world, and the ends those have in view are almost always different from the ends of the many, and accordingly produce different effects from those which the many desire.'

*In the multitude of counsellors there is no safety.*

'Messer Antonio da Venafra was wont to say, and said well—Put seven or eight wise men together, they become so many fools; since not agreeing they rather bring things into dispute than to a conclusion.'

*Slow decision good—slow execution bad.*

'Men cannot be blamed for being a long time in resolving themselves, since, if conjunctures take place at which it is necessary to decide promptly, yet in general he who decides quickly errs rather than he who decides slowly. But what is to be blamed mightily is slowness of execution after a resolution is taken, since it may be said that always hurts and never helps unless by accident.'

*Why conspiracies are generally detected.*

'He who will take notice of the course of combinations and conspiracies may observe that nothing is more ruinous to them than the desire to carry them on too securely, since by this more time is interposed, more men implicated, and more things mixed up with them, which is a cause why practices of that sort are brought to detection. Moreover, it may be believed that Fortune, under whose dominion such things are placed, is angry with those who wish to liberate and secure themselves from her power. I conclude, therefore, that it is safer to execute them with some risk than with much precaution.'

*What men ought to do—what they probably will do.*

In discourses of State I have often seen men make mistakes of judgment; because they set themselves to examine what this or that

prince reasonably ought to do, and not what he is likely to do according to his nature and degree of understanding. He who would judge what, for example, the King of France will do, should have less regard to what a prudent man ought to do than to what may be expected from the nature and habit of a Frenchman.'

*Do not let yourself be thrown out of play.*

'He who would be a man of action should not let himself be thrown out of the current of affairs, since out of one arises another, as well by the access which the first gives to the second, as by the reputation which being engaged in affairs brings you. To this also may be well applied the proverb—*Di cosa nasce cosa.*'

It has always been disputed how far the sinister precepts of policy, branded as Machiavellian, are to be charged to the character of the great Florentine Secretary or to that of his age—in what degree the maxims stigmatized by that name were accepted or reprobated by the better-reputed authorities of those times. Machiavelli and Guicciardini were contemporary politicians, private correspondents, and personal friends, notwithstanding the most marked contrast of character, and thence of career. It may be affirmed on the evidence of the volumes before us that the latter had no disposition to countenance the cool atrocity of the wholesale recipes for extirpating enemies by foul or fair means, which the former generalized, with such shocking unconcern, from the prevalent practices of his age. In an elaborate criticism of Machiavelli's 'Discourses on Livy,' now first published in these volumes, Guicciardini remarks that extraordinary and violent political remedies always beyond measure please his author [Machiavelli]. It would be difficult to conceive the former looking on, as the latter seems to have done, in his mission from the Florentine republic to Cæsar Borgia, at the preparations making for the immortally infamous surprise and slaughter of Sinigaglia. But it nevertheless appears, on the evidence of the 'Ricordi' before us, that one of the most respectable administrators and authors of his age, as Guicciardini certainly was, was considerably infected, albeit in a milder form, with what this age terms Machiavellism. The following sentences from the source above cited sufficiently establish that fact.

*Machiavellic maxim of politic falsehood.*

'Make a practice of denying what you do not wish to be known, or affirming what you wish to be believed, since, whatever probabilities, or whatever certainties there may be to the contrary, a bold affirmative or negative often puts him who hears you off the scent.'

*Machiavellic maxim of government.*

'The government of States cannot be carried on according to conscience,

conscience, because to any one who considers their origin they have all been founded on violence—with the exception of republics in their own country, and not elsewhere. I do not except from this rule the Emperor, and still less the priests, whose violence is double, as they coerce you at once with arms temporal and spiritual.'

*Machiavellic maxim of affected reticence.*

'A prince, or he who is engaged in great affairs, not only should keep secret things which it is well should not be known, but should besides caution himself and his ministers to keep silence on things even the least and seemingly the least important, except those which it is well *should be known*. Thus your acts and intentions not being known to those about you, or to your subjects, men stand ever in suspense and as it were amazed, and every little motion and step of yours is observed.'

*Machiavellic maxim of fair public pretexts.*

'One of the greatest good fortunes men can have is to have fair occasion to show that they have been moved by pure regard to the public weal in those things, which they do to promote their own proper interest. It was that which made glorious the enterprises of the Catholic King which—while they were all entered on for his own grandeur or security—often seemed engaged in either for the extension of the Christian faith, or for the defence of the Church.'

*Machiavellic maxim of 'Bide your time.'*

'A governor of nations should guard as much as possible against showing hatred to any one, or taking vengeance of any displeasure done to him, since it brings too much odium on him to employ the public arm against private injuries. Let him only take patience and bide his time, since it is impossible that he should not frequently find occasion to effect the same end justifiably and without imputation of rancour.'

*Machiavellic maxim to be observed by princes.*

'Let princes take care not to lead their subjects into the next degree to liberty, since men naturally desire to be free, and no one ordinarily continues content with his position, but every one always seeks to advance beyond that in which he finds himself, and these appetites have more power with men in general than the memory of the good-fellowship that prince has shown them, or the benefits received at his hands.'

The painstaking and patriotic editor of the volumes before us indulges largely, in his introductory chapters, in elaborate parallels between the two last public men of Italy in the sixteenth century—Machiavelli and Guicciardini—who could properly be called so, as still speaking the language of Italian public sentiment. And very curious are some of the parallels he finds for them in ancient history. 'To Guicciardini,' he says, 'must be  
conceded

conceded the primacy of profound political intuition; to Machiavelli subtle penetration into the *arcana imperii*, and vital forces of states, as well as into the no less intricate mysteries of the human heart. The former concentrated all his faculties upon one focus; he might be entitled, by no fanciful analogy, the Cato of writers, as the latter might be designated as the Alcibiades.'

Neither Alcibiades nor Cato, so far as history tells of them, can well be conceived by any but a modern Italian imagination to have furnished parallels on any one point of character to Machiavelli and Guicciardini—unless it should be said that the loose morality of the Athenian Eupatrid might, in some measure, be attributed to the life and writings of the Florentine *popolano*. But Guicciardini and Cato! Which Cato? Not that one, at any rate, by whom the proud memorial was merited—

'Victrix causa Diis placuit, sed victa Catoni.'

All the pains taken by our editor (who also edited, some years back, such of the official and other writings of Machiavelli as had remained unpublished) to wash perfectly white the political ethics of both are pains utterly thrown away. If he had urged that Machiavelli merely generalised his maxims of politics from an unexaggerated induction of the most successful strokes of State-craft and State-crime—that Guicciardini had no other course open to his ardour for action and advancement than to spend his last years in the service of bad masters, to whom he tendered as good counsel as they would take—he would have pleaded fair excuse for their shortcomings of the more elevated moral standards set up in later times; though, in truth, later times have not always been entitled to write '*Anti-Machiavels*,' especially when royal fingers held the pen. And the Parisian dispensers of European reputation, in the days of Frederick and Catherine, never flattered more grossly sovereigns whose ways of acquiring or extending power would assuredly have taxed Machiavellic cynicism to excuse them—even in Machiavelli's age—than by ascribing to them pure and exalted abhorrence of Machiavellic doctrine.

In point of style, the perfect unaffectedness and directness of thought and utterance certainly may be admitted to set the antique classic stamp on Machiavelli's writings. It is the *παρρησία* of old Greece transferred to the troubled and lurid dawn of modern Italy. For the rest, it must be acknowledged that the main scope of Machiavelli's public acts and writings was that of Italian independence by Italian arms under Italian leadership. Small blame to an Italian patriot who had seen the soil of Italy twice overrun and twice soaked in the blood of its sons

by foreign invasion, if he gave precedence, as a first political necessity, to arms over laws—or rather, was ready to affirm that the conditions of success in arms were the best criterion of national laws as suited to national needs of first urgency. The native military organization which, with good beginnings of efficiency, his practical measures as well as theoretical tractates were framed to restore to Florence—nay, the despotic power which, in the most obnoxious of his writings to moral censure, he was content to offer to any Italian prince who would but take the lead in overthrowing *questo barbaro dominio*, might fairly be said to form parts of one system, conceived, with whatever alloy of moral obliquity or personal ambition, in one clearly-discerned and consistently-pursued public interest. It is indeed undeniable that in the ‘Prince’—which is, however, in this respect, no fair sample of his political writings at large—the sole moral of Machiavelli’s doctrine of princely policy is, ‘If you want to hold your own, or usurp what is not your own, at this day in Italy, you must not be too particular about observing the established distinctions between virtue and vice, good faith and ill faith, mercy and cruelty, &c., &c.; though you must take care, at the same time, to keep as much credit as you can for those virtues which in politics you cannot always afford to exercise.’ Now, this was only telling the great men of his age what they knew before, and what the great men of that age, and ages before and after, needed no rules to teach them. Nor was the policy of princely and diplomatic plots and perfidies exclusively Italian in those ages, however Lord Macaulay might please himself and his readers with his trenchant and telling contrasts between Northern rude valour and Southern polished artifice. The policy of the Borgias and the Medici might be more shameless in some traits, but could scarcely be more coolly or deliberately perfidious or, on occasion, murderous than the Tudor policy which fomented anarchy in Scotland, or the Spanish policy which kindled revolt in the Netherlands. Nor, at an earlier period, had a Ferdinand the Catholic of Spain, or a good King Louis XII. of France, anything to learn from Machiavellian doctrine in the line of perfidy; nay, it was precisely from the practices of such potentates, cismontane or trans-montane, that Machiavelli deduced the maxims which shocked the world when set before it in the abstract, though in the concrete they had escaped especial censure, as tacitly-understood necessities of king-craft or pope-craft. What was characteristic of Machiavelli was his vehement earnestness of purpose, and straightforward explicitness of expression, not his perfidy. That was the sinister stamp of the whole State policy of the sixteenth century.

Guicciardini himself wrote of his Florentine compatriot, not that his public ends were ambiguous, but that his temper naturally ran to extremes in the choice of means. This was a reproach he himself was in no danger of incurring. It was not in his nature to take extreme views, nor, indeed, was it in his nature to postpone his personal success as a statesman to *any* general views whatever. All Guicciardini's thoughts and feelings, when unreservedly expressed, as in the 'Ricordi' before us, are imbued with a strong and pervading tinge of his own personality. His views of life and politics are always taken from the central point of his own family or individual interest—using the word 'interest,' however, not in any low or sordid sense. The habitually and naïvely self-regarding temper, generated too naturally by such times as those in which his lot was cast, is curiously illustrated in the following passage of his 'Ricordi':—

'All cities, all States, all kingdoms are mortal; everything either by nature or accident terminates and finishes some time or other. A citizen, therefore, who finds himself doomed to survive his country, need not so much grieve at its downfall and deplore its ill fortune as his own, since that has happened to his country which necessarily had to happen; but the special misfortune is his to whom it falls to be born in an age when that catastrophe had to take place.'

The final extinction of Florentine liberties drew after it the shelving of Guicciardini the statesman—the making of Guicciardini the historian. He owed to his last year or two of retirement the reputation his name retains with posterity. When Duke Cosmo's jealous tyranny honoured by excluding from public trust and employment all whose political habits had been formed in less servile times, the discarded statesman had no 'Majesty's Opposition' to fall back upon—save the silent closet opposition of the historian, with posterity for audience. There is a sense of worth indicated in the worthy employment of years of enforced leisure: that sense must be recognised in Guicciardini, as it must in Clarendon, whatever exceptions may be taken by criticism or party to the self-estimate of either.

Our motive for selecting a comparatively small portion of the voluminous publication before us for our special subject has been that these family, autobiographical, and political 'Ricordi' are the portion of that publication in which Guicciardini is, for the first time, presented *in undress* to posterity, divested of the *style académique* of his more elaborate writings. If the plain unvarnished self-portraiture of the man and statesman is to be found anywhere in his writings, it is to be found here. We have here direct from the fountain-head those judgments of the men and things of his day, which are elsewhere diffused and diluted

in studied sentences, or set speeches put in the mouths of leading characters. We have waded 'with honest anguish and an aching head' through the awful tedium of the formal pleadings and discourses, *pro* and *con*, in these ten volumes, on all those questions and transactions in which the great historian was implicated—as through a series, long drawn out, of 'Suasoriæ' and 'Controversiæ,' on the model of Seneca Rhetor.\* These, with diplomatic and official despatches, swell out the bulk of the work, we think, disproportionately to their present value. An exception must be made in favour of the two books of Dialogues 'Del Reggimento di Firenze,' which will be found in the second volume, and which testify to the author's sincere public spirit, however dashed with self-seeking. The interlocutors of these imaginary conversations are four of the most eminent public men of the last period of Florentine freedom—Bernardo del Nero, Piero Capponi, Pagolantonio Soderini, and Piero Guicciardini, the father of our historian. Each of them supports his genuine character as speaker or listener, and the air of freedom still breathes through their unrestrained utterances. Bernardo del Nero in these Dialogues signals that source of weakness and danger to Florence, which Machiavelli devoted his best efforts to remedy. 'Our city,' says Bernardo, 'as every one knows, was once armed—once carried on all her military enterprises by aid of the arms of her own subjects—by aid of these won many victories and had many successes, which should have seemed to invite her rather to devote herself entirely to military exercises, than to disarm, as she has done, and make use in her wars of hired soldiers. The cause for this change must either have been the jealous exclusion from command by the people of the nobles who had military rank and reputation [this was the main cause alleged by Machiavelli to have enfeebled Florence] or from the people addicting themselves too exclusively to arts and merchandize. However this may have been, the mode of making war by mercenaries has been most pernicious, and during the long period it has already prevailed in Florence has led her citizens into ways of life, and made them contract habits

---

\* Guicciardini's *full-dress* tendency to a certain formal prolixity has been quaintly illustrated by the preference expressed by Boccacini's *Lacedæmonian*, for condemnation to galley-rowing for life, building up between two walls, and finally flaying alive, rather than reading the interminable tall talk and little wars between Florence and Pisa.

'Instantissimamente supplicò che per tutti gl'anni della sua vita lo condannassero a remare in una galea, che lo murassero trà due mura, e che per misericordia fino lo scorticassero vivo; perche il legger quei Discorsi senza fine, quei Consigli tanto tediosi, quelle freddissime Concioni, fatte nella presa d'ogni vil colombaia, era crepacuore che superava tutti l'aculei Inglesi, &c.'—*Boccacini, Ragguagli de Parnasso, Cent. I. Ragg. VI.*

so contrary to martial enterprise, that now, if any youth talks of going to the wars, he becomes in a manner infamous.'

Another exception to the charge of tediousness which, not having the fear of Italian readers before our eyes, we have ventured to bring against good part of the 'stuffing' of the ten volumes before us, must be made in favour of the '*Storia Fiorentina*,' which fills the third volume, and which may be considered as forming a sequel (though written earlier) to Machiavelli's '*Storie Fiorentine*,' and an introduction to Guicciardini's great work, the famous (and tedious) '*Istoria d'Italia*. Of the style of this hitherto unpublished prelude to his larger history it may be enough to say that, like that of his '*Ricordi*,' it has none of the conventional dignity of history. In this respect Guicciardini here stands in contrast with his later self, as arrayed in the ample academical robes of the classic historian. In the political doctrine deducible from his Florentine history he so far contrasts with Machiavelli that, while Guicciardini, as Signor Canestrini remarks, confined his desires to a better-regulated government for Florence, and freedom for Italy, Machiavelli invoked the intervention of a Prince, an all-powerful Dictator, who, by whatever means—so they were efficacious—should succeed in the great enterprise of expelling the strangers who were tearing Italy in pieces. Guicciardini's historical style, in his 'first manner,' differs from Machiavelli's in that indescribable quality in which the prose of minds all-prosaic differs from the prose of poets. Guicciardini was an acknowledged master of prose—Machiavelli may rank with poets—and it would be difficult to find in the highest-wrought tragic descriptions of the historian such vivid images of the misery of the times which saw the sack of Rome, as in the following six lines of Machiavelli's '*Capitolo dell' Ambizione*.'

'Sempre son le lor facce orrende e scure,  
A guisa d'uom, che sbigottito ammira  
Per nuovi danni, o subite paure.  
Dovunque le occhi tu rivolgi e giri,  
Di lacrime la terra e sangue è preña;  
E l'aria d'urli, singulti e sospiri.'

We have given credit for painstaking as well as for patriotism to the experienced editor of these volumes. But there is one particular in which he fails to satisfy the fair and reasonable requirements of modern readers. He has neither favoured them with full tables of contents to each volume, nor with a general index to all the ten volumes. These are omissions too familiar in Italian as in German publications of bulk and weight. Signor

Canestrini

Canestrini sends his readers voyaging through whole volumes without rudder or compass to find the passages he has thought worth noting in his Preface. We have been tempted, in executing our critical function on this occasion, to wish that editorial delinquencies of this description could be visited with some of those severities of mediæval political justice so frequent in Florentine history. *Qualche tratto di fune* would be no more than condign punishment for the neglect of editors to provide readers with those mere mechanical facilities for *finding what they want* in voluminous works like these, which no French and no judicious English editor ever fails to furnish.

---

ART. V.—*Hansard's Parliamentary Debates.* 1871.

IT is with some regret that we again find ourselves compelled to call attention to the present condition of the Navy. This great service, so justly popular with our countrymen, is too noble to be discussed in any manner that can at all affect its just reputation; but we feel sure that it is not the fault of the Navy itself, but of its administration, which has done so much in the last two years to destroy its efficiency and to make England alarmed for its ancient renown.

If, however, we approach this subject with some regret, we confess that the feeling of dismay is still more overpowering as we examine the violent administrative changes which have been made, and their result upon the general condition of the fleet, since Mr. Gladstone has been Prime Minister. Last year\* we pointed out in some detail many of the changes which we considered unwise. In January a contemporary, in an article which had a strong savour of an official origin, admitted the general truth of our facts, but endeavoured to diminish their force by some admixture of fables. He further premised that if we only waited to see the results of Mr. Childers's policy, the development would produce for us the cheapest and most efficient navy in the world. We have waited, and we now propose to examine the result of this year's administration and its effect upon our maritime supremacy.

If it had been possible, we should have preferred to adhere to the arrangement suggested by Mr. Childers, and to have examined first the results of the changes and reductions made in the Board of Admiralty and the subordinate naval establishments, then the policy as to fleets and men, and lastly the policy

---

\* See 'Q. R.' vol. cxxix. p. 392, *seqq.*

as to dockyards and shipbuilding ; but the whole administration of the Navy is in such a state of confusion, that it will be safer to chronicle the principal naval events of the last twelve months as nearly as may be in the order of time, and leave the result to the judgment of the public.

Little more than a year ago the loss of the ' Captain ' occurred. Mr. Childers, who up to that moment had assumed the trident of Neptune and the port of Mars, at once found it necessary to throw the blame of this deplorable event on his colleagues. Lord Henry Lennox pointed out, in his clear and convincing statement, that it was generally hoped ' that when the Court-Martial had reported, Mr. Childers would have come down and confessed that, like many professional persons, he had been deceived ; that upon him rested the sole responsibility for the frightful catastrophe ; and that the country had the best security that at most it was an error in judgment, in the sad and melancholy fact that he trusted his own son on board the " Captain." ' We concur in this feeling ; but, instead of taking this course, Mr. Childers attempted to throw the blame upon others and to stifle inquiry. A Court-Martial of the highest character having investigated the cause of the loss of the ship, and having in their sentence recorded their opinion that the Controller and his department had generally disapproved of the construction of the ' Captain,' as well as having expressed their regret that the ' Captain ' was allowed to be employed in the ordinary service of the fleet before her qualities had been sufficiently ascertained by calculation and experiment, were rebuked by a Board Minute, unsigned, but which it is not denied emanated from Mr. Childers.

In defence of his conduct he further published, without consulting or informing his colleagues, another Minute reflecting most injuriously on one member at least of his Board, and by the 359 pages so published he hoped to exculpate himself and to inculpate his colleagues ; but this most unfair conduct is best described in the draft Report of the Duke of Somerset, as Chairman of the Committee of the House of Lords on the Board of Admiralty. His Grace, a strong Whig and a First Lord himself of great experience, says :—

' On the 30th November, 1870, Mr. Childers wrote a Minute relating to the loss of the ' Captain.' This Minute seriously affected the official reputation of Sir Spencer Robinson, a Lord of the Admiralty and Controller of the Navy. This Minute was published without having been seen by Sir S. Dacres or Sir Spencer Robinson. Such a proceeding on the part of the First Lord of the Admiralty was, so far as the Committee are aware, entirely unprecedented. . . . Mr. Childers,

being

being himself nominally responsible for sending this vessel to sea, constituted himself a judge of the case, and, exempting himself from all blame, distributed censure among a number of persons, while he placed the chief weight on the Controller, who had been by a former board specially released from this responsibility.'

Eleven months after the event—until which time, from various causes, the discussion of this question was adjourned—Mr. Goschen could only say that he was unable to undertake the defence of his predecessor and late colleague, and asked to defer that duty until Mr. Childers was able to return to his Parliamentary duty. What more Mr. Childers may be able to state than is contained in those 359 pages of defence, of course it is impossible to foretell; but, so far as we are at present able to judge, a ship worth half-a-million, and, rightly used, a powerful engine of war, and—what was of far more value—500 British seamen, were lost through the proceedings of the First Lord of the Admiralty.

To explain this it requires us to show how the 'Captain' was lost. Captain Coles, the ingenious inventor of the cupola and turntable for working heavy guns, had, until 1865, recommended the adoption of two classes of ships for carrying his armament: the one a low-freeboard, unmasted monitor, for coast and harbour defence; the other a high-freeboard, masted, seagoing cruiser. It may be as well here to explain what is the line which ship-builders draw between high and low freeboard. The Turret-Ship Committee, presided over, in 1865, by Lord Lauderdale, report, on the highest authority, that the height of the deck from the water-line is not to be less than 5 feet in a vessel 120 feet long, and that 1 foot is to be added for every additional 30 feet in length.

Captain Coles then proposed to build a seagoing cupola-ship to compete with the 'Pallas.' Her length was to be 228 feet, and her height 10 feet from water-line to deck. This was, therefore, a high-freeboard ship, being 1 foot 5 inches in excess of the height above specified. This ship, as having only one turret, was not accepted by the Duke of Somerset's Admiralty, and they determined to build the 'Monarch' to carry Captain Coles's armament.

The 'Monarch' did not seem to Captain Coles to carry out his intention; and the Duke of Somerset wisely, as we think, authorised him, in concert with Messrs. Laird, to design a ship which should entirely illustrate his own conception. On the 14th of July, 1866, Messrs. Laird's design for the 'Captain' was referred to the Controller's department by the Duke of Somerset. Two days after (on the 16th) Sir John Pakington took his seat as

First Lord, and on the 20th the Controller reported in general terms that Messrs. Laird's design might be accepted; 'but,' added Sir Spencer Robinson, 'I am doubtful whether the proposed height of the upper deck out of the water, viz., 8 feet, combined with the length and draught of water of this design, will be satisfactory for a seagoing cruising ship.'

This was obvious; for the 'Captain' was to be 320 feet long, requiring 12 feet freeboard to make her safe as a sail-carrying cruising ship. Nevertheless, the experiment was properly determined upon, knowing well that great caution must be used when under sail, and with the confident expectation that, if it were found impossible to use the 'Captain' as a sailing ship, a most powerful monitor would be added to the Navy. From this day forward to her launch, Sir Spencer Robinson and Mr. Reed continually warned the Admiralty and the public of the hazardous character of such a ship and of the extreme caution necessary in handling her.

On the 2nd of August, 1866, Mr. Reed remarked that, on further investigation, he found the stability of the 'Captain' was not so undoubted as he had at first supposed. On September 9th, 1867, Sir Spencer Robinson stated that 'ships with low freeboards would upset under canvas in a breeze of wind, after receiving a moderate inclination.' Then, pointing out that, under certain circumstances of sea and position, 'at 11° heel, the pressure of the wind on her sails would carry her over,' 'this element of danger, says Sir Spencer Robinson, 'requires to be carefully borne in mind in all turret-ships carrying sail.'

On the 4th April, 1868, Mr. Reed stated with regard to low-freeboard ships:—

'Should she roll beyond her position of maximum stability, she would have her time of roll increased, and the following circumstances would then occur. When reaching the hollow she would not have finished her oscillation, and might be still rolling towards the approaching wave; the alteration of the direction of the water surface caused by the front of the approaching wave, instead of developing in the ship a greater amount of stability tending to right her, as is the case with all ships that have a high freeboard—would diminish what stability there was remaining, and the danger of her being blown over if she carried sail would be very great.'

On the 3rd March, 1869, Mr. Childers having then been in office for some months, Mr. Reed reported to him that the 'Captain' would have a freeboard of only 6½ feet, 'utterly unsafe and out of the question in so large a ship without a breastwork;' and on the 15th March, 1870, Sir S. Robinson observed that the 'Captain' was immersed 22 inches deeper than

than her design, and that the consequences of this having been pointed out by Mr. Reed, they appeared to Sir S. Robinson so serious as to make him propose that the final payment should be deferred until the ship had been tried at sea.

It must be remembered that, for a length of 320 feet, as already stated, 12 feet freeboard were necessary in a seagoing, sail-carrying ship, and the 'Captain' was ready for sea, having not much more than half that amount of freeboard. Messrs. Laird, the builders, before the final payment, called attention to this matter, and requested a further scientific investigation as to her stability. This investigation was delayed until August by the Admiralty, but without much effect upon the final result. For the investigation did not show the ship to be more critical than she was already known to be by the Admiralty, owing to the many reports Mr. Childers had received from his scientific advisers.

On the 31st May, 1870, Sir S. Robinson, having been at sea with the 'Captain' and 'Monarch,' reported, in the words of an unprejudiced scientific officer who was sent to assist him, 'The "Captain" is not a ship which should be much pressed under sail; a heel of  $14^{\circ}$  would bring her gunwale to the water, and from that point of course her stability would very rapidly decrease.'

On the 30th June, 1870, Sir Thomas Symonds, the admiral under whose command the ships next were, reported that he deemed no freeboard sufficiently high that obliges the use of a forecastle, and recommended the height of the 'Sultan' a high-freeboard, broadside ship, as that to be adopted for turret-ships.

Now what effect had all these various reports and warnings on the mind of Mr. Childers? It may confidently be said that he totally disregarded them. He thought himself a more competent seaman, a more skilful shipbuilder than those whose advice his predecessors had accepted, and whom the country had appointed to advise him. Indeed before the 'Captain' had been tried at sea, he had determined to build more specimens of her class. Mr. Reed before the Court-Martial gave evidence as follows:—'I should state to the court, that nearly a year ago I did what I thought was right, in resisting, to the utmost of my power, a desire on the part of the First Lord of the Admiralty to increase the number of "Captains."' Mr. Reed's resistance at length succeeded in postponing this harebrained proposal, till the loss of the 'Captain' put an end to it for ever. The place of Chief Constructor was, however, made too hot for Mr. Reed, and he was compelled to resign his office with all the accumulated experience

experience of years. Other countries are benefiting by his skill, whilst our Navy suffers from Mr. Childers' incapacity. To try the 'Captain' at sea was right—she was built for the purpose; but to try her without giving full information to the officers entrusted with the hazardous experiment, was rashness bordering on insanity. Sir Alexander Milne, one of the most able and experienced of British admirals, who was commanding the fleet in which she was lost, stated before the Court-Martial, that he received no plans either from the Admiralty or from the builders of the 'Captain' and that he had only received Sir Thomas Symonds' official report, from which Sir Thomas Symond's letter above alluded to was excluded.

Now it must be remembered that there was, in the possession of Mr. Childers, Sir S. Robinson's last report (in addition to all his former reports), in which he distinctly pointed out that when the 'Captain' heeled to  $14^{\circ}$ , she was in danger of capsizing. Sir Alexander Milne, who had been on board the 'Captain' all day, remarked on the way in which the ship was heeling over. If he had been informed of the angle at which the ship's heel became dangerous,—information, with all the other depreciatory reports locked up in Mr. Childers's bureau,—he would have shortened sail with his squadron, rather than run any risk to one of the ships under his orders. We say advisedly, he would have made the fleet shorten sail, for if the admiral had ordered the 'Captain' alone to shorten sail before any catastrophe happened, all the partizans (and they were many) of low-freeboard cruizers would have assailed him with reproach, for damaging her reputation in comparison with the high freeboard ships of the fleet. Any sailor can say how the 'Captain' was lost; any sailor can say how she might have been afloat to this day.

Captain Burgoyne, an experienced seaman, tired out with the fatigues of the day, had gone to rest. The lieutenant of the first-watch had received orders to keep his station in order of sailing. The night was squally, but he carried sail, as in duty bound, to keep his station. During his watch he had experienced a squall, and the ship had come safely through it. At midnight a new lieutenant had taken charge. The ship was in her station: a fresh and heavier squall struck the ship, and she went over. If Mr. Childers had done his duty, and acquainted Captain Burgoyne that the ship should on no account be allowed to heel over to  $14^{\circ}$ , as that heel was dangerous, orders to that effect would have been in the night order-book. The lieutenant would have shortened sail in time, and the ship would have been saved. Poor Captain Burgoyne's last inquiry

on board his ship was, 'How much does she heel?' The last reply was,  $18^{\circ}$ !!! One more remark as to the culpability of Mr. Childers in this sacrifice of life. The 'Captain' was a ship of low freeboard; but we have had many such ships. Almost all corvettes and brigs are ships of low freeboard. The adage known to all seamen is,—in ships of high freeboard, shorten sail to save the masts; in ships of low freeboard, shorten sail to save the ship. For this reason ships of high freeboard only were made to sail in line of battle. Their duty was to carry sail to keep station in relative distance to the admiral and their consorts. A spar might be lost or a sail blown away in this duty, but the ship herself was not compromised. The frigates and sloops attached to a fleet were detached from the line, and had power to shorten sail to save themselves without reference to the exact bearing of the admiral. But the 'Captain,' an experimental sloop of low freeboard, an admirable engine of war, but utterly unfitted for line of battle, was sent by the Admiralty without a word of warning, to cruise as a line-of-battle-ship. It is as well that these facts should be considered by the country. One word more on this painful subject. If a railway company had sacrificed, through its negligence, 500 lives, the surviving relatives would have received compensation at the hands of the company, and the shareholders would have had to pay for the maladministration of their directors. But 500 lives are sacrificed by the proceedings of a Minister of the Crown, and neither he nor his colleagues have asked the tax-payers to contribute any recompense for the lives so shamefully cast away. True it is, that the liberality of a small portion of the public have assisted as a charity to relieve the survivors; but the claim upon the country is strong, and we trust it may yet be satisfied.

Flowing out of this event we now come to the dismissal of Sir Spencer Robinson. Mr. Childers, in his great zeal for economy, had got rid of the Comptroller of the Coast Guard, of the Storekeeper-General, of the Comptroller of Victualling, of the Chief Engineer, of the Chief Constructor, and of one Lord of the Admiralty. He had succeeded in banishing the trustworthy and able Second Secretary, Mr. Romaine, because he would not give his adhesion to the work of destruction. But he seemed to be closely united by strong personal sympathy to his two chief advisers, Sir S. Dacres and Sir S. Robinson.

Sir S. Dacres has, unlike most naval officers, consented to serve in successive Boards of Admiralty of opposite politics. He had been an adviser of Sir J. Pakington—he had been an adviser of Mr. Corry. He was in office with Mr. Childers, and is in  
office

office with Mr. Goschen. He assented to Mr. Childers's reversal of the policy he recommended to Mr. Corry, and he candidly informed the Duke of Somerset's Committee that he disapproved entirely of most of Mr. Childers's changes. No doubt he will be equally compliant to Mr. Goschen. But Sir Spencer Robinson was made of sterner stuff. Many of the changes which he advocated we think unwise; but he maintained his own opinions manfully, and sought no personal benefit. Sir Spencer Robinson was one of the admirals whom, with Sir F. Grey, Admiral Eden, and others, Mr. Childers had compelled to retire from the active list of the Navy. Like the other officers thus treated, Sir Spencer Robinson felt deeply injured, and sent in his resignation of the office of Controller of the Navy, as well as of his seat at the Board of Admiralty. But the official blandishments of the Prime Minister were brought to bear upon the justly-incensed Admiral. His request to remain on the active list was refused, but he was informed—

'When you ultimately retire from the office you now hold, my Lords will urge on the Treasury to give full consideration in settling the amount of your pension, not only to the highly valuable services rendered by you to the Government and the country, but also to the whole circumstances of your appointment and to the consequences of your compulsory retirement from the active list, under the Order in Council of 22nd February, 1870.'

This was in June. In September the 'Captain' was lost, and from that day forward Mr. Childers and Mr. Gladstone sedulously devoted themselves to making Sir Spencer Robinson the scapegoat of this criminal blunder.

Mr. Childers, having ingeniously sapped Sir Spencer Robinson's character, and without informing his colleagues published the Minute already alluded to, disappeared from the scene, and left to Mr. Gladstone the task of dismissing the Controller. We have not space to do more than allude to the extraordinary correspondence which ensued between Mr. Gladstone and Sir Spencer Robinson in the interval from the 30th January to the 12th February; but we think it is the first, we hope the only occasion on which an English Prime Minister, to cover a colleague, requested a retiring Minister to alter the date of an official Minute. Sir S. Robinson declined, as any gentleman would, to be guilty of such an act. His pension was then under consideration of the Treasury, of which Mr. Gladstone is First Lord. Sir Spencer Robinson had in June been promised full consideration, as quoted above; but having declined to falsify a date while his pension was *sub judice*, 'would' our readers 'be surprised to learn' that he did not get more than the ordinary pension? When the public

come to know these iniquities, is it too much to hope that not only Sir Spencer Robinson, but other gallant officers, of whose services the country is at present deprived, may be compelled to come back to the profession which they loved so well, and in which they served so honourably?

In pursuing our chronological record of naval occurrences, we must now note the return of the flying squadron. It will be remembered that when Mr. Gladstone took office, among the various retrenchments which he and his First Lord suggested, one was to withdraw many of the small cruising ships from various stations, and to employ a portion of the officers in a cruise in a frigate squadron, which was to fly all over the world and be found, whenever any international disturbance occurred, exactly where it was wanted. In these days of telegraphs and steam, they said orders could at once be forwarded, and it was absurd to keep vessels cruising on foreign stations where they might never be required. Those who preferred the former system, and ourselves among the number, pointed out that a few small vessels of light draught were comparatively inexpensive—that one or two of them on each station gave the means of protecting our commerce against barbarous enemies or pirates, and afforded our consuls and consular jurisdiction adequate means of support. In addition to this, and it was no mean advantage, it gave young officers a constant training in self-reliance; when far away from any higher authority, they had opportunities of acting upon their own judgment in affairs requiring energy and promptitude, and frequently of great importance to the country. We pointed out besides that telegraphs might enable the authorities to ‘call *squadrons* from the vasty deep,’ but would they come? and at least it was certain they could not come by telegraph.

The return of the flying squadron was accompanied by a Parliamentary paper detailing its proceedings. When the Franco-Prussian war broke out in July, it was at the antipodes and out of reach even of telegraphs, and it was not till the 28th of August that it received orders to sail for England from Valparaiso, which were immediately obeyed, the squadron reaching England five months after War had been declared, and when its fortune had been practically decided.

The result of this cruise also, which was performed at high pressure all the way, was doubtless to give some experience to a few officers; but in spite of the good provisions which they were able to obtain, it would appear ‘that the effect of the cruise has been’ (we quote the words of the Report) ‘to stunt the physical development of the boys, and to reduce the stamina of the men.’ The Report also points out that the sudden and extreme alterations

of

of temperature were exceedingly trying, and says with reference to the passage across the North Pacific: 'As it was blowing best part of a gale of wind' (where bitterly cold weather was experienced), 'for some considerable part of the time accompanied by a heavy sea, the men were necessarily much exposed; and in view of the continuous heat they had been subjected to during the last passage, it can readily be believed that their discomfort was intense.' Similar bad weather had been experienced on the passage from the Cape of Good Hope to the Australian colonies, and the principal result of this flying cruise to the country seems to have been the wearing out of two good frigates and the loss by desertion of 300 men.

Scarcely had the flying squadron returned and Parliament assembled, when it was discovered that, another economical crisis having affected the Admiralty, they had determined to use as a transport an old worn-out store ship, which had seen its best days half-a-dozen years before. Questions were asked in Parliament as to whether it was really true that the old worn-out 'Megæra' was about to be patched up to make a voyage round the world, following in the track of the flying squadron. But before discussing the fitness of the 'Megæra' herself for this voyage, it will be as well to examine at some length the policy which dictated the voyage at all. When Mr. Childers made his absurd rule which discharged from the profession Captains who had not served afloat for seven years, it became necessary to shorten very much the periods of command to be held by any particular officer. But it was felt that though the 'personnel' must be always in a transition state, the ship herself—the 'materiel'—might be capable of more exhaustive service. Formerly a ship was commissioned, and, failing death or some other cogent cause of separation, the Captain, the officers, and crew stuck together to the end of a commission, generally lasting from four to five years. As a rule they became accustomed to each other, proud of their ship, and firmly united in the bonds of discipline. They regarded with pride an association, the recollection of which might possibly include many stirring adventures and much good service rendered, and looked forward with regret to a separation from those on whose good qualities they could mutually rely.

All this is changed. From the time a ship leaves the dock-yard a continuous stream of officers and men is passing through her. And to effect this, transports are employed to convey this constant change of men to the ships stationed in various parts of the world. This is done regardless of expense; and it has a double disadvantage. Transports are employed to do that which the men-of-war in commission ought themselves to do;

and officers and men are kept for months in transports as passengers, doing nothing, instead of being on board their own ships perfecting their drill and discipline.

Two or three instances may suffice to show the enormous disadvantages to the public of the present system. At Bermuda, lately, it was decided to pay off and recommission certain vessels of the West Indian Squadron. Amongst these was H.M.S. 'Vestal.' A report had been received from her that she could be kept running for a year or too longer, if *her boilers were thoroughly repaired*. H.M.S. troopship 'Himalaya' took out the new crews for the various ships. The new crew embarked on board the 'Vestal.' Her old officers and crew returned to England. No sooner had the new crew embarked than it was discovered that the boilers would not stand much more work, and that Bermuda (Has this dockyard, too, been reduced?) had not the means to repair them. The 'Himalaya' brought the officers and crew of the former commission to England, and within a few days the 'Vestal' herself followed, navigated by the new officers and crew, to effect the needful repairs in England. Here we had another example of the arrangements of a Government whose claptrap cry is, forsooth, 'Efficiency and Economy.' Again, the 'Ocean,' in China, had her new crew and change of officers completed by transport within the last two years, and now that ship is ordered home as unfit for further service.

Those who know anything of naval discipline will understand thoroughly how very disadvantageous it must be to keep hundreds of men in idleness as passengers; and it must also be apparent, that it must be wiser to send out the ship in a seaworthy condition of thorough repair rather than to put officers and crews into half-worn ships, which will begin to fail them just as they have learned to act together, and know and depend on each other.

In this manner it came about that the 'Megæra' was commissioned to take out the reliefs for three ships on the Australian station. A bad ship on a bad errand. The 'Megæra,' an old iron ship, built about 1849, had been surveyed in 1866, and reported fit to be used as a store-ship for two years. On the strength of this report, she was used during the late administration for short passages, with stores to Rio Janeiro, to Ascension, and to the Mediterranean. After this her history is still in doubt. Temporary repairs were ordered, it seems, and the estimates cut down to save expense. And then suddenly this old, worn-out ship, steaming badly, and never a good sailer, is sent on a service round the world in the depth of the antarctic

winter. At that very time the 'Thalia' and the 'Urgent,' if not other transports, were lying uncommissioned and unemployed in our home ports. But it would have cost money to bring these vessels into commission, and so the old store-ship was employed. The route chosen for her also showed a total disregard, not only for the comfort of the men, but for the safety of the ship. The Suez Canal would have given a smoother and a safer passage for such a ship at such a time of year; but a saving again was to be effected, and the ship, in addition to her Australian cargo, was crammed with stores for the Cape of Good Hope, in order to attempt to show a low transport bill.

No sooner were the stores and men embarked in the 'Megæra' than it was found she leaked from stem to stern. Remonstrances were made by her officers and crew; but the orders of the Admiralty hurried her away from Devonport to Cork. There, again, her leaky condition was plainly manifested, and the ship lightened by a hundred tons of stores.

Faithful reports, no doubt, were made by the officers at Cork, so far as they could see; but the ship was not docked; and the plates—so thin that the labourers at Sheerness employed to survey her could put a knife through them—could not be gauged when the ship was afloat and filled with stores. But in spite of remonstrance, in spite of warning, in spite of entreaty, the 'Megæra' was packed off, with her leaky topsides, her thin plates, her heavy cargo, and her 380 men. What became of her we all know. Her perilous passage ended on St. Paul's Island in the Southern Ocean, and the examination there seems to show that the cause of the leak was that the plates were 'worn through.'

We see what this Administration does with the men. Five hundred drowned by their culpable negligence in the 'Captain'; three hundred deserted, on account of their recklessness, from the Flying Squadron; three hundred and eighty shipwrecked on a desert island, on account of their niggardliness, from the 'Megæra'; and if we add the cost of the ships so sacrificed to the bill, we shall not find so much saving as is claimed by the friends and supporters of the Ministry.

For the claim of this Government to the confidence of the country has been based entirely upon its supposed economy. In the three successive years in which they have framed the Navy Estimates they boast a large saving. Let us test this claim. For 1869-70 a saving was claimed of 957,357*l.*, but of this 600,960*l.* was, as admitted by Mr. Childers, due to Mr. Corry's reforms; 356,397*l.* is, therefore, the saving in the first year of economy. In 1870-71, a further saving is claimed of 746,111*l.*;

so that the total saving supposed to be effected in three years is to be obtained by multiplying the first of these sums by 3, and the second by 2, and adding the products. This shews a saving in three years of 2,561,413*l.* *Per contra*, we have the increase in this year's estimate 385,826*l.* and 500,000*l.* appropriated to the Naval service out of the 2,000,000*l.* voted as a supplementary estimate last year, when war broke out between France and Prussia, making 885,826*l.*, which reduces the saving in three years to 1,675,587*l.*, or about half-a-million a year; but when we set against this the fact that our naval stores have been reduced from a stock of three-years' seasoned articles in store to a hand-to-mouth policy, and charge the 'Captain' and 'Megæra,' worth at least half-a-million, to the account, we shall find that the saving to the country has resulted in inefficiency and may terminate in disaster. The cautious and strong sense of the Duke of Somerset has pronounced sentence on the Administration which he generally supports, and which he has vainly endeavoured to save from folly. In a caustic and terse epigram, which will never be forgotten, he has stigmatised for ever the military and naval policy of the present Administration:—'An army that can't march, and ships that won't swim,' as the result of three years of boastful economical government.

The ships that won't swim deserve something more than a passing notice. After the loss of the 'Captain,' when Mr. Childers and his colleagues in the Cabinet were devising every means to shift the responsibility from their shoulders, they hit upon the expedient of appointing a Committee of scientific and naval men, presided over by a colleague of their own, to report on the designs of ships of war. At first, reports were diligently circulated to the effect that this Committee was to make a searching inquiry into the cause of the loss of the 'Captain;' and thus another stop was put to any Parliamentary inquiry into that disaster. Then, when the order of reference to this Committee was made public, it was found that it was not called upon to inquire into the cause of the loss of the 'Captain' at all, from which consideration, indeed, it was entirely excluded. Nevertheless, the Government organs still continued to mislead the public by calling the Committee on Designs 'the "Captain" Committee,' which, like the difficult derivation in the Latin Grammar of *lucus a non lucendo*, will give plenty of food for inquiry to future commentators.

The Committee on Designs of Ships of War has, however, concluded its valuable labours. It was specially summoned to consider the ships which Mr. Childers caused to be constructed.

The 'Fury,' as we anticipated last year—the joint product, as we were assured by the 'Times,' of Mr. Gladstone and Mr. Childers—has entirely disappeared from Pembroke Dockyard, so that we shall not have this grand opportunity for ascertaining whether Mr. Gladstone or Mr. Reed is the better shipbuilder. It is at least satisfactory to find that the 'Fury' has disappeared harmlessly from the dockyard, where she had no crew and was altogether imaginary, rather than that she should have gone down with all hands, as befel the 'Captain.' Mr. Childers's 'own' ships—in whose designs we are not aware that he received the valuable assistance of the Prime Minister—are the 'Devastation' and 'Thunderer' of one class, and the 'Cyclops,' 'Hecate,' 'Hydra,' and 'Gorgon' of another. Of the 'Devastation' and 'Thunderer,' the Committee on Design report that the 'Devastation' should be completed with a heavy superstructure, to give her more freeboard; and that the 'Thunderer' should be completed as originally designed. The Committee think that, as they have no masts, they will not be blown over like the 'Captain.' Two very able members of the Committee, Admirals Elliot and Ryder, have urged strongly what they consider very grave defects in these ships; but the Committee state—

'That the fact has necessarily been present to their minds that the "Devastation," as well as her sister ship, is already in a very advanced state, and that, once satisfied as to her safety at sea, nothing short of very obvious defects and a certainty of arriving at any manifest improvements would justify them in introducing into a carefully considered design of this kind, any large changes.'

They further say that they

'feel when it becomes their duty to re-examine their design regarded as a type, and with a view to the construction of future ships of war, it is not impossible that, untrammelled as they will then be by considerations connected with the best mode of treating a nearly completed hull, the suggestions put forward by our colleagues, and other modifications, may commend themselves to our judgment.'

The paraphrase of this is, 'We can't recommend these ships. Stop the "Fury;" but, as the "Devastation" and "Thunderer" are both far advanced, we cannot recommend you to leave them unfinished and waste all the labour and material already expended. It does not much matter how they are finished. Try one one way, and one another. As they have no masts, they won't capsize; so go on and prosper, *but don't do it again.*'

The four ships of the 'Cyclops' breed are, however, not so well spoken of. They, too, may be finished, as so much has been spent on them. They may prove useful vessels for the defence

defence of our harbours; but take care that you choose fine weather for proceeding even from one port to another on our storm-beaten western shore. If they attempt 'to make passages from one port to another in' anything but 'favourable weather' they would be dangerous ships. The Sub-Committee recommend for their safety a superstructure. With this, they state, 'these ships would be both safe and steady amongst waves of a period not longer than  $10\frac{1}{2}$  seconds. Amongst waves of a longer period they would roll considerably; but with superstructures they would not be unsafe.' The Committee on Design publish the Report of the scientific Sub-Committee, which reports these ships unsafe under certain ordinary conditions without superstructures; but finding that these superstructures would interfere with the all-round fire of the guns, recommend that no superstructure shall be added. Truly valuable ships, which, if left able to fight—the purpose for which they are intended—must run the risk of rolling over if employed in going from port to port; or, if made safe for a coasting voyage, will be incapacitated for fighting an action in stormy weather in the narrow seas! Shade of Drake! what would he have thought of such a condition for ships to attack a Spanish Armada? Is the Duke of Somerset not more than justified in his friendly criticism on the 'SHIPS THAT WON'T SWIM'?

Our chronicle of naval events would not be complete if we omitted to notice the grounding of the 'Agincourt,' and the mode in which it has been dealt with by the Admiralty. The squadron is coming out of the bay of Gibraltar. To save coal (one of the chief hobbies of this Admiralty) it is to be kept well out of the strong current running through the Straits. The squadron is what, with a single ship, would have been called well clear of all danger. Admiral Wellesley's ship was clear of danger, and it is idle to say that the second in command was so rigidly bound by the prescribed order of steaming to run stem on to a well-known danger, any more than he would have been bound to run over a P. and O. steamer if he had met her in the Straits steering across the path of the squadron. Admiral Wellesley was no doubt shaving it close, but he had no right to expect from an able, experienced officer like Admiral Wilmot such unreasoning pipeclay obedience, to the manifest risk of the line he was leading. However, the mistake being made, and a display of vigorous and active seamanship having saved the ship, a court-martial investigates the matter, tries the captain and two officers of the 'Agincourt,' and inflicts on them what it considers sufficient punishment. The Admiralty, who feel that with the 'Megæra,' and 'Slaney,' and 'Psyche,' and 'Cap-  
tain',

tain' lost, and the general course of their administration much discredited, something must be done to recover their reputation, determine to show what strong men they are, and sacrifice both the admirals to save themselves. In the first place, it must be obvious to the public conscience, that it is wrong to punish any one without giving him an opportunity to defend himself. This, unless the Prerogative is again to set up the Star Chamber, is still the privilege of every Englishman. The sacrifice of Admiral Wellesley is probably the meanest act ever perpetrated by public men. A year ago he was Commander-in-Chief in North America; a command was, however, required for an excellent officer, the brother-in-law of the Secretary of State for War. The command of the Channel Fleet falling vacant, a telegram was sent to Admiral Wellesley, asking him to resign the most important command in peace, except the Mediterranean, which an Admiral can hold, and to take command of the Channel Fleet. He declined; a further communication was made to him, that there was a possibility of war, and that he was looked to as *the* man to command the Channel Fleet. Under these circumstances he had no alternative but to accept the command forced upon him; and the brother-in-law of the minister was cleverly provided for in a pleasant command. Admiral Wellesley came home and found that our Ministry had determined not to go to war, and that he had been juggled out of his command under false pretences. The change of station brought, of course, its expenses, and the Channel command was less highly paid than the North American. The Admiralty were so afraid of exposure, however, that they increased the pay, especially, for Admiral Wellesley, in command of the Channel Fleet. And now this man, on whom a year ago they relied (or said they relied), above all others, to command a fleet in war, is deprived of his command without trial for what is at the worst but one slight error in judgment, which could not have happened if he had been well supported by the officers appointed for this special purpose.

Two points of detail here arise for consideration; and first, we think that the old plan, which allowed an Admiral to select his staff officers, should be revived. It is for the public good that the officer who is responsible to the country should have the selection of those who are to carry out his orders. A complete chain of responsibility can never be established unless all the staff are men whose peculiarities are known to the Commander-in-Chief, and on whose zealous and friendly co-operation he can fully rely. The same argument holds good with regard to the

second

second officer, be he commander or first lieutenant, in every ship. The captains should select, under certain restrictions, and we should then see discipline maintained in a more harmonious manner. Secondly, we earnestly trust that no ignorant popular outcry will lead to the abolition of the class of Navigating Officers. It is a mistake to suppose that, because one carefully trained officer is appointed to take charge of the details of navigation, therefore all the other officers, from the captain downwards, must be supposed to know nothing about it. The captain ought to be a good seaman, a good navigator, a good gunner, a good drill; but he has to superintend all, and time would fail him for his other duties if he were to attempt personally to perform the hourly duties which devolve upon the navigating officer. Constant observations for the latitude and longitude by day and night, constant observations to correct the compasses and establish their deviation, variation, and local attraction; the care of all the sounding apparatus, the certainty that men can steer and take the lead, the care of the anchor-gear and ground-tackle and steering apparatus; the care of the charts, of the instruments, and of the winding and rating of the chronometers; the care of the stowage of the hold, of the economical issue and use of stores, and of the accurate survey of unknown anchorages, the due record of every occurrence in the ship's log; at sea constant attention to the position on the chart, and, in going in and out of harbour, the supervision of the pilotage, give him quite enough for one man to attend to. If you make the captain do all these duties personally, you must appoint another captain to do captain's work; if you leave it to be done by any lieutenant, it will not, in many cases, be so well done as at present, because a young lieutenant will ordinarily be selected for the duty, and the duties named require practice and experience. Besides, the navigating officer is expected to be a pilot for the English Channel, and, in war, ships will be lost if you have not an officer so qualified. We trust, therefore, that this valuable class will not be improved out of the English Navy.

The Admiralty, however, if not prepared to add the details of the navigating duties to the already serious labours of a captain, seem to have determined that he shall at least be responsible for the duties of the medical officers. Among the economies of the present Ministry has been a reduction of the numbers of medical naval officers, and their want may be seriously felt at any moment. But in the Navy, not only medical but surgical duties are required. The medical duty may perhaps  
be

be performed if the Admiralty will only reprint, for the use of officers, Smollett's famous advice: 'When the sick sailor complains, give him the key of the medicine chest and stop his grog, and he will be sure to give you no more trouble.' But the surgical duty cannot be so easily disposed of. It will not do to hand the surgical instruments to the wounded man.

We have one slight glimpse of the working of this economy. A piratical outrage had occurred in the Straits of Malacca. Fifteen persons claiming British protection had been murdered. Captain Robinson, of the 'Rinaldo,' was called upon by the Governor of the Straits to inflict the necessary punishment upon these freebooters. He at once proceeded to perform his duty in a manner that shews that there is not any decay of spirit in the officers and men of the Navy. Condign punishment is inflicted, and in doing so eleven of our men are wounded, and there is no medical officer to attend to their wounds. It is gratifying to believe that, so soon as this was known at the Admiralty a medical officer was appointed to the 'Rinaldo.'

The wasted time of Parliament this Session prevented that inquiry into the supply of stores for the Navy, and especially of coal, which is so necessary; but the fright which Government received last year has led them to do something to replenish the foreign coal depôts, though we fear the quality is still very inferior. Fortunately, too, for the country, Mr. Childers and Mr. Baxter have left the Admiralty. We may hope for honest and straightforward information from Mr. Goschen, so far as he knows; and we have a political Secretary who is not likely to undertake, on his own unchecked responsibility, the duties of purchase and sale.

The present Government have, however, added nothing to the ironclad navy since they came into office, except completing, in a dilatory manner, the ships commenced by their predecessors. We have—

#### FIRST CLASS.

Hercules,	built by the Duke of Somerset.
Sultan	„ Conservative Government.

#### SECOND CLASS.

Audacious	„	Conservative Government.
Invincible	„	„
Iron Duke	„	„
Swiftsure	„	„
Vanguard	„	„
Triumph	„	„

#### THIRD

**THIRD CLASS.**

Bellerophon	„	Duke of Somerset.
Lord Warden	„	„
Minotaur	„	„
Agincourt	„	„
Northumberland	„	„
Royal Alfred	„	„
Repulse	„	„
Penelope	„	„
Lord Clyde	„	„

**FOURTH CLASS.**

Achilles	„	Duke of Somerset.
Royal Oak	„	„
Prince Consort	„	„
Valiant	„	„
Caledonia	„	„
Ocean	„	„
Hector	„	„
Zealous	„	„

**FIFTH CLASS.**

Black Prince	„	Duke of Somerset.
Warrior	„	„
Defence	„	„
Resistance	„	„

**SIXTH CLASS.**

Pallas	„	Duke of Somerset.
Favorite	„	„

The 'Monarch' is the Duke of Somerset's also, and 'Glatton' and 'Hotspur' are the creation of the Conservative Admiralty. The 'Rupert' is, indeed, the only vessel which is the creation of Mr. Childers's Administration. For we have already discussed the monstrosities which, under the names of 'Devastation,' 'Thunderer,' 'Cyclops,' 'Hecate,' 'Gorgon,' and 'Hydra,' disfigure alike the Navy List and the sea, and have been reported on so unfavourably by the Committee on Design, and none of which are yet ready for commission.

We must, however, admit that this Government has done something to increase our gunboat classes. The 'Staunch,' built by Mr. Corry, is an admirable example, and some ten, at least, of a similar type are in course of construction which will do good service in the protection of our ports.

We have not space to go into the evil effects of Mr. Childers's scheme of Naval Retirement. Suffice it to say that it has arrested all promotion, and entirely destroyed the spirit of just expectation

expectation of promotion which formerly encouraged, in ever so slight a degree, the zealous naval officer. The country was persuaded into the belief that the considerable sum it had to pay for compulsory retirement would give a flow of promotion and younger officers. The reply is, that there is literally now hardly any promotion, and that in the year now elapsed only 1 flag-officer, 6 captains, 13 commanders, and 27 lieutenants have been promoted, and there have been 71 cadets entered; whilst 977 officers in the lower ranks pine hopelessly for expected advancement. And yet still the best men of all ranks are arbitrarily compelled to retire. Take two cases. Vice-Admiral Sir Henry Kellet is Commander-in-Chief in China,—no man more active, or, looking to his great reputation and experience in those seas, more difficult to replace. Yet on a given day he becomes sixty-five, and his command ends, to the great loss of the country. In the spring certain information was required as to some of our ironclads, which were unjustly suspected. Captain Richard Ashmore Powell, who had recently served as Commodore in the Pacific, was an officer who had great general and special experience in the service and in command of ironclads. His opinion was justly looked upon as exceptionally valuable. He was appointed to the 'Vanguard,' to report upon that ship and others of her class. Within a month or two of his appointment, and before he had reported, he became fifty-five. He was anxious to serve, he is hale and active, and no better or more trusted officer exists; but the Admiralty, before they could receive a Report from an officer appointed by them a short time before, with the approbation of the profession, suddenly cut this experienced officer short in his career and send him into retirement.

The command of the Channel Fleet itself—which was to be a school for admirals, as well as other officers and seamen—is given in a manner which shews that all the boast about obtaining an efficient list of flag-officers, by a costly and cruel retirement scheme, has ended without effecting the desired result. Mr. Childers's private secretary commands the Flying Squadron; Sir Sydney Dacres' flag-captain is appointed to succeed the ill-used Admiral Wellesley in command of the Channel Fleet, this officer having been constantly employed in good commands for many years past.

The whole profession is in a state of ferment. There is no longer the happy aspiration, 'Shall I live to fight a successful action? Shall I enrol my name on the record of fame? Shall I too achieve a peerage or Westminster Abbey?' but the sole question is, 'How soon shall I be forced to retire? how soon will

will my neighbour be forced to retire? and which of the manifold schemes of retirement will be the most profitable?'

The Admiralty, as administered by Mr. Childers, has signally failed; but we hope to see, even if the Liberals continue in office, that the Navy shall again become an honourable profession, and not a grasping, cheese-paring trade. Unless this happens, and happens speedily, the public spirit which has animated in happier days our naval councils is gone for ever.

ART. VI.—1. *Report on Turnpike Trusts.* 1871.

2. *Return of Railway Amalgamations.* 1868.

3. *Annual Railway Statistics. Public General Acts relating to Railways. Tramways Act.* 1870.

4. *Gas and Waterworks Clauses Acts.* 1847.

5. *Reports on Telegraphs.* 1871.

6. *Local Government Bill.* 1871.

**T**HERE is always danger that a new principle, when it has once found acceptance, will be invested with a degree of absoluteness and universality which no principle of human action can deserve; and that it will be applied without reference to the circumstances under which alone it is true, or to the modifications to which, under all circumstances, it is subject. And there is the further danger, that when this is found out, a reaction may set in against the principle itself, and cause it to be abandoned in cases to which it properly applies. The latter danger is, perhaps, the more serious of the two.

Something of this kind seems to have happened in the case of one of the leading principles, if not the leading principle, of political economy; viz. the doctrine 'that individual interest, if let alone, will do more to produce wealth than any organised action of Government,' and of the inference that this motive power, coupled with its natural governor, competition, is sufficient to regulate all cases where one man produces what another wants. The great masters of the science have, of course, always recognised, more or less distinctly, the limits of this principle; but in practice and common opinion it has often been carried too far. At the present moment we are exposed to all the dangers of reaction. There is a strong tendency on the part of the public to call for Government interference on all sorts of pretences in all sorts of cases, in many of which it can do nothing but harm. At such a moment it is not inopportune to endeavour to ascertain in one special and exceptional department of human industry  
how

how far the above principle is applicable; what are its limitations; and, where it fails, what can be substituted for it.

No one can doubt that there is a large and constantly increasing class of industrial undertakings, which are of the utmost value to the public, and which return ample profit to the capital and industry bestowed on them, but which yet are not and cannot be regulated by competition. It is a matter of some speculative interest to ascertain what these undertakings are, and what are the characteristics which they possess in common, so that we may be able to recognise and define them. It is a matter of much more serious and practical interest to ascertain what is the best way in which they may be managed and regulated so as to obtain the greatest possible advantage from them.

It would be difficult and probably fruitless to attempt to deal with these questions *à priori* or by way of deduction. The more practical and satisfactory, though more tedious, plan, is to take the several undertakings of which we are speaking in detail, to ascertain their several characteristics, and then to examine the manner in which they have been hitherto dealt with, and the manner in which it may be possible to deal with them hereafter.

The following is, so far as we can ascertain, a tolerably complete list of these undertakings:—Harbours and natural Navigations, Canals, Docks, Lighthouses, Roads, Bridges and Ferries, Railways, Tramways, Gasworks, Waterworks, the Post-office, and Telegraphs.

In some of these, *e. g.* Docks, Railways, Gasworks and Telegraphs, competition has been attempted; whilst others have either in the hands of private undertakers or of Government been monopolies from their commencement.

But in none of them has competition proved to be successful, or even, in the long run, possible. It is of great importance that this point should be kept steadily in view, since it is only in those cases which competition cannot regulate, and in which monopoly is inevitable, that the questions we are discussing can arise.

Is there, then, any general characteristic by which these undertakings, or others of a similar kind, may be recognised and distinguished from undertakings which are governed by the ordinary law of competition.

It is not *large capital*, for though most of them require large capital, some gas and water companies, which are complete monopolies, have capitals of not more than two or three thousand pounds; whilst other enterprises, with enormous capitals, *e. g.* banks, insurance offices, shipping companies, are not monopolies.

It is not *positive law*, for few of them have a monopoly expressly granted or confirmed by law; and in most, if not all, of the cases where such a monopoly happens to have been so granted or confirmed, it would have existed without such grant or confirmation.

They all agree in *supplying necessities*. But this alone is no test, for butchers and bakers supply necessities.

Most, if not all, of them have *exclusive possession or occupation of certain peculiarly favourable portions of land*,—e. g. docks, of the river-side; gas and water companies, of the streets. But this is only true in a limited sense of such undertakings as the post-office, telegraphs, or even of roads and railways; and a mine, a quarry, or a fishery, has equally possession of specially favoured sites without generally or necessarily becoming a monopoly.

The article or convenience supplied by them is *local* and cannot be dissevered from the possession or user of the land or premises occupied by the undertaking. The undertaking does not produce an article to be carried away and sold in a distant market, but a convenience in the use of the undertaking itself, as in the case of harbours, roads, railways, post-office, and telegraphs; or an article sold and used on the spot where it is produced, as in the case of gas and water.

Again, in most of these cases the convenience afforded or article produced is one which can be increased almost indefinitely, without proportionate increase of the original plant; so that to set up a rival scheme is an extravagant waste of capital.

There is also in some of these undertakings, and notoriously in the cases of the Post-office, of telegraphs, and of railways, another consideration, viz., the paramount importance of certainty and harmonious arrangement. In the case of most industries—e. g. in that of a baker—it would be easier to know what to do if there were one instead of several to choose from; but this consideration is in such a case not paramount to considerations of cheapness. In the case of the Post-office and Telegraphs, certainty and harmony are the paramount considerations. The inconvenience would be extreme if we had to consider and choose the mode of conveyance every time a letter is dispatched, or if a telegram sent from any one station could not be dispatched to all other stations.

The following then appear to be the characteristics of undertakings which tend to become monopolies:—

1. What they supply is a necessary.
2. They occupy peculiarly favoured spots or lines of land.
3. The article or convenience they supply is used at the place where and in connection with the plant or machinery by which it is supplied.

4. This

4. This article or convenience can in general be largely, if not indefinitely, increased, without proportionate increase in plant and capital.

5. Certainty and harmonious arrangement, which can only be attained by unity, are paramount considerations.

These conclusions are neither as clear or as complete as could be wished. And though interesting in a speculative point of view, they do not lead immediately to any important practical consequence. But the further question which we proposed to consider, viz., what is the best mode of dealing with these undertakings, is one which has a direct bearing on many problems—economical, political, and social—which are pressing for immediate solution.

The two great alternatives seem to be :

(1.) Ownership and management by Private Enterprise and Capital.

(2.) Ownership and management by Government, Central or Local.

In the former we include all cases in which those who undertake the work derive personal gain from capital which they invest in it ; and in the latter all cases, whether of management by the central government, by municipal bodies, by local boards, or by public trusts or commissions, in which no private capital is invested, except by way of loan, and no profit made by individuals.

Before entering in any detail upon the examination of these two alternatives, it will be interesting to see how they have been regarded by competent authorities in this country and in France respectively. The following are Mr. Mill's observations on this subject ('Political Economy,' vol. ii. chap. xi. s. 11):—

'The third exception which I shall notice to the doctrine that Government cannot manage the affairs of individuals as well as the individuals themselves, has reference to the great class of cases in which the individuals can only manage the concern by delegated agency, and in which the so-called private management is, in point of fact, hardly better entitled to be called management by the persons interested, than administration by a public officer. Whatever, if left to spontaneous agency, can only be done by joint-stock associations, will often be as well, and sometimes better done, as far as the actual work is concerned by the State. Government management is, indeed, proverbially jobbing, careless, and ineffective; but so likewise has generally been joint-stock management. The directors of a joint-stock company, it is true, are always shareholders; but also the members of a government are invariably tax-payers; and in the case of directors, no more than in that of governments, is their proportional share of the benefits of good management, equal to the interest they

may possibly have in mis-management, even without reckoning the interest of their ease. It may be objected, that the shareholders, in their collective character, exercise a certain control over the directors, and have almost always full power to remove them from office. Practically, however, the difficulty of exercising this power is found to be so great, that it is hardly ever exercised except in cases of such flagrantly unskilful, or, at least, unsuccessful management, as would generally produce the ejection from office of managers appointed by the Government. Against the security afforded by meetings of shareholders, and by their individual inspection and enquiries, may be placed the greater publicity and more active discussion and comment, to be expected in free countries with regard to affairs in which the general government takes part. The defects, therefore, of Government management, do not seem to be necessarily much greater, if necessarily greater at all, than those of management by joint stock.

‘The true reasons in favour of leaving to voluntarily associations all such things as they are competent to perform, would exist in equal strength if it were certain that the work itself would be as well or better done by public officers. These reasons have been already pointed out: the mischief of overloading the chief functionaries of Government with demands on their attention, and diverting them from duties which they alone can discharge, to objects which can be sufficiently well attained without them: the danger of unnecessarily swelling the direct power and indirect influence of Government, and multiplying occasions of collision between its agents and private citizens; and the still greater inexpediency of concentrating in a dominant bureaucracy, all the skill and experience in the management of large interests, and all the power of organized action, existing in the community: a practice which keeps the citizens in a relation to the Government like that of children to their guardians and is a main cause of the inferior capacity for political life which has hitherto characterised the over governed countries of the Continent, whether with or without the forms of representative government.

‘But although, for these reasons, most things which are likely to be even tolerably done by voluntary associations, should, generally speaking, be left to them, it does not follow that the manner in which those associations perform their work should be entirely uncontrolled by the Government. There are many cases in which the agency, of whatever nature, by which a service is performed, is certain, from the nature of the case, to be virtually single; in which a practical monopoly, with all the power it confers of taxing the community, cannot be prevented from existing. I have already more than once adverted to the case of the Gas and Water Companies, among which, though perfect freedom is allowed to competition none really takes place, and practically they are found to be even more irresponsible and unapproachable by individual complaints than the Government. There are the expenses without the advantages of plurality of agency; and the charge made for services which cannot be dispensed with, is, in substance, quite as much compulsory taxation as if imposed by

**Law:** there are few householders who make any distinction between their "water rate" and their other local taxes. In the case of these particular services the reasons preponderate in favour of their being performed, like the paving and cleansing of the streets, not certainly by the general Government of the State, but by the municipal authorities of the town, and the expense defrayed as even now it in fact is by a local rate. But in the many analogous cases which it is best to resign to voluntary agency the community needs some other security for the fit performance of the service than the interest of the managers; and it is part of the Government either to subject the business to reasonable conditions for the general advantage, or to retain such power over it, that the profits of the monopoly may at least be obtained for the public. This applies to the case of a road, a canal, or a railway. These are always, in a great degree, practical monopolies; and a government, which concedes such monopoly unreservedly to a private company, does much the same thing as if it allowed an individual or an association to levy any tax they chose for their own benefit on all the malt produced in the country, or on all the cotton imported into it. To make the concession for a limited time is generally justifiable, on the principle which justifies patents for inventions; but the State should either reserve to itself a reversionary property in such public works, or should retain, and freely exercise, the right of fixing a maximum of fares and charges, and from time to time, varying that maximum. It is perhaps necessary to remark, that the State may be the proprietor of canals or railways without itself working them; and that they will almost always be better worked by means of a company renting the railway or canal for a limited period from the State.

The following is an extract from an article on monopolies in the French '*Dictionnaire de Economie Politique*.' Coquelin et Guillaumin. Paris, 1854. Vol. ii. Art. Monopolies, p. 224 :—

'In France the initiative and direction of all these works (*i.e.* harbours, internal navigations, roads, bridges, railways) belongs to the central authority, acting by means of a numerous and expensive body, the engineers of roads and bridges ("*ingenieurs des ponts et chaussées*"). Most of the great channels of communication are established at the cost of the public, according to the schemes or designs of these engineering officials; the schemes which are started independently of them are subjected to their control; and it scarcely ever happens that such schemes are accepted by the authorities against their advice. The result of this régime is, that in respect of works of this character the spirit of enterprise is wholly discouraged, and that scarcely anything is accomplished except at the instance and by the impulse of the body of official engineers, an impulse which, for reasons which we have given under the title "*Fonctionnaires*," is incomparably less powerful and less fertile than that of free industry. Thus, none of the great improvements in artificial channels of communication, or in means of transport which have been introduced within the last fifty years,

years, have originated in France—macadamisation of roads, railroads, locomotives, suspension bridges, steamboats, &c., all are the work of the free and independent engineers of England or America. The monopoly of our official engineers is as little adapted to improve and utilize inventions as to start them. And although our country is one of those in which industry is most highly developed, and in which a multiplicity of the most perfect channels of communication—*e. g.* of railways—is the most necessary, we have remained in this respect far behind the United States, England, Belgium, &c. A further result of the French system is that the channels of communication are distributed over the country without any real proportion to the wants of its several districts, and that their expense, instead of being supported, as in England, by tolls levied on those who use them, and in proportion to the use they make of them, falls, without reference to the service rendered, on all contributors alike.'

It is obvious that the two writers have been influenced in the above observations by the different modes in which these enterprises have been developed in the two countries. The English philosopher has been struck by the evils arising from the English practice of granting unrestricted monopolies to private persons. The French writer, on the other hand, has been more alive to the want of enterprise which has followed upon the French practice of leaving such undertakings to be originated by Government. The observations of both writers are undoubtedly just; each from his own point of view, and any discussion of the subject will be imperfect which does not take both elements into full consideration.

Shortly stated, the following are the arguments in favour of Government or public management, and they are no doubt extremely strong:—

1. These enterprises fall into the hands of Joint-Stock Companies, and Joint-Stock management, as Mr. Mill points out, has by no means the advantages in energy and self-interest over public government which enterprises managed by individuals have.

2. There is greater unity in management and certainty in use.

3. The public get the benefit of any profit, either in reduction of price or in relief of taxation; consequently the interests of the producers and consumers is the same, and there is not the same temptation either to excessive charges or to needless investment of capital, as there is in the case of Joint-Stock Companies.

On the other hand, we must not forget that if Joint-Stock Companies have some of the disadvantages, they have also some of the advantages of Government management. The chairman and officers of some of the great Joint-Stock Companies have a pride in

in the well-doing of their undertaking similar to that of a public administrator, or a zealous town clerk. Again, Government management is proverbially sluggish, is open to Parliamentary and Municipal jobbing—is liable to be influenced by sentiment and impulse rather than by a cool consideration of the wants to be supplied, and thus is not unlikely to select wrong fields for its energy. It is not likely that private enterprise would ever have undertaken the Caledonian Canal, nor will private enterprise undertake the construction of those great harbours of refuge which landmen and philanthropists are urging on the Government, but which shipowners, underwriters, and sailors do not want, and will not pay for.

But the far more important argument against committing all these undertakings to Government is, that Capital will find its own way and do what is wanted; and Government, whether General or Local, will not.

This is principally due to the activity which individuals display in seeking their own profit as compared with the sluggishness of public governing bodies. To this action of individual interest special circumstances have in the course of the last and the present centuries largely contributed. The history of personal rights and property has, as Sir H. S. Maine tells us, been one of constant development, and, in earlier periods of our history, the community, as compared with the individual, played a larger part than at present. Accordingly, the earliest of the undertakings we are speaking of, *e.g.*, the maintenance and improvement of our natural Harbours and Navigations, and the oldest of our Roads and Bridges, were originally managed by public bodies. Towards the end of last century, and the beginning of this, various circumstances contributed to effect a change. In public opinion, and in the eye of the law, the weight attached to personal rights had become greater. Political economy taught the superior energy of individual enterprise. Capital accumulated and was seeking investment. Our laws of partnership, too, were altered, so as to enable the capital of many individuals to be united for a single purpose. And, lastly, engineering science made gigantic strides, and opened out the way for industrial undertakings such as the world had never seen before. Hence, for the last 80 or 100 years, the current has set in the direction of private enterprise, and by this means the country has been supplied with necessities and conveniences which public management would never have afforded.

Of late there has been somewhat of a reaction; there is now a disposition to strengthen and improve Local and Municipal  
Institutions,

Institutions, and to invest them with wider functions. It seems probable, too, that this movement will increase. But it will be long before it does for us what private enterprise has done and is doing.

Whilst, however, private enterprise has done so much for us, it must be admitted that there has been little thought or foresight about the ultimate results of the huge monopolies we have been creating. The few conditions by which Parliament has sought to restrict them have been useless, and, occasionally, worse than useless. And, looking to the difficulty there will be in setting matters right in the face of this gigantic Joint-Stock Company interest, it is not surprising that the public should sometimes be tempted to be ungrateful for what it has done for us, and to look upon it as a Frankenstein which it would be well to put out of the way.

These general observations will be best illustrated and supported by a glance at the history of the several undertakings to which we have referred.

1. *Harbours and natural Navigations.*—The improvement of these were among the first of large public works. They originated before the era of joint-stock companies, and, with the exception of a few small harbours owned by large landowners, are, and always have been, in the hands of some public body, *i.e.*, either of a Municipal Corporation, or a Public Trust, or Commission, and not of profit-making companies.

An evil of considerable magnitude has arisen in cases where the public body exercising this power is no longer the representative of the trade which uses the harbour, as, for instance, where the Town of Liverpool owned the Liverpool Docks, or where, as is now the case, the magistrates of Cheshire own the wealthy navigation of the Weaver, and pay out of taxes on trade what ought to be paid by the county rates of Cheshire. In such cases the locality is too apt to tax the trade of the country for its own benefit. But even in cases such as these, the sea—greatest of free traders—generally limits the growth of the evil. If taxes are too high at one port, ships can, in most cases, seek another.

There is one case in which the principle of placing harbours in the hands of a public trust has been recently applied in a very remarkable way, and with great success, *viz.*, the improvement of the important navigation of the Danube. This has been intrusted to an International Commission representing the different maritime nations interested in the trade of the Danube, and it has carried on its work so efficiently as to develop an enormous traffic. There is the greater reason for mentioning

mentioning this case at the present moment, since it affords a precedent for endeavouring to deal in a similar way with the still more important case of the Suez Canal, which is now in a very bad financial condition, and which, if it remains in the hands of a private company, is likely to suffer hereafter from all the evils of monopoly, aggravated by international jealousy.

2. *Canals.*—These were amongst the first products of the new engineering era, and have been, and now are, almost entirely in the hands of joint-stock companies. They have, however, been generally superseded or swallowed up by railways, and are now of little importance. But for this we should probably have heard many complaints of their profits and charges.

3. *Docks* were also an early product of the engineering era, and, consequently, they were often made in the first instance by private capital. On a very rough estimate made from the share lists, it seems that the capital of joint-stock companies now invested in docks amounts to nearly 15 millions. From the limited area in each port available for docks, they are often, so far as the port itself is concerned, very special monopolies. But the sea, as we have said, is the greatest of free traders. The rivalry of other ports generally prevents any very bad effect from a dock monopoly, and rouses the trade of the port to put a stop to it when it becomes oppressive. Partly for this reason, and partly because it has been found that rivalry in the same port between competing dock and harbour authorities creates confusion, difficulty, quarrels, and expense, whilst harmonious arrangement is of paramount importance to trade, the tendency for the last 20 years has been to hand over the management and construction of docks to local trusts representing the whole interests of the port and making no profit. Thus docks made by private companies at Sunderland, Liverpool, and Birkenhead, have been in late years handed over to public trusts, whilst at Newcastle and Shields, at Glasgow and Greenock, at Dundee, Leith, Belfast, and Aberdeen, and other ports, docks recently made have been constructed, and are managed by public bodies representing the dock ratepayers. There are some instances in which (as was formerly the case in Liverpool, and as is now the case with the Dock Company of Hull and with the Town Council of Bristol) actual legal monopolies have been improvidently given to the owners of one set of docks, by means of charges leviable by them throughout the whole extent of the port; and the evil of such monopoly is felt, not so much in extravagant charges, as in the suppression or taxation of rival docks. In such cases the true remedy seems to be never to allow any managers of such undertakings to make charges except for the services

services they render, and never to allow any body to get a monopoly of the docks in any harbour unless it fairly represents all the trade of the harbour.

4. *Lighthouses* have now, for some years, been made by the Governments of all civilized countries. But in England, which was the first to build them, many of them were originally granted by the Crown to private persons with power to take tolls: and it is only since 1830 that the lighthouses so granted have been bought up and placed under public control. Even now the coasts of backward Turkey are lighted by a French Joint-Stock Company, and there are complaints of the profits it is said to be making.

On the proper mode of managing lighthouses there is little to be said. It is admitted on all hands that they are necessarily a monopoly—that they must be in the hands of a central authority, and ought not to be a matter of profit to private persons. Whether they should be paid for in the shape of tolls on ships, or by the public exchequer, does not seem to be a question raising any important issue of economical principle. In both cases they are paid for more or less directly by the general consumer; in the one case, through the medium of freights—in the other, more directly by general taxation. The former plan has the practical advantage of affording a good test of the value of any proposed new works, in the willingness or unwillingness of the shipping interest, who are the immediate payers, to saddle themselves with the necessary tolls.

5. *Roads*.—These were originally made by the local authority, *i. e.* by the parish. But under the demand for channels of through communication to be used by wheeled vehicles, and with the engineering improvements of the last century, the system of turnpike trusts grew up, a system under which private capital was obtained in the shape of loans secured upon tolls, and the management placed in the hands of a body of trustees, partly public, partly private. The tendency of late years has been to do away with this system—to improve Highway Boards—to place the whole of the roads under their management—to abolish turnpike-tolls, and to pay expenses out of rates. The importance of turnpike trusts is diminishing yearly—partly for the above reason, partly on account of the transfer of through traffic to railways. The number of turnpike trusts, according to the last published Return,\* was 952; their income 898,289*l.*, and their capital debt 2,883,280*l.*,—a mere flea-bite compared with Joint-Stock Company capital, and annually decreasing.

---

\* Report by Secretary of State on Turnpike Trusts (378.). 1871.

Under these circumstances the management of roads calls for no special regulation. Turnpike-tolls are a nuisance; but they are in a fair way to be abolished, and all the roads in the kingdom are likely soon to be in the hands of local authorities and supported by local rates.

6. *Bridges and Ferries*.—These form part of roads, and have been similarly dealt with, except in certain special cases, such as the bridges over the Thames, which, as we know, have been originally built by private enterprise on the security of tolls, and which are now gradually being bought up by public bodies. It is not likely that many more bridges will be constructed on this principle. But if they are, it is obviously desirable that the concession should be for a limited term, and that in no case should it be accompanied, as has too often been the case, with a prohibition to set up another bridge or ferry within a certain distance, which, of course, has the effect of conferring a strict legal monopoly.

7. *Railways*.—These have all been made since the setting in of the engineering and joint-stock era, and are in the hands of Joint-Stock Companies. They are the great example, for good and for evil, of the joint-stock system, and will probably prove its greatest difficulty. The subject of railways alone, if exhaustively treated, would far exceed the limits of an article; but there are one or two points which it is impossible to omit in dealing with the general question of industrial monopolies.

The development of railway communication in Great Britain has been such as no Government management, however good, could possibly have produced. The number of lines, the number of trains, and the general comfort and convenience, are beyond those of any other country. If trunk lines had been laid out by Government, there would probably have been one main line to the North. There are now four. The capital invested amounts to 520,000,000*l.*, and the number of miles of railway constructed to upwards of 15,000.

Competition has wholly failed. It is true that it has been tried in the most foolish and expensive way, through the medium of haphazard decisions of Parliamentary Committees; but it is evident that, under no conditions could it have been successful or permanent. The waste of money has been great; and the result is and must be monopoly. Each great Company fights off, buys up, or amalgamates with, its original rivals, till it gets a district to itself; and it then makes alliances as to rates and fares with its great neighbours so as effectually to prevent competition. There may be an occasional struggle for some special local traffic, such as the recent fight for the carriage of  
coals;

coals; but the public are little interested in it, for it is sure to end either in the victory of one or other Company, or in an arrangement between them, and, either way, monopoly. There may be also, when two railways run trains to the same place, a competition in the speed of trains; but this is extravagant in cost and of doubtful benefit to the public.

The extent to which amalgamation, and consequently monopoly, has been carried, may be seen by a Return moved for by Mr. Cave in 1868.\* From this Return it appeared that in the seven preceding years upwards of 500 Bills had been passed, containing amalgamations or working arrangements. In 1866, out of 13,954 miles open, belonging to 353 original Companies, 12,221 miles were worked by 28 Companies. According to the Annual Railway Return of 1870, the number of original Companies is 450, owning 15,145 miles of railway; but the number of working Companies is only 103.

Nor must it be supposed that it is the interest of the public to resist monopoly. Unity of management, through booking, correspondence of trains, are so important, that the public lose more by the division of authority and responsibility than they gain by competition. In general the large Companies possessing large districts serve the public better than Companies with small and divided or straggling districts, and when large Companies interfere with one another, the result is inconvenience, and not cheapness. The writer of this article has had much experience of a great railway, which in the course of thirty or forty miles cuts three other great railways at six several points. Where they would naturally compete with one another, they have arranged the fares. But at no one of the six points at which this railway cuts the others is there anything like through-booking, or joint-arrangement, so that it is almost impracticable for travellers on one of the lines to make free use of the others.

Ireland, however, is the best instance of evil arising from numerous companies, competing, or rather fighting, with one another. In that country the number of original companies is 42, and of working companies 21, the mileage 2000, and the capital 26,875,043*l.*; so that the number of working companies as compared with capital or mileage is far greater than in England and Scotland. The average capital of lines worked by one company in the United Kingdom is upwards of a million, and of mileage 150, whilst in Ireland the same average gives 127,800*l.* capital and 95 miles to each working company; and it is notorious that the service is much worse than it is in England. There is no

---

\* Parliamentary Paper, No. 242, 1868.

arrangement between companies whose lines form part of the same system. The larger companies fight with one another, and often oppress the smaller companies in the hopes of buying them up more cheaply. In the meantime the shareholders and the public suffer, and trade is paralysed. There are other complaints of the Irish system, but the greatest evil of all is the want of harmony, which cannot exist without monopoly.

But whilst monopoly is thus inevitable and desirable, it must not be forgotten that the interest of the Companies is to a certain extent only that of the Public. It is the interest of the Companies to develop traffic, so long as the development produces profit proportioned to the increased outlay. But it is quite possible that developments may be required which would pay their own expenses and be very useful to the public without bringing an additional penny of profit to the Shareholders. For instance, local branches may be much wanted, the traffic from which would only pay their expenses by benefiting the district, but would leave no profit to the Company. And, again, as regards fares; it is much better for the Public that a hundred passengers should be carried for sixpence than fifty for a shilling. But it is easier, cheaper, and in every way better for the shareholders to carry fifty for a shilling. Again, Companies have no interest, or too often think they have none, in uniting together and developing each others' traffic. Each Company is seeking to oust, to buy up, or to amalgamate with its neighbour on the best terms for itself, and does its best to keep its traffic from going on to its neighbour's lines.

On all these points the action of Railway Companies may be directly adverse to that of the Public. But no effectual attempt has been made to foresee and provide for these cases. Still less has any attempt been made to enable the Public Exchequer to reap any ultimate benefit from the large profits which these great monopolies were expected to make, and will probably yet make. The Legislature has provided an elaborate code of laws for the protection of landowners, of road trustees, and of gas and water companies; and there are many doubtful and illogical enactments having the safety of passengers for their object. There have also been provisions of the most elaborate kind fixing the capital of the railway companies, their borrowing powers, and the financial arrangements of the shareholders *inter se*,—matters which really concern themselves, and not the public. These matters, according to the wiser principles of recent legislation concerning all other joint-stock companies, are left to the partners themselves, and to the operation of the ordinary law of debtor

debtor and creditor, from which railway companies have, most foolishly, been excluded.

But precautions to secure to the public the greatest possible convenience and cheapness, or to reserve to the public the ultimate profit of these monopolies, there are practically none. The only attempts in this direction are the following feeble and futile enactments:—

1. The tolls and charges on all railways are limited by their special Acts. This limitation is really of little value, since they are almost always considerably higher than the rate which the company find it their interest to charge. Indeed, it is obvious that without power to revise the tolls periodically according to the altered circumstances of a railway, any attempt to fix them once for all by anticipation must be nugatory. As population, capital, trade, and manufactures increase, traffic increases also, and a charge which would have been moderate if levied on the small traffic which existed when the railway was made, becomes exorbitant when multiplied by the increase of developed traffic. The interest of the companies in developing traffic, although, as above noticed, it is under certain circumstances an insufficient safeguard, is yet a better safeguard than any standard of tolls and charges fixed at the time when the company commences operations.

2. In some of the earlier private bills Parliament adopted its favourite notion of limiting the profits of the company to a 10 per cent. dividend. And in 1844 an Act\* was passed enabling the Treasury in the case of any railway constructed after the 1st of January, 1845, upon the expiration of 21 years from the passing of its private act, and in the event of its profits for three years exceeding 10 per cent, to revise the tolls. The Treasury were in like manner, after 21 years, enabled to purchase the railway. But the power of revision of tolls was to be accompanied by a guarantee from the State of a constant 10 per cent. dividend; and the purchase was only to be effected at the rate of 25 years' purchase of the actual annual profits, or if they should be less than 10 per cent., at an additional price to be fixed by arbitration; and neither revision nor purchase were to be effected without a special Act of Parliament.

How ineffectual any such limitation of profits would be, if exercised, we shall see in the case of Gas Companies. In the case of Railway Companies the folly or knavery of projectors, and the mismanagement of private bills by Parliament, has hitherto prevented a 10 per cent. dividend from being reached.

---

\* 7 & 8 Vict. c. 85.

As regards the power of purchase, the conditions attached to it, viz., that the power should only apply to Companies entirely made after 1844, that the price should be determined as above mentioned, and that the purchase should only be effected by a special Act of Parliament, reduce the power to little more than a very unnecessary notice to the Companies that the Government might at some future time bring before Parliament a scheme for the purchase of railways. Nay, the Companies actually procured in the one of recitals of the Act in question a recognition of the very questionable principle that it was not the meaning of Parliament that Companies should be exposed to competition with railways owned or conducted by Government.

3. Provisions were also made by Parliament\* requiring companies to carry poor persons at what were then considered cheap rates, giving to the companies in return exemption in respect of these trains from passenger-duty. Here, again, the impossibility of determining charges beforehand is well illustrated. It has become the most profitable part of the business of many Companies to carry passengers at less than the parliamentary cheap fares, and the only result of the enactment is an unjust exemption from general taxation, a constant dispute between the companies and the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and an inducement to the Companies to disarrange their natural traffic in order to get the benefit of the exemption.

4. It was not even thought expedient† in making the concessions of these great monopolies to the Companies, to require from them in return any service in carrying the mails. The Post-office can, it is true, require them to carry mails and mail-guards, but for all such service it has to pay just as any private person would do. In the present state of things, in rural districts, where the station has superseded the old village and is the centre of communication for the country side, it is obvious that the Post-office as well as the Telegraph should be there concentrated, and that the station-master should be postmaster, and for all districts, whether of town or country, it is desirable that the guards of all or any trains should take charge of and deliver letter-bags, as they do small parcels. These arrangements, however, under the present relations between the Post-office and the railways are impracticable.

5. As regards inter-communication between different railways and joint arrangements for continuous traffic, the legislature has been equally impotent. In 1854‡ it did provide in terms that the companies should afford reasonable facilities for forwarding

\* 1 & 2 Vict. c. 98. 7 & 8 Vict. c. 85. † 1 & 2 Vict. c. 98. 7 & 8 Vict. c. 85.  
‡ 17 & 18 Vict. c. 31.

each others' traffic, but it rendered the enactment nugatory by placing the power of enforcing it in the hands of the Court of Common Pleas! To expect a court of justice, whose organization and machinery are directed to the determination of a definite issue between A and B, to undertake the difficult administrative duty of settling an elaborate scheme for the arrival and departure of innumerable trains at innumerable stations, with all the requisite details of through-booking, &c., &c., is so absurd that one is almost surprised the legislature had the face to pass such an Act. It has, of course, as regards its main object, been a complete failure.

It may, therefore, be stated that whilst the Railways must become, and ought to become monopolies, no provision has been made either to secure to the Public the ultimate benefit of the monopoly, or to protect the Public against the monopolizing Companies, when their interests are at variance with those of the Public. To what extent, and how far any such provision can now be made, is a question of very great difficulty. It is one which presses for solution in Ireland, far more than in this country; although it may well be expected, that when the English Companies again become prosperous, and when, as we will hope may be the case, they are making the easy 10 per cent. dividend once contemplated, the public will not remain content under the present system. The question is complicated by the fact that Parliament has, by its gross mismanagement of Private Bill Legislation, contributed to the extravagant expenditure and consequent losses of the Companies, and ought not, therefore, to press hardly on them.

It is very difficult to avoid the conclusion that, whether in Ireland or in this country, there is only one remedy, viz., purchase by the Government. For any scheme which should force on the Companies by the authority of Parliament either unity of management, or revision of rates, the Government would have to pay the Companies nearly, if not quite, as much as they would have to pay for absolute purchase. And it is more than doubtful whether any system, under which a department of the Government should undertake to control the working of the Companies, would not make confusion worse than it is at present; beside ultimately involving Government responsibility, as much as if Government were the owners. Further, if at any time it should be determined that the Government are to purchase, they must certainly throw over existing Acts, and treat the matter as one of public necessity, giving the companies the present market value of their property, with a percentage for compulsory purchase.

The objections to purchase by the Government, and the difficulties of Government management, are obvious; and it is not likely that they will be faced in England, at any rate, until the evils of the present system are much more felt than they are at present.

One thing might possibly be done, viz., to enable local districts to make local railways, and charge the expense on the rates. This last provision will meet a difficulty which is likely to arise, whether the railways remain in the hands of private companies, or fall into the hands of the State. In the former case it is, as above noticed, probable that districts will want railways where it is not for the interest of the present Companies to make them; and in the latter case, without some such test of the need for a railway, and some such provision for local outlay, it will be most difficult to avoid parliamentary jobbing.

8. *Tramways.* These are almost a new enterprise, and the Legislature in dealing with this subject has had the benefit of the experience of the difficulties which have been felt in the case of Railway and Gas and Water Companies. If there is one species of undertaking, which a Municipal Authority ought to undertake, it is this. It is, and must be, a complete monopoly, as the streets which can admit tramways are limited. Tramways occupy and disturb the Road-way, which is in the hands of the Municipal Authority. They need strict Police regulation, and ought to be under the complete control of those who manage the Police. Finally, they require little capital, and promise to be very profitable, so that they might in this way relieve the over-burdened rates, without requiring large original expenditure. But such is the sluggishness of governing bodies, as compared with capital seeking investment, that of forty-six applications for powers to make tramways, which have been made within the last three years, all but one have been made by private Companies, and one only by a Municipal Authority.

This is the more remarkable, since Parliament in the 'General Tramways Act,'\* passed in 1870, expressly gave to the Municipal Authorities facilities for constructing tramways themselves, in priority to companies, and for charging the expenses on rates; whilst it also made the action of Tramway Companies dependent on the consent of the Municipal Authorities.

As regards the regulations imposed on tramway Companies, experience is yet too short to speak with any confidence. But an attempt was made by the 'Tramways Act,' 1870, so to limit these concessions, as to give the public the ultimate benefit of

\* 33 & 34 Vict. c. 78.

any profit to arise from the undertaking, and in the meantime to subject them to efficient control.

In the first place, as above noticed, the concession is not to be made to a Company if the Municipal Authority chooses to undertake the work; and then only with the consent of the Municipal Authority, and under such conditions as it may impose. When the tramway is opened, if it is not so worked as to give the public the full benefit of it, licences to use it on payment of certain tolls may be granted to other persons by the Board of Trade. When the promoting Company have had the use of the tramway for twenty-one years, the Municipal Authority may purchase it at the then actual value of the work itself, without any payment in respect of profits or compensation for compulsory sale, such value to be fixed by a Government Referee.

It is to be hoped that, under these conditions, the Municipal bodies may, sooner or later, become the owners of all city tramways, without forfeiting the benefits which are to be derived from the energy of private capital. And although only one municipality—viz., that of Greenock—has appeared as a Promoter this Session, yet in several of the Bills for Tramways in large provincial towns—viz., Liverpool, Dublin, Edinburgh, and Glasgow—provisions have been introduced, at the instance of the Local Authorities, enabling them either to elect to undertake the work themselves within a period of six months, or to purchase it at an earlier period than the twenty-one years fixed by the General Act.

The action of Parliament in the matter of London Tramways, singularly capricious as it has been, is, we will hope and believe, an illustration of the tendency to commit these enterprises to Municipal bodies. Having, with the aid of two laborious Select Committees, passed a General Act in 1870, enabling Tramways to be made under Provisional Orders, sanctioned and revised, in the first instance, by the Municipal Authorities, and then brought before Parliament by the Board of Trade, the House of Commons have, in 1870, rejected schemes for tramways in the West end of London which have been carefully revised and fully sanctioned by the Municipal Authorities, whilst they have, at the same time, approved schemes for the East end of London which, though they had on the whole been approved by the Municipal Authorities, had not passed the ordeal of the Board of Trade. Both sets of schemes were referred to and passed by a Select Committee of the House itself; and the only difference between them, except locality, is that the schemes rejected by the House were introduced as Provisional Orders by the Board of Trade, whilst

whilst those approved by the House were introduced in the form of a Bill by the Companies. At first sight, the inference would seem to be either that honourable members care more about the streets traversed by their own carriages than about those traversed by the carts and omnibuses of the East end, or that the House was so jealous of its own jurisdiction as to disapprove merely because the Board of Trade had approved. But the more reasonable and creditable ground for this capricious action of the House is, that by the time the West end schemes (which were later in the field) had come before them, they had arrived at some sort of consciousness that these Tramway schemes ought to be in the hands of some one efficient Municipal Authority, and that no such authority is now to be found in London.

9. *Gas-Works.*—The case of gas supply is peculiar, since gas manufacture has reached a high state of development and success; and the complete effect of the attempts Parliament has made to control the monopoly is better seen than in cases where profits are still small. In many cases the dividends have become so large that the public are painfully aware of the conflict of interest between themselves and the shareholders; and, on the other hand, in certain large places, prudent Municipalities have made a good thing for the ratepayers out of the supply of gas.

There is one case—viz., Manchester—in which the gas-works have been originally established by the Municipality, and there may be others. There are many cases in which works originally established by a Company have been subsequently bought by the Municipality, and these cases are on the increase; but how few they are, in comparison to the cases of Gas-works still owned by Companies, may be seen from the following figures. The total number of Gas Companies in the United Kingdom, excluding London, is 1217, with an aggregate capital of about 16,000,000*l.* In the metropolis there are eleven Gas-companies, with a capital of about 8,000,000*l.* The whole number of Gas-companies in the United Kingdom is 1228, with a capital of 24,000,000*l.*; besides these, there are fifty-nine public gas-works in the hands of private persons; and against this enormous number of private enterprises there are seventy-five cases only in which the Municipal Authority is the owner of the gas-works.

The history of gas supply is so instructive that it is worth while to give some details concerning it. When gas was first introduced the manufacture was a novelty and a risk; and even now it is an expensive thing to establish gas-works where the population is small and scattered. No Local Government Board would think of doing it. But the manufacture improves, and costs less

and less in proportion to the supply as it gets larger; whilst, as population grows, there is an enormously-increased demand. Consequently, prices which are quite just when the concern begins become far too remunerative after a few years, and then begins a struggle between the consumers and the Companies. In London, an attempt was made to meet this by competition; and for some years the streets were pulled up by rival Companies endeavouring to outbid each other. This was found to be such a nuisance that London was 'districted' between the Companies by Act of Parliament, thus giving each of them a legal monopoly. The districts allotted to the several companies were determined, not by the wants of the town so much as by the circumstances of the companies; and the consequence is that there is an extravagant and absurd division and distribution of manufacture and supply. Amalgamation proceeds slowly, and, whilst the shareholders make their easy 10 per cent., the battle between them and the public rages as fiercely as ever. There cannot be a doubt that the conditions by which the Legislature has endeavoured to control this monopoly have proved a complete failure.

Under the General Act of 1847,\* there are no provisions for testing the power and quality of gas supplied to the consumer; those contained in the London Act of 1860,† have proved quite ineffectual; and it remains to be seen whether the more elaborate provisions introduced, as regards some of the London Companies, by the Act of 1868,‡ will prove more satisfactory. This, however, is a matter in which the difficulty is of a technical rather than of a financial or economical character. A more glaring defect in the General Act is, that Gas-companies, though possessing a monopoly of the supply within their district, are not bound to supply consumers who live within it. The main, and almost the only, condition on which the Legislature has relied for preventing the public from being placed at the mercy of the gas companies is its favourite panacea of limiting profits. It is provided by the General Act that each company is to be satisfied with a 10 per cent. dividend, besides making up past dividends to 10 per cent. and setting aside a reserve fund to secure future dividends at the same rate; and that if any company divides more than this amount of profit, a court of justice may reduce the price of gas to such an amount as will bring down their profits to the above limit.

Now, in the first place, to suppose that any court of justice can constitute itself a judge of the price which will produce a certain profit and no more, is absurd; and the more elaborate

---

\* 10 & 11 Vict. cap. 15.

† 23 & 24 Vic. cap. 125.

‡ 31 & 32 Vict. cap. 125.

provisions of some of the recent London Gas Acts, which intrust this delicate operation to more competent hands, will probably prove a failure also. It is not likely that any Government department, or any scientific commission appointed by Government, can undertake to say to a manufacturer, 'At such and such a price you can manufacture an article which shall produce you exactly 10 per cent. dividend—no more, and no less.' To do this requires all the knowledge, skill, and constant experience of the manufacturer himself; and no one but himself can tell what capital he needs, what expenses he must incur, and what economies he can practise.

But further, the principle of limitation of dividend is in itself faulty. So long as the charge is not too high, the public have no interest in the reduction of dividend. Their interest is in the reduction of price, which is a totally different thing. If the consumer can get his gas at 3s. instead of 4s. per 1000 cubic feet, he is not the less benefited if the shareholder at the same time gets 20 per cent. instead of 10 per cent. The fallacy lies in supposing that what is taken from the shareholder necessarily goes into the pocket of the consumer. It does no such thing; it is probably wasted in staff and other easy extravagances, which the Company have no motive whatever for reducing. Indeed one of the worst consequences of the system is, that it takes away from the manufacturer (who it is to be remembered is a monopolist) his last and only inducement to improvement and economy. It leads not only to extravagance in current expenses, but to an extravagant waste of capital. The shareholder having an easy and safe 10 per cent. on his original shares, is naturally anxious to invest more money on so good a security, and is only too glad if he can find an excuse for a further outlay. Parliament, it is true, gives now only 7 per cent. on fresh capital, and pretends to ascertain by investigation before a Select Committee whether more capital is wanted. This, again, is a question which neither a Committee nor a Department of Government can satisfactorily determine. No one but the manufacturer himself can say with any certainty how much capital he needs; and Parliament, pressed by the argument that, if the Company is not allowed to invest more capital the town will not be lighted, cannot help giving to a Company the power of investing large sums which might well be spared, and the interest of which becomes a totally unnecessary charge on consumers of gas. That unnecessary capital has been laid out in London no one who looks at the map of the districts of the Gas Companies can for a moment doubt.

In fact, in this Parliamentary limitation of dividend and capital we have gone on a perfectly wrong tack and have involved

ourselves in a maze of absurdities. Coupled with the statutory price of gas, it really operates as a guarantee to the Companies of an easy 10 per cent. dividend. There is at the present moment one good feature in it, and one only, viz., that in the case of purchase of the undertakings by the Municipal Authorities, it affords some sort of limit beyond which the claims of the Companies cannot go. It would be much easier and better to make the price of gas subject to periodical revision, a thing which could generally be done by reference to price at other places under similar circumstances.

But the only true solution of the gas difficulty is to do, as has been done in several large towns where the Town Councils have either made or purchased the gas-works. In Manchester, where, as above stated, they have for many years owned the gas-works, the result is, that after supplying good gas at a cheap rate they have, and have long had, a surplus of from 40,000*l.* to 50,000*l.* a year, with which they have effected all the recent numerous and expensive improvements in the town, besides paying a large part of the cost of their still more expensive water-works. In the twenty years ending with 1870 they have, after paying the current expenses of gas-manufacture and supply, made more than a million of surplus profits.

The 8,000,000*l.* which forms the capital of the London Gas Companies would produce, at the rate of 10 per cent, 800,000*l.* a year to the shareholders. The actual proceeds are rather less as some of the recent capital is limited to 7 per cent., and one of the largest Companies has not for a year or two, under present exceptional and temporary circumstances, divided quite 10 per cent. If these undertakings had been in the hands of a Municipal body, 8,000,000*l.* would never have been spent on gas-works. But whatever the sum such a body might have found it necessary to expend, it might have been borrowed at 5 per cent. or less, and some hundreds of thousands a year might have been saved to the consumers of gas or the ratepayers of London.

Under these circumstances it is much to be desired that in all future private Gas Bills conditions should be inserted similar to those in the Tramways Act, providing for the purchase of the undertaking by the Municipality after a given period, upon fixed terms.

10. *Water Supply.*—In many respects this is like Gas-supply. But water differs in being even more necessary, in being more difficult to procure, and in requiring greater outlay, with less profit, as the demand increases. The supply also requires greater precautions to prevent waste—precautions which it is difficult to intrust to a private Company. Under these circumstances,  
recently-established

recently-established Water Companies, though not unprofitable, have been less profitable than Gas Companies; and their differences with the consumer have related to deficiency and impurity in the supply rather than to price. Probably none of them, certainly none of the London Companies, pay 10 per cent. on recent investments.

Under these circumstances, the number of Municipalities which have supplied themselves with water is greater than in the case of gas. The number of Water Companies in the United Kingdom, exclusive of London, as given in the published lists, is about 120, with a capital of between 7,000,000*l.* and 8,000,000*l.* In London there are eight Companies, with a capital of 4,000,000*l.*, giving altogether about 130 Companies and 11,000,000*l.* of capital. On the other hand, there are as many as 101 undertakings in the hands of Municipal authorities; and these are to be found in many of the largest towns, *e.g.* Liverpool, Manchester, and Glasgow.

The regulations to which Parliament has subjected Water Companies\* are almost verbatim the same as in the case of gas, with one important exception, viz., that Water Companies are bound to supply water to all consumers in the district to which their monopoly extends, upon certain fixed terms.

As regards limitation of profits, the conditions are precisely the same; but their effect is not seen, because the limit has not been reached.

In this case, still more than in that of gas, it is important for the health of the people that the supply should be in the hands of a body which can have no motive for restricting it; which does not seek profit from it; which can enforce rules for preventing waste, and which can draw upon other funds, if the expense of supply is large. Facilities should be given to Municipalities for purchasing on fair terms existing water-works; and no new Company should obtain a Bill without provision for the purchase of the undertaking by the Local Authority.

11. *Post-office*.—This is the only case in which the central Government have from the commencement established and carried on the undertaking themselves. But even here there is a qualification. For shortly after the establishment of the Post-office, when it was the monopoly of the Duke of York, a private merchant, Lord Macaulay tells us, set up a London post and parcel delivery of his own, which forced the Post-office, whilst asserting their own monopoly, to establish the London twopenny post.

It can scarcely be denied that the Post-office is a success.

---

\* 'Waterworks Clauses Act,' 10 & 11 Vict. c. 17.

The very faults which are found with it, viz., that it does not give sufficient facility for remitting money or conveying parcels, show that the public desire to employ its machinery for purposes extending far beyond its original design. So far as it goes, the Post-office is certainly an example to show that Government organization, on a large scale, can be efficiently conducted without waste and without jobbery; and it is further a precedent for making a productive service instrumental in supplying deficiency of general revenue.

Two defects there are at present in it:—First. Its subordination to the Treasury. That department, which should be as strong as possible in controlling the expenditure of other departments, ought to be confined to that function, and not to be burdened with administrative duties which are foreign to its own business, and which it cannot discharge properly. The Minister who manages the Post-office ought, instead of being merely subordinate to the Treasury, to occupy towards the Treasury a position similar to that of the Head of the Admiralty or War-office, so that the efficiency of the service may not be postponed to economy, or impaired by unnecessary control.

Secondly. The Post-office arrangements and the Railway system have, as we have noticed above, never been properly adapted to each other. The interest of the Companies and that of the Post-office are not necessarily consistent, and sometimes utterly at variance with each other; and the result is, that whilst persons, goods, and telegraphic messages follow the new routes of communication, and find their centres of collection and distribution either at the Railway-station or elsewhere, as may be most needed; letters too often go by the old roads; have to be sent for to the old Post-offices, and fail to reach their destination with the same rapidity and certainty as ordinary parcels. This evil is one for which, whilst the Railway Companies remain in their present position, it is not easy to find a remedy.

12. *Telegraphs.* The manner in which these have been dealt with is a remarkable instance of the slowness of Government action. It is now generally admitted that these means of communication ought to be in the hands of the Government, but it is within the recollection of some persons still in office that, when Telegraph Companies were first beginning operations in this country, and when the Swiss and other Foreign Governments were establishing telegraphs in connection with their Post-offices, an official high in position in the department then charged with business relating to telegraphs, most strongly urged upon the Government the expediency of taking them into its own hands. This advice

advice was rejected. Private companies established them; and the country has had to purchase them at an enormous cost. The increase of business is so large, that even after paying all interest on capital, as well as working expences, the first year's accounts show a small surplus.\* But it also appears that the Government have had to pay to the Companies four to five millions more than they would have had to pay if they had constructed the telegraphs themselves, and that they have besides, a system much inferior to that which they would have had if the Post-office had constructed it. Although it is as yet too early to speak with absolute certainty concerning the results of this purchase by the Government, there is every reason to believe that it will result in increased efficiency and economy. At any rate no one dreams of retracing the steps thus taken.\*

From the above short notice of these several undertakings, we may draw the following conclusions of fact:—

(1.) That in an earlier state of society, the undertakings of which we are speaking were generally established and maintained by some public governing body, whether of the country generally, of the districts or interests concerned.

(2.) That at a later period private capital and enterprise came to the assistance of Government, and did what Government never could or would have done.

(3.) That at a later period still, the evils arising from placing these monopolies in the hands of private companies has been felt; that these evils are likely to be felt still more strongly, and that there is a tendency again to place such companies in the hands of some public body—central or local.

(4.) That whilst Harbours; natural Navigations; many Docks, Roads, and Bridges; a few Gasworks; some Waterworks; the Post-office; and Telegraphs are now in the hands of the State or of Local Governing Bodies: many Docks, all Railways, most Tramways, and most Gas and Waterworks, are in the hands of Private Companies; and further, that the Capital invested in these undertakings amounts probably to 700,000,000*l*.

(5.) That there are many points in which the interests of these Companies are at variance with that of the Public; and that the conditions which Parliament has hitherto imposed on them, have proved altogether inadequate for protecting the public interest.

This brings us to the last question we propose to consider, viz., what is the best mode of dealing with these undertakings for the future?

---

\* 'Reports on Telegraphs, 1871.' By Mr. Scudamore.

As regards existing Companies, it is extremely difficult to state in any general terms what can be justly done; still more difficult in the present state of public feeling and of legislation to do anything effectual. Theoretically, it is quite just to make the conditions on which Parliament has made concessions to them, effectual in their operation; *e.g.* to compel Railway Companies to adopt a proper system of through-booking and convenient arrangements; to compel Gas Companies to supply good gas, and to use economy in its manufacture; and to compel Water Companies to give an ample supply of pure water. But there is really enormous practical difficulty in the intricate system of supervision and joint management, which such restrictions imply. Take the case referred to above, of the want of harmonious arrangements between different Railway Companies, one of the greatest grievances of which the public have to complain. Suppose that a Government Department were intrusted with the duty of seeing that these arrangements were so made, as to give the greatest possible facility for through-communication to goods and passengers, and consider what powers and what an amount of interference this duty would involve. The Government officers would have to see that at each point where one railway intersects or meets another, the trains are so timed that a passenger travelling by one line shall be able, without unnecessary delay, to proceed by the other. He must, therefore, determine the time tables of both Companies. Again, he must settle how long the train of the one line is to wait for the train of the other, if late; and he must also determine whether through-carriages must be used. He would also have to settle whether through-booking is to be adopted, and if there is any dispute between the Companies, what proportion of fares and of expenses is to fall to each Company. In short, he would be obliged, unless the Companies were to second him with a good will we have no right to expect, to take a large share of the management of their traffic arrangements into his own hands; and a system of divided power and responsibility would be introduced, which could lead to nothing but confusion.

A further practical objection to supervision of this kind, is the difficulty of procuring the requisite powers. To any effectual measure there would be an amount of opposition which no Government can or will face. A recent case in which an attempt was made to regulate, not existing Companies but future Companies, which will resemble existing Companies, is a good illustration of this difficulty. There was a Bill introduced last Session to amend the General Act relating to Gas Companies. It applied to future undertakings, and did not affect existing undertakings at

all,

all, unless they should come to Parliament for new powers, and then only to such an extent as might be determined by Parliament. It provided for an effective test of gas; for periodical revision of prices; for keeping proper accounts; for a compulsory supply of gas on certain terms to consumers living within the district; and, finally, for the purchase of the undertaking by the municipality, on terms to be fixed by arbitration, after a certain period of years. These are certainly no unfair conditions to impose upon persons about to set up a new monopoly of a necessary of life. And yet the opposition to this Bill on the part of the existing Companies was so powerful, that even the present Government—strong as it is—would probably, even if it had time at its disposal, have been unable to carry it. In this, and similar cases, petitions are printed by a central organization in London, and sent to every shareholder in every company in the country to send up to their members, with statements, from which it might be thought that the Government was organising a conspiracy, to rob all the widows and orphans whose fortunes are invested in shares. Gas shareholders have made, must make, will make, and shall make, an easy 10 per cent. ! and they will stir heaven and earth to prevent, even as regards new undertakings, enactments which would show that gas can be made under conditions more favourable to the public than those which have been imposed on themselves.\* Against an organization of this kind, concentrated, wide-spreading, and agitating, with all the irresponsibility of a public body, and with all the skill and audacity of the most practised agents, the power of the Government, and the interests of the population are really helpless. These influences pervade in the House of Commons, and are felt in the serener regions of the House of Lords. And even the Public Press, whilst ready enough to blame Government and Parliament for the misdoings of the Companies, will constantly be found, when the pinch comes, in speaking of company management, or mis-management, to treat the question of profit to the investor, as of more importance than that of good service to the public.

---

\* Another illustration of the same difficulty is to be found in the history of another Bill of this Session. The Courts have decided that a Municipality cannot spend its rates in opposing or promoting a Gas or Water Company's Bill in Parliament. A Bill was introduced to remedy this defect, and to enable the natural protectors of the local public to act on its behalf. Immediately appeared the usual array of deputations, amendments, and opposition, by which the Companies so successfully defeat any measure which is calculated to protect the public against their monopoly. The Companies are not content with a fair field, with their power of the purse, and with the indulgence Parliamentary Committees always show to vested interests. Their opponents, the consuming public, must fight them with its hands tied, without funds and without organization !

As regards existing Companies, therefore, it is difficult to believe that any restrictions or regulations can be framed or brought into operation so as effectually to protect the public. And if this is impracticable, the only mode of dealing with them is to buy them up whenever the evil of the monopoly is sufficiently felt to make such a course practicable and desirable. As regards Gas and Water Companies in every large town, this should be done with as little delay as possible; and if greater facilities for doing so than exist at present could be given by any General Act, so much the better. As regards Railways in England, the time for such a measure is probably distant; but in Ireland the question presses for early solution. What the terms of any such purchase should be is a question far too difficult and practical to deal with here. It is only to be hoped on the part of the public taxpayer that they may be less onerous to him than those which the shareholders in Telegraph Companies have lately obtained from Parliament.

As regards future undertakings, the above considerations shew that whilst, on the one hand, it is in many cases desirable that public authorities should undertake these works, it would be madness to forego the advantages of private capital and enterprise. When the financial success or the absolute necessity of an undertaking is well established—as in the case of gas or water in populous towns—or where private capital is less abundant than it is in this country, there we may possibly expect and even compel public bodies to rouse themselves. But where an enterprise is in any way speculative, either from inexperience in construction or manufacture, or from doubts as to the extent of the demand, or from the amount of capital needed, or from any other reason, we must in this country, at any rate, trust to private energy and self-interest. Better local organization may do something towards enabling Municipal and Local bodies to act with greater vigour; but the experience of the last fifty years, and last, but not least, the present experience of Tramways, shows that joint-stock capital will cover the country with public works before Government, Local or Central, will stir. Private enterprise must not, therefore, be forbidden or effectually discouraged by too stringent conditions; whilst on the other hand, provision should be made for securing to the public good service at once, and in the end the benefit of the profits of the undertaking. Fortunately, capital seeks immediate returns, whilst the life of a nation, a town, or a county is comparatively unlimited. It is possible, therefore, to make a concession temporary, and yet to give to private enterprise liberal and sufficient encouragement. And even if conditions more stringent than have been

yet imposed should have some effect in checking the growth of these Companies, it is possible that an equivalent advantage might arise from the consequent stimulus which would be given to Governing Bodies. What may, therefore, be suggested as principles to govern future legislation are the following. They are already embodied in the Tramways Act of last Session, and, though it is too early to say how that Act will work, there is no reason yet to believe that it will be unsuccessful:—

1. Give to all Local Authorities the utmost possible facilities for undertaking these works. Let every village or district have the means of establishing Gas and Water works, and paying for them, if necessary, out of the rates.

2. Let Counties, or Highway, or other Districts have the power of making Tramways and Railways.

3. Where any of these works are to be made by a Company, give them a liberal scale of immediate charges; but take power to revise their charges at certain intervals; take power also to test the article they supply; and compel them, where they monopolize a district, to supply all consumers within the district on certain terms.

4. Give to the Government, or to the Municipal or other Local Authority, power after a given period—which will vary according to the capital expended and other circumstances—to purchase the undertaking, at the then value of the works themselves and the plant, without payment for profits or goodwill. The effect of such a provision would probably be to make promoters ask for high prices and large profits in the meantime, so as to allow of their forming a reserve or sinking fund; but at the end of the period the Town or District would get the full benefit of the works, without the ruinous struggle as to terms which now goes on whenever a Municipality wishes to purchase an undertaking of this kind.

A further suggestion has been made in the extract from Mr. Mill, quoted above, which seems to deserve consideration. It is to the effect that these monopolies might be leased out by Government for a term by competition to a company or other contractor. Such a lease might assume various aspects. The governing body might construct the work themselves, and then lease the working of the undertaking for a given number of years to a private company; or they might merely lease the power to construct the works and the monopoly upon certain terms, leaving it to the lessee to execute the work and hand it over in good condition to the governing body on the conclusion of the lease. Again, the competition might either take the form of a competition in rent, the conditions and the price to be charged

charged to the public being fixed ; and in this case the price must be such as to admit of both profit to the contractor and rent. Or the rent to the governing body being fixed or being *nil*, the object of the competition might be to determine the lowest price at which any solvent and responsible contractor would supply the article or convenience in question to the public.

In all these cases there would be considerable difficulty in framing the conditions ; and in the relations both during the lease and at the end of it between the governing body and the contractor. But a scheme of this description would give to the public, either in the shape of rent or of reduction of charge, the ultimate profit to be made out of the monopoly. It is to be regretted that no experiment of this kind has yet been tried in this country.

The above considerations are economical. There is one other consideration of great importance, but of importance in a political rather than in an economical point of view, viz., the effect which would be produced on the political morals of the country, of a town, or of a district, if the patronage and other opportunities for jobbing involved in the management of large public works were placed in the hands of its governing body. That some evils might thus arise we cannot deny ; for no one who has watched local administrative bodies is likely to believe that they are universally proof against temptations of this kind. But most, if not all, of the services in question will be rendered to the public, and in public, and every defect in the service will be promptly noticed and complained of. There is nothing like plenty of work and full publicity for preventing jobbery and keeping administration sound and pure. On the other hand, also, there is a serious political evil to be apprehended from the growing influence of the great Joint-Stock Company interest in Parliament and in local governing Boards. This evil is, if report speaks truth, a very serious one in America. In this country it is as yet not much felt, except in the combined resistance which the Companies make to any alteration of the law which affects themselves. But the success and ability with which they can do this is, considering the ever-widening sphere of their operations, a great evil in itself, and if they should ever turn their powerful organization to a political purpose, it would become a national calamity.

There is one other point to be considered. If Municipal bodies become to any large extent owners of profitable undertakings, the question will arise, whether, when a given undertaking produces profits, they should be bound to apply all the surplus for the benefit of those who use the particular article or convenience

convenience by reducing the price charged for its use ; or whether they should be enabled to apply the surplus towards other public objects. Against the latter course it may be said that it will give local bodies opportunities to job, and that it will be taxing one class for the benefit of the other. This would, for instance, be the case if the gas-works of a district were in the hands of a governing body, representing all the householders in the district, and if only a small proportion of those householders use gas ; and in such a case it would probably be wise to impose some restriction on the charges and surplus profits to be made by the governing body, or to give those who really use the gas some special power in the management. On the other hand, it may be assumed that in general the ratepayers, as one aggregate class, will be benefitted by all such works as those contemplated ; and that it is the mere prudery of finance to require lighting to pay for lighting, and water for water. Looking to the numerous essential wants which demand ever and ever heavier rates, and which will not directly repay themselves—to Education, Health, Drainage, and even Water—there seems to be little reason why, if a Town Council can get a moderate surplus out of Gas or Tramways, they should not apply this surplus to their other pressing needs. The State does so in the case of the Post-office and of Telegraphs, and Manchester has thus used its income from Gas with the best possible effect.

In this way the undertakings we have been discussing might be made to render material assistance to Local Government ; and whether they do so or not, the importance of the subject discussed in the above pages is especially great at the present moment when the subject of Local Government and Local Rating is occupying so much attention. It is obvious that a very large part of what are generally considered the functions of Government are in the hands of Joint-Stock Companies, and that no scheme for remodelling these functions can possibly be complete which omits to notice this fact, or fails to regulate for the future the relations between these undertakings and the local governing bodies.

Mr. Goschen's scheme, probably intentionally, leaves these questions untouched, nor does the Report of the Sanitary Commission make any attempt to grapple with them. Possibly, as a matter of policy in carrying a measure for the reform of Local Government, this may be right ; but it will certainly be necessary, before these questions can be dealt with as a whole, to consider what are the limits of public and private enterprise in these matters, and under what conditions the latter should be placed.

In conclusion, it is to be observed that the experience referred

to in this article is confessedly limited to this country. To obtain in any trustworthy form and to digest the experience of other countries would involve a very serious amount of labour and of discrimination, and the result would far exceed the limits of an article. That this should be the case is perhaps the less to be regretted, since the differences in the circumstances of different countries, dissimilarity in institutions, in habits, and in national character—in the amount of capital seeking investment, in the energy which seeks for new fields of enterprise, and in the skill and labour necessary to conduct new enterprises to a successful result—are so great, that, difficult as it is to come to any sweeping general conclusions from our own national experience, it would still be more difficult, if not impossible, to deduce or establish anything like universal rules from the general practice of civilized nations.

ART. VII.—*The Dialogues of Plato translated into English, with Analysis and Introductions.* By B. Jowett, M.A., Master of Balliol College, Regius Professor of Greek in the University of Oxford. 4 vols. Oxford. 1871.

THE publication within a short interval of two such works as Mr. Grote's 'Plato' and Mr. Jowett's translation seems to point to a phase of no slight importance in the general revival of English philology which has marked the last twenty or thirty years. The verbal scholarship of the last century, brilliant as it undoubtedly was, and important as its results became as the basis of future attainment, was too limited in its scope and too isolated from other departments of knowledge to maintain its hold on education. A period of barrenness and lethargy followed, from which Arnold was one of the first to deliver classical studies. The earlier work of the great historian whom we have recently lost has been, perhaps, the main instrument in sustaining and extending the movement. Along with the value which it had for scholars as a series of investigations in the field of ancient history, it possessed a freshness and keenness of political insight, and a sense of the reality and permanence of historical problems, which engaged the interest of a much larger class of readers. The idea of extending the range of popular reading to Platonic philosophy—to the speculations, namely, which exhibit the spirit of antiquity in its most abstract form—may be said to have been first carried out by Dr. Whewell in his 'Platonic Dialogues.\*' The two similar experiments since

\* Reviewed in the 'Quarterly' of October, 1862.

made, on a larger scale and by far more complete and exhaustive methods, are evidence of an awakening of interest amounting almost to a new intellectual movement in the educated classes of the country. Other considerations put the importance of such books in a still stronger light. There is much in the progress of civilisation which tends to give increased value and significance to the history of thought. The separate national life which is fed by the recollection of the past struggles and triumphs of a nation has been slowly but constantly giving way before the sense of mutual obligation and dependence, extending to all alike. As a consequence of this process, the sympathy and veneration of men will be increasingly directed towards those elements in the traditions of the past which are most cosmopolitan; and thus it will become, more and more, the office of literature to represent and interpret that comparatively hidden view of thought and knowledge in which the highest minds have had a part without distinction of race or nation.

The work before us is eminently fitted to aid and direct the movement which we have ventured to anticipate. It has been the noble task of Mr. Jowett's life, like Socrates, 'to bring philosophy into the market-place,' to awaken the spirit of research in active and growing minds, and to gain for knowledge and the faith in knowledge their true place in human affairs. He has now sought to carry this work into a wider field; and he has aptly chosen as his subject the philosophers in whom the Socratic faith bore its worthy and lifelong fruits; who was raised by means of it above the narrow completeness of Athenian culture, beyond the limited horizon of Greek society; who created those ideals which are still the ideals of history and of science, but were then, in Mr. Jowett's words, 'the vacant forms of light on which he sought to fix the eyes of mankind.'

The translation demands more than a passing notice, not merely for its high intrinsic excellence as a work of literary art, but also for the less obvious merit which it has as being, in great measure, a new experiment. The problem, it need not be said, is of the highest order of difficulty. A complex Greek period, such as Plato is accustomed to write, is incapable, as a rule, of being rendered without a sacrifice either of the general effect or of the grammatical form. The separate clauses may often be exactly reproduced while the relation between them is expressed in a manner which belongs essentially to the idiom of the Greek language. A mere 'scholarly rendering,' in such a case, is no more a true copy of the original than a heap of Ionic columns is an Ionic temple. On the other hand, all modern languages, through long familiarity

with logical forms, have analysed many complex or ambiguous terms, and have gained power of brief expression in dealing with abstractions, which obliges the judicious translator sometimes to expand or comment upon his text; more often, perhaps, to prune down and condense its language in a seemingly arbitrary way. The difficulty of the task lies in deciding whether a particular redundancy or ambiguity is one of language only, and should vanish in translation, or one of thought, which must be studiously preserved. Thus there are two leading aims, which may be called the linear and aerial perspective of Platonic translation: the modern arrangement of clauses, and the modern equivalents for technical and half-technical terms.

These observations may seem self-evident enough; but translators who come to their task, as most modern scholars do, full of the associations of grammatical teaching, can seldom free themselves from the habit of regarding the 'construing' as the first consideration. Mr. Jowett has seen this danger, and has shown that by looking to clearness and ease of expression, and using the simplest and most natural English, without aiming at archaic purity or any other artificial style, it is possible to render the works of the most consummate master of language with a fidelity of a new order. It is obvious that the work, as he has done it, needed the finest sense of sustained rhythmical movement and a rare command of happy and suggestive phrases; but much of the success depended upon following a true method, or perhaps it would be more exact to say, upon consciously avoiding false habits of translation.\*

The value of a translation, after all, is chiefly for those who are least able to criticise it. Those who are already acquainted with Plato will turn to the Introductions, and especially to the short essays which they contain. To students of philosophy, these essays constitute the soul of the book. Their object is

---

\* It was not to be expected that so vast a work should be everywhere free from inaccuracy. We have noted the following:—

Phileb. p. 17 C. 'What sounds are grave, and what acute' is too periphrastic for *δέξτερος τε περί και βαρύτης*. Sounds are not divided into grave and acute, but the interval is constituted by a relative heaviness and acuteness. The sense is best given, perhaps, by translating *διαστήματα*, 'musical intervals,' and omitting *δέξτερος κ.τ.λ.*

Ib. p. 30 B. *μεμηχανῆσθαι*, as Mr. Poste points out, is active, and governs *φύσιν*; Mr. Jowett makes it passive.

Ib. p. 62 B. *και χρώμενος εν οικοδομῳ και τοῖς ἄλλοις ὁμοίως κανόνι και τοῖς κύκλοις*. Mr. Jowett has not given sufficiently the force of *ὁμοίως*; 'who uses in like manner rules as well as circles,' i. e. in each case alike he uses the divine to the exclusion of the human.

Polit., 273 A. *ἀρχῆς τε και τελευτῆς ἐναντίαν ὁρμὴν ὁρμηθεῖς*, 'having received an opposite impulse at both ends,' is hardly clear. The meaning seems to be an impulse which reverses beginning and end.

to recapitulate the arguments of a dialogue; to expose fallacies; to point out the element of permanent truth which Plato has reached, or to which the course of his thought is tending; to draw out his relation to other systems; and, finally, to direct attention to artistic touches and striking or original features in the several pieces. They exhibit in the highest degree the qualities which are characteristic of Mr. Jowett's style: terseness and point, without the hardness of mere epigram; and closeness of reasoning, without the bewildering parade of logical form.

The principle of the arrangement adopted in the work is that each dialogue should be separately discussed and analysed, no attempt being made to unite the results in a complete or systematic form. Mr. Jowett evidently attaches considerable importance to this part of his plan, regarding the dogmatic and harmonising method as the most fruitful source of error in the interpretation of Plato. In the same spirit he is careful to preserve the dramatic and conversational form, even when he is giving the briefest summary of contents. In all this he is no more than Platonic. The dialogue was evidently adopted by Plato as the nearest approach which a written composition could make to that which he looked upon as the true instrument of philosophical enquiry—the living play of thought and opinion in discourse:—

‘He who knows the just and good and honourable,’ he says in the ‘*Phædrus*,’ ‘will not seriously incline to write them in water with pen and ink or in dumb characters, which have not a word to say for themselves, and cannot adequately express the truth. . . . In the garden of letters he will plant them only as an amusement, or he will write them down as memorials, against the forgetfulness of old age, to be treasured by him and his equals when they like him have one foot in the grave. . . . But nobler far is the serious pursuit of the dialectician who finds a congenial soul, and then with knowledge engrafts and sows words which are able to help themselves and him who planted them, and are not unfruitful, but have in them seeds which may bear fruit in other natures, nurtured in other ways—making the seed everlasting, and the possessors happy to the utmost extent of human happiness.’—vol. i. p. 612.

It is true that in many of Plato's writings the dialogue is a mere form. In the greater part of the ‘*Republic*’ there is no real discussion; all the arguments are put into the mouth of Socrates. The Eleatic Stranger in the ‘*Sophist*’ prefers discussion, but only with a pleasant and facile respondent; and in the ‘*Laws*’ the tone is almost wholly dogmatic. To the last, however, Plato retains the conversational form, and, it may be

added, the theory of philosophical method of which it was the expression. For it is easily seen that to Plato's mind the merits of dialogue and the evils of sustained or 'epideictic' speaking were in great measure symbolical. The one represented and exemplified the Socratic spirit—freedom from foregone conclusions, patience and mutual help in enquiry, acquiescence in ignorance in preference to the mere show of knowledge. The other contained in it all the opposite elements of passion and illusion; it was therefore the fitting weapon of pleaders and demagogues.

It does not appear that Plato had any predecessors in the form of composition which he adopted. Greek philosophy clothed herself first in the garb of the epic singer, and afterwards borrowed the fashion of the law-courts. Plato first went back to living models, and created a fresh type of art from the conversations of Socrates. In so doing, he obeyed the analogies of Greek literature. The disposition to idealise a historical situation, to treat the speakers as personifications of moral or political tendencies, is strongly marked both in Herodotus and Thucydides. It may not be too fanciful to say that Plato meant to oppose his ideal Socrates to the caricature which had already gained the ear of Athens through the genius of Aristophanes. But the character of the Socratic teaching, as Plato understood and applied it, pointed in an especial manner to Socrates as the fitting protagonist in the new cycle of dramas. The older philosophies, he tells us, delivered their wisdom in a somewhat oracular form; 'they went on their several ways with a good deal of disdain of people like ourselves; they did not care whether they took us with them or left us behind them' (vol. iii. p. 506). Socrates represented the principle of ceaseless research: his method is a perpetual living process. It is therefore in a manner independent of any one life, for it is 'graven in the soul of him who has learned, and can defend itself, and knows when to speak and when to be silent' (vol. iii. p. 611). No positive opinions or discoveries could be attributed in a strict modern sense to Socrates; yet all that was gained by his method might be treated as implicitly belonging to him. But Plato's habit of endeavouring to carry on the thoughts of his predecessors is not confined to Socrates. Thus in the 'Theætetus' he is at pains to draw out what Protagoras might say in answer to certain objections (vol. iii. p. 388 ff.); and he 'makes a very valorous defence,' sparing no artifice of dramatic effect. He admits, however, that he is a stranger to the cause of Protagoras, who might possibly have made a different defence for himself. With the thoughts of Socrates he has no such hesitation, for he is one of the heirs.

(to use his favourite comparison) of his master's argument, entitled to speak without reserve on that behalf. Yet he avoids representing him in contradiction with well-known traits: in the '*Timæus*,' for example, the chief part of the dialogue is not assigned to Socrates, probably because it was notorious that the real Socrates had not favoured purely physical speculations.

These considerations obviously prepare us to find that the gradual and spontaneous growth of Plato's system out of the ideas of Socrates may be traced, to some extent, in the '*Platonic Dialogues*.' It is true that we have little or no external evidence to fix the order in which they were written, and that the internal criteria, as in the case of most great writers, are of an unusually subtle nature. Few, indeed, of the tasks of philology have been as laborious as that of determining the canon of the Platonic writings, and distributing them over the wide space of his philosophical life. Mr. Jowett is far from claiming the character of finality for his own arrangement. Many points in it, however, may be considered as ascertained. A considerable group of dialogues, for instance, is distinguished by features which agree with those of the historical, as opposed to the Platonic or ideal, Socrates. Of these dialogues the '*Protagoras*' is the most striking example. The search for definitions, the simple form of the doctrine that Virtue is knowledge, the seeming readiness to identify Pleasure with the Good, the absence of the Platonic theory of Ideas—these are so many indications of a comparatively Socratic, and therefore early stage of Plato's philosophy. At the other end of the series, external and internal testimony concur in placing the '*Laws*'—a work in which the figure of Socrates does not appear, and in which the theory of ideas, though still affirmed, is set aside—as inapplicable to the practical wants of the time. Earlier again than the '*Laws*,' and not earlier than the meridian of Plato's genius, must be placed his great constructive effort, the '*Republic*.' These are the three cardinal points of Platonic chronology, with reference to which the place of the remaining dialogues has to be determined.

The chief novelty of Mr. Jowett's arrangement (compared, for example, with that which was proposed by Zeller) appears in the number of dialogues placed after the '*Republic*.' Besides the '*Gorgias*' (which closely resembles the '*Republic*,' and probably belongs to the same period of Plato's life) and the '*Theætetus*,' already mentioned, we find the '*Philebus*,' '*Parmenides*,' '*Sophist*,' and '*Statesman*.' Some modern critics, of whom Professor Schaarschmidt, of Bonn, is the chief representative, have doubted or denied the Platonic authorship of this whole group. The question is one which we shall not attempt to discuss at length,

length, especially as Mr. Jowett has reserved it for the detailed examination which he has promised to give of the order and genuineness of the Platonic writings (vol. iii. p. 571). The issue, it may be said in passing, depends very much upon the possibility of explaining the various characteristics of these dialogues as intermediate between those of the earlier works on the one hand, and the 'Timæus' and 'Laws' on the other.\*

The 'Euthydemus'—a broad caricature of the verbal puzzles so curiously prominent in the age of Plato—is placed by Mr. Jowett after the 'Protagoras.' Dr. Thompson, in a graceful review of the book, makes this collocation one of the few exceptions to his general agreement with Mr. Jowett's arrangement. Perhaps the best defence in the case of the 'Euthydemus' is to be found in the epilogue, where an attack is made on the writers of speeches as amphibious animals, who being half philosophers and half politicians, succeed in combining the drawbacks of both. The passage could hardly have been written if Plato had then foreseen, even in a dream, his own conception of the philosopher-king as it appears in the 'Republic' and the 'Statesman.'

Of the endless points of view from which different dialogues may be compared, and their relative place—didactic or chronological—more or less plausibly determined, it will be found that the most useful are those which are derived immediately from the theory of Ideas. The history of that theory is in reality the history of Plato's lifelong speculation; and no one has seen this truth more clearly than Mr. Jowett, or has applied it more subtly to the various aspects of Platonism. It is impossible, in the course of a brief summary such as we shall now attempt, to give a just notion of the finish and delicacy of his treatment of the subject; and it is especially difficult to avoid the fault from which he is most free, that of giving effect to a statement by exaggerating one or two points of view. Nevertheless it is necessary, in order to gain an idea of the main result of the book, that we should reproduce in some shape the impression which it conveys of what Platonism is in its essence, and what is its place in the general course of human thought.

Socrates, according to the well-known saying, brought down philosophy from heaven to earth. The current of speculation, which in earlier times busied itself chiefly with nature and the universe, was diverted by his teaching to the moral and political questions that in various forms had been more and more perplexing the active world of Greece. The example of the

---

\* Mr. Campbell's Introduction to his edition of the 'Sophist' and 'Statesman' contains a valuable contribution to this part of the question.

heroic age was still the main source, apart from the laws of the several states, to which men turned for direction. But in Homer, beyond a sense of the splendour of certain human qualities and a respect for the sacredness of existing custom, there is nothing which can be called morality. There is no moral system, however simple—no classification of actions as right or wrong. In the time of the Peloponnesian War the traditional maxims became more than ever inadequate. They barely sufficed within the most stable communities, or for those who, like Cephalus in the 'Republic,' were favoured by nature and circumstances. They utterly failed in the wider sphere of action in which the 'larger units,' the Greek states themselves, had to deal as moral agents with each other. 'The Spartans,' says Thucydides, 'are the best of men at home, but abroad they know no duty except their own interest.' It is enough to allude to the darker pictures which he gives of other parts of Greece.

The overturning of ancient landmarks, the fierce passions roused, the demoralization which follows alike victory and defeat, combined with the intellectual activity of the time to bring about the crisis in morality which, in the minds of most readers of Greek history, is associated with certain 'teachers of wisdom' called the Sophists. We shall not now enter upon the question between Mr. Grote and Mr. Jowett as to the existence of a distinct class bearing that name—a question which brings out to peculiar advantage the subtlety and exactness of Mr. Jowett's critical powers (see especially vol. iii. pp. 448 ff.). For the present it will be enough to glance at two leading Sophists. The picture of Protagoras which is given in the dialogue of the same name is full of friendly and even admiring touches. Protagoras is the venerable missionary of virtue; one whose preaching (as it may almost be termed) exposes him to some danger from the blind upholders of existing things, but who scorns to hide it under the veil of other kinds of instruction, glorying rather in the despised name of Sophist. Moreover, his opinions are far from being 'sophistical,' in the worst sense of the word. As Mr. Jowett observes, there is quite as much truth on the side of Protagoras as on that of Socrates. The difference is that (to speak in Platonic language) he is inferior in dialectics. He has faith in goodness, and uses his great powers of persuasion in its cause; but he is wanting in the scientific methods and aims which belonged to Socrates. The weakness attributed (in the 'Gorgias') to the rhetoricians Gorgias and Polus is of the same kind. Gorgias is refuted because he is unwilling to admit that rhetoric can be wholly separated from justice and injustice (vol. iii. p. 6). The Sophists—

Sophists—if we may judge by the greatest names among them—fail because, instead of quarrelling with the world, they are content to represent the better mind of the world to itself.

Socrates took a different course. He undertook at once to defend and to explain morality by applying to it the conception of knowledge. He sought for the universal element in each class of cases—that which answers the question, What is such and such a virtue? He easily convicted his countrymen of the want of this knowledge. They were in the habit of pronouncing actions good or bad, but without knowing why. They knew how to make shoes and build temples, for they could tell in what the goodness of a shoe or a temple consisted; and they could teach the knowledge as an art of shoemaking or of architecture. The arts of life—justice, housekeeping, rhetoric, government—had none of these characteristics of knowledge. He himself was not wiser than others, but he knew his own ignorance; and he was convinced that a science of conduct was yet to be attained which would change the face of the moral world.

The course of thought which led from the Socratic position to the Platonic theory of Ideas has been often analysed, but can hardly ever cease to afford the materials of interesting inquiry. It may be regarded as the result of two distinct processes—distinct in theory, but always perhaps combined in fact: first, the natural development of Socratic principles; secondly, the contact of Plato's mind with other philosophies, chiefly, as we shall see, those of Heraclitus, Pythagoras, and Parmenides, but including the later systems, which owed their rise, like his own, to the Socratic impulse. The scientific ethics of Socrates led directly to a new and more profound metaphysics. He saw that knowledge is the apprehension of the universal, of something that is true of a class of things; and he had applied this conception, gained from the arts of everyday life, to the whole of human conduct. It was left to others to ask in what this apprehension of the universal itself consists, and to extend it to branches of knowledge which he had neglected or undervalued. Plato is distinguished among the followers of Socrates by the comprehensive spirit in which he undertook this new and great enquiry, and the zeal with which he pursued it through the theories and sciences of his time. In particular, he returned with new aims and methods to the earlier doctrines. In successive dialogues we find him supplementing or explaining one saying or opinion of an older philosopher by another, testing them in turn by the questioning method, and using all his strength against principles which seemed to stand in the way of scientific progress. Hence the unique value of the study

study of Plato for the history of philosophy. It was in the mind of Socrates that the moral perplexities of Greece gave birth to the idea of a science in which they should find their solution; but it was Plato who took up again the threads of earlier speculation, and wrought them with the teaching of Socrates into a single fabric.

The great step which was thus made in advance of the Socratic mode of thinking—one not confined to Plato, as indeed it was contained implicitly in earlier theories, but which was turned by him to the greatest account as a basis of further speculation—was the identification of the universal or idea with the ‘really existent.’ The general notions which Socrates had sought for as the objects of true moral knowledge were now regarded as deriving their value from a truth or reality which they possessed in themselves, independently of the instances under which they were presented to experience. Further, this conception of knowing as the contemplation of a super-sensuous or abstract object was extended to all things capable of being known, physical and mathematical as well as moral. Everywhere alike the contrast was traced between the universal as the ‘knowable’ or ‘real,’ and the particular as the sensible or ‘phenomenal.’ knowledge arose by the contact of the mind with the former; the opposite of knowledge—ignorance, error, uncertainty—were inseparably connected with the latter.

The celebrated doctrine of Reminiscence is a phase of this conception—a particular way of representing the separate existence of the ‘knowable.’ Constantly associated with Plato’s name, it is nevertheless found in a very small number of his dialogues, viz., the *Meno*—where it is put forward in a tentative manner as the tale of certain Egyptian priests—the *Phædo*, and the *Phædrus*. Mr. Jowett well says that ‘it is a fragment of a former world,’ which has no place in the philosophy of modern times. ‘But Plato had the wonders of psychology just opening to him, and he had not the explanation of them which is supplied by the analysis of language and the history of the human mind. The question, “Whence come our abstract ideas?” he could only answer by an imaginary hypothesis’ (vol. i. p. 394).

The ‘*Republic*’—by common consent the greatest monument of Plato’s genius—is the first constructive dialogue. By ‘constructive’ is meant one in which a definition is attained by dialectic and applied to the realization in practice of the thing defined. The ‘*Republic*’ is also the work in which the fundamental Platonic contrast of the ‘real’ and the ‘phenomenal’ is exhibited with the greatest fulness of statement and illustration. It is, therefore, the work in which that central position of Platonism

may be best studied, not only in its various aspects as a theory, but also in its application to education and life.

It is difficult to express in any language but Greek the connexion between the different perceptions, feelings, and beliefs which Plato grouped together as unreal or uncertain, in opposition to real or certain knowledge. Sensations, in the first place, were confounded with the inferences derived from them—the error which was first cleared up by Bishop Berkeley. Thus the immediate judgments (*φαντασία*) which sight enables us to form of distance and the like were regarded as sense-knowledge, and their inaccuracy was contrasted with the results of the 'science' of measurement. Again, the attributes which depend upon a relation between objects—such as great and small—were pronounced to be fleeting and uncertain, because they were not true of the same object in different relations. Similarly it was observed that an act of justice depends on relations, on the circumstances of the moment; whereas the idea of justice is the same for an infinite variety of cases. Again, desire is distinguished from rational choice by its direct connexion with sense or feeling (*αἰσθησις*), and by being dependent on a single moment of excitement; whereas it is characteristic of reason to neglect sense and to look beyond the present. Finally, many of these associations entered into the notion of 'seeming' or 'opinion' (*δόξα*); the uncertainty of inference from experience, the relativity of particulars to circumstances, the illusion of the feelings—all which are points of contrast with 'knowledge' (*ἐπιστήμη*). Thus several things which to us seem quite distinct—sense, opinion, relativity, desire—were blended together by the opposition which they present to a true or universal element. This list, however, by no means exhausts the categories under which the opposition might be presented. The 'universal nature in each case'—called the Ideal or 'Form'—is the One, opposed to the Many, or to the infinite or indefinite; it is 'being,' or essence, opposed to 'becoming,' generation; it is the permanent, opposed to the mutable. In practical life, the opposition shows itself as that of the philosopher to the sophist, the dialectician to the rhetorician and poet, the true statesman to the common political leader. The peculiarity of the Greek language, by which the same word (*εἰκάζω*) means 'to make like,' and also 'to conjecture' (the connexion of 'likeness' and 'likelihood' in English is somewhat the same), led to a favourite metaphorical way of representing it as the relation of substance and shadow, or original and copy. The notion of the Ideas as 'clear' (*σαφής*), suggested another comparison, of which great use is made in the 'Republic'—that of knowledge and ignorance to light and darkness.

The

The meaning of this doctrine and its various corollaries cannot be summed up better than in Mr. Jowett's aphorism that—  
 'the modern and ancient philosophical world are not agreed in their conception of truth and falsehood; the one identifies truth almost exclusively with fact, the other with ideas.'

As he puts it elsewhere—

'Plato, who is deeply impressed with the real importance of universals as instruments of thought, attributes to them an essential truth which is imaginary and unreal, for universals may be often false and particulars true.'—vol. ii. p. 132.

Plato, in short, confused the method of science with science itself; and this fallacy will be found underlying every part of his system.

The origin of the theory of Ideas—or, as we may now say, the theory of the self-existence and absolute value of abstractions—reaches far back into the mythical periods of Greece; but it was in the age immediately before Socrates that the tendencies to which it is due first began to assume a distinct shape. A passage in the brilliant and exhaustive Introduction which Mr. Jowett has prefixed to the '*Timæus*' describes vividly, and in language which pierces to the quick of Platonism, the new power which abstractions were then gaining, and the manner in which they affected the course of speculation:—

'An inner world of ideas began to be created, more absorbing, more overpowering, more abiding than the brightest of visible objects, which to the eye of the philosopher looking inward, seemed to pale before them, retaining only a faint and precarious existence. At the same time, the minds of men parted into the two great divisions of those who saw only a principle of motion, and of those who saw only a principle of rest in nature and in themselves; there were born Heracliteans or Eleatics as there have been in later ages born Aristotelians or Platonists.'—vol. ii. p. 505.

Plato's philosophy, even in its simplest form, was a reconciliation in a higher unity of these opposite 'moments.' The Ideas preserved the conception of knowledge from disappearing in the Heraclitean 'flux' of sensible things, and at the same time gave meaning and content to the thin Eleatic abstraction of Unity or Being. In earlier philosophies 'there was a gulf' between abstractions and sensible things, 'and no one could pass from one to the other.' In the scheme of education founded upon the Ideas, and drawn out in the '*Republic*,' the process is shown by which the soul is to be led, in Platonic language, from the shadowy half-lights of sense and opinion up to the unchanging day of truth and reality. The bridge over the gulf  
 from

from particulars to the universal is found by Plato in the mathematical sciences.

Although it is only in the latest works of Plato that Pythagoreanism becomes a dominant influence, so as almost to extinguish the Socratic side of his philosophy, yet from the first he attaches a high value to mathematics. Protagoras is evidently ridiculed for boasting that he teaches his pupils 'what they come to learn,' and not 'calculation, and astronomy, and geometry, and music' (*Protag.* p. 318 E); and in the 'Meno' the truths of geometry are taken as the types of knowledge. In the 'Republic' mathematical science becomes a stage in the progress towards dialectical or absolute knowledge, as distinguished by the character of its methods rather than by its object-matter (as modern writers speak of a geometrical method in politics). It is easy to see the association which led Plato to such a view. Arithmetic and geometry offered, in the highest degree, the characteristics which belonged to knowledge—certainty, independence of preconceived opinion, and independence of the senses. Other sciences which had these qualities less completely—such as astronomy and music—were seen by Plato to be capable of becoming more and more 'pure,' i.e., independent of observation. Such a mode of conceiving science was greatly encouraged, if not created, by the Pythagorean discovery of the harmonic ratios. This was the first great instance of the reduction to mathematical expression of a 'law,' or uniformity of external nature. To the enthusiasm of the first inquirers it presented itself as the key destined to unlock the whole secrets of Nature; it seemed at least to remove the field of investigation from outer experience to the abstractions of their own minds. The science of Harmonics was henceforth treated by the Pythagorean school as capable of being deduced, like Geometry, from a few suppositions, to wit, the 'harmonic' progressions. In the same spirit Plato treats experiments on musical strings, for the purpose of determining intervals, much as we should treat measurements made to verify the theorems of Euclid. In the age in which he wrote, it could hardly be otherwise than that Philosophy, seeking ever to idealise Science, should be guided towards the part of science in which the greatest progress had been made; and it is for the same reason that modern philosophy finds its metaphysics in the field of experience and common sense.

The relation of mathematics to dialectics is noticed in a passage of the 'Euthydemus.' 'The geometers, and astronomers, and calculators (who all belong to the hunting class, for they do not make their diagrams, but only find out that which was previously contained in them)—they, I say, not being able to use,

use, but only to catch their prey, hand over their inventions to the dialecticians, to be applied by them, if they have any sense in them' (p. 290). This agrees, so far as it goes, with the *locus classicus* of the 'Republic' (p. 510). Mathematics is there made to be the lower of two sub-divisions of the 'intellectual' world, that in which the soul uses the figures given by the senses (*e.g.* diagrams) as images, and in which the inquiry must be 'hypothetical,' i. e., as Plato explains this term, must make assumptions (the odd and even, the three kinds of angles, and the like), and argue 'downwards' from them; whereas in the higher division, that of dialectics, the soul uses no 'images,' and rises above hypotheses to something not hypothetical, arriving ultimately at the first principle of all (the Idea of good), and descending again from it to the other Ideas. The mathematical division is further described as bearing the same relation to the dialectical as a shadow or reflection bears to the sensible object; by which probably nothing more is meant than that in mathematics the axioms remain unproved, whereas in dialectics they are expected to lead to higher abstractions—in Platonic language, to knowledge of a more real and absolute order.\*

The statement of the Ideal theory in the 'Republic' is further distinguished from its earlier forms by the stress laid upon the Idea of good; that Idea is to the 'intelligible' what the sun is to the visible world—not only the highest being, but also the cause of existence and knowledge. Dialectic is a 'way up and down;' up to the Idea of good, using hypotheses as 'steps and points of departure;' and down when in the light of that Idea all knowledge has become absolute and self-proving. This seems to mean, translated into modern language, that philosophy starts with induction, not from facts in the scientific

---

\* A valuable article in the 'Journal of Philology' (vol. ii. No. 3, pp. 96—108), by Mr. Henry Sidgwick, discusses this point among others connected with the passage in the 'Republic.' He points out that Aristotle (*Met.* i. 6) offers an explanation which is 'exactly what we want,' but which is not supported in any way by Plato's language. There can be little doubt, therefore, that he is right in refusing to adopt it, and in doubting whether 'Plato, when he wrote the "Republic," had clearly separated in his mind the mathematical from the dialectical object.' But Plato had separated the mathematical from the classified *method*; and the confusion of object and method is one that runs throughout his system. As Mr. Sidgwick observes, 'When Plato says that geometers *suppose* "the odd even, figures," &c., he means, that they suppose both the existence of objects corresponding to these terms, and the truth of their definitions.' We have suggested above, that a similar remark will account for the further difficulty of the relation of the 'hypotheses' to Ideas; namely, that in this as in other cases, Plato does not sufficiently distinguish, or even purposely explains away, the distinction between the certainty with which a thing is proved, the clearness with which it is apprehended, and the order of 'reality' to which it belongs.

sense, but from the conceptions given in particular sciences, in language, and in common opinion. By questioning and reflexion the inquirer or 'dialectician' seeks to determine the relations between these 'hypothetical' notions—a process which results in successive definitions and classifications—and thus ultimately to rise to the highest knowledge, the conception at once the most abstract and the most self-evident, from which all the rest may then be derived. 'This ideal logic,' as Mr. Jowett observes, 'is not the method which was pursued by Plato in the search after justice; there, like Aristotle in the "*Nicomachean Ethics*," he is arguing from experience and the common use of language.' That the higher certainty of the 'longer way round' was, and remained, a mere aspiration, is plain, not only in the '*Republic*' (p. 533), but in works of a more decidedly dialectical character.

The supremacy of the Idea of good is a feature of Plato's system, which is directly descended from the Socratic teaching. With Socrates, as we saw, the knowledge which constituted morality was simply the knowledge of the good, or useful, or really desirable. No man desires what he thinks will do him harm; therefore, he who has desired wrongly did so in ignorance. The thing seemed to him desirable, but was not really so. The Platonic form of this doctrine is that the Good is that which gives not only goodness but also Being to other parts of the world of Ideas. We say that a thing is bad because it is not what it professes to be, because the fact does not answer to the idea. Plato would say, inversely, that it is unreal for want of goodness. Language played a great part in this confusion. The same word (*βουλητόν* or *αἰρετόν*) was used to express the object of a particular wish, the usual object of wish, and the right object of wish; and these three meanings shaded imperceptibly into each other.

Mr. Mill has observed that the Idea of good in the '*Republic*' is less intelligible than the theory in the '*Protagoras*,' according to which good is the object of an art of 'measuring' or calculating pains and pleasures. In the '*Republic*,' 'when the test of pain and pleasure is abandoned, no other elements are shown to us which the Measuring Art is to be employed to measure'\* The same fallacy has been already noted in Plato's conception of Mathematics, when we found him insisting upon the study of the movements and harmonies which are 'seen by the mind only.' Because he saw that the value of mathematical science increases as it supersedes observation and measurement, he was

---

\* '*Dissertations and Discussions*,' vol. iii. p. 345.

led to place its perfection in an absolute independence of facts, overlooking 'the circumstance that there was some elementary basis of fact, some measurement of distance or time, on which they must ultimately rest.' Thus he imagines 'that the method of science can anticipate science:' to use a favourite expression of Mr. Jowett's, the Platonic Good is a 'vacant ideal;' Plato 'sees the light, but not the objects which are revealed by the light.'

Inexperience in the observation of facts, and ignorance of the nature and history of language, are the two characteristic weaknesses of ancient speculation. 'The contemporary of Plato and Socrates could not isolate phenomena, and he was helpless against the influence of any word which had an equivocal or double sense' (vol. ii. p. 505). The latter cause, indeed, and especially the habit which sprang from it of 'identifying language not with thoughts or representations, but with ideas' (vol. i. p. 649), is almost sufficient to account for the Platonic theory. Plato, it may be said, confounded the power which words give of separating notions from the individuals that they represent, with a separate existence of the notions themselves; and, seeing that words connote what is uniform and permanent, whereas individuals are infinitely various and fluctuating, he did not see that this uniformity is only comparative, and amounts ultimately to no more than uniformity in the impressions made upon the portion of mankind speaking a particular language. This lesson has since been taught, first by long experience, and then by a just analysis of language. With the advance of science the language of ordinary life has become more and more insufficient to express the known relations of things; and modern Dialectic has made it one of its chief functions to warn enquirers against the influence of words, and to direct them to look for fixedness and certainty, not in abstractions, but in the 'opposite pole of experience.'

The increase of knowledge, however, has not only tended to limit the influence of language upon thought, but it has given a new conception of experience. The value of experience in scientific enquiry depends on the amount of facts already collected, and on the progress that has been made in digesting them in the form of generalisations. Every new fact of observation, every impression on the senses, calls up a series of accepted and ascertained theories; and it is from this stock of theory that it derives, not indeed its truth as a fact, but its power of modifying or confirming opinion, its clearness to the understanding, and even its power of retaining a hold on the memory. Plato did not start at a point in the progress of science at which the

observation of particulars is applicable, except in the most imperfect way, to discovery. He is like a man using his eyes for the first time, who fancies, because everything seems equally near, that sight cannot tell him the forms and distances of objects. Hence he could not systematically test opinions or notions by facts, but by comparing them with other opinions and notions, either consciously held or implied in language. His error was not in devoting himself to the analysis of abstractions; for, as Mr. Jowett says, summing up the whole matter in a line: 'Before men could observe the world they must be able to conceive the world.' His error lay in giving to abstractions, as such, an absolute value; in supposing that the clearness which general notions give to experience was a clearness which they had in themselves apart from experience. Yet the Platonic mode of thought, which concerns itself with the abstractions under which phenomena are conceived, has its place alongside of the study of these phenomena in detail. The clearness and just co-ordination of ideas which makes the philosophic habit of mind is not the same thing as the agreement of ideas with facts which constitutes scientific accuracy; and positive science does not supersede metaphysics, except as it works out in their application the conceptions which metaphysics have supplied.

The value of Plato's scheme of Dialectic, as Mr. Jowett is careful to point out, lay in the high ideal which it held up as an aim to the science of the future. 'The correlation of the sciences, the consciousness of the unity of knowledge, the sense of the importance of classification, the unwillingness to stop short of certainty or to confound probability with truth, are important principles of the higher education' (vol. ii. p. 157). On the other hand the weakness of the theory was soon felt in the difficulty of explaining consistently the very various degrees of value which Plato would not but recognise in the impressions and beliefs included by him under the term 'opinion' or 'the seeming.' He is far from treating everything which falls short of his conception of knowledge as equally worthless; but he is much at a loss for a satisfactory account of the true or valuable element contained in particular instincts, conjectures, habits, and feelings. The modes in which he approaches the different sides of this problem form, perhaps, the most generally interesting part of his philosophy; for (as may be readily supposed) it is in connection with these attempts, rather than with more abstruse enquiries, that positive and fruitful results are chiefly to be found. Three or four points of view may be distinguished, from which the solution is more or less consciously attempted: (1.) Mythology; (2.) Supernatural influence or madness; (3.)

Morality

Morality based upon habit only ; and (4.) Systems of positive law.

1. Plato's view of the office of mythology is expressed in the 'Republic,' where he recognises it as the earliest instrument of education, to be used in order to accommodate truth to the tender mind ; but partly also on account of our own uncertainty. 'In the tales of mythology, of which we were just now speaking, because we do not know the truth about ancient tradition, we make falsehood as much like truth as we can.' So in the 'Phædrus,' the famous 'allegory (as we should term it) is called by Socrates himself a tolerably credible and possibly true, though partly erring myth.' The value and instructiveness of a myth depends, therefore, on its being 'probable.' Probability, so used, does not mean so much that the chances are in favour of its being true, as that it reflects certain truth, or embodies it in the concrete, and consequently will prepare the way for the reception of the same principles in a more abstract shape.

An acute German critic \* has endeavoured to show that Plato only resorts to the mythical form when he is met by the necessity of explaining the origin or growth (*γένεσις*) of a thing. The theory of Ideas, he argues, is a theory of the existent as necessary and immutable ; the process of becoming has logically no place in it : Plato intended his myths to do for philosophy what the popular mythology did for religion—to express a fundamental series of relations in a narrative form, as something which is, and also which has come to be what it is. Thus (to take the most prominent example), the myth in the 'Phædrus' reconciles the eternity of the mind and of knowledge with the rise and progress of knowledge in the individual. The theory, however, although it is highly suggestive, and opens up a new and interesting side from which to compare the ancient opposition of the real and the phenomenal with the modern idea of development, can hardly be applied to all the myths in the Platonic dialogues. A more adequate account is suggested in Mr. Jowett's remarks on the second book of the 'Republic' (vol. ii. pp. 37 ff.). 'Art' (under which the composition of myths is included) 'may be another aspect of reason ;' and 'this conception of art is not limited to strains of music or the forms of plastic art, but pervades all nature.' Mythology, in short, is made (like the mathematical sciences) a universal type ; it represents the effort of the philosophic imagination to find modes of conceiving the unknown. In this wide sense there are myths taking the form, not only of history, geography, and cosmogony, but even of

\* Deuschle, 'Die platonischen Mythen.' Hanau, 1854.

arithmetic and etymology. Thus the number in the 'Republic' expresses an undiscovered numerical relation, which is believed by Plato to govern the periodical decay inevitable in all human society. And the derivations in the 'Cratylus' express an equally undiscovered relation between the sounds of words and the things which they represent. In neither case is the truth of the myth maintained; only its probability or 'likeness' to truth; as we should say, its fitness to suggest truth.

2. The description of the pursuit of truth under the figure of a divine madness is found along with the mythical imagery of the 'Phædrus,' but it exemplifies a distinct mode of representing the true instincts which yet fall short of knowledge. Of madness Plato there says there are four kinds: that of prophets, of the mysteries, of poetry, and of love; and of these the last is also the best. The enthusiasm of the lover is a lower form, a 'shadow,' of that of the philosopher: the object of the passion is desired because of the true relations which (like the productions of true art) it embodies in a concrete form. Thus there is a progress from sense to reason; the erotic madness passes, if rightly directed, into that enthusiastic anticipation of knowledge (called the love of wisdom, *φιλοσοφία*) which animates the search for absolute truth. At the end of the 'Meno,' the right opinion by which statesmen have guided cities is said to be 'in politics what divination is in religion' (p. 99). The same theory, applied to poetry, is drawn out in the 'Ion,' and in a passage of the 'Republic,' which prescribes the manner of treating the 'multiform' or imitative poet. 'We will fall down and worship him as a sweet and holy and wonderful being, but we must also inform him that there is no place for such as he is in our state—the law will not allow them. And so when we have anointed him with myrrh, and set a garland of wool upon his head, we shall send him away to another city' (p. 398). The tone of this passage, and of the 'Ion,' is that of a gentle contempt for the irrational element. In other places, however, the same thing is treated with the utmost respect. Thus, in the 'Laws,' it is said that Athenians, when good, are so in spite of their constitution, by a divinely-given nature. Hence it is not necessary to suppose that the theory in the 'Meno,' un-Platonic as it seems, is proposed in irony; of which, Mr. Jowett remarks, there is no trace. 'A person may have some skill or latent experience, which he is able to use himself, and is yet unable to teach others, because he has no principles and is not able to collect and arrange his ideas. He has practice, but not theory; art, but not science. This is a true fact of psychology, which is recognised by Plato in this passage'

(vol. i. p. 253). We may add that it is a fact which the Socratic doctrine and that of Plato's earlier writings had ignored; so that the 'Meno' may be thought to mark Plato's first attempts to place the relation of virtue and knowledge in a truer light. Plato, we may suppose, felt the difficulties of the Socratic identification, and had not yet gained the higher point of view—that of Dialectic—upon which his own identification ultimately rests.

3. In the 'Republic,' the progress from sense to knowledge is represented by means of a psychology from which mythical and allegorical elements are finally excluded. The efficacy of the various means of moral education in preparing the way for the higher or scientific morality is now ascribed, as in the *Ethics* of Aristotle, to the influence of habit. 'Rhythm and harmony find their way into the secret places of the soul, on which they mightily fasten, bearing grace in their movements and making the soul graceful of him who is rightly educated, or ungraceful if ill-educated;' and he who is thus trained 'will justly blame and hate the bad now in the days of his youth, even before he is able to know the reason of the thing; and when reason comes he will recognise and salute her as a friend with whom his education has made him long familiar' (p. 402 *Steph.*). In the scheme of the seventh book this training is referred to as the music 'which was the counterpart of gymnastic, and trained the guardians by the influences of habit, &c.' (p. 522). In the State the same influences produce a lower kind of virtue, yet one of real value. Thus, in the myth of the 'Phædo,' 'those who have practised the civil and social virtues which are called temperance and justice, and are acquired by habit and attention without philosophy and mind,' are happy, and (it is added with a tinge of irony) 'may be expected to pass into some gentle social nature which is like their own, such as that of bees, or ants, or even back again into the form of man, and just and moderate men spring from them' (p. 82). Yet, for want of knowledge, such characters are liable to fail; their virtue wants the 'fastening of the cause;' they do not know the real superiority of good to evil.

4. In the 'Laws' and also in the 'Statesman,' the spirit of compromise with the actual conditions of the time is carried so far that Plato renounces the attempt to apply his ideal to human life. In the place of philosophy he puts law: in the place of living guardians, governing by the fewest and most abstract principles, he puts magistrates, bound by a vast system of minute and unalterable regulations. The point of view from which this change should be estimated may be expressed in the words of the 'Statesman.' 'The best thing of all is not that the law should

rule, but that a man should rule, supposing him to have wisdom and royal power,' and that because 'the law cannot comprehend exactly what is noblest or most just, or at once ordain what is best for all' (p. 294 *Steph.*). Yet, until the perfect ruler is found, the best hope is in governing strictly according to law. 'When the foundation of politics is in the letter only and in custom, and knowledge is divorced from action, can we wonder, Socrates, at the miseries that there are, and always will be, in States? Any other art, built on such a foundation, would be undermined,—there can be no doubt of that. Ought we not rather to wonder at the strength of the political bond? For States have endured all this, time out of mind, and yet some of them still remain, and are not overthrown, though many of them, like ships foundering at sea, are perishing and have perished, and will hereafter perish, through the incapacity of their pilots and crews, who have the worst ignorance of the highest truths—I mean to say that they are wholly unacquainted with politics, of which, above all other sciences, they believe themselves to have acquired the most perfect knowledge' (p. 302 *Steph.*).

Modern readers, aware how essential the influence of custom is, not merely for the smooth working of institutions but for their existence, will recognise in this language much of the same neglect of facts, or absorption of facts in the idea, which we have already noted as the main characteristic of Platonism. Yet the passage, amid the despairing picture which it so vividly presents of the decay of Greek politics, allows us to see that Plato is anxious to find a place in his philosophy for the lessons of experience. Nor can we be surprised that it is in political philosophy that respect for facts seems to show itself for the first time, when we remember what a vast field of observation in this field was afforded by the Greek States.

In the 'Republic,' to which we now turn, the absolute and intrinsic value of justice is shown not merely, as in the 'Gorgias,' by identifying morality with knowledge, but by answering the particular question, 'What is justice?' And the answer has two meanings, according as it is applied to the State or the individual. Justice, in the State, is the principle by which its different parts or classes are restricted to their proper work; in the individual, it is the corresponding restriction of the various faculties—reason, spirit, the desires—to their functions in the microcosm of the soul. Mr. Grote objected to this mode of solution that justice, in the sense of Glaucon and Adeimantus, is common honesty of dealing; whereas Socrates extends it to include all virtue. Plato would reply that common honesty, which is the most familiar kind of justice, must be considered not by itself, but

under the idea which fits the whole. And that idea must be one that can be realised both in the State and in the individual. 'In seeking to establish the purely internal nature of justice, he is met by the fact that man is a social being; and he tries to harmonise them as well as he can' (vol. ii. p. 21). The difficulties are partly logical, as, *e. g.*, that there may be justice between individuals who are themselves neither just nor unjust; partly practical, arising from the intimate connexion, yet not amounting to identity, between justice and law. Aristotle cleared up the subject by showing, in the first place, that the vague political use of the term justice was really different from that in which it meant 'honesty'; and secondly, that justice, as the virtue of an individual, is not a thing in which internal take the place of social relations, but a state of mind towards the acts required under these social relations. Mr. Jowett's account of the Platonic view hardly seems to recognise the way in which Plato's distinction complicates, while appearing to solve, the difficulty of the sufficiency of justice for happiness. 'The two brothers ask Socrates to prove to them that the just is happy when they have taken from him all that in which happiness is ordinarily supposed to consist' (*Ibid.*, p. 20). And Socrates undertakes this proof. His answer in substance amounts to this,—that under favourable circumstances, *i. e.* in the perfect State, justice and happiness will coincide; and that when justice has been once found, happiness may be left to take care of itself' (*Ibid.*, p. 22). This, however, is only the happiness of the State. The happiness of the individual depends, according to the sequel of the 'Republic,' not upon the perfect State, but upon the perfect or just individual. The 'royally constituted man' is especially happy when he is king in the ideal State, and the tyrannical man especially miserable when he is also a tyrant; but this is, in both cases, an exceptional enhancing of their position. In reality, as Aristotle perceived, the question is not so much, 'What is justice?' as 'What is happiness?' If happiness consists in external goods, then justice (or the rule of society), in the strong man's view, is that he should get as much as he desires; in that of weak men, that they should combine to keep what they can. Or, if happiness consists in the pleasure of the greatest number, then justice depends upon the conduct by which that pleasure may be best secured. But if happiness is an idea—the application to human life of a higher abstraction, the Idea of good, or the realization of human perfection, or under whatever form an ideal philosophy of ethics may conceive it—then it is the task of such a philosophy to harmonise this idea with its conception of the world and of knowledge. If

Plato

Plato fails, as Mr. Grote says, by representing (in the just man of the 'Gorgias') a superhuman or transcendent virtue; or again, as Mr. Mill points out, by finding no worthy place for an Aristides, a man whose justice consists in implicit obedience to law and traditional morality: the reason is, that in his ethics, as in other parts of his system, the highest truth is made to reside in the purest attainable abstraction. The notion of happiness, apart from ingredients, is parallel to the notion of an astronomy without the visible heavens, 'or of harmonics without audible harmony.'

The manner in which Plato treats the question of pleasure varies in the different dialogues, but always exhibits the tendency to make light of that which presents itself as a fact or process rather than as an idea. In the 'Protagoras' Socrates begins, indeed, by assuming that pleasure is merely another name for good; but he soon shows that the choice of pains and pleasures involves comparison between them, and therefore an 'art of measurement.' Pains and pleasures, it follows, are only, as it were, the material out of which the Good (or 'useful' or 'happiness') may be formed; whereas knowledge is the formative element. This mode of stating the theory of Socrates is hardly to be distinguished from the latest form of Utilitarianism; but with Plato, to whom the form or idea is always the real element, it led directly to the inference that pleasure is something transient and 'unreal,'—a view which naturally acquired strength and consistency with the development of the theory of Ideas. In the 'Theætetus,' again, Socrates shows that the apprehension of the useful, by bringing in the consideration of consequences, involves comparison, and therefore the universal element. In both cases, the difficulty which we feel in rightly understanding the issue arises from the extreme form in which the opposite doctrines are found. All philosophers, even the most opposed, would now agree in giving a value both to experience and to abstractions, and also in recognising pleasure as an element to be brought under regulation by a principle of some kind. Modern psychology lies wholly within the ancient extremes,—'Sense is the only knowledge,' 'Sense is delusive;' just as modern ethics lies within the analogous extremes,—'Pleasure is the good,' 'Pleasure is worthless.'

The 'confusion of ethics and politics' is not, strictly speaking, the Platonic confusion of the State and the individual as moral agents, but rather a confusion of the relations in which an individual stands to the State with those in which he stands to other groups or to the whole of mankind, to other sentient beings, and to his own character and prospects. The place which the

organisation

organisation of the State has held in this general fabric of moral duty has varied in different periods of history ; but the tendency has been, on the whole, towards diminishing its importance. The duties enforced by law, or by a custom having the stringency of law—though never in Greece, perhaps, co-extensive with morality—are much less nearly so than they were in Plato's time. The State, moreover, does not now make so exclusive a claim on the regard of its citizens. Other forms of common action and sentiment—the town or district, the Church, the European public, the brotherhood of mankind—divide with it the interest once concentrated on the Hellenic city. Mr. Jowett thus sums up the chief advantages and disadvantages of this tendency : we have added an occasional gloss :—

'The identification of ethics with politics has a tendency to give definiteness to ethics, and also to elevate and ennoble men's notions of the aims of Government and of the duties of citizens ; for ethics from one point of view [that of mankind as a single community] may be conceived as an idealized law and politics ; and politics, as ethics reduced to the conditions of human society. There have been evils [loss of individuality, isolation of small communities, stereotyping of institutions] which have arisen out of the attempt to identify them, and this has led to the separation or antagonism of them, which has been introduced by modern political writers. But we may also feel that something has been lost in their separation [that ethics tends to evaporate in sentiment, and politics to degenerate into mere police, protecting selfish and isolated "rights"] ; and the ancient philosophers who regarded the moral and intellectual well-being of mankind first, and the wealth of nations and individuals second, may have a salutary influence on some of the speculations of modern times. Many political maxims [e. g. *laissez-faire*, non-intervention, toleration] originate in a reaction against the opposite error ; and when the errors against which they were directed have passed away, in their turn becomes errors.'—vol. ii. p. 151.

It has been already observed that, although Plato retained to the last his belief in the ideal State, and consequently in the dialectical system upon which it depends, there are some dialogues in which he gives much greater prominence than in others to experience and common opinion. This difference shows itself in a curious way through the structure of the 'Republic.' The first four books contain little that rises above traditional Hellenic notions : it is in the last six that Plato attempts, as Mr. Jowett finely expresses it, 'to unite the past of Greek history with the future of philosophy.' The effect of this peculiarity is, that all the main subjects receive a double treatment ; the second proceeding on the basis of the first, and completing it from the higher point of view. Education is at first only music

and gymnastic: Homer is excluded from it on the grounds of common morality. Afterwards education is a lifelong work, leading through the mathematical sciences to dialectics. Poetry is found to be 'the imitation of an imitation.' The virtues are first defined by a confessedly imperfect method; they are afterwards seen in the light of a 'higher knowledge' (p. 504 *Steph.*). The community of families and property is hinted at in the first part; but the defence of it needs all the help of the 'longer way,' and, in fact, is made the occasion for introducing the doctrine of Ideas, and with it the reign of philosophers, on the stage of the dialogue. Thus by artistic arrangement, as well as in express terms, dialectics is proclaimed as the central and necessary part of the system, to which all the previous discussions had been leading up, and without which they are shown to be imperfect.

These considerations seem to illustrate a peculiarity of the 'Republic' on which Mr. Grote laid some stress, namely, the abandonment of the Socratic cross-questioning. The definitions of the virtues in the fourth book of the 'Republic' are no better than those which are examined and rejected in earlier dialogues, such as the 'Charmides' and 'Laches;' indeed, they are sometimes actually the same. 'The logical and ethical difficulties still exist: they have never been elucidated; the 'Republic' does not pretend to elucidate them, but overlooks or overleaps them.'\* Plato, it may be answered, does not profess to attain perfect certainty in this part of the argument: he leaves that to the dialectic which is the ever-retreating object of his pursuit. Compared with the 'Laws' where the questioning method and the theory of Ideas alike disappear, the first four books of the 'Republic' mark a less advanced stage in the course of Platonic speculation. In the large element of traditional opinion, and the disposition—hinted at rather than confessed—to be content in the pressure of circumstances with something short of certainty, they recall the later and more dogmatic vein. Hence, the relation between the two parts of the 'Republic' proves that a growing sense of practical aims and requirements was consistent with an undiminished faith in the value of the ideal and of the scientific methods which aim at absolute knowledge. Plato had not, in Mr. Grote's sense of the phrase, 'gone over to the Government benches.' The shorter way which he had found, and which had yielded positive results, did not make it less his duty to search for that longer way which he neither did nor could find.

---

\* Grote's 'Plato,' vol. iii. p. 165. Ed. 1867.

The dialogues which compose Mr. Jowett's third volume (except perhaps the 'Gorgias') are regarded by him as in all probability later than the 'Republic.' They have, as he shows in the successive Introductions, many common characteristics, not only of language and dramatic treatment, but also of method and doctrine. The style, in most of them, is comparatively hard and artificial, wanting in humour and liveliness; the personal interest and play of character is subordinated to logical arrangement; there is much less cross-questioning, and more positive result; definitions are not propounded, and one after another refuted, but are sought by a regular method of classification. The relation to earlier and to contemporary systems is much more prominent. Indeed, in these dialogues, especially in the 'Theætetus' and 'Sophist', we find much that belongs to the modern historical study of philosophy: the conceptions, for instance, of the development of doctrines, of the virtual identity of doctrines under different forms, of opposing tendencies—'right and left wings'—of a school, of philosophical ideas implicit in literature and common opinion. And chief among the notes of progress or of decay which mark this part of Plato's course must be ranked the new aspects assumed by his theory of Ideas. We have seen that the notion of pre-existent Ideas is confined to a few dialogues (the 'Meno,' 'Phædrus,' and 'Phædo'), and that in the 'Republic' they are represented (but without discussion) as all subordinate or derivative, compared with the Idea of good. The group of dialogues which we have now reached is chiefly occupied with questions turning on the relations of Ideas to each other, or with difficulties suggested in this part of the subject by Plato himself or by his contemporaries.

The 'Parmenides' may be described as the great critical or 'elenctic' dialogue of the later stage of Platonism, holding somewhat the same place on the threshold of later metaphysics which the 'Protagoras' holds towards Plato's own theory. Mr. Jowett's analysis is such as befits its importance and obscurity. His view of the aim and purpose of the work is new, and is an example of that union of subtlety and simplicity which renders him so consummate an interpreter. The dialogue consists of two divisions: the principal speaker in both is Parmenides; the method pursued is the same, that of the Megarian dialectic (which, as the latest phase of the Eleatic philosophy, is 'fathered upon the founder of the school'), and is a criticism of the two forms of idealism,—first the Platonic Ideas, secondly the Eleatic One or Being. The criticism is serious rather than hostile. 'No one can answer the questions which Parmenides asks of Socrates. And yet these questions are asked with the express

acknowledgment:

acknowledgment that the denial of ideas will be the destruction of the human mind' (Parm. p. 135 B). So in the second part, Plato 'did not mean to say that Being or Substance had no existence, but he is preparing for the development of his later view, that ideas were capable of relation.' To some extent, too, the Megarian school were carrying on, but with a serious purpose, the Eristic methods of the Sophists; and Plato accordingly, who, in the 'Euthydemus,' had attacked the Sophistical disputations by an extravagant caricature, is now preparing himself to meet the destructive arguments of his Megarian contemporaries by weapons taken from their own armoury.

The Megarian dialectic is again criticised in the 'Sophist,' and in a manner which leads to more positive results and enables us better to understand their doctrines. The Megarians, like the Eleatics, sought for certainty in the universal, and, like Plato, identified the highest abstraction or 'Being' with the Good. They also regarded this Being under the attributes of unity and rest, and thus denied that either motion or plurality could have a 'real' existence. These doctrines, which are not inconsistent with Plato's earlier writings, and perhaps are implicitly taught in them, were seen by him to be destructive to science. By denying motion they made it impossible to conceive the relation of the mind to the thing known: and by denying plurality to ideas they did away with predication (since an idea could only be asserted of itself), and with the difference of kinds which is necessary for classification. The 'Sophist' works out two important conceptions, for which the way had been prepared, as Mr. Jowett points out, in the 'Parmenides,' that of relation between ideas, and that of the ideas as motive powers. In them, to use Plato's language, we must regard Being as both one and many, and also as both rest and motion. In the dialogue these questions are perplexed by the 'puzzle about not-being,' which is got over by making 'not-being' equivalent to difference. But this, as Mr. Jowett acutely remarks, though a useful shift, is not the permanently valuable part of the dialogue. 'The greater service rendered (by Plato in the 'Sophist') to mental science, is the recognition of the communion of classes, which, although based by him on his account of not-being is independent of this. He clearly saw that the isolation of ideas or classes is the annihilation of reasoning. Thus, after wandering in many diverging paths, we return to common sense' (vol. iii. p. 459). Moreover, in admitting the idea of motion into the ideal world, Plato was planting the germ of a theory capable of superseding his own. The idea of progress or development is perhaps to be traced in earlier dialogues; but only, as we saw, under a mythical

mythical form. The 'return to common sense,' that is to say, the attainment by philosophy of a mode of conceiving one or more of the phases of experience, gives in this case an idea which reaches further than that of classification, and which was infinitely more difficult to ancient thinkers.

The 'Sophist' is expressly represented by Plato as a continuation of the 'Theætetus.' The main element of connexion is 'not-being,' the confusion, as Mr. Jowett translates it into modern language, of negation and falsehood. There are other indications, however, in the 'Theætetus' that Plato had begun to examine afresh the vague and thin generalisations which underlie such words as being, whole, likeness, sameness, motion, and that he was seeking to bring them into agreement with his Ideas. And amid the wealth of suggestions which characterises that dialogue, we find 'something not really different from generalisation,' by which Plato is laying the foundation of a rational psychology (vol. iii. p. 356, cf. Theæt. p. 186 D, and Parm. 132 A).

The relation of the 'Philebus' to the 'Sophist' and 'Parmenides' is difficult to determine, because in it the dialectical element is subordinated to the ethical and physical. Mr. Jowett speaks of it as earlier: in the well-known passage about One and the Many (Phileb. pp. 14 C-17 A), he discerns the 'germs of the attack upon the ideas, and the transition to a more rational philosophy' (vol. iii. p. 255). Zeller sees in the same passage a brief statement of results already attained in the 'Parmenides.' Each Idea, it is laid down, includes the One and a finite plurality, *i. e.* the notion of a higher kind, and those of lower kinds, into which the higher may be divided: and it also 'has in its nature' the finite (in the general notions), and the infinite or unlimited (in the particulars). This view is farther developed so as to give four orders or elements of existence:—(1) limit or definite numerical relation; (2) the unlimited, or more and less; (3) the mixture of the two (the product or result of applying a law of measure to measurable quantity, *e. g.* health, beauty, harmony, favourable climate); and (4) the cause or producer of the mixture. The first three are kinds: there may be many species of each, but all comprehended under a single notion. The last is mind or reason—that which furnishes our bodies with life and wise treatment, and, as we may argue by analogy, is the cause and deviser of the orderly and beautiful universe.

The theory in this form shows several of the latest tendencies of Platonism. The representation of the cause of existence as rational and half-personal—a soul of the universe parallel to the human soul—agrees with the passage in the 'Sophist'

which

which (as we have seen) ascribes motion and intelligence to the highest being, and prepares us for the cosmogony of the 'Timæus.' The prominence given to the conception of limit is a step to the representation of the Ideas as numbers—the Pythagorean shape which Plato's theory finally appears to have assumed. On the side of ethics the same conception, as that of 'measure' and 'the mean,' is a link of connexion with the 'Statesman,' and with the ethical system of Aristotle.

The dialogue called the 'Laws,' which occupies most of Mr. Jowett's fourth volume, is perhaps the part of Plato which is least generally known. As a literary work it is certainly inferior to the 'Republic;' and its great length, coupled with a style which those who are familiar with Plato still find obscure, has led to this comparative neglect. Yet it offers, in some respects, the most interesting subjects of study. No part of Plato, and, it may be said, no ancient writing, sums up so well the highest religious thoughts of heathenism. The anticipation of the subsequent course of philosophy which is often so remarkable in Plato is especially so in the 'Laws;' and the treatment of some practical questions—for example, that of the different kinds of involuntary actions—is at least as satisfactory as that of Aristotle. In its relation to earlier forms of Platonism the dialogue is of peculiar interest. Between the two types of society which Plato has hitherto contrasted—that which ought to be and that which is—he now interposes a third, that which may be. Instead of the bold speculation and the sweeping censure of existing things which mark his earlier works, he is found treating antiquity with scrupulous veneration, anxious to collect and build into a single structure all that the wisdom of legislators or immemorial custom has made most sacred. The ethical spirit which pervades the work is not less lofty than that of other parts of Plato; but it is gentle and tolerant. The hopeful tone inspired by the fancy of giving laws to an infant community is curiously mixed with the sobriety, the sense of illusion, the 'browner tinge' inseparable from the autumn of life. The defence of the genuineness of the 'Laws' which Mr. Jowett offers is not only satisfactory, but exemplifies admirably the principles which ought to govern such cases. As a polemic, it is happily almost superfluous, the critics being nearly unanimous in admitting the work to be Plato's.\*

Much might still be said, especially in connexion with the 'Laws,' of the historical value of Plato: of the interest, that is

\* Neither Mr. Jowett nor Dr. Thompson seems to have noticed that Zeller has long since withdrawn the doubts which at one time he expressed of the genuineness of the 'Laws.' See his 'Gesch. d. Philosophie,' ii. pp. 638, n. 2.

to say, which his philosophy has, not merely as a stage in the discovery of truth, but as the reflection in the world of abstractions of a great and critical period of human history. 'Il faut réfléchir,' says Montesquieu, 'sur la Politique d'Aristote et sur les deux Républiques de Platon, si l'on veut avoir une juste idée des lois et des mœurs des anciens Grecs.' And the peculiar vividness and sympathy with Greek life which distinguishes the work of the latest historian of Greece (Dr. Ernst Curtius) is due in great measure to the appreciative study of these ideals.

In many ways, too, the lessons are of universal application. The Platonic formulas are broad aspects, presented to the distant view of the philosopher, of relations which belong to all known periods, as well as of those which especially characterised the Greece of Plato's own time. The fundamental contrast so constantly dwelt upon between 'reality' and 'appearance' is an expression of the struggle carried on at all times by the progressive element of true ideas against the vast slough of common opinion which ever threatens to engulf the better thoughts and strivings of men. The power which this opinion has of becoming embodied in sham ideas or generalisations of its own, and of raising up its own prophets with their cheap wisdom; the contest between popularity and higher things, fought out in the minds of those to whom the capacity has been given of directing the course of human affairs; the causes by which the possible statesman or teacher is perverted into the demagogue or the solitary enthusiast; the hopes of a new order of things by the reception, among men at large, of ideas which are to be first worked out by great thinkers:—these are the materials of which Plato has formed the warp and woof of his philosophy; and they are still full of meaning. In other respects, the attitude and tendencies of Plato must be judged with more exclusive reference to contemporary politics, and we may have to admit that he himself needs the help of some of the pleas which he urges, in the 'Republic,' on behalf of his order. He was not only opposed to the popular government and the wide political toleration which prevailed at Athens, but he hardly recognises the merit even of statesmen who, like Pericles, certainly did not err by too great submission to the fancies of the multitude. He would have trusted rather to a strict and all-embracing discipline, administered by a small number of rulers, such as that which had powerfully impressed the Greek imagination through the great part in history played by Sparta. The same bias prevailed widely among speculative politicians, and perhaps was justified by the unhappy circumstances of the time. In an age of unsettlement and fierce passion, when the Greek States were tossing  
about

about and 'like ships foundering at sea,' it was natural to look upon all movement either as the fitful ebb and flow of unreasoning impulses or as part of a ceaseless and inevitable change for the worse. It is characteristic, too, of those who have dwelt too exclusively upon the abstract notions of science to be 'absolutist,' confident in the value of their ideal, and impatient of the limitations of practice. The doctrine of development or progress has taught the world two great lessons—not indeed of knowledge, but of Socratic wisdom in ignorance: faith in the future, and toleration of the present. We have learned to hope, though we cannot demonstrate, that we live in a world which grows better, as Plato would say, 'under the hands of time,' through the ceaseless working of infinite and silent agencies. Such a reflection should not lead to a spirit of fatalism, but rather to the feeling that, in judging of the efforts and tendencies around us, we should tolerate where we cannot dogmatise. We may learn from what Plato has done, and from what he hoped to do, that the genuine pursuit of truth may be most fruitful in the direction least suspected by the inquirer himself, and that the errors which he condemns and would wish to destroy may contain the germs of still greater but more distant truth.

- 
- ART. VIII.—1. *Battle of Dorking.* London, 1871.  
 2. *Parliamentary Debates on the Army Bill.* 1871.

WE have been accustomed now for some years to watch the meeting of Parliament with feelings of greater anxiety than in former times. The happy confidence which a Session of even tenour and a temperate administration of public affairs, such as on the whole, it must be admitted, was inspired by Lord Palmerston, exists no longer. Those halcyon days of public calm and substantial progress have been succeeded by cyclones of political violence which strain to the utmost the strength of the Constitution. But never within the memory of this generation did the British Parliament meet under more serious and sobering conditions than in February, 1871; and never also, it may be added, were those conditions more favourable in a party and personal point of view to a Government in which patriotism and good sense might be assumed active principles of conduct. The Ministry were entering upon their third session; they had the prestige of past success; they had secured the consent of Parliament to the policy which, rightly or wrongly, they had pledged themselves to carry; and they had so annulled the

ascendency of the Protestant Church, so modified the land tenure in Ireland, that by the confession of the Prime Minister himself, it was now well that legislation on Irish subjects should cease. On the other hand, they had the opportunity of gathering in a very harvest of internal and social reforms, in which national happiness and well-being are far more deeply concerned than in the conventional controversies which have lost the salt and savour of reality and debated without faith or enthusiasm, are becoming the stock-in-trade of professional politicians. A comprehensive settlement of the merchant-shipping, of the licensing, and of the sanitary laws, though incapable of conferring party triumphs, might alone have redeemed a failing Government and have given honour to an otherwise barren session. The expediency of avoiding sensational legislation, which is fast becoming the necessity and the curse of our parliamentary system, rendered this desirable, whilst the lull which had succeeded to the large changes of previous sessions made it easy. As yet, too, the Cabinet, though modified in its composition, had not entirely lost the influence which the presence of men of undoubted capacity had conferred upon its origin. The failures which had up to this time occurred had been confined to particular departments of state and not become patent to the whole country; there lingered on a general impression of their political ability—their friends believing that after the legislative labours of the last two years they would find, alike in the requirements of the case and in their own special qualifications, a scope for sound and careful administration, and many of their opponents desiring, for a variety of reasons, that they should remain in office and be successful. It is true that our foreign policy had not been of a character to strengthen their position. During the gigantic war that was even then raging, England had played a part which was not very usual to her, which to the less sophisticated intelligences of former days would have seemed one of national feebleness, if not of humiliation, and which was all the more unsatisfactory and inexplicable to the great body of the people, that, being in an exceptionally strong moral position, we yet made no use of our power, except to indulge in assurances of a rather meaningless—and certainly unappreciated—sympathy with both belligerents; and that whilst knowing our real military weakness we yet persevered in a systematic reduction of all the main elements and conditions of military strength. On the other hand, the Colonial difficulties of 1870—far more formidable than the outside world understood them to be—had, partly by inevitable concessions, partly by the concurrence of fortunate circumstances, partly for reasons inde-

pendent

pendent of all ministerial action, been lulled into temporary repose.

But one question there was which, from recent events, no less than from its own intrinsic claims, had risen into overwhelming importance, and on which, independently of a strong feeling out of doors, the great parties in the State were substantially united in a public and patriotic desire to give support to the Government. It was the question of Army Reorganization.

At first, indeed, it seemed as if the Government were not altogether unequal to the situation. The Queen's Speech acknowledged the urgency of military reform, and an early day was named in the House of Commons for the Ministerial statement; and though that statement was, as regards breadth of plan and workmanlike fulness of detail, cruelly disappointing, yet so desirous were Parliament, the Press, and the general public to give all possible support to the Minister in his duty, that the most favourable construction was placed upon his shadowy assurances of reorganization; and the hope was even indulged that from them might be evolved some residuum of administrative reform. At all events, it was clear that, both by official word and act, the insufficiency of our defensive preparations was now acknowledged, and it was felt that one step had been made towards a sounder condition of affairs. We did not then conjecture that a so-called scheme, drawn out with some semblance of elaboration, would, growing beautifully less with each successive stage of Parliamentary discussion, be reduced by the end of July to a bill for the mere compensation of officers upon the abolition of Purchase; still less could it be guessed that we should be gravely told that the Government were satisfied with this conclusion, and that they had from the first contemplated it.

In the earlier part of the Session such frankness would have been as imprudent as it would have been impossible; and even the present majority in the House of Commons would scarcely have so construed the doctrine of a passive obedience to Mr. Gladstone as to accept the declaration. That they were ready to accept much is true. In spite of Ministerial glosses, the nakedness of our military preparations was well known to all who looked below the surface; and even before Mr. Cardwell's explanations, questions were asked and notices given to call the attention of Parliament to the subject. Nor was this unnatural. The tremendous events which were passing in France, and which were fraught with the gravest lessons to every nation that had possessions to lose or independence to maintain, had created a painful and well-founded anxiety as to our own great deficiencies, and our confessed inability to move a single *corps d'armée* for

for the support of treaty engagements abroad, perhaps even for the defence of the country itself, had, in spite of brave words and Ministerial professions, revealed itself beyond controversy. Pamphlets, speeches, newspaper articles were, for once, singularly unanimous; and the proofs of administrative unreadiness, which even the War Minister unintentionally brought to light, had contributed to deepen the general impression of insecurity. Not the least significant, perhaps, of these evidences was a statement made by Mr. Cardwell, doubtless in all good faith, but without sufficient verification on his part, at the end of the Session of 1870, and intended to reassure the then general anxiety, that there were 300,000 breech-loaders in store, which, though true to the letter, was found, on further inquiry, to convey a very misleading impression of the real facts. It was ascertained that not only did this number—after all a very inadequate provision for the English army—include carbines and breech-loading weapons of different types, sizes, and calibres, and therefore unsuitable for uniform distribution, but that a considerable proportion of these were no longer in England, and, being unavailable, had, like many other War-Office preparations, only an existence on paper. It was naturally asked why, if we had 300,000 breech-loaders in store, the Government had allowed the Volunteers to remain armed with the obsolete muzzle-loader, and uninstructed in the new drill; still more, why there were regiments of the line to whom no distribution of the new weapon had been made? When this last inquiry was made at the commencement of the Session in the House of Lords, it was met with an indignant disclaimer that amounted almost to a denial; but the value of such rejoinders was made clear by a recent return, bearing date 22nd June, 1871, from which it appears that on the 1st October, 1870, there were, independently of some cavalry regiments, no less than thirty regiments of the line that were still armed with muzzle-loading rifles; whilst, as regards one of them, the marvellous comment was added that the rifles which they were using were condemned, that the Snider arms were ready for distribution, but that no ammunition was available!

That this astounding condition of things has, within the last few months, been in some slight degree rectified, may be presumed, both from the publicity which has been given to the particular fact, and from a short discussion on the subject at the close of the Session: but that it should be possible, and that it should be left to the criticisms and pressure of private members of Parliament to drag such details to light, are circumstances of the gravest significance, which throw a suspicion both on the

general assurances in which the present Government deal so largely, and on those many parts of the subject which lie outside the ken of the unofficial world. Though enquiry and criticism are the duty of a Parliamentary Opposition, it is clearly beyond their competence to undertake the supervision and correction of such branches of executive administration. If it were necessary to do so, they ought without delay to change places with the holders of office.

The time may come when, instructed by military reverses, we or our children may think it incredible that an English Government should have been willing, amidst the warnings of the past year, to allow weeks and months to slip away with the needful precautions neglected: still more extraordinary that Parliament and the country should have been content to accept excuses too transparent even to be plausible, and to risk the vast fortunes of England upon the accident of the hour, the forbearance of our enemies, or the generosity of our rivals. To appreciate the extent of this neglect is difficult for any ordinary civilian, to whom war on English soil is almost without meaning; but it is hardly too much to say, that in those departments of military organisation which Prussia has brought to such high excellence, and in which every other Continental Power is striving to rival Prussia, our preparations might be written down as nil. In men, in material, in training, in equipment, in the proportionate blending of localisation and concentration, in transport,—in all that makes an army readily available for attack or defence, and distinguishes it from an armed rabble, we are, if we measure our requirements by the conditions of our time, nearly, if not absolutely, deficient. The torpedoes to which the American war had given such prominence, with which even Turkey and Egypt thought it necessary to be provided, which might be invaluable for the defence of our seaport towns, and which had been recommended more than two years ago by the Floating Obstruction Committee, remained only in the domain of official controversy. It was repeatedly asserted, and the assertion met with no denial, that in the autumn of last year there was but one torpedo in existence in the arsenal, or, as it might be more fitly termed, the military museum of the English nation. As it was with torpedoes, so is it with our supply of the particular gunpowder which is suitable to the new class of ordnance, and which is the very breath of modern warfare. Discussions in Parliament and the Press made it unequivocally clear that, during the last two years of unwise economies, our Government, like one of those financing companies of whose acuteness we are accustomed to speak more highly than of

their honesty, had been living upon our capital stock of powder—that we had none of the first class in store, an insufficient quantity of a second and inferior class and a redundancy of a third and worthless kind;—that this third class would be ineffective in action, incapable of developing the power of our modern artillery, even damaging to them, and is in practice rejected by the Navy;—that the Government establishment can barely produce an amount equal to one year's consumption in time of peace; and that, as long experience shows, contract powder, which can only be procured of the second and inferior quality, is untrustworthy and extravagantly costly, when, in a moment of urgency, the difficulty of the Government becomes the opportunity of the manufacturer. Again, as with gunpowder so with our fortifications. Ten years have gone by since Lord Palmerston induced Parliament to accept a scheme for the defence of our great arsenals; but the proposals of the Commissioners have been pared down to save money; portions of the work done are officially declared to be neutralised by an absence of the collateral supports which formed a part of the original design; some of their most important recommendations have been deliberately set aside, and generally the fortifications are not completed or the full complement of guns mounted. The condition of Gibraltar and Malta—the keys of our Eastern empire and the guarantees of our existence as an European power—is even worse. With small garrisons and an inadequate number of trained gunners, with an extensive range of fortifications to defend, and those fortifications unready for war, they seem to court the attack of the first unscrupulous opponent. Even our greatest commercial seaports cannot be pronounced secure. Undefended by earthworks on the land side, by guns and turretships towards the sea, their vast wealth might, on a sudden declaration of war, be at the mercy of a few ironclad privateers or fireships. What the United States do not grudge to their seaboard—what the Colonial Legislatures of New South Wales and Victoria think it prudent to do for Sydney and Melbourne, the British Government decline to sanction for the security of the great seaports through which English commerce passes, and without which English commerce would cease to exist. Extravagant to recklessness, if Purchase is to be abolished, or the Alabama damages are to be compensated, or the Radical vote is to be conciliated, they are penuriously economical where the commercial credit and safety of the country are so deeply concerned.

It is melancholy to protract the long catalogue of shortcomings and negligences and ignorances. Weapons, stores, men—horses

too few to horse the batteries and often too young to stand the strain of a few weeks' campaign—transport and waggon-trains and road engines and field hospitals, and all the thousand-and-one necessities for moving and feeding and arming and tending and giving life to an army, with all the further supplies of spare equipments which, whether to follow up success or to retrieve defeat, is the essential condition of modern warfare—are either wanting or exist in such scanty proportions as to be, for practical purposes, non-existent. For these reasons, to say that some parts of our small army, such as the Royal Artillery, are admirably armed, organised, and officered, is no real answer. The enormous scale on which a modern campaign is laid out, the prodigious waste of men and material, the absolute necessity of a large surplus on which to draw, and the exceptionally heavy calls which, in the event of war, must be made upon us, render it dangerous, at least, to hazard everything upon any small, however highly-trained, forces. But to say, in accordance with the approved formula of Ministerial apologists, that we are better supplied now than we were in former years, is—assuming the correctness of the assertion—wholly beside the argument. When the Duke of Wellington estimated in 1847 the minimum force for defence in the event of invasion at 40,000 men, he did so in reference to the armaments of other nations and the existing conditions of Continental railways and shipping. Obviously all questions of attack and defence are relative; and when the facilities of foreign aggression have been quadrupled and quintupled, it is like the idle talk of children to assure us that we are stronger than we have ever been before, because we have received, what is in comparison with other countries only an infinitesimal increase of strength in some of our supply departments.

Assuming, indeed, the truth of the proposition so often laid down, that it is our policy to have a small but complete army, 'capable of expansion' as runs the somewhat equivocal expression of the day, it is clear that every stress should be laid upon the augmentation and development of those scientific and elaborate departments of military administration which cannot be provided on the spur of the moment. To a certain extent, this has been the case with our Artillery and Engineer services; but with them almost alone. The Intelligence department cannot be said to have an existence; the field telegraph, which has played so great a part in recent wars, exists only for a very limited force. Our Transport service cannot undertake the movement of a single *corps d'armée* without borrowing largely from, and thereby impairing, the efficiency of the Artillery. Many,

if not all, branches of our Supply departments are confessedly most weak ; whilst our Cavalry, apart from the question of equipment, which has long seemed to us to require a careful reconsideration under the altered circumstances of modern war, is numerically so weak, that in the event of invasion it would be barely equal to the common details of outpost duty. It is true that for such purposes we ought to find a valuable support in our 14,000 Yeomanry ; but they have been so long and systematically discouraged by successive Liberal Governments, that unless thoroughly reconstituted, they would be unable to render any real service. Our dependence would therefore be upon that regular cavalry which, only a few years since depreciated by the hasty opinion of the country, but now recognised as one of the characteristic features of Prussian manœuvres, is a plant of very slow growth ; for officers of experience have never estimated the time within which a cavalry soldier can be fully formed at much less than three years. Into the further and serious question, whether when so formed he is equal to the work which a Prussian Uhlan is expected to perform, we will not here enter. The French system of outposts was acknowledged by the Emperor Napoleon in 1859 to be inferior to the Austrian ; the Austrian in 1866, was very inferior to the Prussian ; and it might perhaps be asked to which of these three—French Austrian, or Prussian—does our system most nearly approach ?

Serious as these reflections are, they almost pale before the still graver doubt, whether the English soldier of the line is of the same substantial stuff as were his predecessors who on so many battle-fields, and generally against such long odds, won for us the not unmerited compliment, that it was well for the world that there was not a larger supply of British Infantry. Whatever may be now or hereafter the improvements of military science, the physical power and endurance of the men, whether on the march or in the close shock of battle, must remain essential and determining conditions of success. In 1866 the Austrian soldiers fought well ; but it was remarked that man for man they were physically unequal in weight and height to the Prussians ; and in the war of last year the same contrast between French and Germans was still more marked. Under the old long-service system the English soldier, though gathered to the standard without much regard to class or antecedents, was a man in the prime of his strength, with tough and tried sinews, capable of undergoing fatigue and exposure : under the new system, which professes a pedantic but not very real regard for ethical considerations, the English soldier is a weak puny boy from seventeen to nineteen years old, with his muscles unset, his con-

stitution unformed, his health as unable to bear the strain of hunger, illness, or exposure, as his body is to resist the actual tug of war. It was a grave responsibility to reduce the standards of height, of breadth across the chest, and of range of vision, with no better excuse than the formation of a so-called Reserve, which up to this time has done little beyond draining away our best soldiers and non-commissioned officers. But to do this in the face of remonstrances from almost every officer of eminence, and in spite of the distinct warning from an authority so friendly to the present Government as Lord Sandhurst, that they were 'organising defeat,' is a procedure for which the utmost charity can hardly find an explanation. But whatever excuses the ingenuity of partisans may discover, we trust at least that no one will venture to suggest that in this we are copying the Prussian model. The Prussian system of a Reserve, with its localised regiments and its universally obligatory service is, as might easily be shown, the exact opposite of that which our Government has adopted. It is, in fact, optional to us to choose either a short-service system, with its large reserves and its localisation of regiments analogous to that of Prussia, so far as English habits and requirements permit—for every army should be organised in view of its national characteristics and conditions—or the long-service system of former times, but accompanied by a considerable increase in numerical strength, and by a rate of wages that would enable us to compete fairly for men in the labour market. We will not now discuss the merits of these alternatives; it is enough to say that, under either, the defence at least of the country might be adequately secured; but, so far as Prussian organisation is concerned, we are for the present removed alike from its excellencies and its demerits.

In many Volunteer regiments very different and superior qualifications are to be found, and men are to be seen who in physical appearance would do no discredit to any army in the world. But except for the uniforms that they wear, the arms that they carry, much personal zeal, and a very moderate amount of drill, the Volunteers remain, after ten years' existence, much as they were when they first offered their services to the country. Unorganised in every sense of the word, unsupplied with equipments, with great coats, and till lately with proper weapons, the men have received as little encouragement from the Government as their officers have had instruction. The finest material in the world has been allowed to run to waste for lack of a little statesmanship.

But evil as the Government at last admit our condition to have been at the beginning of the year, it is now insinuated that a

silent but powerful improvement has been in progress. We wish that we could see grounds for the assertion. We fear that as it was then, so is it substantially now, and that it is only the thunder of national disaster, involving the guiltless and guilty in a common fate, that can waken our seven sleepers from their official repose. 'Athelstan the Unready' is still the true type of the English administrator. But there is cause for anxiety when we find an officer within the very precincts of the War Department with such ample knowledge and such confessed skill in the use of his pen as General Adye, acknowledging, in a recently published letter,\* that our forces are a disjointed structure of armed men without cohesion, maintained at a vast expenditure and possessed of little real efficiency as an army, or arguing against the hypothesis of an invasion on political quite as much as on military grounds. In such an extremity we own to greater confidence in the ability of the officer than in the arguments of the apologist.

But when, passing from the field of abstract argument, we test the vague assurances, of which we have had so many during the past Session, by the practical evidences of the 'Berkshire Campaign,' as it has been termed, our anxiety grows. To a country which spends upon its army fifteen to sixteen millions per annum it might seem a comparatively easy task to move, and for a few days to manœuvre, some thirty thousand men only, of all arms, thirty miles away from their base of supplies, in a southern county intersected with railways and good roads, covered with a network of villages and substantial farmhouses, and abounding in all the necessities of life during the pleasantest month of a pleasant English autumn-tide. But, trifling in itself as such an enterprise is, it would at least have so far tested the sufficiency of our military arrangements, and if it did not justify the War Minister, it might have convicted of slander and misrepresentation the critics who in both Houses of Parliament had declared that our military administration was unsound. Though the scale of operations was very small, and though all the surrounding conditions were unusually favourable, it was the touchstone of Ministerial assertion and competency. Unhappily for them, though perhaps not so unhappily for the country if it serves to open their eyes to the true state of affairs, the bubble has burst, the 'campaign' has collapsed amidst a multitude of absurd and contradictory excuses, which have not even the semblance of plausibility; and this moderate task has proved to be of too Herculean a character for the collective strength of our War Office and a Cabinet who wield at will the resources of the

---

\* Letter to 'Blackwood's Magazine.'

British Empire. It is a spectacle of open humiliation and a painful admission either of administrative unsoundness or of individual timidity.\*

It is, however, impossible not to draw a further moral from such pitiable exhibitions of administrative weakness, though it is one which touches the general question of government, rather than the department responsible for this particular case of mismanagement; and it is this. These failures do not end here. They have an almost contagious tendency to multiply themselves, and, as they spread, they discredit all government, and shake the visible symbols of authority. In such an age as this, when destruction is easy, preservation difficult, and construction almost impossible, each fresh loss of public confidence in the governing powers of the State is a heavy deduction from the cause of Law and Society; but it has been reserved to the present Ministers of the Crown, with greater resources and a larger Parliamentary majority than have been at the command of any Administration since the beginning of the century, to inflict the severest blows on the principles of English Government. Their apologists, it is true, may excuse the shortcomings of the Cabinet by accumulating the blame upon the shoulders of a Chief, who, during the entire Session, has shown a singular infelicity of management in his conduct of the House of Commons; who has driven his followers into the acceptance of doctrines which till now have been uniformly denounced by successive generations of Liberal politicians; and who, when influence and tact failed, knew of no other resource than the enforcement of silence upon his reluctant party. But such excuses can hardly be admitted when, for some inexplicable reason, each department of State is haunted by signal failure. From Pall Mall to Downing Street, from the Admiralty to the Thames Embankment, from the Phoenix Park to Trafalgar Square, from the Black Sea Conferences to the Berkshire Downs, misadventure, of all possible shades and degrees, is written. We seem, under the spell of some political Prospero, to be dragged through mire and mud, and, as in a bad dream, to

---

\* Whilst these pages are passing through the press, the manœuvres in Hampshire, which have been made the substitute for the Berkshire Campaign, have been brought to a conclusion. Unsatisfactory as was that substitution, and comparatively humble as was the ultimate scale of operations, it is no small gain that some approach has at length been made to the camps of instruction and the autumn manœuvres of Continental armies; for it is thus that an insight into administrative defects is best acquired, and that officers and men learn in time of peace some lessons in the art of campaigning. Nothing in these manœuvres affects our criticism on military administration, and we heartily welcome a step so emphatically in the right direction. As Chobham led to Aldershot, and Aldershot has led to the Hampshire manœuvres, so it is not an extravagant hope that these, in turn, may hereafter rise to the full proportions of a Berkshire Campaign.

be ever ringing the changes upon 'troops that cannot march, and ships that cannot swim.'

Those who observe with any attention the course of public opinion must be aware how irregular and apparently capricious its action of recent years has been; but, after every allowance has been made for this normal uncertainty, it seems hardly credible that the country should have tamely acquiesced in so serious an amount of military mismanagement but for a general disbelief in the possibility of foreign invasion. Did the great body of Englishmen, whatever their class or their property, seriously conceive it possible that the miseries which have befallen France might be inflicted on this country, they would scarcely manifest such singular, though characteristic, indifference. The little book which stands at the head of this article, which has passed through many reprints, and has been read far and wide with well-merited appreciation, whilst it hit off with a delicacy of touch almost worthy of Defoe the public sense of our military helplessness, failed to stir up men to the practical remedy for our shortcomings. Yet where such vast interests are at stake, it would be well if Englishmen could bring themselves to consider on what foundation this vague disbelief of any possible invasion rests, and whether it is so far removed from the sphere of practical contingencies as to justify us alone of all European nations in treating it as a speculation unworthy the thought of sober men of business.

We certainly shall not reproduce here the impolitic, and not very generous, arguments with which at one period of the war the discomfiture of the French army was made, even by some Ministerial speakers, a matter of congratulation to England. Nor do we contend that we are in any immediate danger of such a war as would render the attempt at an invasion either probable or possible. We are content to assume that France is for the moment crippled; that America is yearly growing more friendly as the jealousies and misunderstandings of former times fade into the distance of history; that Russia, alone and unaided, could do little; and that Prussia has neither the desire nor the material inducements to bring her into collision with us. But though all this may be readily granted, it is very far from exhausting the endless and incalculable chapter of political combinations, and it furnishes no guarantee against the ambitions, the secret intrigues, the anti-social conspiracies which honeycomb the soil of Europe, and which may, from that seething hot-bed of impurity, give sudden birth to new wars and perhaps equally new forms of war. Nor do we undervalue that silent influence which community of race, in ordinary circumstances,

exercises

exercises upon the relationship of nations. A friendly intercourse between Germany and England seems as natural as it is desirable; but history is read backwards, if consanguinity is accepted as a guarantee of good-will. Family quarrels are often the bitterest and the least reasonable; the world is still very far from the millennial serenity which the apostles of Free-trade and International Exhibitions once prophesied; and the cynical maxim that men should treat their present friends as their eventual enemies, and their enemies of to-day as their friends of to-morrow, is as true now as when it was written by the Greek philosopher more than two thousand years ago. Prussia at least acts on this principle. She has never allowed sentiment or present ease to disturb the calculations of her well-considered policy. Even the measurements of our ships, the armaments of our fortifications, the resources of our southern and eastern counties, are, doubtless, recorded with mathematical precision in the Berlin archives, readily available, should ever an emergency arise. It may—we trust it will—never be necessary; but they are wise in their generation, wiser far than we who, surrounded with everything that can tempt the ambition or greed of others, trade on the accidents of our good fortune and depend upon the forbearance of our rivals. Happier also, it may be added, where the consciousness on the part of a nation that they are ready and able to hold their own against all comers begets a manhood and an elevation of feeling undreamt of in the philosophy of the mere political economist, and braces up the lax morality of a too self-indulgent generation.

But it is said, so long as our iron-clad fleet exists, and ‘the silver streak’ of sea separates us from the Continent, we need not disquiet ourselves with troublesome speculations, and still more troublesome preparations of defence. This is the poetry, not the severe practice of life. It is the flattering unction which weak men lay to their consciences when they seek for an excuse from some irksome duty. Are even our latest naval experiences such as to give us unlimited confidence in the construction of our ships and the organisation of our Admiralty? Do the misadventures of the ‘Captain,’ the ‘Megæra,’ and the ‘Agincourt’ suggest no misgiving to the easy-going mind of the ordinary Englishman? Is modern science so slow and barren in its development, that we can conceive of no new projectile above or below water, no new application of chemical powers which may once again revolutionise the conditions of naval warfare, and at least neutralise the superiority to which we pretend? When we remember the surprises of which modern hostilities are made up; that the war of Secession in America was fought out with muzzle-loaders; that

that the Southern cruisers had often no better armour than a few chains or plates hung round the ship; that the Danish war first witnessed the use of the needle-gun; that the Italian campaign first proved the superiority of the rifled field-artillery; and that the first ship sunk in 1859 was an Italian iron-clad, which foundered under the attack of an Austrian frigate of the old wooden type, we must acknowledge that the rapidity in the changes of the art of destruction is, at least, as remarkable as their magnitude. Once, however, assume that we are liable to any such surprise in our naval or military preparations, and there is room for anxiety in a matter where nothing should be left to chance.

But such unwelcome questionings on a vital matter of national existence are generally silenced—and that too by a people who are prudent in the ordinary transactions of business—either by the vague superstition, which has outlived many more valuable idiosyncrasies, that England will surmount any difficulties in which she may be involved, or by the still more mischievous conviction that, for some unknown reason, an invasion of English soil is impossible. We are not of those who think poorly of English capacity or courage. Though the race has undergone many changes, much yet remains of the old mastiff temper which, through the frequent struggles of mediæval warfare made the somewhat rugged islanders respected on numberless European battle-fields; and there is no finer page in English history than that which records the stern, unwavering spirit in which our countrymen in India faced an insurrection so sudden and ferocious as to have no parallel since the days of Mithridates. But no natural courage can be the equivalent of superior arms, or can compensate for a deficiency in all the scientific and professional appliances by the aid of which modern wars are decided. No national superstitions or traditions can guarantee an army, which, from the very hypothesis, must fight on the defensive with imperfectly trained troops and under the dispiriting influences of inferior numbers and equipments, from the liability to panic and failure. As the Prussians at Jena, the Austrians in the short campaign of 1866, the French in 1870, illustrated this undeniable proposition; so, if national pride allowed us, we might not only remember that there was a period in our annals when, though victorious by sea, we were not equally fortunate by land, but we might even recall scenes in the Crimea when English soldiers showed no immunity from the influences of a disastrous panic. There are, indeed, some who are accustomed to assume the existence of right and the protection of Providence in our public quarrels; but the practice is not confined to Englishmen, and the irreverent dictum

of the First Napoleon, that the God of Battles is on the side of the strongest battalions, received at least an illustration both in America and in Germany, where that sacred name was so often and so freely invoked.

But it is thought (and where thought is so entirely regulated by wish, little reasoning is needed) that invasion is simply impossible. '*Opposuit natura.*' But to say this is to say, in effect, that fertility of resource, and military genius, and unwearied preparation for a definite end, and gigantic means concentrated in a single hand and directed by the highest intelligence, are absolutely neutralised by a few miles of sea and the happy accident that may give us a superior fleet of iron-clads at the critical juncture and on the precise theatre of action. To say this, is to forget what we and others have done in former times, our own disembarkation under fire in Egypt, and our equally fortunate landing in the Crimea; to ignore the passage of the Danube before Wagram, and the vast, and, but for the unexpected return of the English fleet from the West Indies, the perhaps successful preparations for the invasion of England from Boulogne; in fact, to shut out from consideration every triumph of military genius over physical obstacles from the days of Hannibal to those of Napoleon. It is, of course, easy to represent this as the doctrine of alarmists, but the men of largest experience and highest professional knowledge at home have deliberately recorded their anxiety on the subject, and the ablest officers abroad have studied it as a curious problem in strategy. The Duke of Wellington, who, being long dead, yet from his unrivalled authority speaks even now in his famous letter of 1847 to his countrymen—Sir J. Burgoyne, who was the last survivor of a remarkable generation, and whose recent death we all deplore—Lord Palmerston, whose long official life was divided between considerations of military and foreign policy, and who in and out of season repeated that 'the Channel was now bridged by steam,' and that England was not safe from a sudden and secretly organised attack—are at least a proof that such anxiety is not fanciful. Nor has anything occurred to invalidate their opinion, or materially to alter the conditions under which it was formed. Our ablest officers of the present day are not less alive to the risk; and the highest authority to which appeal can be made, because speaking with a full and professional knowledge of the subject—the Defence Commission of 1859—did not hesitate to say that, in their opinion, '*neither fleet, nor standing army, nor volunteers, nor even the three combined, could be relied on as sufficient in themselves for the security of the kingdom against foreign invasion.*'

'Instamus

'Instamus tamen immemores;' we shut our ears to the Cassandra warnings of statesmen, of soldiers, of scientific men; we consign their reports to the waste-paper basket, or to the equally useful pigeon-holes of the War Office, and we refuse even to recognise so pregnant a fact as the concentration last year, in the northern ports of France alone, of a flotilla capable of transporting 40,000 men and 12,000 horses, before the declaration of war, and in complete ignorance on the part of our own Government that such preparations had been made. What we therefore think chimerical does not so represent itself to the minds of the highly-trained and practical soldiers of other nations; and the following extract from a letter of the 'Times' correspondent with the German Army of the Loire is well worthy of consideration. Its value, of course, is not so much as indicating the quarter from which aggression may come, as the light in which this question is viewed by others, and the scientific feasibility of an attack, in their opinion:—

'Here as at Versailles a rather favourite topic of conversation is the invasion of England, with its probabilities of success and its means of accomplishment. . . . It is considered that an army once across could live uncommonly well by requisitions. Ammunition would be needed, it is true, but there is no fortified place to stop the direct march upon London—exactly four days. How many field-guns could be brought to bear upon them? Prince Frederick Charles had more than 400 during the battle of Orleans. How many breech-loading rifles are there to put into the hands of the Militia and Volunteers? All these questions are being put and answered by officers in the German armies; for man has much of the tiger in him, and grows savage at the taste of blood.'—*28th December, 1870.*

But if ever we bring ourselves to contemplate the possibility, however remote, of an invasion, we flatter ourselves, with curious perversity, into the notion that we should meet the contingency under ordinary, and not wholly unfavourable, conditions; that our main resources by sea and land would be available, and that, at the several points of weakness along our extended line of empire, we should have no other serious struggles to anticipate. But the exact reverse of this sanguine forecast would probably be nearer the truth; for, even if an unfavourable combination of external circumstances were not made the occasion of attack, serious danger to England would easily quicken into flame the disaffection of Ireland, and the latent, but always active, fanaticism of our Mahomedan subjects. To say nothing of the large and continuous supplies which would immediately become indispensable for Ireland and India, and of the equally heavy reinforcements in ships, stores, and men to our North American, West

Indian,

Indian, Australian, and China stations, the under-manned and inadequately provided fortresses of Halifax, Bermuda, Gibraltar, Malta—the bases of our maritime and military operations—would alone severely tax our resources as at present constituted. Meanwhile, it must not be forgotten that, independently of all shortcomings in the number, quality, and training of our men, in transport and equipment, in surplus stores, in guns and gunpowder, in an elastic and uniform organisation of the various disjointed and almost conflicting parts of our so-called Army; independently, also, of the unwelcome doubt which will at times force itself on our minds, whether or no we really have a sea-going fleet sufficient to satisfy all reasonable calls upon it in time of war, and to meet every probable combination of other maritime nations,—we undoubtedly are deficient in turret-ships and light gunboats for the protection of the coast, and in defences for the great seaports, which, with the necessary magazines and requirements of modern war, cannot be improvised. We have no fortified harbour on the Eastern coast, no positions to delay an invader on his march to London, no knowledge of the local resources in food, horses, carts. Long before the outbreak of the recent hostilities, the German Government had, as it is well known, carefully tabulated the resources of the various French villages and farms for the purpose of requisitions. But it would seem that our military authorities have still to learn even the topography of our Southern Counties, when we hear from the War Minister that not only was it necessary to send the Quartermaster-General and the Head of the Engineers to Berkshire to survey and examine, but that Sir H. Grant ‘was informed by Colonel L. Lindsay that there was a large area of country in that county’ available for the manœuvres of 30,000 men, apparently as much to the surprise of the English War Office as if the tract in question had been situated in the heart of New Zealand.

On the other hand, it is formidable to take into calculation the accurate knowledge possessed by foreign statesmen of our minutest resources; the professional and scientific organization of Continental war offices; the gigantic forces; the vast supplies of material; the control of railways, telegraphs, and shipping by experienced strategists, able to act with secrecy and speed, unfettered in their operations by public criticism and supported by the undivided strength of their respective Governments; the certain power of steam; the uncertain advantages which science, as applied to military subjects, is yearly and monthly developing; the existence on the European seaboard of some large harbours (for in such calculations every nation must be assumed to be, by

choice or compulsion or the changing condition of political events, a possible enemy) such as Kiel, the prize of the Danish war; or Jahde, in the sinuous recesses of which a whole navy might float unsuspected and secure; or Antwerp, which was once described as a pistol held at the head of England; or Cherbourg, which, during the whole campaign of last year and amidst all the catastrophes of the time, remained one of the great centres of French power. It is formidable, too, to remember that, whilst we must be prepared to resist a landing at every point, an invader has his choice not only of a multitude of small and undefended harbours where stores and artillery could be conveniently disembarked and secured, but of no inconsiderable range of open beach where local circumstances would enable him to cover with the heavy guns of his ironclads—heavier than any artillery which we could probably bring to bear—the landing of his troops, and thence to move them into tenable positions for subsequent operations.

And, assuming a landing once effected, who can doubt its tremendous consequences? Even, if ultimately unsuccessful, it would break the spell and prestige of insular security, it would shake our commercial credit to its centre, it would entail upon us for the future a far heavier burden of military defence than the country now bears to contemplate. But to conceive the results of a successful invasion, the defeat of our troops, the incalculable but fruitless sacrifices, the march on London, and the helpless prostration of the country, is a task in which no effort of imagination could probably approach the real facts. The author of the ‘Battle of Dorking,’ with all his singular power of description, wisely leaves this part of the national calamity in cloudy outline. The fall of Paris, the crushing weight of requisitions and indemnities, the annihilation of public life which we have witnessed in France, would probably be beggared by the collapse of internal trade and external commerce, and the final break-up of all the elements of our old and artificial society. Heavily weighted in the race of commercial competition; consuming with improvidence the resources on which much of that commerce depends; loved by none, envied by many; with enormous wealth to tempt, and with little power to defend; undermined by a pauperism that is growing up by the side of and in deadly contrast to our riches; with power passing from the class which had been used to rule and to face political dangers, and which had brought the nation with honour unsullied through former struggles, into the hands of the lower classes, uneducated, untrained to the use of political rights, and swayed by demagogues, we talk as if Providence had ordained that our

Government should always borrow at 3 per cent., and that trade must come to us, because we live in a foggy little island set in a boisterous sea.

But the danger which we would fain signal is not confined to the risk which must always attend upon actual military weakness. It is seriously complicated by the estimate which is formed of us by our neighbours; for in international relations the foreign and the military policies are so connected that it is hard to consider the one to the exclusion of the other. We believe that for many years our foreign policy has failed to conciliate respect, and has even contributed to swell a body of opinion unfavourable to us. It would be an ungrateful task to analyse that opinion; but no one familiar with the governments and nations of the Continent can pretend that it is a flattering one. It is probably a mixture of dislike and surprise, and—by far the most serious—ever growing contempt. We are in a great measure an enigma to our neighbours. They recognise our extraordinary resources, they observe our lavish expenditure in military matters, they remember that we have in former times fought well, and that even recently in the Crimea, in India, in Abyssinia, amidst much official mismanagement and error, there are traces of the old fire. But they also see the periodical panics through which we pass, the paltry preparations, immediately succeeded by still more paltry economies, the transparent fallacies of the Government, and the equal willingness of the people to be deceived. Fortunately the moral lectures, in which our Foreign Ministers once indulged, and in which, it must be added, the British people took no small pleasure, have ceased. Our utter military helplessness probably made their continuance impossible. But, however offensive, they were less dangerous. The arrogant tone of self-righteousness in which they were couched implied at least some latent reserve of power, and, corresponding to a certain extent with the then more evenly balanced condition of the European Commonwealth, they were calculated to impose on the imagination. But now, in Continental phraseology, we are ‘effaced’ from the roll of great powers, and it is not only known that we have no means of fighting, but it is thought that we will not fight. Nor can we complain of it as unreasonable if foreigners enquire whether those who showed such unmistakeable reluctance to support Savoy and Denmark, and Luxembourg and Turkey, would be very eager to compromise themselves on behalf of Switzerland, or Holland, or Belgium. We wish that we could think that we have exaggerated the feeling of foreign nations as regards England. The evidence is wanting only to those who will not see it. In conversation, in

the Press, from the chairs of Professors, in the significant attitude of foreign Governments, in the unhappily still more significant attitude of our own Ministers we may observe how wide a chasm yawns between the England of to-day and of former times. But if any doubt of our real position lingered in the minds of foreign politicians, it must have been effectually dispelled by the ingenuous and absolutely unparalleled disavowal by the Prime Minister of Mr. Odo Russell, when engaged at Versailles on one of the most delicate and difficult of modern negotiations. Of all the blunders of an infelicitous Session none has exceeded this; and, were it not written down past recall, we should hesitate to think that a Prime Minister could have been found with so little worldly wisdom as to make the declaration, or a Parliament seemingly so dull to the old instincts of the country as to acquiesce in it.

It is, then, these—or rather a succession of mistakes such as these—that have gradually brought England into discredit, and which constitute an actual and very serious element of danger. Danger—because great nations, in their contempt for us, may easily presume too far upon our acquiescence in insult, and may, without intending it, provoke us into a war for which we are entirely unprepared. Danger again—because the smaller nations, who formerly looked to us as a natural friend and protector, now learn to distrust our promises and our power of assistance, and are compelled to form other arrangements in their own interests. Meanwhile, though on every exchange and money-market men are hurrying back with feverish zest to the speculations which recent hostilities had suspended, the political horizon looks at least doubtful. To say nothing of the conspiracies against society and property, which are barely kept down by the strong hand of military force, the war-clouds still hang over France, and all Europe has learnt a lesson of sword-law which many years of peace and commerce cannot unteach. Every continental nation, from Russia to Egypt, is passing its population through military discipline, and is assuming the character of a vast standing camp; whilst one of the chief apostles of Positivism in this country—though it must be owned that the doctrine, both in itself and in the language in which it is clothed, sounds singular on his lips—does not scruple to warn us that the tremendous drama of which we have been spectators is only the opening scene of one much larger and more terrible, and that the English people take but a ‘schoolboy view’ of the subject.

In all this there is a formidable concurrence of opinion and facts, which might teach prudent men to set their house in order before the night comes, when no one may work; but in a time and country when the art of government has become a hand-to-

mouth traffic in Radical votes, this is precisely the course most distasteful to our democratic reformers. They object to reconstitute the army on a sound basis, lest they should create a power antagonistic to themselves. They are like the French Republicans, who will not accept the principle of the sovereign will of the people, unless that will is expressed in the form of a republic ; or some of their own political connection\* in England, who, though anxious to cripple are afraid to abolish the House of Lords, lest its members should find their way into the Lower House, and so strengthen the Conservative forces in that body. Their sense of fairness and patriotism is fortunately not shared by the great body of their countrymen ; but unhappily there are a considerable number who deceive themselves into the honest belief that our position as a great trading country must be a neutral and, even if involved in war, a defensive one. But amidst the many lessons of last year, they might have learned that the profession of neutrality is not less odious to the belligerents than its practice is difficult. The elastic jurisprudence of the conquering side allows, as its actual interests lay claim to, an amount of 'benevolence' or 'sympathy' which must soon render the assumption of neutrality as dangerous as it is held to be contemptible. Nor is the difficulty lessened by substituting the favourite term of 'non-intervention' for that of neutrality. In many, perhaps in most, circumstances, non-intervention is possible and wise, but as a fixed and uniform rule of policy it is inapplicable to this or to any other great country. Short as is the public memory on these subjects, it would be well to remember how largely the untempered assertion of peace doctrines and the deputation of amiable enthusiasts to the Emperor Nicholas contributed to the Crimean war ; and, feeble as is the general sense of national obligations, it cannot be wholly put out of sight, by those who pretend to take part in the government of England, that we are still bound by treaties and engagements which we cannot keep without the support of material force, and which we cannot evade without signal discredit. It need hardly be added that the supposition that our insular position must necessarily give a purely defensive character to our military operations is, if possible, still more illusory. Such a theory is too shallow to impose upon the soldier, or statesman, or historian. Offensive and defensive operations are only relative terms ; and a bombardment of Copenhagen in 1801, or the passage of the Ticino in 1859, though invested with the semblance of aggressive war, may be in the truest and strictest sense only measures of defence.

There is not here the space to review the melancholy history of the so-called Army Bill, or to discuss the principles upon

\* See "Times" Report of a Meeting as to the House of Lords, August, 1871. which

which our national defences should or may be reconstituted. Nor is there now the time to analyse and apportion the blame of the discreditable failures in our military legislation of last Session. The Prime Minister has sought to fasten on the Opposition a charge of obstruction, through an undue exercise of those powers of discussion which the rules of Parliament have hitherto sanctioned. They might not unfairly retort that he, for the first time, has enforced upon his supporters an abstention from debate, which is at least equally destructive of the old Parliamentary system. If the one practice is licence, the other cannot be liberty: and where a Prime Minister has shown tact, an Opposition has not generally been wanting in forbearance. But in truth these recriminations are of a very secondary nature, and all the more that whatever blame has been cast upon members of the Opposition for the length of their criticisms, no one has ventured to find fault with the subject matter of those speeches. We must look somewhat deeper for the causes of recent mismanagement; and we fear that, apart from temporary and exceptional circumstances in the House of Commons, the blame must be mainly, though unequally, divided between the country and the Government. It would be as distasteful as it would be unfair in such a case to 'draw an indictment against a whole nation;' but it is also impossible to acquit the English people of all responsibility. They, or at least that part which is allowed to assume the right of speaking for them, have ostentatiously passed from the extreme of panic to that of indifference, thereby in a great measure condoning the errors of the Government. That these persons should be only a part, or even a small minority, of the nation, and that they should be led away by ignorant enthusiasm, by the theories of the economists, or by the unscrupulous objections of stump-orators, is no excuse for that more solid and sensible portion of the community who here, as in America, laugh at the transparent fallacies of deceivers and deceived, but who have not the moral courage to emancipate themselves from the thralldom of those who claim to represent them. They can escape neither the responsibility nor the penalty. Nor, again, even if we regret it, can we blind ourselves to the fact that the English character has, in its readiness for war, undergone a marked change. From the Conquest at least down to the memory of living men the English were essentially a warlike race. From earliest childhood every man was bred up in a soldier's training. The great 'Statute of Winchester,' by which he was formed and equipped for war, passed in the reign of Edward I. and re-enacted in that of Henry VIII., represented not more the legislation of the ruling class than the temper of the people; and, whatever their defects may have been, that same people during

the not inglorious rule of Plantagenets and Tudors, as has been truly said, generally thought first of England and afterwards of themselves. To this indeed succeeded a period during which every man, if he was not a soldier, had at least so many of a soldier's instincts that it grew into an article of the national faith—irrational perhaps, but not wholly without advantage—that an Englishman might accept with confidence any odds that the fortune of war might array against him. It was this spirit on the part of the people which supported the steady policy of an aristocratic government, and which carried the country with success and honour through some very dark and trying hours of national history. Now, for the first time, a change is evident. The making of money, the increase of social comforts, the almost exaggerated sanctity set upon human life, seem in a great measure to have absorbed the rougher qualities, and with them the hitherto incalculable reserve of fighting power in the nation. Doubt at least now exists where once there was no room for it, men are perplexed by the conflict of seeming duties, and an irresolution—which in principle may not be immoral, but which politically is very mischievous—is the result. How far the country at large is answerable for this it is unnecessary here to inquire. Perhaps no class or party is free from responsibility, though the Free-trade school, the political economists, and a very large proportion of the Radical section have unquestionably given the main impulse to it.

But, after all, the chief blame must rest with the present Government. If the country has been perplexed, the Government have only given them unmeaning platitudes, instead of a distinct scheme of military organisation; if the country has been apathetic, the Government, whose duty it was to guide others, have eagerly sheltered themselves behind that apathy. They have, in truth, never been in earnest; their heart has been wandering far away in very different fields of political activity or pastime, and throughout last autumn and winter, whilst everyone watched with feverish anxiety the chances of foreign complication, they seemed as if only intent upon discouraging each rising impulse of national self-defence. Nor when the time came for explaining their policy in Parliament were they more fortunate. Their utterances were vague, and their legislation combined the double demerit of being empirical and partisan. It was empirical in sweeping away, together with the anomalies of the Purchase system, its equally certain advantages without providing any equivalent or substitute for the arrangements that gave us young officers, and that saved us from the stagnation which exists in our own non-purchase corps, and which is found to be inconvenient even in the highly-trained Prussian service. It

Digitized by Google

was

was empirical in adopting a wholesale principle of selection, instead of, as now, a combination of seniority, selection, and purchase, with no safeguards upon the political jobbing which must either exist, or be suspected to exist, in a Parliamentary Army. It was empirical in placing upon the public finances a heavy and practically unestimated charge, in order to accomplish a result which, after all, must be pronounced to be one of very doubtful policy. On the other hand, it was partisan in its unprecedented exercise of the Prerogative; it was partisan in the temper and attitude displayed; and it has even received a still more partisan complexion from a subsequent speech made by Mr. Gladstone, in which he is reported to have said that, 'wealth which is concentrated in London, had taken desperate offence because the Government had recommended that power in the English Army should no longer be the prize of wealth, but the reward of merit.' It is unnecessary to comment on such an extraordinary remark. We only note it with regret, as an illustration of the difficulty of securing a fair discussion of this question, when the Prime Minister himself, in the quiet atmosphere of a country meeting, and long after the close of Parliamentary controversy, can condescend to such an argument.

But whilst Government and People must, though in different degrees, share the responsibility of our present condition, it is also clear that the system under which our army is administered is in some essential respects accountable. When armies and military resources were comparatively small, when campaigns were protracted, and when the Government of England, being more aristocratic in its character, was more under the influence of a consistent and traditional practice, army administration was conducted without practical inconvenience and in harmony with Parliamentary institutions. We are now attempting—if, indeed, the *laissez aller* fashion in which these political problems are allowed to work themselves out deserves the name of an attempt—to administer an army of regular troops, volunteers and militia under conditions which exist in no other country in Europe. Our War Ministers are generally civilians, ignorant of the requirements and capabilities of an army, unfamiliar even with its technicalities and terminology, and almost invariably selected for Parliamentary qualifications, independent of military experience or ability. Their short tenure of office, which does not much exceed an average of two years, and the overpowering business of the House of Commons, from which—to make the difficulty even more hopeless—they are generally selected, make it almost necessary that they should be either timid or rash or blind instruments in the hands of the permanent and professional authorities on whom they must lean for guidance. To these difficulties

difficulties must be added those arising out of the criticisms and questionings of a body constituted as is Parliament, where special and local details possess a far greater interest than the larger considerations of permanent policy; and above all where each item of the Estimates is dependent on the exigencies of Parliamentary tactics, or where their vital principles are at the mercy of some popular debater. A man of exceptional genius or of strong military tastes, might perhaps break through the great difficulties of such a position, though probably at the cost of many mistakes; but in the vast majority of cases the result can only be as we have described. It is likely even to be aggravated by the recent changes which have so greatly subordinated the position of the Commander-in-Chief to that of the Secretary of State; though, it should be added, the changes made in this sense and with the intention of transferring the management of the army from the Crown to Parliament seem to contain some elements of self-destruction. For, on the one hand, in proportion as the Secretary of State gives effect to the popular doctrine that the army is the creature of Parliament, and conformably with that principle brings it under the direct control of the House of Commons, so the qualities which are necessarily inherent in such a body and which are not favourable to efficient military administration, as understood everywhere out of England, must be expected to exercise their natural influence. On the other hand, as the Minister, feeling his own ignorance and helplessness, resigns himself to the guidance of his professional advisers, so must official irresponsibility and routine predominate. Even now, in Parliament, the accountability of a Minister often becomes a fiction, when every criticism on his procedure is treated by his colleagues as an attack upon themselves collectively; but henceforward, within the four walls of his office, concurrently with a nominal increase of authority, his sense of responsibility is likely to grow less. It perhaps will be said that the blessings of a Parliamentary Government are so great that the principle must not be disturbed in its least detail, and that even military mismanagement, with all its attendant risks, is not too heavy a price to pay. We need not here argue the question, except perhaps to recall Lord Bacon's famous saying, that where one nation devotes itself to the accumulation of gold and another to the use of iron, the former must expect to see its much-prized possessions change hands.

For many years the evil which we have indicated has grown steadily, though during Mr. Cardwell's tenure of office it has come to a head, and from it flow much of the failure and mismanagement which has, in a more or less degree, disfigured our military operations of recent years. The late Lord Herbert, on a memorable

memorable occasion in the House of Commons, said that 'he did not know an instance in which England had been plunged into war in which she had not met with reverses,'\* and the historian of the Sepoy Mutiny has dwelt in vigorous language upon our systematic refusal to see danger, even on such a soil as that of India undermined with disaffection, and the habitual unpreparedness of our War Department for the very contingencies for which it exists. It is a complaint unhappily verified in every page of our military history from the Commissariat of the Duke of Marlborough to that of Lord Raglan. The dead carcasses embalmed in the forage, the horses gnawing each other's tails from starvation, the green coffee served out to famishing troops, the six shirts which were washed during one whole month in the hospital where there were two thousand patients, the confusion of stores, the waste of life, the narrow escape from signal discomfiture during the earlier part of the Crimean war,—have faded from the unretentive memory of the British public into the shadowy domain of History. But they are none the less true; and the following record of mismanagement, which we have disinterred from the Blue Books and Reports of that time, may be even now read with interest, not less for the dreary light which it throws upon our Parliamentary war administration, than for the vigorous language in which it is expressed:—

'The troops were too few for the work they had to do; weakness induced by privations rendered the men very susceptible of disease; and sufficient hospital accommodation was not supplied. The more sickness prevailed, the more work was required of those who remained fit for service, who in turn gave way under the increased pressure. The reinforcements sent out were principally levies of mere boys too young to bear fatigue and exposure. No reserve was provided at home adequate to the greatness of the undertaking, and the Militia, from the ranks of which it might have been drawn, was not called out in time to be available. The obvious inadequacy of all means induced the general belief that the Government never seriously contemplated a war. . . . The Government of England, which is in the hands of a dozen civilians, did not know the difference between a number of well-disciplined regiments and an army. They were ignorant of the necessary means of moving the food and baggage of troops, they forgot to be as well prepared for the failure as the success of a military operation. . . . The troops sent were too few, the Commissariat was inefficient, no depôts were provided, the hospitals were inefficient, and those at the head of them overwhelmed with labour.†

A ghastly story—but who doubts that it would be repeated in any future war conducted under our present system? And if repeated, who doubts that the results would be of a more serious

\* 'Hansard,' Jan. 26, 1855.

† Draft Report, by Mr. H. Drummond, M.P. Sebastopol Committee.

character both from the gigantic agencies and marvellous rapidity of modern warfare? Even the slowest Governments of the Continent are immeasurably prompt when compared with our 'Aulic Council.' In 1866, when war had become inevitable, the Austrian Commissioner proposed to the Germanic Confederation that their forces should be mobilised within fourteen days, so as to march at the same number of hours' notice. But Prussia was even speedier. She allowed to the hesitating and recalcitrant States of the Confederation only twelve hours within which to decide between her and Austria. In 1870 Prussia was momentarily surprised by the French Declaration of War; but France was unable to improve the opportunity, and within ten days half a million of German troops were mobilised, and another half million were in process of mobilisation. Nor does the policy of foreign Governments hesitate to keep pace with military operations. European statesmen know the value of an initiative. The Belgian and Luxembourg questions, the repudiation of the Black Sea neutrality, grew up during the late war within the narrow compass of a few months, and gave but a few days' warning of their existence. They found England wholly unprepared to meet them, though Belgium and Switzerland knew how, within a fortnight of the outbreak of hostilities, to place 100,000 and 50,000 men on their respective frontiers and to make the neutrality of their small States respected by both belligerents. We, on the contrary, live so much in an atmosphere of wealth that we fancy that money will repair any mistakes or misfortunes. But a money vote of the House of Commons, though powerful, is not omnipotent, and cannot give us the promptitude of action which may be essential. Such promptitude depends on timely and long-considered organisation, with which no genius or fortune can dispense; and if any illustration of this homely truth were needed, the conduct of the three great captains and rivals of the last generation, on three critical occasions, would be a striking example. For two years Napoleon patiently trained his 'Grand Army' for the campaigns of 1805; equally patiently the Duke of Wellington formed and disciplined that famous army of the Peninsula with which it was said that he could march anywhere and do anything; and with equal patience but unequal fortune, because the miscalculations of politicians precipitated hostilities, the Archduke Charles sought, after Marengo and Hohenlinden, to build up the shattered organisation of the Austrian forces.

4  
 'Nullum numen habes si sit Prudentia.' Though we have wasted golden opportunities, we have yet the means and time to repair the past; and Mr. Cardwell, it must be remembered, has received or taken all the powers which he has declared to be necessary for the reconstruction of the English Army. Apart

from the question of foreign engagements and the claims which those engagements may make upon our honour, we need a coherent and elastic organisation, which can give us an overwhelming superiority of numbers on our own soil at least, and which can be called into efficient activity at a few days' notice. We are deliberately of opinion that a competent Government can and ought to give us this, and to give it us with a proportionate, if not an absolute, diminution of our colossal expenditure. Whether the present Ministers can do this, next Session will show. We wait for the evidences with misgiving.

- ART. IX.—1. *Paris sous la Commune.* E. Moriac. Paris, 1871.  
 2. *Le Gouvernement du 4 Septembre et la Commune de Paris.* E. Andreoli. Paris, 1871.  
 3. *Les 73 Journées de la Commune.* Catulle Mendès. Paris, 1871.  
 4. *L'Internationale.* O. Testut. Paris, 1871.  
 5. *Le Livre noir de la Commune de Paris.* Brussels, 1871.  
 6. *The Civil War in France.* Address of the General Council of the International Working Men's Association. London, 1871.  
 7. *Programme of the Land Tenure Reform Association: with an explanatory Statement.* By John Stuart Mill. London, 1871.

THE changes of French politics are so rapid that it seems late now to discuss the reign of the Commune as a chapter of contemporary history. Its ruin has been almost repaired; the survivors among its once-dreaded leaders have covered themselves with ridicule; its causes and misdeeds are all but forgotten in speculations upon the result of the new experiment in republicanism which the French are trying for the instruction of mankind. Nor is it a story upon which any one can reflect with pleasure. It was a strange, disordered period, in which all moral and intellectual qualities were crossly fitted together; in which only the cruel were spirited, in which only the loyal were feeble, in which only the mean were wise. An exception must be made in favour of the clergy, whose conduct, from the Archbishop downwards, emulated the finest examples of Christian courage and fidelity. But, outside their ranks, nothing could be more piteous than the exhibition of human character which this brief period affords. A Government without forethought, or promptitude, or settled policy; an army fresh from defeat, but still bold enough for an apparently safe mutiny; a few brave, bad men, remarkable for almost every evil quality except that of fear; a rabble who, to use the words of their own English advocate, 'believed in no God and in no man,' but yet perished

with the courage of fanatics; and an orderly, 'well-affected' majority, equally distinguished for the rectitude of their opinions and the cowardice of their behaviour. Neither Raoul Rigault nor Gallifet, neither the assassins of Montmartre, nor the imbecile party of order at the West End, are figures on which any one would care to dwell if their exploits could be separated from the history of the moving forces of our time. But the story of the Commune, its origin and its fate, are no isolated episodes in the revolutionary annals of France. As far as we can judge, it is the preface to a controversy which will thrust what we call politics into the background, in favour of a social conflict the most critical and the most embittered that has yet shaken the fabric of civilisation.

And the brotherhood of nations is too close to suffer the appearance of these storm-signals upon a neighbouring soil to be matter of indifference to us. English politics have always been peculiarly susceptible to foreign influences. Any great conflict of classes or opinions on the Continent finds its immediate echo here. In the matter of political innovation we are not an original people. Our agitations, like our dramas, are generally translated from the French; but in the present case our interest is more direct. The organisation which carried out the Revolution of the 18th of March does not profess to accept the frontiers of nations as the limits of its action. It aspires to be the combination of the workmen of all countries against the employers of all countries. It depreciates patriotism, both as a sentiment belonging to the old order of things, and as tending to hinder the purely class sympathy which is to enable the workman to subdue every other power to his own. Its first act at Paris, while the bitter resentments of the war were yet at their height, was to place Franckel, a Prussian, among the governing body of the Commune. The movements of the Paris Socialists, as of the whole Internationale, were governed by a Committee sitting in London. The relations which the Commune held at first with the national enemy of the French: the number of foreigners of all nations—Germans, Poles, Italians, Russians, Americans—who appeared among its members and officers: the ostentatious destruction of the Vendôme column, sufficiently show that the fact of the Internationale having made its first public appearance as a revolutionary power in France implies no special connection with the people of France, and certainly no restriction of its activity to that country.

One or two ingenious writers have started and attempted to sustain the theory that the Commune had nothing to do with the Internationale, but that the movement was simply a struggle to regain municipal liberties. It is a theory which has been seriously defended nowhere out of England, and here it has obviously been

manufactured to catch a popular prepossession. The absurdity of the idea reveals itself the moment that the words used are subjected to definition. There is something very grand in the phrase 'municipal liberties.' It rouses a crowd of inspiring associations connected with the struggles of mediæval burgesses against the tyranny of feudal barons, and it touches powerfully the parochial instincts which are keen in the breast of every Englishman. But municipal liberties, if you come to count them, are not the things for which people get themselves and their neighbours shot. They mean, with us, the power of looking to the drains, keeping the pavement in good order, regulating the dustman and the water-cart, fighting the gas and water companies, and, moreover, of exercising all these cherished privileges without interference from the central government. To this list may be added the power of making such streets as Parliament allows to be made, levying such rates as are prescribed by law, choosing and paying the police who are to act under the orders of the executive. Men do not die upon the barricades for prerogatives of this sort. The authorities of St. Pancras, in our own metropolis, probably carry the enthusiasm of vestrydom as high as it has ever risen in the human heart, and they detest the central government with a hatred which will yield to no other upon earth. But their emotions have never reached even to the mildest tint of the heroic. Adequate objects are needed to excite these deadly resolves. The Commune was doing battle for something more attractive than any vestry or common council powers. The liberties it claimed, like many of the liberties for which men cry the loudest, meant the liberty of doing as it liked with the lives and property of other people.

If no other evidence were at hand, the composition of the Commune would sufficiently indicate that a complete social revolution in the supposed interest of the workmen was the main end of the movement, though a re-settlement of the form of Government on principles which should give or secure preponderance to the great cities, may have been part of the machinery by which that end was to be attained. Assi, who organised the strike at Creuzot, was one of the chief contrivers of the revolution of the 18th of March; and after it he was for some time president of the Comité Central, and Governor of the Hôtel de Ville. Theisz was the first Vice-President of the Comité Central, and was afterwards Directeur des Postes.\* Both were prominent members of the Internationale. Varlin,

\* M. Theisz entertains no doubt as to the real nature of the Communal movement. In a letter recently addressed to the 'Constitution,' to defend himself against the charge of having betrayed it, he says, 'I remained faithful to the Commune and to the Socialistic ideas which it was its mission to represent and to realise.'

the chief of the Paris Section of the Association, was the first Finance Minister of the revolution. Avrial, an active member of the Association, was on the first executive Commission. Franckel, the German Socialist, was Minister of the department of Labour and Exchange, under the Commune. Cluseret, if not a member, acted as agent of the Internationale in America. Millière was appointed editor of the 'Marseillaise,' in 1869, when the Association succeeded in securing the services of that journal as its organ. Chalain, Duval, Johannard, Verdure, Pindy, Malon, Murat, Parent, Dupont, Clemence, Vesinier, were members of the Commune, and influential members of the Internationale.

Not less significant was the formal assistance and support which the revolution received from the Internationale five days after its occurrence. On the 23rd of March the Internationale issued an address to the workmen, urging them to sustain it. We give one passage:—

'The division (*insolidarité*) of interests has caused the general ruin and has engendered a social war: it is to liberty, equality, and community (*solidarité*) that you must look to secure order upon new bases, to reorganise labour which is its first condition. Workmen, the communal revolution affirms these principles, and arrests all cause of conflict in the future. Will you hesitate to give it your final sanction?'

What these principles are we shall shortly show more in detail; for the present our concern is to show that in the judgment of the Internationale, the Commune and itself were acting together in support of a common cause.\*

The revolutionary leaders on their side were not less explicit. Veiling their socialism under ambiguous phrases, in proclamations that were meant for the middle classes, their language addressed to the workmen was clear enough. Even in its address to the provinces (April 19), the Commune reserves to itself liberty 'to create institutions fitted to universalise property and power;' but to the workmen the Comité Central speaks more plainly:—

'Workmen, do not deceive yourselves. It is the great struggle—it is parasitism and labour, *exploitation* and production that are wrestling together. If you are weary of vegetating in ignorance and crouching in destitution—if you wish your children to be men enjoying the profit of their labours, and not a sort of animals prepared for the workshop or the battlefield, enriching by their sweat some speculator's wealth, or shedding their blood for a despot. . . . up, and let your sturdy hands cast this unclean reaction beneath your feet.'—*Comité Central, April 5.*

Again, in a skilful appeal to the peasantry, issued in the middle of May:—

'COMMUNE OF PARIS.

'Brother, they deceive you. Our interests are the same. That

\* Andreoli, p. 216.

which I am asking for is also what you wish : the emancipation I am seeking, is yours as well. What matters it whether it is in town or country that food and clothing, shelter and succour, are lacking to him who produces all the riches of the world? What matters it whether the oppressor is called a capitalist or a landlord. With you as with us the working day is long and hard, and does not yield enough even to satisfy the necessities of the body. To you as to us, liberty, leisure, the life of the heart and the spirit, are wanting. You and we, now and ever, are still the vassals of misery.

‘ It is now near upon a century that you, poor day labourer, have been taught that property is the consecrated reward of labour, and you believe it. But open your eyes and look around you; look at yourself, and you will see that it is a lie. You are old : you have always laboured ; you have passed every day, from dawn to nightfall, with the spade or the sickle in your hands : and yet you are not rich—you have not even a bit of bread for your old age. All your earnings have been spent in rearing painfully those children whom the conscription will tear from you, or who, marrying in their turn, will live, as you have lived, like beasts of burden, and will die, as you are about to die, miserably. . . . No brother, labour does not lead to property. It is transmitted by chance or is gained by cunning. The rich are the sluggards, the workmen are the poor—and poor they will remain. That is the rule : anything that is otherwise is only an exception.

‘ This is not just. And therefore Paris, whom on the faith of men interested to deceive you, you are accusing, Paris moves, protests, revolts ; and determines to change the laws which give the rich all power over the poor. . . . Paris demands that every man who is not a landowner, shall not pay a farthing of tax : that those who have only a house and garden shall be equally exempt ; that small fortunes shall be taxed but lightly, and that all the burden of taxation shall fall upon the rich. . . . Paris finally demands—listen to this, country workman, poor day labourer, farmer of every tenure, small freeholder eaten up by usury, all you who sow, reap, and sweat, that the best of your produce shall go to some one who does nothing—that which Paris demands, to sum up, is the land for the peasants, the instruments of his labour to the workman, and work for all. . . . Yes the fruits of the earth to those that cultivate it : his own to each man, and work for all.’ \*

It is needless to multiply proofs that the cause of the Internationale and the cause of the Commune were one. We abstain, therefore, from quoting the passionate address issued by the Internationale, shortly after the fall of the Commune, defending its most murderous excesses, and glorying in its Socialist aims. But the document is well worth studying by those who wish to know, from their own mouth, the views of the associated workmen.

The Internationale, whose first appearance this is upon the revolutionary stage, will probably henceforth receive more attention, both from practical statesmen and from political writers,

than has hitherto been accorded to it. It has already received tokens of that increased notoriety, more agreeable to the vanity probably than to the comfort of its members. It has been placed under the ban of the State both in France and Spain; and even in republican Switzerland its foreign members have been excluded from one of the cantons. In England we take no legal notice of such societies. The work which is elsewhere undertaken by the law, is done among us by opinion. Shortly after the bloody close of the insurrection, the Executive of the Association issued the address mentioned above, which contained, among other sentiments of the kind, an infamous defence of the murder of the prisoners of La Roquette. This was signed by all the members of the General Council. Most of them were persons wholly unknown; but two of them, Mr. Odger and Mr. Lucraft, have occasionally solicited the suffrages of English constituencies. It is a gratifying proof, both of the power and the actual soundness of English opinion, that these two men were compelled, after a short delay, to set themselves right, by an explanation, somewhat lame in its details, of the mode in which their signatures had been obtained, and by the more practical step of a withdrawal from the General Council. No other withdrawals have appeared, though there were other English signatures. It is not satisfactory to think that an organisation exists which should be able to persuade any Englishman, however obscure, to the sanction of sentiments so revolting. Whether the Internationale is a great political power or not remains to be seen; but that it is a great moral power is certain, for it is able to efface the natural instincts of Englishmen upon the subject of assassination.

Whatever the political station of this Association may be, it has certainly reached that position very rapidly. Its history is a brief one. It is supposed to be one of the benefits we owe to the International Exhibition of 1862. The defeat of the Paris workmen by Cavaignac in June, 1848, had disposed of many of their most dangerous leaders, and had driven out of their heads for a period the wild ideas of the Socialist school. But as time went on the severity of the punishment was forgotten. The architectural extravagances of which the Emperor was guilty in the vain hope of conciliating them, had drawn large numbers of their class to Paris, who more than filled up the gaps that had been made in their ranks in 1848. Returning prosperity re-awakened the old ambitions. New visions of revenge upon the middle classes began to float before their minds, and some of them, excited by the spectacle of what great combinations for the purpose of raising wages had been able to effect in England, conceived the idea of founding a vast organisation which should embrace the workmen of all countries in its scope. Brought over to England by

by the Exhibition of 1862, they met a number of the more disaffected artisans of London, and projects of combination on a large scale were freely discussed. No actual step was, however, taken until the autumn of 1864. Much by that time had happened to encourage the agitators among the artisans. The victory of the North in the American struggle inspired them with the confident but not very logical hope that all democracies, in all causes, would be able to conquer as completely. It was the culminating point of the financial mania; capital was bidding high for labour, and the moment seemed to have come for labour to make its own terms. And, above all, Mr. Gladstone (then Lord Palmerston's Chancellor of the Exchequer) had just placed himself at the head of the workmen's movement, by confiding to Mr. Odger's deputation his hitherto unsuspected indignation at Lord Palmerston's postponement of a Reform Bill. Acting under the influence of these inspiring circumstances, Mr. Odger and some of his friends proceeded upon the ideas of 1862 to found an 'International Association for the Emancipation of the Working Class,' of which he himself was the first President—a post which he appears to have retained till recently.

At first the progress of the Association was not very rapid, nor did its doctrines reach their full development. At the outset its object seems to have been merely to remove one of the main difficulties which hindered the success of strikes. It is the practice of the employers, when they cannot come to terms with their workmen, to import foreign workmen in their place. The Internationale was set on foot to parry this manœuvre, by 'picketing' foreign labour markets, as well as English. This duty it appears to have performed down to the present time—as we have seen in the case of the Newcastle struggle—with considerable, though incomplete, success. So practical a conception did not satisfy the seething imaginations of the foreign conspirators; but the English workmen were at the time too intent upon the Reform agitation to give their attention to broader schemes. But after this movement had triumphed, the doctrines of the Association became more pronounced and its extension more rapid. It spread rapidly through all the manufacturing works of Belgium and French Switzerland; and, as the vigour of the Imperial police began to decline, branches were established in the principal towns in France. The Trades' Unions of England and Germany have maintained friendly relations with it, and, no doubt, for the purpose of strikes, the various organisations work heartily together. How far in either country its more extravagant doctrines receive support from the working men is very doubtful. It is said that the large number of German names which appear among the lists of its most active members are derived mainly from the population

population of the Rhenish cities, whose Teutonic lineage is open to much question. A strong presumption of revolutionary tendencies is established by experience against every large town which dates its origin from the old Roman colonies. With respect to the part taken by English workmen in its operations, the most satisfactory thing that can be said is, that at the various congresses which have been held by the Association, the larger number of the representatives of England have been men with names of a singularly un-English flavour, such as Eccarius, Jung, Cohn, Matens, Lessner, and Dupont.\* As M. Dupont himself observes, 'The English have all the materials necessary for the social revolution; but what they lack is the spirit of generalisation and the revolutionary passion . . . What folly, then—nay, what a crime—to allow it to fall into hands purely English.' †

The numbers of the Association have been very variously estimated. In the trial of June, 1870, the Procureur Imperial assumed their entire number at about 800,000, of whom he assigned a tenth part to this country. M. Testut, who professes to have devoted numerous researches to the subject, fixes the total for Europe and America at five millions; M. Albert Richard, the principal champion of Socialism at Lyons, claims a following for the Internationale of not less than seven millions. These extreme figures are probably fanciful, and the great divergence between the various estimates indicates that they all rest, more or less, upon conjecture. Whether the Society disposes of the large means that are sometimes claimed for it is doubtful. It is certain that more than one strike in France and Switzerland which it has supported—*e. g.* Creuzot, Neuville, Fourchambaud, Bâle—has failed for want of funds. But that its numbers are very large and that its propaganda is carried on with great vigour cannot be questioned. It has about twenty newspapers in its interest on the Continent, besides two or three in this country. The literary championship which it commands is probably as good as the extravagance of the doctrines which have to be defended will allow; but the writing necessarily consists more of vehement declamation than of any attempt at tranquil argument. That such doctrines as the Internationale sustains can be preached with applause to a vast number of men, of whom many, at least, are well educated, is, after all, its most remarkable distinction, and will remain, whatever the practical issue may be, one of the intellectual phenomena of the nineteenth century. We have often during the last two generations have had mad speculations upon social reconstruction from the pens of eccentric writers. The peculiarity of the present state of things is that their views have been adopted and improved upon by a whole class.

---

\* Testut, pp. 124, 135, 145.

† Ibid. p. 237.

So far as can be gathered from the declamation which infects the resolutions of their congresses and their formal addresses almost as much as the articles in their newspapers, it is against the capitalist that their chief anger is directed. Of course they wish to exterminate the landlord as well as the capitalist. 'Society has a right,' so runs the resolution of their Congress at Bâle, 'to abolish individual ownership of the soil: and it is necessary that the ownership of the soil should be resumed by the community.' The same fate awaits all mines, quarries, railways, canals, telegraphs, coal-mines, machines of all kinds, and all other instruments of labour.\* In the mean time, until this happy consummation is brought about, no employer is to use a machine until he has first compensated all the workmen whom it may displace. The demand, however, for the seizure of all immovable property, though it appears in every statement of their objects, is not the urgent necessity of the hour. 'The landlord now is but the sleeping partner of the capitalist.'† 'The landlords are the more remote, the capitalists the more direct antagonists of the working men.'‡ It is the middle-class capitalist to whom they attribute their present sufferings and whom they are most anxious to destroy. 'All middle-class politics, whatever their colour or their name, can have at bottom but one object—the maintenance of middle-class domination; and middle-class domination is the slavery of the proletariat.'§ 'The law gives to the capitalist the right to reduce the proletarian to slavery by famine.'|| 'In truth we see everywhere capital ruling, speculating, warring against the workman. The capitalists of to-day are the successors of the slave-owners of ancient times and of the feudal lords of the middle ages.'¶

And accordingly, in many of their publications, 'slave owner' is the ordinary term used to designate the man who is wicked enough to possess capital and to use it in employing other people. The case is put perhaps, as favourably to the workmen as it can be put, by Mr. Frederic Harrison:—

'The people of Paris believe not in any God or any man. But they have a religion of their own: and for that religion they are prepared to die. That religion is the faith that capital and its holders must adapt themselves to nobler uses, or they had better cease to exist. . . . Little knowing how to end it, or what it might be that would save them, they have thrown up this tremendous yet wild veto on the absolute reign of capital. It is their protest against the selfish anti-social independence of wealth.'

\* Congress of Brussels. Res. 3, 6. † 'Address of the General Council,' p. 20.

‡ 'Address of the General Council,' p. 16.

§ Testut, p. 13.

|| 'Paris Section, 1870,' ap. Testut, p. 82.

¶ 'Section of Geneva,' ap. Testut, p. 260.

Mr. Harrison gives rather too grand a colouring to the sentiments of his favourites. They do not in the least contemplate that capital should 'cease to exist'—whatever their view in respect to its holders may be. Such would certainly be the result of their success; but what they themselves propose is that the capital should pass into their own hands. As the Council of the Internationale itself puts it:—

'The Commune intended to abolish that class property which makes the labour of the many the wealth of the few. It aimed at the expropriation of the expropriators.\*'

The ultimate objects of the movement are stated with abundant clearness. They amount simply to this: that the workmen shall have land without buying it, capital without accumulating it, machinery and the instruments of labour without paying for them. But when we come to enquire into the measures by which these beneficent ends are to be accomplished, their language loses its precision. We get nothing but a haze of declamation. The only step proposed by them which can be called practical, is the entire abolition of the right of inheritance. No human being is to be allowed to inherit, or receive by bequest, anything from any other human being. 'If,' says M. Richard, 'parents more active and more intelligent than others, and who had amassed some fortune, were allowed to set up a special privilege in favour of their children by bequeathing this fortune to them, solidarity would be struck at in the very heart.'† This is the general tone of the writers in socialist newspapers. It embodies much the same feeling as that which has dictated the common Trades Union rule that a good workman is not to be allowed to take any advantage of his clumsier neighbour by doing more work within the same time. The literary men, however, of any movement are usually more thoroughgoing than the silent members who are less accustomed to generalise; and this proposal to forbid all inheritance does not yet receive unanimous support. At the Congress of Bâle it was carried by a large majority of those who voted; but a considerable number abstained from voting. M. Eccarius, one of the gentlemen with a foreign name who represented England, advanced Mr. Lowe's proposal of an increased succession duty as a kind of middle term. But the suggestion met with little favour, and was rejected by a large majority. The proposal, however, to abolish inheritances is very dear to the hearts of the leading men. It seems to them to be the most feasible way of attaining their object, the prevention of individual accumulation. Even to their fevered brains the chance of wresting from every individual all that he

\* 'Address of the General Council,' p. 20.

† *Ap. Testut*, p. 11.

has contrived to earn may seem precarious ; but at all events they think they can prevail over the dead hand. Yet they are aware that natural affection, and in fact the very existence of the family, would interpose a serious obstacle even to this mitigated robbery. Accordingly they find themselves forced to declare war against the family, and, as a necessary consequence, against religion altogether. At first sight it appears inexplicable that they should have gone out of their way to array against them the vast social force which religion still happily represents. As regards the rougher and more brutal instruments no explanation is necessary. The lust for plunder and hatred of the name of God are emotions of the same order, and are apt, where there is temptation, to go together. But some of the thinkers, or rather dreamers, who are the informing spirits of the movement, are men of pure morality, and at least flatter themselves that they are in pursuit of a high philanthropic ideal. They have convinced themselves, by some strange process of reasoning, that individual accumulation is the source of all human ills ; and they see plainly enough that natural affection, the product of the family life, leads inevitably to accumulation. Consequently, with the remorseless logic of theoretical politicians, they declare war against the family and the religion that supports it. The programme of the Socialist Alliance of Geneva, which was admitted to form part of the Internationale, in 1869, puts forward very distinctly this connection of ideas :—

‘ 1. The Alliance declares itself atheist : it demands the abolition of all worship, the substitution of science for faith, and of divine justice for human justice : the abolition of marriage, so far as it is a political, religious, juridical, or civil institution.

‘ 2. It demands, specially the definitive and entire abolition of classes, the political, social, and economical equalisation of the sexes, and, to arrive at that end, above all the abolition of the right of inheritance, so that in the future the enjoyments of each man should correspond exactly to his production.’\*

Among the many points of correspondence between the policy of the Commune and that of the Internationale, none was more remarkable than the antipathy to religion which marked the former from the very first. The first Revolution worked itself for a time into the same temper : but it was only after two or three years of conflict, and during the acutest paroxysm of the Terror. But the Commune became bitterly hostile to religion before it had become sanguinary. The persecution of nuns, the expulsion and imprisonment of priests, the prohibition of all religious education, the conversion of churches into spouting-halls for socialist clubs, commenced almost before the elections

\* Ap. Testut, p. 25.

for the Commune were complete. At these clubs, which became numerous during the second siege, one of the favourite subjects of vituperation, generally from the mouth of a female orator, was the institution of marriage. But, though it occupied a prominent place, it only shared the fate of many other sacred things. Sacramental vessels were plundered; altars were turned to the vilest uses; the holiest personages were made the subjects of vile ribaldry and of gross caricature. Exactly the same spirit is shown in the Socialist writings and speeches. 'We will have no more religions, for religions stifle intelligence,' says M. Dupont, the President at the Congress of Brussels.\* 'Le bon Dieu a fait son temps, en voila assez,' says Varlin, the head of the Internationale at Paris.† 'The Bible is the code of immorality,' says Murat.‡ 'Three scourges,' says another, 'exist in perpetuity to prey upon the productions of humanity—the priest, the soldier, and the fundholder.'§ In a similar spirit English writers of the extreme school are never tired of inveighing against the Christian ministers of every denomination. Mr. Morley denounces the Protestant clergy of this island as 'a sinister army of twenty-eight thousand men in masks.'|| Mr. Harrison designates the religion of the Roman Catholics as 'a religion of lies, with imposture for its creed and servility for its object:' and informs us that its clergy have 'offered in return for their possessions to preach a bloody vengeance on the workmen.'¶

Our excuse for detailing these ravings at such length is assuredly not that they are new. The only new thing is that they should be the watchwords of a vast organisation: that they should have represented the policy of rulers who, a few months ago, were masters of Paris, and who, if M. Thiers had been but a little weaker, might by this time have been supreme in France. We have rather recalled the principles of the Socialists in the words of their leaders and advocates, because people are apt to forget how deep, how impassable is the gulf which separates their objects from all that we honour and value upon earth. We are prone to judge harshly of the party of order in France, and to condemn their measures of self-defence, without reflecting what kind of enemy it is with whom they have to deal. In Mr. Harrison's dialect the workmen of Paris are described as 'the most truly religious class in Europe.' But as he has told us in a former publication that 'they believe not in any God or any man,' we must conclude that he uses the word 'religion' in a sense diametrically opposite to that which it has hitherto borne among mankind. 'Faith,' 'charity,' 'Catholic,' are words

\* Sept. 13, 1868, 'Peuple Belge,' ap. Testut, p. 13.

† Testut, p. 30.

‡ 'Fortnightly Review.'

† 'Livre Noir,' p. 85.

§ Testut, p. 33.

¶ Ibid.

which are often subjected to a similar process of distortion. It is a common trick of the new philosophy to smuggle its contraband doctrines into the regions of decent discussion, by clothing them in phrases stolen from the beliefs which they assail. The Paris workmen may possibly have a religion which involves a disbelief in God, and in that they may be fervent: and it is likely that all the atrocities of which they have been guilty for the last eighty years are strictly in accordance with the morality of that religion. But, to the minds of those who believe in God and His morality, they will appear the most fearful curse that ever afflicted a civilised land. Their capricious turbulence, at once frivolous and ferocious, have made any rule but that of the sword almost impossible in France. If they had not rebelled successively against every known form of Government, their disorders might have been ascribed to the force of their political opinions. If they had not cast off leader after leader, in each case leaping from maudlin adulation to savage hatred, some part of the blame of their excesses might be laid upon evil counsellors. But since the day when they dragged Louis XVI. and his Queen in brutal triumph from Versailles to Paris, they have tried every gradation of limited monarchy, every variety of despotism, republics of every shade and tint—and they have raised the barricade equally against all. The only motive that has ever reconciled them to peacefulness and order has been that of overwhelming fear. Under the heavy hand of the Empire, while its strength remained, they were well conducted. As soon as an enemy's triumph enabled them to overthrow it, they returned to their old turbulence. Neither the republicanism of the statesmen of the 4th of September, nor the presence of the enemy outside the walls, restrained them from making repeated efforts to overthrow the Government they had just set up. They were treated with excessive leniency: but impunity only encouraged them to renewed attempts which were at last successful. They were not to be won by faithful service, any more than by a conciliatory policy. Chaudey, Clement Thomas, Jules Favre, had stood by the republican cause in its darkest hours. Chaudey and Thomas had suffered exile on its behalf. But they were shot with a ferocity as vigorous as if they had been an Archbishop and a Judge. If Jules Favre was only slandered and not shot, it was because his opportune flight left no other weapon but that of slander in the hands of the Paris workmen. It is significant of their spirit that poor M. Bignon, who had given evidence fifty years ago in the case of the four *sergents* who were executed under Louis XVIII., was condemned to the fate of M. Chaudey. The friend of yesterday and the enemy of half a century ago were doomed to death with callous impartiality.

The traditions of 1793, as well as the incomplete experiences of 1871, are sufficient to warn the French nation never again to suffer the Paris workmen to usurp supreme power in France: and it is abundantly clear from the recent elections that ability to keep this demoniac chained up is the one title to confidence which the peasantry require in their rulers. M. Thiers has no other claim upon their support. He represents no cause or sentiment: he heads no party: he has never been personally popular. But he has put down a Socialist revolution in a thorough-going manner, and that claim is all sufficient. It seems to be the principles, quite as much as the practice, of the Parisian mob which alarm the rural districts. The peasantry do not look upon existence from the one stand-point of weekly wages. Their little properties bring them into contact with the affairs of life on many sides. They and their neighbours are lessors as well as farmers, employers as well as labourers, creditors as well as debtors. They know that the doctrines of systematised plunder to which the Internationale gives the name of 'solidarity,' would simply mean the dissolution of human society, the resignation of all the conquests over barbarism which make the people of Europe to differ from the rudest savages. They are not simple enough to believe that industry can be enforced if the hope of enjoying its fruits is taken away. They know that the outcry against capital, if it could possibly succeed, would in reality be the doom of all labour known to civilised communities. Unless there be capital to purchase the seed and the plough, and to nourish the ploughman until the time of harvest, even the rudest agriculture would not be carried on; and of that amount of political economy the most unlettered of the peasantry are able to convince themselves. The dream that labour and enterprise and ingenuity will continue when the stimulus of individual interest is withdrawn, is not likely to be found among the unsophisticated dwellers in the country. It requires the moral atmosphere of the factory and the *cabaret* for its support. It may have had an attraction for some fanatical minds of a higher cast, who have taught themselves to believe that optimism is philanthropy. But in the mass of minds, it either springs from the crassest ignorance, inspired by *absinthe*, or it is a thin cloak for projects of simple rapine. It evidently does not commend itself to the rural population as the possible belief of sane men. They look upon the whole movement as nothing but a decorous form of pillage—and, as regards the mass of its adherents, they probably think right. Can any one blame them for resisting the 'expropriators' as they would resist any other robber who came to do the same work under a shorter name?

But this is not the entire sum of the offences of the Socialists

in the eyes of the peasantry. To a large mass of the people in the rural districts the abolition of property is not the most perilous portion of their doctrines. The religion of the people of Paris, which consists in 'believing in no God and no man,' finds no favour with the French peasantry, who are still a religious people in the older sense of the term. Christianity, in spite of all the efforts of the press of Paris, is still with them a living force. Its ministrations are to their eyes a priceless treasure: and any attack upon it will rouse a more implacable indignation than an attack on their property or their independence. They honour and love their clergy, who, whatever we may think of some portion of their creed, fully deserve by their lives the affections they have won. The avowed atheism of the Commune, the obscene blasphemy of its literature and its mob, the desecrated churches, the persecutions, imprisonments, murders to which the ministers of religion, for no other crime but their office, were exposed, has left a mark upon the minds of all Frenchmen who live outside the great cities which the lapse of a generation will not efface. The conflict has left far behind it the boundaries of ordinary political discussion. Forms of government, rights of franchise, are questions simply trivial compared to the vast issues which this new alliance between fanaticism and ruffianism has raised. A new sect, claiming to number millions in its ranks, powerful enough to hunt out a Government and to set its heel on a great city for two months, wielding for the time a force of 150,000 armed men, schemes to eradicate from among human institutions at once marriage, property, and religion. Are the representatives of the French nation to be blamed for thinking that with such an enemy there can be neither truce nor compromise? They give no quarter to all that humanity values most: and when once they have commenced the shedding of blood they must look for the measure they have meted out to others. The usages of war are for adversaries who recognise the possibility of adjusting their hostile claims, and have not extinguished the hope of living some day side by side in peace. The conflict between Socialism and existing civilisation must be a death-struggle. If the combat is once commenced, one or other of the combatants must perish. It is idle to plead that the schemes of these men are their religion. There are religions so hostile to morality, so poisonous to the life-springs of society, that they are outside the pale of human tolerance. The Thugs had a religion of their own, with a goddess to preside over it: and its tenet was this—that anybody who possessed anything they wished to have, must die. In truth, if self-devotion to their cause is to be the only test, they might have been fairly described as the most religious body of men in the world.

world. Yet they had the benefit neither of belligerent rights, nor of the clemency which modern usage dictates towards political offences. The conspirator against human society, who has proved that he will use any opportunity and commit any crime in furtherance of his aim, can no more be classed with national antagonists, or political culprits, than the pirate or the brigand. The events of last May were undoubtedly terrible enough: and the retribution inflicted was stern and sweeping—though professedly limited to murderers and incendiaries, and mutineers who had fought against their flag. But deeply as modern feeling shrinks from the infliction of the punishment of death on a large scale, public opinion, both in this country and abroad, has refused to condemn the severities of the French Government against men whose brief success had been stained with innocent blood, and whose permanent triumph would have been the death-blow of civilisation.

Distracting as is the confusion of French politics at the present moment, it is evident that their prospect is all the brighter for the check which the Communists have brought upon themselves. The abuse which has been lavished upon M. Thiers by the English friends of the Commune, far exceeding the extremest licence commonly accorded to political criticism, shows how grave the check has been. It is not merely that a dangerous gang of conspirators has been exterminated or dispersed. The moral discomfiture has been equally complete. A number of fallacies bred during a period of delusive tranquillity have been dissipated for ever. The rose-water theory of revolutions in which the Parisian middle-class specially delighted, has received its death-blow. From the time of excellent, imbecile, Louis XVI. down to the time of the equally excellent General Trochu, this theory has exercised a strange fascination over the minds of all the successive rulers of France, except Cavaignac and the Bonapartes. Its leading doctrines are—first, that the best way of reducing to order a mob of insurgent Parisian workmen is to issue complimentary proclamations; and secondly, that, even if the worst comes to the worst, any revolution is better than ordering the troops to fire upon the mob. Louis XVI. owed to this belief his death; it paralysed the energy of the Girondins; Louis-Philippe clung to it in the critical hours of February, 1848; and Trochu allowed it to make his nominal government a gilded slavery, and to baulk even the long-cherished, celebrated, ‘plan.’ But its reign is over now. French statesmen have satisfied themselves by hard experience that the phenomena of 1793 were not exceptional; and that—terrible as the employment of a military force in street warfare must always be—it is better to do that, and more also, than risk a Parisian revolution. It is

no longer a necessary mark of Liberal opinions to speak of the ruffians who raise a barricade as 'le peuple;' and the literary pity, of which they have hitherto been the unworthy objects, will now be better bestowed on the victims they have slaughtered and the industries their turbulence has ruined.

The Commune has fortunately acted the part of the Helot in the political education of France. It has done much to bring into discredit the theory of revolutions altogether. There was a strong tendency at one time, arising out of the contradictory nature of human nature, especially of literary human nature, to throw a halo round the atrocities of the first Revolution, and to make heroes of the criminals it produced. The following reflections, from the pen of M. Henri de Pene, Liberal journalist, which we will not weaken by translating, indicate the kind of impression which this year's experience has happily left upon cultivated minds in France. Unhappily, it is the reckless writings of these cultivated journalists that have bred much of the confusion from which French statesmen find it so difficult to extricate their country:—

' Cette révolution du 18 mars, qui eut d'un bout à l'autre de son existence le caractère d'une orgie, fut extrême, elle aussi, dès son premier pas.

' En cela, elle a bien mérité de nous. C'est seulement en étant horrible qu'elle pouvait nous servir. A force d'être châtiés, peut-être serons-nous corrigés. Ce sont les révolutions et les révolutionnaires à l'eau de rose, comme disait Champfort, qui nous ont perdus. Rien n'est dangereux comme de ne pas être étrillé quand on s'assoit à une table de roulette, et le feu qui ne vous brûle pas d'abord jusqu'aux os vous induit dans la tentation fatale de jouer avec lui. On s'imaginait que les crimes révolutionnaires étaient désormais impossibles; on vantait la douceur de nos mœurs; on se flattait d'avoir canalisé le torrent. Que de fois n'avons-nous pas entendu déraisonner sur ce thème: la meilleure garantie de l'ordre, c'est la démocratisation de la rente! Qui voudrait le désordre, quand tout le monde est intéressé à l'ordre? On a armé, il est vrai, quelques mauvaises gens dans la masse; mais comme les honnêtes gens ont des armes aussi, nous défions bien les coquins de bouger.

\* \* \* \* \*

' Il est curieux de suivre la liste des historiens célèbres de notre révolution mère et modèle des autres. C'est d'abord MM. Thiers et Mignet, dont l'admiration ne va pas au-delà de Mirabeau et de la Constituante; M. de Lamartine pousse jusqu'aux Girondins; M. Michelet a pris pour dieu Danton; M. Louis Blanc préfère Robespierre; un autre n'a pas reculé devant l'apothéose de Marat. Après ce dernier, il faut tirer l'échelle.

' Ce changement successif de héros chez les historiens divers de la Révolution est intéressant à noter au passage, parce qu'il coïncide exactement avec la marche de l'esprit public et les progrès de son ascension jusqu'au sommet de la montagne. Peu à peu les crimes

sont devenus vertus, et les vertus fadeurs. Les tribuns du peuple ont inventé à l'usage de leurs passions un évangile révolutionnaire aussi étranger à la vérité historique que les sermons monarchiques du Père Loriquet. Et voilà comment, l'ignorance des uns secondant la perversité des autres, et le prolétariat ayant mis de la partie les rugissements de son ventre, nous eûmes 1848 succédant presque sans secousse à 1830, et la République tout court à la meilleure des républiques.\*

But the greatest gain of the last few months has been the moral dethronement of Paris. It has been a hard matter to unteach the provinces their veneration for this corrupt and capricious mistress. They have seemed to think it quite in the natural order of things that the populace of Belleville and Montmartre (M. Jules Favre will admit that there is such a thing now) should make and unmake the governments of France, should dictate her policy, should according to its fancy award to her a period of prosperity and peace, or a period of convulsion and ruin. At last, however, they have become weary. The perpetual changes, and the unchanged discontent, the grievances ever renewed, the experiments of redress always unsuccessful, have at last opened the eyes of the provincial population. They appear to have come to the conclusion that eighty years of intermittent revolution is too high a price to pay for the caprices of even the most elegant capital in the world. It is to be hoped that no return of tenderness to their early love will warp their resolution. If the workmen of Paris and one or two other great towns can be made innocuous, there is some hope of quiet and orderly government, whichever of the political forms of government be adopted. If that condition cannot be secured, any kind of government that may be set up, be it monarchy, empire, or republic, will merely be an *entr'acte* between the bloody acts of the revolutionary drama.

It is the destiny of France to exhibit, for the benefit of others, the special dangers of modern civilisation in their most aggravated form. Among these, not the least serious is the obstacle to peaceable government which the growth of large cities has created. It is the fashion to speak of them as more enlightened than the country districts; and to claim for them in consequence a larger share of political power. Paris, for instance, is constantly eulogised as the 'brain of France.' It is thought a great hardship that the intelligence of the capital should be swamped by a mass of ignorant and bigoted rurals. The Commune had even the impudence to demand as one of the terms of peace that the electoral laws should be so modified as to neutralise the numerical preponderance of the country districts. Even if the assumed superiority of enlightenment had been real, the

demand would have come strangely from the advocates of pure equality. But it is a mere fallacy, resting on an equivocal sense of the word Paris. There is a scientific, a political, a studious Paris, which is superior in enlightenment not only to the rest of France, but probably to most of the other cities of Europe. But this Paris has no share in the thoughts or counsels of the Paris which acts, revolts, fights, and murders—the Paris of the barricades, the Paris of universal suffrage. Look over the list of the Commune: you will not find a single name of the slightest intellectual reputation. Those who are really enlightened and distinguished in Paris, might on political principles which are old-fashioned now, have some claim to govern the rest of France. But they are a miserable minority, hunted down in times of trouble by the dominant proletariat. And what claim have these latter to govern France by title of superior enlightenment? In the power of believing the wildest fiction, the artisan leaves the peasant far behind; and, in point of advisers, the priest and the prefect are at least not inferior as guides to the wire-pullers of the Internationale or the writers in the ‘Père Duchesne.’

It is impossible to study the forces which are driving our brilliant neighbours through such appalling trials to an unknown goal without a passing reflection upon our own dangers and the future that lies before us. Have we any part reserved for us in this terrible drama? Are we securely sheltered from the devastation that is sweeping, at so short a distance from us, over a civilisation as high and as complicated as our own? Is there any danger that we shall see the same wild dreams translated into the same bloody and rapacious deeds? Shall we ever be driven, in bare defence of our religion and our social existence, to undertake the same terrible struggle? Shall we ever be seeking in theoretic constitutions, for some new principle of political cohesion to reconstruct a society shattered by revolution, and shall we too seek for it in vain?

There is nothing in the attitude of English workmen, as a body, to give cause for apprehensions of this kind. A few Englishmen have made themselves conspicuous by recommending revolutionary social changes, but even of those very few are workmen; they are usually youths of a higher culture, who see no other path of promotion open to them. The English workmen, as a class, have exhibited no taste for the visionary doctrines of the Internationale. England is a useful headquarters for the Association, on account of her perfect freedom; but the foreign names of many of the members who assume to represent her at the Congresses, and the foreign style in which its English manifestoes are written, betray a signi-

ficant poverty in English agency. The workmen in this country have been active of late years, but it has usually been with the very practical object of raising the rate of wages. With this aim, in one or two localities, fearful crimes have undoubtedly been committed; but these practices seem to be disappearing under the operation of the law and the censure of public opinion. And it is necessary to bear in mind that, so long as the liberty of others is not infringed, efforts to raise wages are perfectly legitimate. They are sanctioned by the general principles of freedom of trade. If people think that, singly, they bargain at a disadvantage, they have a perfect right to combine; and the rule holds as good for labour as for any other commodity. The wisdom of doing so may, in most cases, be doubted: for, if labourers combine, employers will combine too, and the employers can generally afford to wait the longest. Moreover, every pound that is wasted by the enforced idleness of a strike, is so much subtracted from the fund out of which future employment is to be supported. But, though the policy of striking is open to grave question, the right to do so is indisputable. It is a form of 'higgling in the market,' which it would be highly unjust to confound with schemes of revolution.

The strikes, therefore, in themselves are no proof that the English workmen entertain the visionary ideas which have produced so much disaster on the Continent; and there is certainly no other proof that they have so far bidden adieu to the common sense which belongs to their race. If there is any danger, it will arise in a very different quarter. We fear rather the operations of English parties, and the somewhat antiquated working of our political machine. It is not possible, of course, that a body of educated Englishmen should ever adopt the creed of the Internationale, still less that any legislative sanction should be given to it. No statesman will ever undertake to abolish capitalists, or to make land common property, or to destroy the 'selfish instincts of the family' by discouraging marriage. Such theories can have no creative power. But they may be potent for destruction. Rousseau's political philosophy, as far as constructive legislation went, has never travelled beyond the paper on which he wrote it. The omnipotent State, founded on absolute equality and the entire surrender of the individual will—such as he dreamed it—has made but few converts, and has never passed even into the condition of an experiment. But his writings, nevertheless, were a mighty engine in accomplishing the disintegration of the French State. The only harm which the Socialist theories are likely to do us is of the same kind. They may bring about the fall of institutions, the place of which they are wholly impotent to supply. They may create a band of

fanatics, sufficiently powerful by their union and numbers to extract perilous, though insincere, pledges from the facile virtue of politicians. There is much in our political habits of thought to smooth their way. We have had many reforms, and many changes that were not reforms; but our philosophy of politics, though old-world and out-of-date, continues to survive the state of things in which it had life and meaning. Speakers and writers still fight battles that have been won; still repeat watch-words that no longer represent a struggle; still urge a policy based on some shibboleth of the past, to which events have affixed a signification undreamt of when it was devised. They still talk of freedom, as though such a thing as bondage was left in England; of reform, as though we had never changed; of progress, as though we had never moved. These battle-cries are a valuable property: whose inheritance are they to become? In past time they did great service to those who used them, and gave currency to many proposals with which in logic they had nothing to do; but, as far as the recognised political schools are concerned, they have now little meaning left. What party is to affix to them a new gloss—to use them as a talisman for its purposes? Now that the political budget of the dominant party is nearly emptied, and all Liberal aspirants for power are on the search for a new cry, it surely concerns any one who is wont to accept these passwords blindly to inquire what cause they are about to serve, and of what kind of combatants they are in future to be the mark.

Let us take 'progress' for an instance. There is no belief to which this age—generally feeble in its grasp upon the evidence of things not seen—more passionately clings than the belief in progress. The doctrine that the present age is superior to all that has gone before it has been a favourite one at various times, especially among the younger portion of each generation: but the idea of applying the same notion to the future has, until modern times, been confined to a few sanguine thinkers. For the last century, however, it has been rapidly passing out of the condition of a learned theory, and has been taking its place among the sanctities of popular belief. In our time it has risen to the rank of an orthodoxy. A fervent belief that we have progressed, are progressing, and must progress, not only in things material, but in the excellence of our political arrangements, and in what is called (with an ever-varying definition) pure religion, is an article of faith which all who aspire to popular favour must surely believe, or at least profess. To moralise on progress has become a popular commonplace, objectionable only for its triteness, like a disquisition on the beauties of Shakespeare or the merits of the British Constitution. A kind of prose ode to Progress is the ordinary peroration of a popular

popular orator's speech. Doubts of progress, if any should be found hardy enough to suggest them, are no longer met with argument, but only with anathema. By a quaint perversion of well-known religious terms such doubts are denounced as 'want of faith,' or—by a still more courageous use of the same vocabulary—as 'atheistical.'

If this confident belief in the future progress of our corner of the earth were confined to material things, no criticism could find fault with it. It requires no assistance from 'faith,' but rests on facts which past history abundantly supplies. Knowledge of natural phenomena, and all the prosperity and convenience which that knowledge brings with it, has increased for many centuries at a constantly accelerating pace. But this is a very small part of the Gospel which the religion of progress preaches. Perhaps the contemplation of our scientific and material gains has made the idea of a necessary political advance more generally credible. But there is no logical comparison between the two. Scientific progress means nothing but the addition of discovery to discovery. Once ascertained to be true, each is a gain in knowledge which can never be lost. Political progress is little, if at all, dependent on intellectual discovery. There is a certain perfection to be gained in administrative contrivances: and to this kind of growth scientific discovery may lend its aid. But in essence it is a moral change. Its problems are not solved by thinking. Its achievements are not the work of studious or ingenious brains. Peace and goodwill—the object to which it ought to tend—will not be the result of some clever contrivance which men by much debating and many experiments may hope to hit upon. If they attain it all, it will be by rooting out the selfishness which good fortune nurtures, and the recklessness which springs from misery. What ground have we in our past experience for thinking that years as they roll on will bring us nearer to this condition?

It is a comfortless occupation to dwell on the unreality of the progress mankind is supposed to be making in the art of self-government. But the optimism of politicians in recent times has been something more serious than an amiable weakness. It has lent a warmth of tint to their political speeches, and has furnished them with a stock repertory of comfortable reflections; and so far it has made political life more agreeable than it otherwise would have been. But unfortunately it has also coloured and governed their political calculations. The assurance that constant future progress is a certainty, and that there must be within reach of legislation some remedy for every evil, has been their intellectual datum line. This conviction explains the apparent recklessness with which changes have been advocated, without any effort to ascertain

ascertain their real operation, either by experiment or at least by tentative advance. Innovators have been simply content to challenge their adversaries to show them some other change preferable to their own. The alternative of not changing at all has been put out of court as beyond discussion. The notion that a vast amount of evil is irremediable, and that perchance in some particular cases no change is possible, except a change for the worse, has been scouted as 'want of faith.' This roseate theory has given to political reformers the same kind of courage that a disbelief in the existence of reefs would give to sailors. But what if the certainty is an illusion? In such a case it would be a small consolation to the mariners who relied on it that their steering had shown great 'faith,' or their seamanship had evinced a truly hopeful spirit. The course of recent events might well shake the faith of some of our most confident political pilots. At least these events will excuse some curiosity as to the destination to which this progress is conducting us. It is satisfactory to be told that we are progressing, and that progress is the law of our political existence. But whither are we going?

The question is legitimate even for English politicians. For we all know that to be ruled by the Liberal party is the *sine qua non* of political well-being, and we are incessantly told that progress is indispensable to the existence of the Liberal party. It is a party which does not aim at any definite objects; it disdains the idea of finality as an insult, and quarrels with its chiefs when they tell it that it has reached the term of its labours and may 'rest and be thankful.' There is no particular political change, or set of political changes which will satisfy its ambition. The only result of achieving them will be to stimulate it to plan a new campaign, of which fresh and farther reaching changes shall be the aim. And as the Liberal party must always exist for the benefit of mankind, and as progress is the law of its existence, this progress must clearly go on *ad infinitum*. Other reformers, in other times and countries, have been satisfied to put forward the subversion of some particular institution or the correction of some specified abuse as the goal of their exertions. But the Radicals of the present day have improved upon all previous reformers by making change an institution. They honour the process of subversion and replacement abstractedly, without reference to the objects on which it is exercised. They claim confidence for their political organisation, on the ground that it exists for the purpose of progress—i. e. for the purpose of knocking down one law, or set of laws, and setting up another in its stead; and their favourite taunt is, that their adversaries on some points are in favour of standing still.

This philosophy lends to their proposals a totally different

colour from what they would wear if considered on their own merits alone. When they ask us to move on, our thoughts are naturally directed, not to the few steps they now invite us to take, but to the long journey of which these steps are to form an insignificant part. When they recommend the ballot, or the payment of election expenses, in order, as they think, to increase the power of the artisan, we naturally ask whether this is to be the end of the demand, or whether the power thus gained is not to be used for the purpose of gaining more. Again, when they ask us to abolish the practice of primogeniture in the inheritance of intestate estates, or the power of settling upon an unborn life, we cannot help inquiring whether this is all that is meant, or whether this is merely a portion of a big project, which, for convenience of carrying, has been cut into small lengths? These measures may not go very far, but they are pointers. On the theory of unceasing 'progress' they convey an unambiguous answer to the question, where are we going? We are assured by our guides that the road along which, for our benefit and their own, they are to conduct us, is indefinitely long. When we ask about the direction, their answers are somewhat hazy; but we may not unreasonably conclude that our future destiny in that regard may best be learned by a study of the past. There are certain laws which have governed the relations of the Liberal party to the movement which they call progress during the last forty years, and which we must conclude, in the absence of any contrary indications, will continue to govern it. The epoch of political change has lasted sufficiently long to enable us to generalise upon its phenomena, to observe what is constant and what is variable in its successive manifestations, and so in some degree to predict the future.

The party of change has always presented itself as a combination of elements at first sight quite incompatible. It has consisted of a section to whom change has been little agreeable, who have only submitted to it from a belief that it was inevitable, from old connection with the party, or perhaps from a just conviction that the chances of personal advancement were to be found only on that side. But they have accepted as little of it as they could, and have always been anxious to give the narrowest interpretation to the wide professions of their party. The other section, on the contrary, have scarcely concealed their aversion for the moderate counsels of their allies. They have avowedly accepted these party watchwords only for a momentary purpose. The measures which the moderate section have swallowed with an ill-grace they, while accepting them, have ostentatiously spoken of as mere milk for babes; and they have confidently predicted a time when the whole of their demands

demands would be conceded. The leader of this ill-assorted army has uniformly belonged to the moderate section; sometimes he has been a very recent convert to the measures he has proposed. He has always repelled with indignation the idea that his proposals would involve or would facilitate the projects of his extreme allies. Nay, he has rather offered them as a means of making those designs impossible by conceding reasonable demands. But, nevertheless, while disclaiming their designs, the moderate leader has gladly availed himself of their support; and in the long run the end of it has always been this: his promises have been disavowed, the predictions of the extreme men have turned out to be correct, and the full measure of their demands has been conceded.

This description will fit all the great changes which have taken place since 1820. In applying it we must not be supposed to be expressing any opinion as to the expediency of the measures in themselves—still less as expressing an opinion that all change could have been avoided. A theory of constant immobility is as irrational as a theory of constant progress. Great changes were doubtless necessary: the vice of those that were made was, that they constructed and settled nothing, but simply pacified the clamour of the hour. But we are investigating them not as isolated changes, but as parts of a system of change, and as illustrating the value of the protests and predictions of those who conduct it. Considered from this point of view, the constant repudiation of ulterior designs by the proposer of a great change, the proclamation of the same designs by the extreme partisans on whose support he is relying, and their invariable success in the end, are recurring phenomena well worthy of some reflection. The changes that have been made in the English Constitution during this century have taken place in obedience to the demands of three different interests—the Roman Catholics, the Dissenters, and the Democrats. They were very different in importance, as well as in intrinsic merit, but they have adhered to the general type we have described. Sir Robert Peel, in passing the Catholic Relief Act, earnestly repudiated any idea of destroying the Irish Church; and he was sustained in that disclaimer by the vast majority of those who helped him to pass that bill. But O'Connell, under whose pressure and by whose strength he was acting, held very different views; and accordingly Sir Robert Peel's pupil, setting aside his disclaimer, pursued the measure to its conclusion and destroyed the Irish Church. The Whigs of the Reform Bill always believed their measure to be one of finality, and earnestly assured both their supporters and their opponents that they had no intention of making it the first step in a democratic descent.

But they relied upon the support of men who saw more clearly whither their principles inevitably led. The tale of its consequences is not yet complete. But in the enactment of household suffrage and a fresh disfranchisement of boroughs, enough has happened to show that the extreme followers were right, and the moderate leaders were deceived. The same lesson is repeated in the legislation concerning Dissenters. They were admitted into Parliament by the repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts, and the opponents of the measure were assured that no danger to the Church was to be feared from their Parliamentary votes. The Dissenters themselves knew better. Since that date their action has been one long and successful campaign against the Church. Similarly, in 1854, the Universities were opened to Dissent, with the assurance that no intention was entertained of severing them from the Church. But in 1871 the latter process was effected, and by the same men, on the distinct ground that such a severance was a necessary consequence of the Act of 1854.

We must again repeat, to avoid misapprehension, that in this enumeration we have not the slightest intention of discussing how far these various measures were in themselves good or evil. Our present concern with them is their relation to the theory of political progress—their value in answering the question, Whither are we going? And the point which they fairly prove is, that in discussing our future advance in any political direction, the guides whose predictions we are to believe, are not the leaders, but the extremest followers. The leader may sincerely speak his own sentiments, or he may find it convenient to make the promises most likely to disarm opposition and pass the particular measure he has in hand; but he can neither bind his followers in the future, nor are his opinions a sample of what they are likely to hold. It is in its extremes that the fruitful germs of the party of movement reside. There lie the embryo forms and the generating forces of its future life. This has been so in the past, and there is no reason why it should not be so in time to come. The extreme left of yesterday is the hesitating centre of to-day; does it not follow, on the theory of 'progress,' that the extreme left of to-day will be the centre of to-morrow? At all events, if the past is to be trusted, no disclaimers on the part of leaders can in the slightest degree affect the probabilities of the future. If we wish to know the future, for instance, in respect to property, we must enquire—not what they think, for they have to consult the expediency of the moment, but what is thought by the more hardy and independent politicians, who can afford both to think out and to speak out. Now that the old controversies are nearly played out, and malcontents of a new class are bringing into prominence new topics

topics of dispute, it is of no use trying to forecast our fate by examining the pledges or past opinions of existing leaders. We must rather scrutinise the declarations of those who occupy towards the question of property the same position that was occupied by O'Connell towards the claims of the Irish Catholics, or by Cobbett towards the claims of the English Democrats. By their attitude and their views we may conjecture the true significance and practical import of the 'bit-by-bit' attacks which the present Government occasionally makes upon property. There was very much to be said for the proposals of Sir Robert Peel in 1829, and Lord Grey in 1831: so much, that in this day we are puzzled to understand why those proposals were so stoutly resisted as they were. But, nevertheless, they were steps to the results of 1869 and 1867—results which both Sir Robert Peel and Lord Grey would have regarded with indignation and alarm. Mr. Gladstone may look with similar feelings upon the schemes of the Internationale. But that fact will be small consolation to us if his present little instalments of Socialism lead towards that consummation. To ascertain the likelihood of that contingency we must examine, not his speeches (though they give us some hints), but the declarations of the extremer and bolder theorists on whose support he relies, such as Mr. Mill, and Mr. Odger, and Mr. Harrison.

Writers of this class leave us in no doubt as to their sentiments. The tendency of their proposals varies according to the special antipathies they entertain. Mr. Mill and Mr. Odger are chiefly opposed to the landlord: Mr. Harrison, with his Parisian sympathies, occupies himself mainly with the capitalist. But their conclusion is much the same—that the free possession of individual property is to cease. They arrive at the same end by somewhat different roads. Mr. Odger proposes that all real property—land, houses, and mines—in the country, should be forcibly purchased and held by the State. Mr. Mill's proposal is apparently, but only apparently, more moderate. He would only insist upon the compulsory purchase where the landowner declined to surrender all interest in the future increase of the value of his land. But as the price of land is, and for a long time back has been, regulated, not by its immediate return (which is small), but by the prospect of its growth in value, it is obvious that any one surrendering the prospect of future growth would be surrendering a large part of the price of his land. The two schemes, therefore, are in truth precisely identical in effect. It is needless to dwell on the preposterous character of these propositions from a practical point of view. The State could not find the five thousand million pounds sterling that would be required for such a purchase: and unless its thrift and administrative

capacity were very marvellously increased (qualities for which republics have not hitherto been remarkable), the financial result of an attempt to manage such an estate would simply be national bankruptcy. Our object in quoting these schemes is, not to refute them, but merely to show that the direction, in which the party of 'movement,' or 'progress,' is advancing, is towards an attack upon individual property. It is the same tendency as that which is so strongly marked in the doctrines of the Internationale. Mr. Harrison's language, though its violence deprives it of precision, points in the same direction. He denounces the 'selfish, antisocial independence of wealth,' the claim of capital to 'spend wealth how and where it pleases,' and declares that 'individual property can no longer exist on prevalent conditions.' Similar language is heard from other Liberals not perhaps quite so advanced. Professor Seeley, a divine much honoured by the head of the present Government, speaks, even under the restraints imposed by the neutrality required in a lecture at the Royal Institution, of

'That great monopoly, which the age does not attack but steadfastly maintains, but which none the less helps to increase the mass of discontent and to hasten change—the right of private property itself.'

We have not referred to election addresses; for they can hardly be assumed to represent the deliberate opinions of those who issue them. It is a matter of course that opinions of this kind, endorsed by known political writers, should appear at any hustings where they are likely to be of use. It is satisfactory to find that, so far, the denunciations of 'the landlords,' which have become a commonplace with the small but savage school of Academical Radicals, have hitherto done more harm than good to the candidates that have employed them. But there is one address, in the nature of an election address, which, on account of the position of its author, may be cited as a sign of the times. Mr. Gladstone's Whitby speech is a very remarkable production. It 'makes an epoch,' as the French say. It has never before happened in the history of this country that a Prime Minister has sought political strength by setting himself and his Government forth, in a speech to a public meeting, as the champions of the poor against the rich. How far he is prepared to go, it would be hazardous to predict. It may be that the tale of his conversions is not yet complete. It may be, that in using that perilous language, he was merely speaking heedlessly under the influence of irritation at recent electoral and parliamentary defeats. Whatever his motives, his words will be remembered and used by those whose trade it is to mislead the English workmen.

The unstable character of Mr. Gladstone's convictions is not, however,

however, more than an incidental source of danger. The probability that the extreme Radicals will take the principle of individual property as their next subject of attack does not depend on any intentional encouragement they are likely to get from the present Government. The Ministry would repel with energy the accusation of Socialist proclivities. Probably, if they could be brought to discuss seriously an imputation which they would laugh at as ridiculous, they would maintain that their teaching, on the whole, was in direct antagonism to the Socialist philosophy. As far as logical sequence is concerned, the plea would be perfectly sound. They are apostles of political economy: in the eyes of the Socialist political economy is a science devised by the capitalist to help him in plundering the workman. They are sticklers for individual liberty, while the Socialists bluntly lay down that individual liberty is a false point of departure, and is inconsistent with the 'solidarity' they preach. Many other points of opposition could be established between the orthodox Liberal creed as it exists now, and that which the Internationale is organised to proclaim. There is very little in common between the two; and, as far as abstract logic is concerned, the development of the one into the other would be impossible. But it is the actual, not the logical sequence, that interests us. Consistency of opinion has not been the historical attribute of either of our English parties. What deductions may be logically drawn from the existing views of the Liberal party may be an interesting inquiry for a speculative philosopher. To the service of what views their party machinery is in practice likely to be devoted, must be gathered from a consideration of the forces that drive it, and the laws by which its movements have been governed in past time.

It is obvious that as the party of resistance rests upon the satisfaction which the nation feels, or is presumed to feel, with its present institutions, the party of movement, on the other hand, lives upon discontent. If there could be a state of things in which there was no discontent, its reason of existence would be gone, and its organisation must fall to pieces. And as each successive cause of discontent is removed, by the complete triumph of the discontented class or section, the party of movement, in order to sustain its existence, must find some new subject of complaint. It by no means follows that the individuals who have sincerely and successfully advocated one change will, when it is secured, immediately set themselves to advocate another. If they are honest, they will often shrink from doing so, and at such a juncture will part company with their former comrades. That men who were Radicals when young should frequently become

Conservatives

Conservatives in old age is due quite as much to the constant 'progress' of Radicalism as to the torpor of advancing years; but, though they may stand still, the organisation to which they belonged goes on. Gaps made by the personal consistency of older men are filled up by younger and unpledged recruits. The party of change is bound to no specific line of change. The one thing that is necessary to its existence is a discontent; and if no other is strong enough for its purposes, it will tend to fall back on that ancient and perennial source of animosity which, unhappily, has never ceased, and never will cease, to flow in every civilised community—the quarrel of the poor against the rich.

If political conflict is really to take this form, we are approaching a crisis of terrible moment: for within the scope of historical record no community has yet been robust enough to surmount uninjured the outbreak of this antagonism. We know that it terminated the existence of Rome, not as a military power, but as a free and law-abiding state. We know that, in more than one instance, it paralysed the vitality and prepared the doom of the Italian Republics. Our own generation has witnessed the gradual working of its poisonous influence upon the freedom, the public spirit, the national cohesion of France. It cannot be without painful forebodings that we see the earlier symptoms of this fatal malady breaking out among ourselves. It has not yet taken its acuter form; for the animosity is at present exhibited more by those whose vocation it is to stir up the poorest class than by the poorest class themselves. But the success of similar appeals in France hardly leaves us the hope that they will meet with no response here, especially if, as seems likely, they are to be reckoned for the future among the ordinary missiles of party warfare. But, indeed, it was idle to expect that such an instrument of agitation should not be employed here, when its great potency has been so fully demonstrated a few miles off. So long as we have government by party, the very notion of repose must be foreign to English politics. Agitation is, so to speak, endowed in this country. There is a standing machinery for producing it. There are rewards which can only be obtained by men who excite the public mind, and devise means of persuading one set of persons that they are deeply injured by another. The production of cries is encouraged by a heavy bounty. The invention and exasperation of controversies lead those who are successful in such arts to place, and honour, and power. Therefore, politicians will always select the most irritating cries, and will raise the most exasperating controversies that circumstances will permit. That English workmen would of themselves learn to share the fanaticism of the Parisian Socialists is exceedingly improbable; but it would be too much

to expect, if their superiors in education promise them an elysium of high wages and little work, as the result of pillaging other classes of the community, that they should be keen-sighted enough to see through the delusion and refuse the tempting bait.

We must therefore, at all events, expect to meet the doctrines of the Internationale in the arena of political discussion. It may well be that an effort will be made to procure for some of them—such, for instance, as the proposals of Mr. Odger and Mr. Mill—an admission into the programme of the Liberal party. That the mass of the present Liberals have no wish or intention of the kind, we are perfectly aware; but the tactics by which a small fraction of a party imposes its doctrines on the remainder are well known, and have been perfected by frequent practice. They are founded upon the established rule of political arithmetic, that one variable is worth more than a score of constants. When an election is nearly balanced, the important people—the voters who occupy every agent's thoughts, engross every civility, and can ensure the most respectful attention to every fancy they may entertain—are not the five hundred on each side whose votes are certain, but the twenty who have refused to promise. In the close party divisions of Lord Palmerston's time, the men upon whom every resource of Ministerial blandishment was expended, were not the respectable phalanx behind the Minister, whose votes were as certain as that of the Minister himself, but the waifs and strays of politics—the advanced theorists—the men of a single idea—the apostles of a crotchet. They had their price when a party vote was wanted, and that price was an onward step in the direction of their own ideas. And thus the statesmen of the Liberal party were reluctantly pushed on, and the minority imposed its views upon the majority. The same tactics have been practised more than once with success upon the Ministers that followed. Those who are ready, if thwarted, to vote against their party leader will have more command over him, and will be better able to force him into their views, than those who vote for him steadily, whatever happens. The men who are fanatical for their cause win an easy victory over those who are guided by party allegiance, or feelings of personal regard. It is a terrible advantage which our party arrangements give to extreme and desperate politicians.

But of course this power of an extravagant minority depends wholly on the long-suffering of the majority. The time may come when the middle classes, who are the real support of Liberal Governments, will awake to the dangers into which they are being hurried by their revolutionary allies. However necessary it may be, from a party point of view, that the school of politicians represented by Mr. Odger and Mr. Mill should be  
confronted,

conciliated, they must at last recognise that party victories may be bought too dear, and that there are interests compared to which the welfare of a Ministry is trivial. Their mistake in recent times has been, that they have accepted their political connexions and antagonisms too much from tradition, without noticing how much the world has moved. They have gone on belabouring their old adversaries, the squire and the parson, with all the enthusiasm of their fathers half a century ago; and have not discerned the vast, overshadowing power that is growing up behind them. Their old enemies are maimed and shrunken: the force with which they now have to count is that of the auxiliaries by whose aid their former victories were won. New questions are before the world: new issues are to be fought out, which in importance dwarf the old. The calamities of France are useful to us in this, that they warn the classes who are threatened here of the dangers of entering upon a new political era hampered with the enmities and the friendships which belonged to a period that has gone by. We have seen what has been the fate of a *bourgeoisie* who, in 1848, to obtain a miserable party triumph, accepted a Socialist alliance. There is good hope that no such folly will be committed here. During the past Session, the Government showed an inclination on more than one occasion to purchase, by semi-socialist proposals, support of the same kind. But, however obsequious their party had hitherto been, they were unable to carry it with them in these attempts. Much of the future peace and strength of this country depends upon the promptitude with which similar efforts in coming Sessions are restrained. If the Liberal landowners, and the mass of the commercial middle class resolutely repel the doctrines of this new school, it will pass away in due time harmlessly, as other fanaticisms have done. But they may take another course. They may, tempted by the momentary party strength it may offer, tamper with it, pacify it with fair but hollow promises, lend to it a popularity among political adventurers, and so admit it to a standing among English political parties. They will not by so doing assure its success, for the destruction of its opponents is not success; but they will challenge a class conflict which, whatever its issue, will incurably shatter the prosperity, the strength, the unity of England.

---

## INDEX

TO THE

HUNDRED AND THIRTY-FIRST VOLUME OF THE  
QUARTERLY REVIEW.

## A.

- ABOUT** (M. Edmond) on Labour and Wages, 231—on co-operation amongst workmen, 254.
- Abraham** and the Fire-worshipper, apologue of, illustrative of the widest possible tolerance, 134.
- Auts**, their complex political organisation, 77.
- Army reorganisation**, 524—long catalogue of shortcomings, negligences, and ignorances, 527—doubt whether the English soldier is equal to his victorious predecessors, 529—Lord Sandhurst's warning to the Government that they were 'organising defeat,' 530—General Adye's acknowledgment that our forces are a disjointed structure of armed men without cohesion or efficiency, 531—rapid changes of the art of destruction, 535—invasion of England, 536—opinion of the Defence Committee of 1859, *ib.*—German view of the facility of a descent on England, *ib.*—deficiency of our resources, 538—accurate knowledge by foreign statesmen of our minutest resources, *ib.*—tremendous consequences of an enemy's landing, 539—effect of our foreign policy the dislike and contempt of foreign nations, 540—our military helplessness, *ib.*—chasm between the England of to-day and of former times, 541—melancholy history of the so-called Army Bill, 542—change in the warlike character of the English race, 543—effect of abolishing the purchase system, 544—ghastly story of the earlier part of the Crimean war, 547.
- Ascidian ancestry** of the vertebrate sub-kingdom, 67.
- Austria**, regeneration of, 90—political transformation, 91—its wretched condition in the winter of 1866, 92—the Austrian Empire converted Vol. 131.—No. 262.

into the Austro-Hungarian monarchy, 93—additions made to the political machinery, *ib.*—growth of political freedom, 95—three most important measures, 96—liberation of the inferior priests, 97—laws affecting marriage and education, 98—fundamental State-laws to constitute the Magna Charta of the Austrian citizen, *ib.*—twenty-one parliaments, 101—Austria composed of a number of small nations, 102—abrogation of the Concordat, 105—statistics of the Austrian provinces, *ib.*—policy of the Poles in Austria, 106—the Czechs, *ib.*—question of a central administration for each nationality, 108—dissensions of the contending nationalities, 111—Vienna and Berlin contrasted, 112.

## B.

- Baboons**, anecdotes respecting, 72.
- Beauty**, the Hellenic ideal the highest type of human, 63.
- Barley**, peculiarity of its growth, 396.
- Bass** (Mr., M.P.), the largest brewer in the world, 393.
- Beer** and the liquor trades, statistics of money invested and their gains, 395—the process of malting, 396—the method of brewing, 399—hops, English and foreign, 400—distilling and rectifying, 402—unjust effect of a licence duty varying with the value of the premises, 405—evils attending the division of public-houses into two classes, 406—demoralising effect of beer-houses, 407—Mr. Bruce's Intoxicating Liquor Bill, 408—offensiveness of its title, 410—violent opposition to the Bill, 411—its injustice and cruelty, 413—proof that the paucity of public-houses does not imply sobriety, 414—the black-white name of Permissive Prohibition the English form of the Maine Liquor Law, 416.
- Belgium**, agricultural regimen of, 255—Belgian farming, 257.

Berlin contrasted with Vienna, 112.  
 Bernard's (Charles de) fascinating novel 'Gerfault,' 218.  
 Braid's inducing artificial somnambulism, 302.  
 Browning's (Mr.) obscurity of style, 364.  
 Brutes, no evidence of advance in their mental power, 76.  
 Burbage's company at the Globe theatre in Shakspeare's time, 22.  
 Business man (the), as described by Mr. Fawcett, 237.  
 Byron (Lord), Continental opinion of him as the greatest English poetical genius since Shakspeare and Milton, 354—the morning after the publication of the 1st and 2nd Cantos of 'Don Juan' awakes and finds himself famous, 358—rapt interest excited by his poetical tales, 361—the 'Giaour,' 362—the 'Corsair,' 364—irrational and indefensible reaction against him, 367—his stanzas on the Ocean, 370—'Don Juan' the 'copesone of his fame, 373—his mode of composition contrasted with Tennyson's, 375—his sudden inspiration eagerly worked out, *ib.*—compared himself to the tiger when the first spring falls, *ib.*—foreign critics on the prejudice against him, 341.

## C.

Canning, plagiarism of, 194.  
 Carpenter's (Dr.) ideomotor principle of action, 310.  
 Cats, tortoise-shell, the females alone so coloured, 54.  
 Cebus Azara, diseases of the monkey so-called, 63.  
 Chambord's (Comte de) manifesto on the ills of the working classes, 261.  
 Channel Islands, prosperity produced by small culture there, 258—two principal causes of their prosperity, 260.  
 Childers's (Mr.) defence of his conduct respecting the loss of the 'Captain,' 441.  
 Church's (Protestant) ascendancy annulled, 523.  
 Church and State, relation of, three stages through which it has passed, 285.  
 Coles's (Capt.) and Messrs. Laird's design for the 'Captain,' 442.  
 Commune (French), and Internationale, 549—the end of the Commune movement a social revolution in the supposed interest of the workmen, 551

—skilful appeal to the peasantry on the principles of the Commune, 552—extension of the International Association in foreign countries, 556—its principles on the relation of capitalists and labourers, 557—proposed abolition of the right of inheritance, 558—the Socialist Alliance of Geneva declares itself atheist, 559—the French socialist makes war upon marriage, property, and religion, 563—the Commune the Helot in the political education of France, 565—strikes no evidence of Socialist ideas of English workmen, 568—distinction between scientific and political progress, 570—Socialist sentiments of Messrs. Mill, Harrison, and Odger, 575.

Copernicus, a new Phaëthon driving the earth about the sun, 14.  
 Conciliation, Boards of, between employers and workmen, 235.  
 Constitution (English), retrospect of its changes during this century, 573.  
 Cowper-Temple clause in the Elementary Education Act, 282.  
 Cox's (Mr. Serjeant) patronage of Spiritualism, 343.  
 Crooke's (Mr., F.R.S.) experimental investigation of a new force, 37—his position in science, 342—detection of the new metal thallium, 343.  
 Curwen's (Rev. J.) tonic sol-fa system, 169.

## D.

Darwin's (Charles, M.A., F.R.S.) 'Descent of Man, and Selection in Relation to Sex,' 47—false facts more injurious than false views, *ib.*—his present opinions subversive of his original views, 48—his modifications of the principle of natural selection, 51—distrust arising from his unreserved admissions of error, 52—sexual selection the corner-stone of his theory, *ib.*—two distinct processes of sexual selection, *ib.*—stallions and mares, 57—peafowl, 58—display by male birds, 60—his inaccuracies in tracing man's origin, 65—over-hasty conclusions, 66—traces man's genealogy back to a form of animal life like an existing larval Ascidian, *ib.*—Ascidian ancestry of the vertebrate sub-kingdom, 67—six kinds of action to which the nervous system ministers, *ib.*—distinction between the instinctive and intellectual

parts of man's nature, 68—*anecdotes* narrated by the author in support of the rationality of brutes, 71—fundamental difference between the mental powers of man and brutes, 75—no advance of mental power on the part of brutes, 76—even the moral sense a mere result of the development of brutal instincts, 79—essence of an instinct, 80—genesis of remorse, 82—the law of honour, 83—dogmatism affirming the very things which have to be proved, 85—sexual selection the selection by the females of the more beautiful males, *ib.*—the author's panegyrics on the advocates of his own views exclusively, 86—his power of reasoning in an inverse ratio to his powers of observation, 87—implies that man is *no more* than an animal, 88—his false metaphysical system, 89—sets at naught the first principles of both philosophy and religion, 90.

Dalling's (Lord [Sir H. Bulwer]) 'France,' 213.

Dibdin's (Rev. R. W.) table-turning, 320—his lecture and experience on that subject, *ib.*—his reply to Professor Faraday, 322.

Disraeli's (Mr.) appropriation of a character in 'Lothair,' 194—more than a third of his eulogium on Wellington taken from Thiers, without the change of a word, *ib.*

Dorking' ('the Battle of'), character of the book, 533.

Dumas (Alexander), *Memoirs* of, 189—unprecedented fertility and versatility, 190—computation of the average number of pages per day during forty years, *ib.*—his mode of life, *ib.*—autobiography, 195—his name of Davy de la Pailleterie, 196—his father's relinquishment of that name, 197—*anecdotes* of the strength and prowess of General Dumas, his father, *ib.*—description of Dumas's first visit to Paris, 201—interviews with Talma, 202, 206—Dumas's theory of success in life, 204—interview with a fat and fair Englishman, 207—interview with Sebastiani, 208—favourably received by General Foy, *ib.*—answers to the General's interrogation as to his qualifications, 209—received into the establishment of the Duke of Orleans, afterwards King of the French, 210—his first publication a novel of which four copies only were sold, 212—his first

accepted drama, 214—interview with Mademoiselle Mars, *ib.*—interview with Louis Philippe, 215—Dumas unknown the evening before, the talk of all Paris on the morrow, 216—interview between Louis Philippe and Charles X., *ib.*—in the drama of 'Antony' sets all notions of morality at defiance, 218—analysis of the plot, *ib.*—its profound immorality, 219—'La Tour de Nesle,' a dramatic monstrosity, 223—'Les Trois Mousquetaires,' 'Vingt ans après,' and 'Monte Christo,' 224—letter to Napoleon III. on the prohibition by the Censorship of 'Les Mohicans de Paris,' 227—connection with Garibaldi, 228.

## E.

Education of the People. Our present educational prospects, 265—three points of interest to be investigated, *ib.*—I. the relation of the new state of things to the previous system, 266—question of making the payment of school-pence a part of out-door relief, 271—schools of religious tone and secular schools, 272—voluntary and rate-supported schools, 274—secularism of schools in the United States, 276—II. How will religion fare under the new system, 278—great majority of petitions for religious education above those for secular, 281—probable effects of the Cowper-Temple clause, 282—impossibility of drawing out an undenominational creed, 287—III. Prospects of pushing on National Education in quality and quantity, 289—material points in the New Code of Regulations reversing the Revised Code, 290—programme of the course of education contemplated, *ib.*—exercise and drill in the schools, 292—want of more training colleges, 294—compulsory powers to make the children attend, 296—the compulsory system in America, *ib.*

Erle (Sir W.), on the law relating to Trades' Unions, 234.

## F.

Faraday's (Professor) explanation of table-turning, 311—his indicator for detecting the delusion, *ib.*

Fawcett (Mr., M.P.) on pauperism, 237—his extreme democratic opinions, 242.

Foster, the American 'Medium,' 331.  
 French labourers and English navvies,  
 comparative wages of, 246.  
 — war, fictions of ministers and  
 generals during the late, 200.  
 Fuegians, amongst the lowest barba-  
 rians, 70.

## G.

Gladstone's (Mr.) Whitby speech as  
 the champion of the poor against the  
 rich, 576.  
 Goble, the clairvoyant, 348.  
 Gothic architecture, its emotional ex-  
 pression, 153.  
 Greek education, staple of ancient, 151.  
 Greene and his contemporary drama-  
 tists, predecessors of Shakspeare, 15.  
 Grote (George), tribute to his memory,  
 353.  
 Guicciardini's personal and political  
 records, 416—the family possessed  
 the feline faculty of always falling  
 on their feet, 420—his civil and poli-  
 tical *γνώμαι*, 425—his embassy to  
 King Ferdinand of Arragon, 427—a  
 foe to popular as well as to priestly  
 and monarchical tyranny, 429—his  
 insight into weaknesses and vices,  
 430—political maxims, 432—maxims  
 illustrating his Machiavellism, 433—  
 comparison between him and Machia-  
 velli, 435—shelved as a statesman,  
 becomes the historian, 437—his  
 imaginary conversations, 438—his  
 great work the famous (and tedious)  
 'Istoria d' Italia,' 499.

## H.

Hale (Dr.), Shakspeare's son-in-law, 25.  
 Handel, according to Beethoven the  
 greatest musician in the world, 165.  
 Handwriting of distinguished men, 209.  
 Hardinge's (Mrs. Emma) spiritualistic  
 new Ten Commandments, 306.  
 Hare (Dr.), the American physicist, on  
 spirit manifestations, 327—his appa-  
 ratus for freeing spirits from the  
 control of any medium, 337.  
 Hearing (acute) of rats and other  
 animals, 148.  
 Heber's (Bishop) edition of Jeremy  
 Taylor's works, 113.  
 Herschell (Sir John), tribute to his  
 memory, 353.  
 Home, the Spiritualist, receives a gift  
 of sixty thousand pounds, 326—his  
 precise experimental proof of the  
 immortality of the soul, 339—claim

to the power of altering the weight  
 of bodies, 344—his performance with  
 an accordion, 346.

Hops, 393, 400.

Houdin's (Robert, the celebrated pres-  
 tidigitateur) autobiography, 308—  
 his mode of preparing himself and  
 his son for their exhibitions, 333.

Huggins's (Dr.) testimony as to the  
 manifestations of Psychic Force, 340—  
 his unsurpassed ability as a spec-  
 troscopic observer, 341.

Hugo's (Victor) 'Marion Delorme,' 222.  
 Hullah's operas and songs and musical  
 exercises and studies, 169—history  
 of modern music and lectures, 145.

Hussites and Catholics, their contest  
 one between two races for supremacy  
 in Bohemia, 107.

## I.

Instinct, essence of an, 80.

International, insurgent apparition of  
 the, 261—International labour-con-  
 gresses, 263—semi-socialist proposals  
 of the Government, 580.

Italy in the sixteenth century, 417.

## J.

James I. not the fool that history re-  
 presents him to have been, 19.

Jowett's (Professor) dialogues of Plato.  
 495—the subtlety and simplicity of  
 his analysis renders him a consum-  
 mate interpreter, 517.

Jullien's promenade concerts, 170—  
 madness and suicide, *ib.*

## K.

Keats 'snuffed out by an article,' 374.

## L.

Lamartine's extravagant account of the  
 battle of Waterloo, 199—and of  
 Trafalgar, 200.

Lassalle (Ferdinand), the Apostle of  
 State-support to co-operative socie-  
 ties, 263.

Laveleye (M.) on English and Irish  
 landlords, 256.

Le Play's (M.) 'Les Ouvriers Euro-  
 péens,' 176.

Leclaire's (M.) principle of giving a  
 share of profits to his workpeople,  
 262.

Leslie's (T. E., Cliffe, LL.B.) land  
 systems and industrial economy, 239.

- Laycock (Dr.) on the reflex action of the brain, 310.  
 Levi's (Professor Leone) Report on the Liquor trades, 362.  
 Lindsay's (Lord) testimony for Spiritualism, 335—personally witnessing  
 a Mr. Home's floating in the air from one room to another through the windows, 336.  
 Lock-outs and strikes, 248.  
 Longe's (F. D.) refutation of Mill's wage-fund theory, 236.  
 Lucy's (Sir Thomas) prosecution of Shakspeare for deer-stealing, 7—his family, 8—powerful at the Court of the Tudors, 9.

M.

- McCulloch's economical paradox, 240.  
 Machiavelli, the sole moral of his doctrine of princely policy to disregard vice, ill-faith, and cruelty to promote aggrandisement, 436.  
 Manors, feudal view of the origin of, 186.  
 Marks of Teutonic townships, 181.  
 Mars' (Mademoiselle) acting, 221.  
 Mendelssohn's 'Midsummer Night's Dream,' 167—overture to 'Fingal's Cave,' and other works, 168.  
 Mesmer and his followers, 302.  
 Mills' (J. S.) programme of the Land Tenure Reform Association, 229—dictum that 'the labourers need only capital not capitalists,' 232—Japanese etiquette in the happy despatch of the wage-fund, 236.  
 Molière's avowal of plagiarism, *Je prends mon bien ou je le trouve*, 193.  
 Monkeys having a strong taste for tea, coffee, and spirituous liquors, and for smoking tobacco, 64.  
 Monopolies, industrial, 461—undertakings which competition cannot regulate, *ib.*—undertakings which tend to become monopolies, 462—question whether they should be conducted by private enterprise or Government management, 463—discussed by Mr. Mill, *ib.*—French view of monopolies, 465—summary of arguments in favour of Government management, 466—application of those views to harbours and natural navigations, 468—to canals and docks, 469—to lighthouses, roads, 470—bridges and ferries, railways, 471—failure of competition in railways, 471—Irish railways an example of the evils of competition, 472—impotence of the Legislature in

limitation of profits, 474—and for continuous traffic, 475—objections to purchase of railways by the Government, 477—tramways, *ib.*—gas-works, 479—water supply, 481—Post Office, 483—telegraphs, 484—suggestions for improvements, 486—patronage and jobbing in the management of public works, 490.  
 Music, origin of vocal and instrumental, 145—immense antiquity of wind instruments, 146—pre-historic flute *ib.*—what constitutes pitch, 147—the limits of musical sound about six octaves, 148—what constitutes intensity of musical sounds, *ib.*—quality or *timbre*, 148—mode of determining the form of the vibrations of different instruments, *ib.*—differently formed waves of sound transmitting a different stroke and quality of sound to the ear, *ib.*—difference between noise and musical sound explained by M. Beauquier, 149—three fundamental harmonies of a note, *ib.*—modern music the supreme art-medium of emotion, 154—peculiarities of music for the generation and expression of emotion, 155—power of music in controlling and disciplining emotion, 156—difference in the *morale* of Italian and German music, *ib.*—moral and emotional functions of music, 157—Greek and Hebrew music, 158—art of *descant*, *ib.*—development of modern music, 159—first and greatest discovery, *ib.*—the *perfect cadence*, *ib.*—Carissimi the very type of the transition period, 160—modern music a new art with recently discovered principles, *ib.*—how far England is, or has been, a musical country, 160—John Dunstable, in 1400, represents a great musical force in this country, *ib.*—English Church music, 161—the famous song 'Sumer is a cumen in,' *ib.*—foreign origin of all the forms of modern music, *ib.*—English madrigals, 162—Anglo-French school of Pelham, Humphrey, and Purcell, 163—Purcell to be ranked with Mozart, *ib.*—Handel (according to Beethoven) the greatest musician who ever lived, 165—Rossini, Weber, 166—Mendelssohn, 167—Beethoven's influence on the music of this country, 108—influence of John Hullah, 169—Curwen's Tonic Sol-fa system, *ib.*—tonal difference between the Hullah and Sol-fa methods, *ib.*—Henry

Leslie's choir, *ib.*—three proposals respecting musical education, 172—  
—the consolations of music, 175.

## N.

Navy, mismanagement of the, 441—loss of the 'Captain,' *ib.*—Mr. Reed's report to Mr. Childers that it was utterly unsafe, 443—defects in the ship, and warnings, 444—description of its loss with 500 men, 445—proceedings of the Flying Squadron, 448—the 'Megæra,' 469—loss of the ship, 451—sacrifice of ships balanced with the supposed economy of the Administration, 451—grounding of the 'Agincourt,' 454—necessity of not dispensing with navigating officers, 456—their duties, *ib.*—gunboats 458—premature compulsory retirement of experienced officers, 459—the command of the Channel Fleet, *ib.*

Neil's 'Shakespeare,' a critical biography, 1.

Nervous system, six kinds of action to which it ministers, 67.

## O.

Odger's International Association for the emancipation of the working class, 555.

Ouvry (Col.) on the agricultural community of the Middle Ages, 176.

Operative associations for productive purposes, causes of their failure in France, 251—Co-operative Society of Paris Masons, 253.

## P.

Paris workmen (the) rebel successively against every form of government, 561—the dethronement of Paris, 566.

Pea-fowl, Sir R. Heron on the habits of, 58.

Peasant-proprietorship, shipwreck of enthusiasts of, 259.

Plagiarism in modern literature, shades and degrees of, 193—exemplified from Sheridan, Byron, Scott, Balzac, Lamartine, Sterne, Brougham, *ib.*

Plato's 'Dialogues,' by Professor Jowett, 492—two leading aims of Platonic translation, 494—the three cardinal points of Platonic chronology, 497—how Plato wrought the teaching of Socrates and his predecessors into a single fabric, 501—the doctrine of reminiscence, *ib.*—the 'Republic' the greatest monument of Plato's genius,

*ib.*—his pervading fallacy of confusing the method of science with science itself, 503—two characteristic weaknesses of ancient speculation, 507—Plato's view of the office of mythology, 509—distinguishes four kinds of madness, 510—the relation of justice to happiness, 513—confusion of ethics and politics, 514—the Megarians and Eleatics, 518—Plato's 'Laws' sums up the highest religious thoughts of heathenism, 520—historical view of his Dialogues, *ib.*

Poles, their policy ~~in~~ Austria.

Pope waiting for his imagination, 575.

Purcell's originality and fertility in music, 163.

Pythagorean discovery of the harmonic ratios, 504.

## R.

Reformation (The), powerful in developing individual character, 5.

Robinson's (Sir Spencer) dismissal as Controller of the Navy, 447.

Rochdale Co-operative Manufacturing Society, and Paris Working Societies, 252.

Rogers's (Thorold) new edition of the 'Wealth of Nations,' 237.

Rosse (the late Earl of) on the relation of Landlord and Tenant in Ireland, 240—anecdote respecting his detection of conjurors' tricks, 345.

Rossini's greatness as a musician, 166.

Russell (Mr. Odo) at Versailles, the Prime Minister's unparalleled disavowal of, 541.

## S.

Salmon, combats of male, 56.

School Boards a supplemental and remedial measure, 266—the London School Board, *ib.* See Education.

Scott's (Sir W.) rate of composition, 192.

Shakspeare allied by his mother's side to gentle blood, 2—prosecuted for deer-stealing by Sir Thomas Lucy, 7—his poetical vengeance on the Lucys, 8—his times favourable to dramatic poetry, 13—Meres's criticism on him, 16—Shakspeare compared to Greene, Peele, Marlowe, and Ben Jonson, *ib.*—the poems of 'Venus and Adonis' and 'Lucrece,' *ib.*—his genius, knowledge of his art, energy and imagination, 17—Chettle's testimony to his genius

and integrity, 18—rapid progress to wealth and fame, 19—daughters, 20—contradiction of his supposed intemperance, *ib.*—editions of his plays and poems in circulation before his death, 21—collected edition of his dramatic works published by Heminge and Condell in 1623, 22—Shakespeare not indifferent to literary fame, 23—particulars of his family, 25—did not put forth all his strength until the close of the 16th century, 29—characteristics of his later compositions, 30—sources of his plots, 31—compared with Lord Bacon, 32—a sincere and profound religious element permeant through his writings, *ib.*—his 'nuditatis animi,' 34—flexibility in the style, structure, and colour of his language, 37—wit and pathos, 38—his songs unapproachable, 39—the representative Englishman of the sixteenth century, 42—his poetry that of action and passion, rather than of reflection, *ib.*—prominence of his female characters, 44—his women compared with Spenser's, *ib.*—one omission in the great dramatist, 46.  
 Sidney's (Sir Philip) character and death, 43.  
 Smith's (Sydney) answer to an inquiry about his grandfather, 196.  
 Smollett's advice on the treatment of the sick sailor, 457.  
 Socrates' teaching, moral and political, not relating to nature and the universe, 498—his doctrine that knowledge is the apprehension of the universal, 500.  
 Somerset's (Duke of) sarcasm on the state of the army and navy, 452.  
 Spectrum-analysis, its application to the study of the component elements of the sun, 241.  
 Spenser's long residence in Ireland, 1.  
 Spiritualism: the Spiritualists, a great and increasing sect in the United States and England, 303—directions given to family circles for communicating with spirits by table rapping and tilting, 304—gifts possessed by mediums, 305—writing and drawing mediums, *ib.*—mode of using the planchette, *ib.*—medical and trance mediums, 306—spiritual investigations by direct action on material bodies, inanimate as well as animate, *ib.*—living men and women caught up from the ground and borne aloft in the air, *ib.*—Satanic agency in table-turning, 312—practical trial

of fallacy in the use of the planchette, 315—unconscious cerebration and latent thought, 317— anecdotes illustrating cerebral activity, 319—Satanic answer of a table that Christ was in hell, 322—Mr. Dibdin and the Spiritualists equally wrong and equally right: each right in disbelieving the other's doctrine, and each wrong in maintaining his own, 322—cures by faith in the efficacy of the treatment, *ib.*—death produced by the terrorism of Obeah practices, *ib.*—examples of injurious influence exercised by spiritualistic communications, 326—a clergyman burning a table for lending itself to the dictation of Satan, 327—men of science converted to spiritualistic views, *ib.*—Mr. Crookes's paper in the 'Spiritualist,' 328—results experienced by the reviewer as to the fallacy of spiritualism, 329—Mr. Foster, the American medium, and his manifestations, 331—description of the reviewer's mode of testing him, *ib.*—transport of persons by invisible agency from one house to another, 348—levitation of the human body, and other feats of Spiritualism, 350—gullibility of the average public, 351—Chevreul's treatise on the Baguette Divinatoire, 352.  
 Stallions and mares, 57.  
 Swallows, migration of, 82.  
 Stirling's 'Recess Studies,' 244.

# T.

Tallyrand's conversational brilliancy, source of, 193.  
 Taylor (Jeremy), the great glory of the English pulpit, 113—his career at Cambridge, 114—contemporary there with Milton, *ib.*—vicissitudes, poverty, and consolations, 115—married to Joanna Bridges, natural daughter of Charles I., *ib.*—imprisonment for invectives against Puritan preachers, 116—happily settled at Portmore, 119—dedicates 'Ductor Dubitantium' to Charles II., 120—appointed to the See of Down and Connor, *ib.*—anxiety to be translated to an English bishopric, *ib.*—disturbed state of his diocese, 121—opposition of Presbyterian ministers, *ib.*—charity to the poor, 123—power of attracting friends, 124—an eager devourer of books, 125—ethics his favourite science, *ib.*—eminently a Church of England man,

126—a constant assertor of the superior claims of Episcopal government, 127—his 'Dissuasive from Popery,' a model of Christian controversy, 128—characteristic of his opus magnum, the 'Ductor Dubitantium,' 129—that work in the main a treatise on moral philosophy, *ib.*—foundation of his ethical edifice, *ib.*—'Liberty of Prophesying,' his most original and characteristic work, 130—has two ends in view, 131—his view of civil government, 133—community of spirit between him and Milton, although opponents on the question of Prelacy, *ib.*—charge against him of a change of opinion on toleration, 134—gorgeous eloquence in his 'Life of Christ,' and his sermons, 137—compared to Chrysostom, 138—contrasted with Milton, *ib.*—in similes the very Homer of preachers, 139—his unpruned exuberance and want of the 'art to blot,' 141—solemnity of his discourses marred by illustrations, 143—his power of sarcasm, *ib.*—want of masculine firmness and vigour, 144.

Tasso's imitations of other poets, 194.

Tennyson's (Mr.) pathos, 356—contrasted with Byron, 371—minute details ruinous to great effects, 372—sublimity contrasted with prettiness, *ib.*—earliest poems, 374—his inexhaustible fancy and perception of moral and natural beauty, and other high qualities, *ib.*—not schooled in adversity, 376—his fame might rest on 'In Memoriam,' 379—extracts from 'The Princess,' 380—companion pictures from it and from 'Don Juan,' 383—'The Princess' compared with 'Don Juan' in point of wit and humour, 384—great success of the 'Idylls of the King,' *ib.*—M. Taine on the absence of creative genius in Tennyson, 387—Arthurian poems, 388—his working against the grain, and overlaying a train of thought contrasted with Byron's sudden inspirations, eagerly followed out, 375—Guinevere, 388—'Vivien' as objectionable as 'Don Juan,' 390.

Thackeray's ironical praise of Dumas, 224.

Thallium, the new metal detected by spectrum analysis, 342.

Thiers' (M.) exaggeration respecting the French army, 200.

Thornton (W. T.) on labour, 235—has turned champion of Trades' Unions,

*ib.*—the first to disarm Mr. Mill of his wage-fund theory, 235—his industrial Utopia of pure co-operative association, 250.

Thurlow (Hon. T. J. H.) on Trades' Unions, 258.

Trades' Unions, organisation of, 234—effect of unionism in raising wages, 248.

Tramways, 477.

Translation of poetry, considerations on, 355.

## U.

Utopias, labour, 229.

## V.

Varley's (C. E.) testimony to the physical marvels of Spiritualism, 347.

Vega's (Lope de) dramatic compositions exceed 2000, 192.

Vienna and Berlin contrasted, 112.

Village communities (Sir H. Maine's lectures on), 177—their organisation in typical districts of Russia and India, *ib.*—social economy of the Bushkir village communities, 179—their principle adopted by the English emigrants who colonised New England, *ib.*—the Germanic land-system, 181—organisation of the Teutonic township, *ib.*—its three portions or marks, *ib.*—English village communities before the Norman conquest, 182—the Indian village community the unit of social and political organisation, 183—the constitution of our Indian villages, 184—relation of the feudal system to village communities in Western Europe, 185—M. Le Play's description of the village of Les Jault, 186—the decision of history for individual as against communistic possession of land, 189.

## W.

Waders, battling of male, 58.

Wage-fund, absurdity of the theory, 236—its refutation in brief compass, 237.

Wages in the building trades, 249.

Weber's 'Huntsman's Chorus,' 166.

Wellesley, Admiral, juggled out of his command under false pretences, 455.

Wellington and Waterloo, according to Lamartine, 199.

Willmott's (Rev. R. A.) biography of Jeremy Taylor, 113.

## Z.

Zealand (Macaulay's New) traced to Horace Walpole, 184.







THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE  
STAMPED BELOW

RENEWED BOOKS ARE SUBJECT TO IMMEDIATE  
RECALL

UCD LIBRARY

DUE JUN 5 1976

SEP 8 REC'D

UCD LIBRARY

DUE JAN 9 1976

JAN 28 1976

LIBRARY, UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, DAVIS

Book Slip—Series 458

Nº 837843

Quarterly review.

AP4

Q2

v.131

LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA  
DAVIS

